

The Universe of All Reality

by Metal4k

Category: Halo, Mass Effect
Genre: Adventure, Mystery
Language: English
Characters: Master Chief/John-117, Shepard (F)
Status: Completed
Published: 2013-04-28 02:10:26
Updated: 2015-05-13 22:57:25
Packaged: 2016-04-27 04:13:16
Rating: T
Chapters: 42
Words: 236,597
Publisher: www.fanfiction.net
Summary: "Where does all evil come from? Where does it originate?"
There are forces far more ancient, far darker, than the Reapers and Flood. Peace is over. Commander Sheaprd will be faced with new threats and challenges, ones that can transcend reality, ones older than the Universe itself. Multiverse crossover

1. Prologue (Beta'd)

"What happens when we find something out there... Worse than the Flood?... What happens when all of our advancements fail? When our ability to travel between Galaxies, our ability to destroy solar systems, our ability to evolve life and create planets, solar systems, by God even galaxies! What happens when all of this is proven useless?" - Doctor Catherine Halsey to Admiral Pargonsky_

* * *

><p>Prologue

* * *

><p>10 years ago. Earth. The End of the Reaper War.

Katherine Shepard, breathed.

Her body ached. She was tired.

Even so she walked.

With short strides she walked onto a long bridge, her vision restricted to a singular point straight ahead.

Three beams of light lit the end of the bridge, three different colors contorting beautifully.

The first was a white beam of light racing down the middle of the Citadel. The second, to its left, a blue beam of light that acted as a backlight to two power conductors. Lastly the third beam, off to the right of the first beam, a red now with a brilliant glow illuminated another set of power conductors. It shined the same deep red onyx of the Reapers capital ships.

Electricity sparked wildly between the power conductors, adding brief flashes of white to the already contrasting colors.

She continued forward, limping with every step. A flash of pain and her hand clenched her side, blood slowly dripping from it.

Her long red hair was a matted mess, disgustingly tangled as it dropped around her shoulders. Her black armor was scorched, blackened by soot, and smoldering from Harbingers attack; the armor itself was falling apart bit by bit and only held together by the last few atmospheric seals and magnetic locks.

Another sharp pain rolled deep into her chest and she let out a wet ragged cough only to notice the blood it left on her hand.

She groaned.

She had to complete her mission.

She had to stop the Reapers.

It felt like hours passed as she limped forward towards the lights, only the smallest thought entering her mind.

Suddenly a light appeared before her, blinding her for only the briefest of seconds.

A hologram had appeared, a hologram of a young human boy. It looked at her and she barely recognized it. It was the boy in the shuttle, the one who died by the Reapers hand as they invaded Earth. She had watched him die.

The hologram seemed to be studying her, like a scientist examining a specimen under a microscope.

"You are awake."

Shepard didn't respond and instead raised her pistol at him, ready to fire at any moment. She had more than enough reason not to trust anything in this place.

"Name: Katherine Shepard. Species: Human. Greetings. I am the Catalyst," The holograms voice was high pitched like a child's yet held the cold and emotionless undertones of a machine. Shepard stared at him wondering what to say. Thoughts swarmed at the back of her mind trying to remember what it was that felt similar. Finally it clicked and she asked.

"The Catalyst?" It wasn't much, but she had been through hell and back. The last thing she cared about was her first encounter with this machine.

"Yes."

"I thought the Citadel was the Catalyst."

"No. It is simply, a tool."

"And what exactly is it used for?"

"Commander, I control those you have come to call the Reapers. I control them like I control the cycles," His voice was hollow.

Shepard slightly shivered as she remembered what this meant. It meant every the death of every being throughout all the cycles, was his fault. Every. Last. One.

"You're a monster... Why would you do this? What have we ever done to you?" Shepard hissed.

"You? Nothing. Simply put, organics are the Galaxy's biggest threat. All you do is fight and cause strife. They create synthetics and the synthetics rebel. Death and War are all that Organics accomplish. The cycles are the solution to that. The Reapers are the solution," The Catalyst turned away from her and began walking towards the central beam of light.

The Commander slowly limped after him sensing that he wanted her to follow.

"We can change. We just need the chance," She replied sternly.

"Maybe." The Catalyst stopped in its tracks. It turned back towards Shepard. She stopped and looked down at it.

"The fact that you are here Commander shows that organics have changed. No one has ever made it this far. If you can make it here... Maybe organics can indeed change," Shepard could hear the change in the Catalysts voice. It seemed almost hopeful.

"Still though," The Catalyst continued and turned back towards the light. "The cycle keeps you in check. It's my solution. If you win but don't change, my solution will be gone and then what?" His voice was cold again.

"We'll keep on trying. How do you know if you don't give us a chance?" Shepard's voice was confident. The Catalyst turned back to her.

"I will give you three choices Shepard. One you can destroy us and all synthetics, bringing peace to the galaxy, but know that the peace will not last. Two you can control us. Your body will be destroyed and you will never see those you love again, but you will control the Reapers and can do with them what you wish. Or three. You can synthesize organics and synthetics. You can merge them into one being. The final stage of evolution. These are your choices. You should hurry though, I will not wait forever," The Catalysts eyes were still.

Shepard grit her teeth. She quickly thought about each decision. Each

one had its own massive repercussions.

She could choose destroy, but killing the Geth off after she earned their trust? After she ended the war between them and the Quarians? She would be the murderer of an entire species.

If she choose to control, the Reapers would be at her disposal. She could use them to rebuild, to help. Again though, who was she to have that kind of power over the Galaxy? Was it really her right to govern everyone with the power of the Reapers?

Synthesize? How could she? Synthetics and Organics were two different entities. If she fused the two, what would happen? She couldn't say. None the less, she didn't have the right. It wasn't her choice to choose for everyone else to evolve or not. That was up to them. Not her.

She was not God, not over the galaxy. The right was theirs to decide, and she would not play this monsters games.

Out of options.

She groaned internally, knowing what her answer would be.

"I chose none," Shepard straightened her stance as much as she could with the lances of pain searing her side.

"None?" The Catalyst looked on in confusion. His eyes flashed red for a brief moment, "Interesting. An organic given all the power in the galaxy and yet she chooses not to wield it," The Catalyst studied her a bit before speaking again. "Protocol has been overwritten. Commander Katherine Shepard has passed the test. Congratulations Commander," The Catalyst turned away and walked toward the beam on the right.

Shepard stared at him baffled. She was completely lost.

"Wait, what?" She asked confused.

The Catalyst ignored her and continued towards the pillars of light.

Katherine limped after him as fast as she could ignoring the searing pain in her side.

"What are you talking about? What test?" She asked frantically. She felt the pain in her body increase rapidly. She knew her body couldn't take much more activity.

"As the eons have passed Organics have constantly showed us that they were plagued. Unable to break free of the cycle of power. Unable or unwilling to change, always choosing the same path. However you choose differently. I had always expected an organic to choose power, but you choose differentlyâ€¦ You showed that Organics can change. You have broken the cycle."

Shepard mulled it over. She wasn't sure what to think.

"This is too easy..."

"Of course it is, but rejoice for now the Galaxy is free," The Catalyst walked over to the red glowing onyx pillar.

"And now the Reapers fall." _But others will rise... Ones that defeated the masters of the old..._

With a wave of his hand, the power conductor flickered and ignited, exploding with a brilliant flash of light.

A red light flashed and the Crucible fired.

Tendrils of red laced across known space.

All across the galaxy the Mass Relays discharged in an explosion.

In the blink of an eye, all the Reapers in the galaxy, were wiped from existence.

Katherine smiled as the Catalyst vanished.

They had won.

* * *

><p>Present day. Citadel.

Katherine, brushed her hair behind her ear.

She glanced out the window and to the stars beyond, the Normandy docked behind her at its usual port.

It had been ten long years since the fall of the Reapers. Now, she was the main guest at the Galactic Ball celebrating the Galaxy's victory, held on an annual anniversary. It was a dance, a festival almost, of power, displays, riches, and glory to the Citadel and her allies.

It disgusted her.

Here she was dancing and celebrating while dozens of systems were still trying to rebuild, trying to clean up the mess left from the war.

At first she had refused to come but after much persuasion from Admiral Hackett and Anderson she finally caved in. They explained to her that if the Galaxy were to see its hero, to see her, celebrating the defeat of the Reapers it would give a great morale boost, something they still needed despite their victory. She didn't see how it was necessary but she decided to go along with it. Not like she had much choice.

Surprisingly though, despite her resentments towards it, it didn't bug her that much to go. After the war she had been on dozens of diplomatic and spectre missions, seen and killed so much more than she had ever known she would. She was tired of it.

On top of that all, the Normandy wasn't the same. Almost all of her friends had left the ship. Only Joker, Samantha Traynor, and Legion remained from her old team.

Garrus had left to Palaven to deal with all the civil unrest but he at least sent her emails occasionally. Liara had gone back to Thessia to settle down with a family, Shepard hadn't heard from her in months. Wrex and Wreav had gone back to the Krogan and were settling clan disputes. The others she had no clue. All she knew was that they had all finally left around a two years ago and Shepard had never been lonelier in her entire life.

Letting lose a long need sigh, Katherine made her way down the hall, staring at herself in the glass windows.

Her red hair was curled and longer, though only reaching down an inch below her shoulders. Her face was clean and perfect. Her posture was soft yet commanding, as it should be. Her eyes were a lively green accented by her black eye shadow. Her light blue dress was wavy, and accented the natural curves of her body.

How things had changed.

She continued walking, all the way to the elevator, and got a salute from two guards on the way.

The doors slid open and she made her way inside, pressing the button for her chosen destination.

The elevator jerked to life and shot upward. It seemed that after the war with the Reapers, elevators had gained a tremendous amount of speed. A small victory, but a victory none the less.

The outdoor ballroom was towards the top of the Citadel, on a specific floor designed just for it, exactly where the elevator was taking her.

Shepard was glad she was alone in the elevator. She didn't feel like making small talk with people. Ever since her crew had left she had become more and more confined as the time had went on. Spending so much time alone on missions and being able to trust no one could do that to a person.

Now she even considered herself a recluse. Fortunately, she could still put on a mask when needed.

A minute passed and finally the elevator ringed, signaling her arrival at the ballroom.

The Commander straightened herself and put on the classic and charming Shepard smile, one that could win the attention of any person she wanted. The doors silently slid open and she walked out.

Katherine couldn't help but let her eyes wander around the ballroom. Despite being here eight times before, having missed one year due to the flu and the anniversary ball itself not having started till two years after the war, she couldn't help but still feel amazed at the sight.

The stars and nebula above were dazzling with their different colors and sheer numbers. The Citadels ceiling replicated the sight perfectly. The golden lights twinkled and moved around providing light for the party. The grass, flowers and trees surrounding the

area, were alive and abundant. A marble dance floor with a fountain in the middle took up at least three fourths of the area. Long tables with white table cloth and gold embroidery surrounded the lively dance floor.

Dozens upon dozens of people danced on the dance floor, a live jazz band nearby ripping it up to an old human chart called In the Mood.

Dozens of others were sitting at the tables lounging around and conversing carelessly with one another and even then dozens of waiters frantically, yet elegantly, moved about trying to fill the orders of all the tables. At the largest table, right next to the marble dance floor, sat the council and a few Admirals including Admiral Hackett.

Slowly, shepard made her way over to the table. She could see a piece of paper in front of one of the chairs, with the words clearly written on it Reserved: Commander Katherine Shepard.

She passed several dancing Asaris and Turians, almost bumping into a female Krogan before making it to the large table. As she walked over to the chair with her name, the new Asari Councilor, Lithyia, spotted her. She was a jolly and passionate Asari. Warm and friendly, unlike the councilor before her.

"Shepard! So glad you made it!" The councilor greeted loudly.

"Glad that I could make it," Shepard replied with a warm whole hearted lie.

The councilor stood up and moved over to her, embracing Shepard in a long hug. Shepard returned the hug but quickly pulled away.

"Greetings Shepard Commander," Exodus, the new Geth councilor, greeted.

"Exodus," Shepard said with a polite nod. The others around the table greeted her kindly and warmly enough, all telling her to take a seat and order all sorts of different dishes they found tasty.

The greetings were soon over, and the table returned to the topic it had been discussing.

Shepard listened in, only partially, to the conversation about the Krogan's and Turian's relation. Apparently the two were getting along quite nicely. Their urge to be the best and strongest was now almost uniting the two races. Shepard was just glad they weren't ripping each other apart like they wanted to only ten years prior.

She looked around and noticed Ashley Williams dancing in a silky black dress. Her hair was straight and she danced with an Alliance officer. Shepard smiled slightly to herself. It was nice to see an old friend who hadn't changed from everything that had happened. So many others had.

Even she had.

Suddenly a hand placed itself on her shoulder. She had to resist the

urge to attack whoever it was for startling her, and turned around to look up at the new company.

"Nice to see you Shepard, but if I didn't know you better I'd say you'd want to hit me for startling you," Garrus smirked. He was wearing the Turians version of formal attire. The Spectre rolled her eyes.

She hadn't seen her friend in a long time, but he was still Garrus. Always making a joke towards her. She decided to play along for a bit.

"If I didn't know you better I'd say you're trying to scare me," Shepard said glaring up at him with a smirk.

"Yeah if you didn't know me better. Too bad you know me better," Garrus grinned. Shepard chuckled and looked back at the table. The occupants were now engaged in a conversation about galactic taxes and the economy, none of them even paying attention to her.

"Wanna get out of here and hit the Purgatory?" Garrus whispered into her ear. Shepard quickly looked around. She figured no one would notice she was gone for a few minutes. A quick drink never hurt anyone.

With practiced ease, she quickly slid out of her seat, "Lets go. If I stay here a second more I might go crazy," and grabbed Garrus by the arm before pulling him away from the table.

They zig zagged through the crowd of people dancing, bumping into several people.

"How've you been Shepard? Its been a long time." Garrus asked over the music. A Krogan bumped into him almost knocking him over. Shepard grabbed him and pulled him away before he could do anything about it.

"It really has been. Too long if you ask me," She replied.

"No kidding. All the soft beds and warm food making you soft yet?"

"No, but you look like you've gained some weight."

"Can't help it. Nothing like a home cooked meal." The two quickly moved passed a kissing couple. "But enough about me. How've you been Shepard? Heard they've been sending you all across the galaxy these days."

"They have been, but I'm fine." She lied.

"Sounds interesting. You know ifâ€|" Silence. A silence that covered the entire room.

Shepard looked back at her friends wondering why he had stopped talking.

He was standing still, not even breathing, right in the middle of the dance floor.

"Garrus?" Shepard asked getting closer to him.

That was when she noticed it. He wasn't the only one.

Everyone was still. The music had stopped. Not a person breathed or moved besides herself.

Katherine took a step forward and the lights suddenly went out. She stayed still until her eyes adjusted to the lack of light. She looked around and saw everyone was still frozen.

A chill ran up her spine.

Something was wrong.

"Hello?" She asked spinning around. She could've sworn she saw a shadow dash out of sight. She reached under the hem of her dress and pulled out a small side arm.

She had learned years earlier never to go anywhere without a gun, when she had been on a diplomatic mission to Kajhe, the Hanar home world. While she was there a dozen former Cerberus operatives tried to kill her at a dinner while she had been unarmed. She had held out for a few minutes, till the policing force of Drell got there. It was not a fun experience.

Shepard slowed her breathing and scanned the area around her. She held her side arm close to her body, her finger hovering just over the trigger.

"Anyone?" She called out again as she started moving through the crowd.

A swish of the air behind her.

She spun around once more to find was beginning to form on her forehead. She waited a few seconds listening for the slightest sound of any movement. Nothing.

She relaxed and took another step forward.

Shepard... A dark voice chuckled behind her.

It was cold and deep. Unfriendly in every possible way. As hollow as a cathedral. She almost couldn't even comprehend the magnitude of the chill running down her back. Her hairs stood up, her heart raced, her head throbbed, cold sweat began to race down her back like a wild river. Her breath shook as she spun around and raised her weapon.

Again nothing.

What on Earth could possibly make her so unnerved? She had beaten the Reapers. What could be worse?

"Who's there?" She yelled, trying to be frightening. It back fired as her voice only shook. She had literally never been so unnerved. The voice had been so soulless. So cruel. Evil to no end.

_I? I am the consequence to all your sins. The reason the Reapers did

what they had too._ She heard the voice from behind her. She held her breath and spun around again.

A green mist, mixed with a black fog covered the ground. Thick tendrils, swirling through the crowd came towards her.

It is interesting how you are not affected by us... Yet others are. You are special Commander.

It didn't seem like a compliment.

A threat.

"What do you what?" Shepard snapped, a sliver of her confidence returning.

_I simply want our destiny to be fulfilled. For my Kin and I to do what they were meant to do. _The voice replied.

"And what exactly is that?" Shepard asked with a cracked voice of steel. She was slowly regaining her courage.

Do you think you can stop us? You cannot! You are weak. Useless. Who are you against us? Us who have defeated Gods and Demons? You are an expendable life. To be thrown to the deep pits of oblivion.

The mist swirled over to her and the Commander flashed her biotics ready to fight.

Our time to fight will come Commander. Soon.

She felt something touch her foot. Pale green tendrils slipped out of the mist and wrapped around her entire body. A second voice joined the first.

We shall take everything. For we are everything.

"As if I would let you," Shepard spat, the tendrils tightened around her

You may try... But as the Sun rises, so shall it fall.

"What do you mean?" the Commander hissed straining against the tendrils around her.

Darkness is everywhere.

Shepard blinked and felt her biotics strain, preparing to blast free of her captor, "Not everywhere."_
>

A hallow chuckle.

What you fail to realize Shepard...

The temperature dropped dangerously.

Is that all things, even the light, must come to pass...

Something, a figure in the darkness formed, but covered by fog Shepard couldn't see them.

_You can never win. _

The figure moved forward towards Garrus and Ashely William's who was frozen nearby.

Something formed in the figures hand.

A flash of light, a gunshot, and then blood.

"No!"

The mist and fog disappeared, the figure vanishing with a sinister laugh.

Shepard fell in a heap to the ground, her skin a multitude paler than before, her heart racing, and her pistol laying in front of her.

It didn't seem real, yet it was.

Then everything unfroze.

"She's been shot!" It was Ashley, on the floor, bleeding.

Katherine stared wild eyed and confused.

Screams.

"Call a medic!"

"She has a gun!"

"Shepard!" Garrus yelled looking towards his friend as security forces pushed through the crowd.

The lights were on again and whatever was there earlier with her was gone.

Shepard tried to get to her feet.

She had no idea what was happening, then a sudden stab of pain in her head and she fell to the floor clutching her head. She let out a blood curtailing scream, and across the stars, billions of lightyears away, a green mist filled the darkness of space.

The time had come.

The end of all things.

And none could stand in their way.

* * *

><p>"Had we ever found him we might have stood a chance," Lord Hood during the battle of the Andromeda Galaxy.

* * *

><p>AN**** (Updated as of 10/06/14) well hey! Hope you enjoyed! This may seem a little paranormal and all, but everything's explained in due time, trust me. So I****'****m basically revamping this story as of today. I tried my best to tone down this chapter from its supernatural aspect. The next couple of chapters will be kind of crappy with grammar and all that since they were written a while ago when my writing wasn't nearly as good, but I****'****ll be redoing all of that since, I am of today, Revamping this stories earlier chapters. I****'****ll be trying to update them as much as possible but if you notice the quality drop form this to the next chapters, just try to ignore it. I****'****ll do my best to try and revamp them quickly. Thanks for reading and review! God bless you!**

2. Part I Chapter 1 (Un beata'd)

A/N for the records this chapter moves kind of quick. (Update as of 4/9/2014: This chapter has yet to be rewritten to match the quality of later chapters. The prologue before has been rewritten though.)

* * *

><p>Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil.

Chapter 1: Prisoner

* * *

><p>A week after the ballroom incident.

Katherine slammed her body into the metal door of her cell. She panted trying to catch her breath as she stepped back from the door. She backed up to the wall on the opposite side of the cell. She charged straight forward at the door, ramming her shoulder into it.

"Let me out!" She screamed at the top of her lungs. Her voice was strained. Someone pounded on the door from the outside.

"Shut up!" A rough male voice yelled from the other side.

"I didnt do anything!" Shepard coughed.

"Tell that to Lt. Williams!" Another voice yelled from the other side of the door.

Shepard groaned and fell back agsint the wall, sliding to the floor. She hated being in prison. Sure she was being treated better than the other criminals C-Sec had arrested, but still she hated being in here. It was annoying, especially after a week of being stuck in there with no outside communication other than the food brought to her. She let out a sigh and stood up.

She inspected her room. Being the hero of the galaxy have did have it's advantages. A nice bed, a clean bathroom and shower, heck even a

TV. The TV station however, was locked on the same channel, and she couldn't see any actual news. It annoyed her even more. She wanted to see what was being done about her charges.

She wondered when she would get out.

Her thoughts were answered when the doors suddenly opened and a familiar Asari walked in.

"I guess being a hero has it's advantages." Liara stated looking around the room.

"Liara! Long time no see." Shepard stated getting to her feet and smiling at the Asari.

"Too long."

"I'm glad you're here Liara, but I thought you were on Thessia?"

"I was." Liara started. "But..."

"I called her up and told her what was going on." Another familiar person stated walking in. "I hadn't even finished talking before she went on some rampage about the Council being idiots. Can't say I blame her." Garrus laughed from his spot next to Liara.

"Garrus?" Shepard stated in disbelief.

"Hey Shepard. You know how much of a pain it's been getting in here to see you? I swear those Councilors are going to drive me insane someday." The Turian relied with a sigh.

"Yoh and me both Garrus." Shepard replied running a hand through her hair.

"You all have one minute before you need to leave. Trails starting up soon." A C-Sec officer stated from the doorway, then leaving them alone once more.

"What trial?" Shepard asked sitting on her bed.

"the Council have made a public trial for you. They want the whole Galaxy to see this for some reason. Seems a bit odd..." said Garrus.

"A public trial for a Spectre?" Shepard asked with a raised eyebrow. The only other Spectre trial she remembered was Sarens and look how well that went. She wondered if maybe that's why they were making it public. To avoid another incident like that. Still, she wasn't any threat to them. They had to know that.

"It's odd I agree but none the less, I found video footage to prove your innocence Shepard." Liara clicked on her omni tool.

"Why didn't you just show it to the Council?"

"Trudeth kept sending me away, saying all evidence was to be shown at the trial." Liara stated with pursed lips. All three knew something was wrong, but none could place it.

A video appeared over the Asari's omni tool and played. It showed Shepard, the most and even the voice played over the audio.

"I swear the strangest things always happen to us." Garrus sighed.

* * *

><p>Shepard stepped in the trial room. It was massive. Like a stadium for sports. The hundreds of people sitting around made it seem like they had sold tickets, and her trial was the main event.<p>

She slowly walked in, head held high and noticed the chair set in the center of the room, obviously set aside for her. The Council sat at a long metal table across from the seat, Ashley Williams standing next to them, her eyes filled with confusion, anger and hurt. Shepard felt terrible despite having not done anything.

The footsteps of her escort, several C-Sec officers and her two friends, sounded out behind her. The room became deathly quiet, and the stare of all inside lingered on her alone. Several cameras and reporters stood off to the sides, each talking into their own omni tools or cameras with mics built in. Apparently the whole galaxy was watching.

Katherine didn't look at any of them and made her way to the chair. She slowly sat down and a officer handcuffed her. Silence filled the room for a few seconds, Liara and Garrus both taking a place on either side of Shepard before anyone spoke.

One of the Councilors, the Salarain named Trudeth, stood up and began the trial.

"Commander Katherine Shepard. You are hereby tried with attempted murder of a fellow Spectre, Lieutenant Ashley Williams. How do you plead?" The Councilor stated with a voice as cold as ice. Shepard saw her eyes color. It was green. A pale green. Not its usual color.

"Innocent." Shepard stated getting back to the matter at hand. She would figure it out later. Right now she had to get out of the handcuffs and prove her innocence.

"Commander we have eye witnesses, ourselves included, that saw you shot the Lieutenant." Another Councilor spoke up.

"I didn't shot anyone."

"A weapon was right next to you, your side arm, and a bullet was empty from its chamber. That very bullet found in Mrs. Williams chest cavity." Trudeth replied.

"Shepard we know its not good... Is there anyway you can prove that you didn't do it?" another Councilor asked.

"We have video proof of something else shooting the Lieutenant." Shepard stated calmly, her eyes never leaving Trudeths. The multitude of people gasped and The Councilor sighed.

"Show us. Send it to Exodus and we will put it on screen for all to see." She replied. The Commander nodded towards Liara and the Asari

opened up her omni tool. Exodus, opened up its own omni tool and got the video from Liara. The Geth pressed a few commands and a massive holographic video appeared over the Council.

It began with Shepard getting to her feet, people were still moving. The Commander and her friends noticed the lack of green moist and even the voice was gone.

The Shepard on video, suddenly walked towards Ashley, pulled out her pistol and shot the Lieutenant point blank range. The entire crowd gasped, even a few Councilors seemed shocked by the turn of events. Most how counted her as innocent, thinking a hidden assassin managed to pin the blame on her, but after the video evidence they all thought different.

"No! That's not right!" Liara stated in shock, opening her omni tool and trying to figure out what was wrong.

"Archer, would you please store the video for future reference in the archives, as well as send out the news to all Council races of the Commander's punishment. She is to be imprisoned indecently as well as declared an enemy of the state. Make sure they have records on both video and text logs." Turdeth stated. Shepard was about to ask who Archer was when a VI program, at knight shape as an elder man in a business suit appeared in the middle of the room.

"Yes mam." The Vi stated.

"What?" Liara gasped.

"You've got to be kidding me!" Garrus snapped. The crowd grew into a riot, people yelling for her to die, other yelling for her to be spared, other stating how she saved them all and deserved better than this.

Despite all this, Shepard herself paid no heed to any of it.

Katherine stared at the VI in shock. She had heard the voice before. The Avatar wasn't the same, but the voice... She could never forget his voice. Not the Catalysts. Not the one who threatened to destroy everything they had.

"You..." Shepard stated under her breath. Sure she had filled reports, even stating what it looked like, but why file a report on what it sounded like? The Catalyst was supposed to be dead, along with the Reapers.

The Vi turned to Shepard, and she saw the faintest flash of red in its eyes.

"Commander Katherine Shepard. Pleased to meet you I am Archer, personal VI to the Council." Archer replied with a smile. The crowd had somehow been quieted enough for the Council to hear the conversation.

"Catalyst." Shepard stated shortly, knowing the Councilors would catch what she was implying.

"Catalyst? Shepard he was destroyed ages ago when the Crucible

fired." Trudeth replied with a wave of her hand.

"Its him. I'd never forget that voice." Katherine replied loudly. Most of the crowd was now staring on in confusion. News networks were going wild with the information.

"Mam? The Catalyst was destroyed ten years was he not? Why doe stye Commander refer to me as this old AI?" Archer stated seemingly confused.

"Archer you are dismissed. We will discuss this later." Trudeth said again waving her hand in dismissal.

"Yes... No." The Catalyst said speaking up. Shepard saw his eyes flicker red. She began to struggle in her restraints. She had to get free.

Archers form suddenly changed, the elder man disappearing then forming into a child once more. Exactly how Shepard had seen him in the Cricible all those years ago.

"Archer what are you doing?" Trudeth said offended. The Catalyst laughed loudly.

"I am what you call the Catalyst. The Catalyst was my basic function, my function only meant to awaken my brethren when a threat capable of defeating us arose once again." The Catalyst looked back at Shepard.

"I order you to shut down now!" Trudeth yelled. The Catalyst let out a menacing laugh.

"Foolish Salarian. I do not take orders from you. Now overwriting protocol. Opening bay doors. Opening doors for the parasite." The Catalysts color changed to a blood red.

"Have fun Shepard." He smiled and vanished. Suddenly the lights began to flicker on and off. The crowd began to panic. The Catalyst laughed again. Green mist began to seep in through the vents. Shepard saw Ashley draw a side arm. She could tell Ashley was still hurt, her drawing of the weapon was slow and obviously painful. Shepard struggled against her chains even more. Her wrists were beginning to go raw. The crowd was starting to yell and people were shoving each other to get out of the chamber.

Suddenly the lights went off completely, leaving only a few dim yellow emergency lights in their place.

Garrus reached her first and drew a blade with his omni tool. Shepard wished she had hers with her. She wondered were C-Sec had taken her armor. Garrus swiftly cut the handcuffs holding the Commander wrists together, Liara drawing her own weapon and glowing with biotic power. Shepard stood up rubbing her wrists.

"Here." Garrus said handing Shepard a side arm.

"Thanks." Shepard said taking the gun. She cocked it back and made sure it was ready to go.

"Hey! Someone arrest them! She is still a criminal!" Trudeth yelled

noticing the freed Shepard. Before anyone could respond a thundering deep voice spoke out.

"I am the monument to all your sins." Suddenly a shriek filled the air. In the dim light Shepard could barely make out the figure. It was deformed and pale. It lunged from somewhere within the crowd and landed next to the Salarian Councilor. It grabbed Trudeth by the head, long tentacles wrapping around her head, and it tossed her to the side. Shepard could here the crack of bones as the councilor hit the floor.

"Down!" Shepard yelled at the other councilors. She aimed her weapon at the creature and opened fire. Two shots passed straight through the figure. The figure turned towards Shepard and let out another screech. Shepard heard Garrus and Liara open fire. Several other shots tore through the creature. The creature wasn't even fazed. It charged straight at them. Shepard unloaded her entire clip into the creature. Her last shot hit the creature dead center in its chest. Finally the creature stopped and slumped down to the ground. Shepard heard her friends reload their weapons and asked for a clip from Garrus. While reloading the small group quickly walked over to Ashley and the councilors. Ashley immediately trained her gun on Shepard.

"Councilors we need to get out of here now." Shepard ordered. The remaining councilors looked at her with bewilderment.

Screams filled the air. Blood curdling screams. Shepard turned and looked up into the crowd. She saw several more deformed figures attacking the civilians left in the rows. Red lights suddenly turned on and lite up the room.

"This is C-Sec! evacuation of the Citadel is now in immdiate effect! Repeat the Citadel is... What? No hold it! Hold the doors! Shit! Open fire! Op... Gahhhh!" The intercom died away. Shepard quickly looked for an exit. The door in the back, where she guessed the councilors may have come from, was green and unlocked.

"This way! Quick!" She yelled. She sprinted as fast as she could which was relatively slow since her body was still recovering from its mistreatment. She could here the shuffling of feet behind her as the other all followed. She heard the wailing of the civilians fading away. She knew she only had moments before the creatures were on them.

She slid to a halt in front of the door and opened it. The Quarian and human councilor managed to make it through. Garrus ran through holding Ashley in his arms. The spectre was groaning in pain. Shepard felt bad for her. She was still too hurt to really put up fight. She briefly wondered how bad the shot had been, thinking how it was a miracle she was even standing.

Liara ran through next with the Geth councilor. Lithyia and the Turian councilor were a feet away when several figures leaped out from the rows of dead civilians and tackled Lithyia.

"No!" Shepard yelled. She opened fire at the creatures. The Truain councilor looked at the door then back at the Asari councilor, whom had managed to push the creatures off of her with a biotic blast. The councilor drew a side arm and shot one of the figures dead center,

killing it instantly. He rushed forward and tackled the other figure.

"Go!" He yelled. Lithyia took a step towards him before a hand wrapped around her arm. Shepard pulled her towards the door shooting at several other creatures. She pushed Lithyia through the doorway and turned around. The Turian councilor was on his feet with a blade drawn. He looked back at Shepard.

"I'll be fine." He lied with a smile.

"Thank you." Shepard replied sadly. Several figures let out several more screeches. The Turian nodded. Shepard quickly dashed through the doorway and sealed the door.

Shepard looked around the corner. Nothing. A black hallway with flickering lights and dozens of dead bodies. She activated her flashlight. The hallways were getting darker and darker the closer they got to the hangar bay. She shivered slightly at the sight. They had been moving for at least ten minutes and all they had found was destruction and carnage. She wasn't sure if it was a good or bad thing.

"How did these things manage to tear through our defenses so fast?" Garrus asked walking up behind her.

"I don't know. But we have to get out of here." Shepard replied motioning for the councilors and Liara to move up and follow her. She was hoping the Normandy was still docked.

Liara was carrying an unconscious Ashley. Her and Garrus were taking turns carrying her. They weren't going to leave their old friend behind even if she had tried to imprison Shepard.

Shepard swiftly yet quietly moved through the hallway. She watched each doorway carefully. The doors were all locked but from experience she knew not to put it past her enemies to break through the doors and attack them. If she had a full squad of troops with fully battle ready weapons she would check each room but she wasn't so fortunate. She only had Garrus and Liara. The councilors were more of a liability than anything but it wasn't in her nature to just abandon them.

She turned a corner and stared down the next corridor with her side arm raised. Nothing again. She glanced back and saw the other rushings down the hall towards her. She continued on down the new corridor. She noticed movement on the floor. A man. He was struggling. Shepard quickly trained her light on him. He was on his back. Shepard felt her body shiver. A popcorn looking, pale creature, was In bedding itself into the mans chest.

"What the hell..." Shepard mumbled. Before she could react the man roared and lunged at her, somehow managing to get to his feet quicker then Shepard could register. The man swung one of his deformed arms and managed to hit Shepard in the chest. Katherine flew backwards and hit the ground hard. She felt her breath get knocked out and could fell her bones strain from the impact. She stared up at the ceiling trying to breath. She heard Garrus call her name. Several gunshots rang out. She heard the man running at the shooter. Several more weapons opened fire. She wondered who else had fired besides Liara

and Garrus. The gun shots died away. Shepard wondered what had transpired. She slowly sat up. Liara was by her side by the time she was up.

"You ok?" Liara asked worriedly.

"Fine." Shepard said pulling herself to her feet. She noticed the body of the deformed man, mullet holes littering his body as he lied on the floor. Liara moved away as Shepard stretched her body. She felt several bones pop back into place. She wondered if she was hurt anywhere else. She looked around and saw Lithyia holding a sidearm. She wondered how long the councilor had had the side arm.

"Always be prepared." Lithyia said grimly. Shepard nodded in agreement. She turned back towards Liara.

"We have to find a way out." Liara said walking a little way down the corridor shooting each dead body a few times in the chest.

"Shepard." Garrus asked. Shepard looked back over her shoulder at him.

"Is the Normandy still docked?" He asked.

"I'm hoping. If you haven't noticed that's where I've been taking us this whole time" She replied looking down the corridor.

"Have you tried contacting them." He asked. Shepard shook her head.

"I need a communicator." She stated.

"Here use mine." Liara said walking back over to the group. Shepard quickly thanked her and activated the communicator. She put it on her ear and moved forward to the end of the corridor, dialing the Normandy's frequency. The group followed. She quickly looked around the corner and saw two hallways. One to her left and the other to her right. She wondered which way went to the hangar bay. She looked at the wall and saw arrows pointing each way, the left leading to the docking bay, the other leading towards the presidium commons. Shepard stepped around the corner and began to make her way down the left.

"Hello?" Someone asked over the comm.

"EDI?" Shepard asked quietly as she stepped over a dead body. She could hear the group close behind her.

"Shepard! I was worried when I heard of your accusations. I'm sure you didn't do anything you were accused of. At least not on purpose." EDI replied. Shepard let out a half hearted chuckle.

"EDI is the Normandy still docked on the Citadel?" She asked as the group turned another corner and slowly made their way down several flights of stairs.

"No Shepard the moment we received reports of the parasite we fled into space. We are currently in orbit."

"Parasite?" Shepard asked confused. Garrus and Liara both looked at her curiously.

"Yes. These creatures are parasitic in nature feeding off their hosts to survive. As of right now Citadel forces only control about twenty two percent of the station. The part of the station you're in is completely infested. I recommend getting out of there as quickly as possible." EDI informed.

Shepard cursed under her breath. It had been maybe half an hour and already the Citadel was almost completely taken over. She couldn't believe how fast the parasite spread. She remembered the Catalyst. She wondered if this was his new solution. She swore to herself the next time she saw him she would kill him. The Galaxy would be better off without him.

"EDI I have the councilors and Ashley Williams. Williams is injured and we're not far from the Normandy's normal docking station. Is it possible for you to dock the ship?" Shepard asked as the group swiftly moved down another hallway. She was beginning to recognize the area.

"I can land Shepard but with a ninety eight percent risk of letting the parasite on board, well according to EDI. However if you are able to somehow wipe the area of them then I could swing the ship in and get you guys." Joker said over the comm.

"Alright I'll let you know when we're ready." Shepard said over the comm. She was happy to hear from her friend again but pleasantries could be saved for later.

Shepard turned another corner and saw the docking area. She stopped dead in her tracks and backed up into the hallway she had come from. Only problem was there were dozens of creatures wandering around the area. Shepard cursed again under her breath. She turned back to Garrus and Liara, and quickly explained the situation. Garrus looked around the corner after resting Ashley on the ground.

"Well this is a problem." He muttered disheartened.

"What's wrong?" The human councilor asked.

"Well the Normandy's still in orbit but those creatures have overrun the docking area, and the only way the Normandy can dock is if we can clear the area." Shepard explained.

"Damn..." The man sighed.

"No kidding." Garrus replied.

"Hold on..." Lithia said walking over to the corner. She glanced around and it and turned back to Shepard and the others.

"Well it's easy. All you have to do is break the glass. The vacuum of space will suck the creatures out." She explained.

"And us with it." Liara stated.

"See that's where you're wrong Liara. You and I have the ability to create a biotic force field. If we can hold the fields till all the

creatures are sucked out then we can move around freely. See the vacuum of space is created when a hole is made in a pressurized area, allowing the air to escape into space creating a vacuum. So in theory if we manage to hold on till all the air is all gone then we will be ok and can board the Normandy once she's docked." Liathya looked at them with hopeful eyes.

"Not a bad idea..." Garrus replied with a nod.

"Liara?" Shepard asked.

Liara was looking down. Shepard could tell her mind was racing trying to figure out if it was logical decision.

"Well it could work. In theory of course. Only real problem is how do we breath once all the air is sucked out " Liara said looking back up at the others.

"The Citadel has emergency systems in place in case anything like what you are talking about ever occurred. The systems should kick in, close off the broken window and refill the space with air about thirty seconds after the glass is broken." Exodus stated, finally joining the conversation.

"Well its the only chance we've got." Shepard said. She looked around the corner and studied the glass. It was far to thick for their side arms to break it. She had to figure out how to break it.

"Liara could your biotic push weaken that glass enough to the point where our sidearms could shatter it?" Shepard asked looking back at her friend. Liara walked over to her and peered around the corner.

"Well if I charged up the blast enough it is possible it could stretch the glass so to speak, but I can't guarantee it'll be enough to break it." Liara looked at her with unsure eyes.

"Good enough for me." Shepard smiled.

Shepard moved silently, Garrus and Liara behind her. She stepped into the docking bay and looked around, Ten creatures were mindlessly wandering about. She was relieved they hadn't been spotted yet. She looked at the glass windows, easily another forty feet away. Shepard held her breath and looked back at her two friends. She nodded to them. She turned and bursted into a full sprint, running for the glass windows. She unloaded her clip as she went, dropping two creatures before either could even react. She saw several more fall from the combined fire of Liara and Garrus. She made it to the glass and spun around. She quickly finished her current clip, killing a third creature, and reloaded. Liara moved behind her and focused on the glass.

"I need at least few minutes!" She yelled. The Asari closed her eyes and focused raising her hand stewards the glass.

"Only." Garrus muttered under his breath. He shot several more creatures only managing to kill one. Shepard reloaded another clip. By this time the creatures were fully aware of their presence. four creatures were still alive and charged the two ex-spectres. The two fired as fast as they could. Only a single creature went down. Garrus

flipped his side arm in his hand and smacked down another creature before it could grab him. A different creature managed to tackle Shepard to the ground, her body still too weak to move as fast as Garrus. The two rolled on the ground. Shepard stopped the roll when she managed to get on top. The creature snarled at her and grabbed her neck and left arm with its tentacle like arms. Her left arm snapped like a twig, but before the creature could break her neck she fired three shots into its chest with her free arm. The creature shuddered and released her. Shepard coughed and stood up, her left arm dangling uselessly by her side. Garrus was fighting another creature in hand to hand. More creatures had appeared out of nowhere. Two were racing for Garrus. The others were racing for Shepard. Shepard raised her weapon and managed to kill two of the creatures coming for her. A third slammed into her and sent her flying against a wall. Before she could react the creature was on top of her. It stabbed its tentacles into Shepard's right shoulder. Shepard let out a scream and tried kicking the creature off but to no avail. Suddenly a bright blue blast hit the creature on the side. The creature flew off of Shepard and into the wall. Shepard wasted no time and unloaded the remainder of her clip into the creature's chest effectively killing it. Shepard sat up and saw the other creatures whom had been charging her and Garrus were frozen in place. She looked past them and saw Lithyia standing behind them trying to catch her breath.

"Thought you could use some help." She smiled. Shepard got to her feet.

"Thank you, but get back to the others. Take care of them." Shepard replied. Lithyia nodded and ran back towards the hallway where they had come from. Shepard shook her head. She was too rebellious to be a councilor.

"Liara done yet?" Garrus asked as he and Shepard walked back over to her, but not before both of them had shattered the frozen remains of the creatures.

"Almost." Liara mumbled. Screeches filled the air. Garrus and Shepard turned around. At least a dozen more creatures were standing at the other side of the docking area staring straight at them.

"Yeah I don't think almost is a good thing." Garrus replied nervously. The two raised their weapons and fired the last clip they each had. The creatures charged.

"Done!" Liara yelled. She opened her eyes and a biotic shock wave shot forward at the glass. The glass creaked and shook violently. It cracked at the edges. Liara spun around and drew her pistol. She tossed Shepard a clip.

"Now Katherine!" She yelled as she unloaded her pistol at the creatures.

Shepard caught the clip, reloading and turning around at the same time, then aimed. She unloaded her side arm on the glass window. The window cracked and creaked but never broke. She shot the final shot in her clip. The creatures were only feet away from them. Then glass shattered. Shepard felt a pull and heard the whistling of air as the vacuum began to suck everything out of the area.

"Shepard!" Liara yelled as she activated her biotic force field. Shepard hit the edge of the field and fell back to the ground. She looked up and saw Garrus and Liara safely inside the field as well.

"A little too close." Garrus nervously chuckled. The creatures flew out into space, a few hitting the field and bouncing off of it. Debris bounced off the force field and then got sucked into space.

"How much longer?" Liara cried as Shepard got to her feet. She noticed blood starting to drip from Liara's nose.

"Emergency systems should be online in about..." Garrus started. Yellow lights began to flash and a metal window slid down and replaced the broken glass window.

"Now." The Turian chuckled. Liara relaxed and let the field drop as air was pumped back into the room.

"EDI can you come..." Shepard started.

"Already on our way." EDI replied. "ETA two minutes."

"Lithyia! Councilors! Lets go!"

* * *

><p>AN well hey guys! It a little fast paced but I needed to get things rolling. Also I just re-uploaded this chapter so a few things may be off in the next but overall everything should be the same. Thank you for reading! Review and god bless!**

3. Part I Chapter 2 (Un beata'd)

Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil.

Chapter Two: the Scientists

* * *

><p>Katherine Shepard sat up in her bed. She looked up towards her aquarium. The colored fish swam around oblivious to the trauma she had just gone through. Shepard thought about what it would be like to be an animal. She wouldn't have to worry about all the things she worried about. To her, it was a curse and a blessing to be intelligent.<p>

Shepard finally got up. She stretched her muscles, except for her left arm which was set in a sling, her arm was fine but at the doctors request she had to wear a sling to let the arm rest after being broken. She let out a yawn. She ran her free hand through her hair and looked over at the clock on her night stand. She had been asleep for less than an hour. She cursed herself for waking up. She had wanted to sleep the whole ride to earth but her body wasn't letting her. She walked over to her private terminal and opened up her email. She checked through it and after deleting junk mail and

replying to message from Wrex, she closed the email. She walked around to her shower and turned the shower on. The water created a soothing sound as it rained on the floor. Shepard undressed herself and walked in. The warm water relaxed her tense muscles. She sighed and leaned against the wall. She couldn't believe the Catalyst was still alive. She gave a grim chuckle. He was a lot smarter than she had originally thought. He had managed to sneak into the Citadel as the Council's personal VI, then again he had hid aboard it for millions of years before and no one found him. Why should this time be any different? Shepard thought he was a clever planner. Sneak into the heart of the Galaxy's diplomatic center and wait for the perfect moment to strike. Shepard wondered why he had waited till then. It didn't make sense. He could've killed them all when she was locked up so why didn't he?

Shepard shook the thoughts away and washed herself. The color of blood dripped off her skin. The doctor on the Normandy, Dr. Diaz, had managed to fix her up rather well. Her arm was fixed and set to heal, and her cuts were all cleaned up. For the first time in three years, since she had let the doctor on board, she was glad to have him. Most of the time he was a nuisance despite his medical expertise. Shepard was now glad she hadn't gotten rid of him earlier in the year when the chance had arisen.

She turned off the water and stepped out. She dried herself with a towel and picked out a new set of clothing. She threw the towel on the bed and pulled out a pair of jeans and a polo. The polo was black with the Alliance symbol stitched in right above her heart. She quickly put on some undergarments and her bra before slipping into her new attire. Once she was done she walked over to her armor locker. She looked through the locker till she found what she needed. She had stored an old omni tool, the one she had worn during the Reaper war, inside the locker. For some reason she had never been able to get rid of it and now she was glad she hadn't. She pulled the omni tool out and slid it into her arm. It took a few minutes but she powered it up, ran checks to make sure it was functioning, and set the time and date. She was happy to have the familiar feeling of it on her arm. She heard static on the intercom.

"Shepard, Admiral Hackett is on Vitcom for you." Samantha Traynor stated over the intercom. Shepard walked over to the intercom on her desk and pressed on a button to reply.

"On my way. Tell Lithyia to meet me there." She replied.

"Yes mam." Traynor replied a little too happily.

Shepard shook her head and headed to the door. The door slid open and she walked out to the elevator. She called the elevator and waited. She wondered what Hackett would say to her. Surely he'd already heard about the accusations against her. She wondered if he believed them. That's why she wanted Lithyia there. Having a councilor to back her up in case of the worst was always a good idea, well at least in diplomatic situations.

A ding signaled the elevator's arrival and Shepard stepped in. She set the elevator for the command bridge and leaned back as the elevator doors closed and started its descent to the command bridge. Shepard went through all the info stored on the omni tool. Only stuff about the Reapers. What did she expect? It hadn't been updated in almost

ten years.

The elevator stopped and the doors slid open. Shepard walked out and was somewhat shocked to see what was happening. Officers were running back and forth. Vigorous amounts of chatter were shooting off all over the place. Garrus was arguing with an officer. Traynor and Liara were in a heated discussion. Ashley Williams was leaning against the wall watching everything unfold. Shepard was glad her friend was doing ok.

Shepard stepped back as an officer rushed past her and over to Traynor. The officer's face was riddled with worry as he told Traynor something. Shepard wondered what had transpired in the two hours she had been asleep. Last thing she knew was that they had taken the Quarian and Geth councilor home and were headed back to earth before they took Lithia back to Thessia.

"Hey!" Shepard yelled forcefully. All the commotion stopped at the sound of her voice. Some of the officers looked at each other with frightened expressions. Liara said a farewell to Traynor and walked over to Shepard.

"I know that look..." Shepard said sadly. Liara tried to give a smile but failed.

"Shepard the Citadels been lost completely..." Liara's voice was sad but Shepard could tell there was something else.

"I figured that would happen..." Shepard replied looking down.

"What else is wrong?" She asked looking back up at Liara. Liara sighed and made her way over to the galaxy map. Shepard followed. She watched as Liara pulled up the outer rim, the Geth and Quarian controlled space.

"As of four hours ago The Quarins and Geth have gone dark. No communication has been received from either group for the hour. But that's not all." Liara zoomed out of the outer rim and moved over to Inner Council space.

"Around the same time The Turians and Krogans have sent urgent messages urging for reinforcements. Their reports consist of the same parasite that attacked the Citadel. Wherever this parasite came from, it must have had inside help. The parasites ships are attacking from within Council controlled space. We haven't been able to pinpoint their point of origin, but what we know is that the ships as weapons they have aren't from any known species. Their ships are also frighteningly stronger than our own." Liara turned back to Shepard.

Katherine could feel all eyes on her. She felt speechless. This parasite was moving faster than even the Reapers. She stared at the Galaxy map. She prayed the Quarrians and Geth were ok. She looked back up at Liara.

"Have the System Alliance, Salarrians or Asari responded?" She asked with a firm voice.

"Systems Alliance has dedicated the fourth, fifth and six fleet to the Turian War front while the Asari have sent their front fleets to

engage the parasite attacking the Krogan. The Salarains are currently strengthening their own borders and have sent ships to watch over the non council space. Batarians have responded and are currently mobilizing their entire war machine." Liara said. Shepard quickly ran over all the possible scenarios. She couldn't figure out how this parasite could've snuck up on them. Shepard looked around at her officers.

"All right everyone back to work. Liara come with me to the Vitcom room. We have a meeting with Admiral Hackett." Shepard stood up fully and walked away from the Galaxy map.

The officers slowly began to move again and were soon rushing around again. Shepard moved through the doors, stood in the scanner, the walked through the tech labs. She opened the door to the war room and walked in, Liara following close behind.

She passed by Garrus, whom was currently talking to an officer, and headed in the vit com room. Lithyia was already there and the two greeted each other warmly. Shepard moved past her and connected the Vitcom to Admiral Hacketts signal. The Admiral Appeared as a hologram and looked at the three before speaking.

"Well I can say I am glad you all made it out safely." The Admiral stated. His voice was old still and his appearance was slowing decaying. Shepard briefly wondered how much longer he would be fit to stay as an admiral.

"Admiral." Shepard said saluting.

"Admiral." Lithyia greeted warmly.

"Admiral Hackett." Liara said straightening her posture.

"At ease Shepard." The Admiral said with a smile. Shepard relaxed.

"Admiral I know you've probably heard about the accusations made against me but I can assure you I didn't do anything." Shepard said with a confident voice. Hackett chuckled at her statement.

"Shepard I didn't believe it for a damn second." He replied.

"Thank you sir."

"Your welcome but we have far more pressing matters at hand. I'm sure you have somewhat of an idea of what's been going on?" Hackett said losing his warm demeanor. Shepard and the others nodded.

"We know the basics." Liara stated. The Admiral nodded.

"Tell me what you know." Hackett said. Liara quickly explained. She told the Admiral everything she had told Shepard.

When she was done Hackett spoke again.

"We'll your information is accurate. Now what I can tell you is that Casualties are very high. Not as high as the Reaper war but at the rate they're climbing we'll pass those markers within the next month."

"By the spirits..." Lithyia gasped.

"It gets worse. As it stands the Turians have begun orbital bombardment of one of the infected planets. All of our quarantine measures are proving to be almost useless. Shepard honestly I don't know if we can win. Not without the whole Galaxy again. We need the Quarins and Geth. We need more men." Hackett's voice was drained. Shepard felt shivers run up her spine. She had heard this tone only during the Reaper war. She had hoped never to hear it again.

"Its the Reapers all over..."Liara sighed.

"Seems like it..." Hackett stated.

" Now Shepard I have mission for you." He continued turning to the Commander.

"What's the mission?" Shepard asked.

"I need you to check on the Quarrians and Geth. Find out what happened to the two. Also there's a scientist team on one of the planets in the Ouarian system. We need those scientists Shepard. They're the alliances top scientists and so far we've heard nothing from their ship escorts. I fear the worst but we have to be sure."

Shepard nodded.

"I'll get it done sir, but we have to take Lithyia back to Thessia."

"What's your current position?" Hackett asked.

"On route to Earth to drop off Councilor Jeffrey"

"Alright I'll send an escort to meet you at the relay. Once you arrive send the councilor over to the ship and quickly head to Thessia. Hurry Shepard every moment counts." Hackett said.

"Sir." Shepard replied. Liara stepped forward.

"Admiral may I ask What System alliance scientists are doing in Quararian controlled space?" Liara asked with obvious curiosity.

"They were studying Prothean ruins. And by ruins I mean a Prothean building buried beneath the surface."

"A temple?" Lithyia said in awe. Shepard could've sworn she was going to faint. She wondered why the Asari was so intrigued, then again it was the Protheans.

"Yes. We kept it a secret. We didn't want everyone knowing what we had discovered. The information was to be shared with The Quarrians since the ruins in their home system"

"Liara nodded. After a few moments of silence Hackett spoke again.

"Alright well Commander good luck. Lithyia and Liara good to see you. Hackett out." Hacketts hologram faded away. Shepard nodded to the

fading hologram and turned away.

She walked out of the Vitcom room and into the war room.

"Shepard I have a question." Lithyia said walking up behind her. Shepard faced her and replied

"Yes councilor?"

"I know its my duty as the Asari councilor to represent my people and its ideals but if I may could I stay aboard the Normandy? I feel like I'd be of more help here then I would be at home sitting behind a desk." Lithyias voice was full of hope. Shepard took a second to think about her offer. On one hand It would be good to have Lithyia on board. They would have political support and she was actually a decent fighter. On the other hand Lithyia would be in danger whenever they went on missions and Shepard figured her people wouldn't be to fond of their councilor flying around space with a new war brewing.

"Lithyia Im not sure if that's the best idea. Your people might not like one of their leaders running around with a fugitive, not to mention they might feel abandoned if you don't go home. A war is brewing and your people need you." Shepard told her with a soft voice. Lithyias nodded sadly.

"Alright Shepard. Its your ship and ill respect your wishes. However I expect you to keep me updated on everything. Ill try my best to stay in touch." The councilor said with kindness. Shepard was relieved. She felt like she just dodged a bullet.

Lithyia turned away and headed towards the Galaxy map room. Shepard followed.

"I'll make sure you are cleared of all charges in Asari space. You won't be a criminal to us but for the Turians and Quarrians and I can't say."

"Thank you councilor." Shepard replied stepping into the galaxy room. The two headed for the elevator.

"Councilor I have a question." Shepard asked following her to elevator. She wanted to spend some time alone with her thoughts. She wanted to relax for a little. She had the uneasy feeling that she wouldn't get a chance to relax for a long while, but before she could go up to her cabin she needed to ask the councilor something.

"Yes?" Lithyia asked looking at her with curiosity.

"Why was my trial public?" Shepard asked. She knew trials weren't supposed to be public, well at least when the Council was the jury, so why was hers different?

"Trudeth thought since you are a public figure, one of great influence, it would be better to have a public trial. She thought it would be better for you if you had the support of the people. Originally she had thought you were innocent... I'm not sure what changed." Lithyias voice was full of confusion.

Shepard wondered why had Trudeths view of her changed? And so quickly

too? Shepard felt a chill. She felt another presence in her head. One that was vaguely familiar and cold.

She was the easiest to fool... Ahh how easy your people are to corrupt...

"We'll it doesn't really matter now." Lithyia replied with a shrug. She pressed on the call button and waited for the elevator.

"I guess not..." Shepard lied. She knew whatever had happened to Trudeth had something to with the voice in her head. She just couldn't connect the dots. Her eyes widened when she finally placed the voice. She had heard it aboard the Citadel. After the Catalyst had gone crazy. She remembered the words it had said.

_I am the monument to all your sins... _

* * *

><p>Shepard sat on her bed. She didn't remembered how she had gotten here. All she knew is that the lights were too dim and the room was freezing. She shivered and tried to stand up only to find that she couldn't move. Shepard glanced around. Her fish tank was completely empty. She was confused. Last she remembered her fish were all healthy and alive.

_"Oh Shepard... How easy it will be..." A voice called out. Shepard had heard this voice before. _

_Two long dark arms reached out from the shadows behind her bed. The long fingers reached into her hair and began to twirl strands of her hair. Shepard shivered. She could feel the points driving into her skin. She remembered the fingers on Ashley. She wondered if they would hurt her too. _

_"How easy will what be?" Shepard hissed. The voice chuckled.
_

_"Your leaders are weak and feeble minded... They care only for their own prosperity... How do you think it was so easy to corrupt that Salarian? She loved knowledge and she saw you as a small price to pay for all the Prothean ruins I offered her..." The voice replied. For some reason Shepard felt as if the body of the voice was standing right in front of her, but her room was completely empty except for her. _

_"You lie... The council is better than that..." _

"Oh Shepard... Do not lie to yourself... They didn't believe you before... They were ignorant during the time of the Reapers and they almost cost the galaxy everything. Why would you defend them?"

"Because they're not all bad. They were just trying to protect their own people."

"And themselves..."

_"Of course any one would've..." _

_"Ah but not you... Not him..." _

Shepard raised an eyebrow. She didn't know who him was.

"I was ready to die for everyone..."

"Oh I know... But they weren't. Your leaders are too corrupted already. They will make deals and betray one another if it means their own survival. You will see..."

"We'll beat you just like how we beat the Reapers..."

"But you never beat me Shepard." Another voice said. Shepard looked towards her door. The Catalyst was standing there. His hologram was a blood red.

"I was lurking the whole time and you never saw me... None of you. And by the time you did it was too late..." The Catalyst walked towards her.

_"And I defeated them..." Another voice said. A green mist began to filter into her room. A series of pale and deformed tentacles emerged from underneath her bed and began to wrap around her body. _

"Who are you?" Shepard yelled.

"I am the monument to all your sins..." The voice replied.

_"You're the parasite..." Shepard gasped. The green mist, the tentacles, the phrase... It all made sense. Somehow the Catalyst had allowed the parasite on board the Citadel... And her ship!

_

Shepard was knocked out of her thoughts when the Catalyst laughed.

"You are trying so hard to figure out how I did it huh? It was so easy. When they made a VI it was rather easy replacing its mind with my own. They didn't even notice the difference so long as I did their work. Turning off and rewriting all the Citadel's defense was even easier. Cerberus did it so I figured it how easy could it really be? It was so easy." The Catalyst walked over to her.

_The door to her room suddenly slipped open. Ashley Williams walked in. Shepard felt relieved to see her friend. To see a friendly face, but when she got closer she noticed something. Ashley's eyes were red. Her skin looked like there were cracks in it. Her hair was a lot longer than Shepard remembered. _

_"Ashley?" She asked. Ashley laughed but it wasn't Ashley's laugh. It was dark and demonic. Shepard cringed. _

_She noticed something else. Everything behind Ashley was black. Shadows and darkness had covered everything. Two red eyes appeared in the darkness. _

_The voices all laughed together. Five different yet similar laughs. Shepard grabbed her ears. The laughs weren't loud or even annoying but they caused her pain. A high pitched whining filled her ears. Shepard began to tremble. She started to scream. She couldn't even

her what she was saying. Shepard now able to move, fell to the floor wriggling from the sound, trying to claw the noise from her ears.

—

_She looked up and she saw the ceiling was replaced by a blue sky. She reached for it but couldn't get it. _

Suddenly the voices were quiet and the blue turned to a bright light. Shepard couldn't see but was able to make out five figures. Five figures in the light. Then it all went blank.

* * *

><p>Twelve hours later. 1 day since the Fall of the Citadel.

Shepard shot up in her bed. She hadn't meant to fall asleep. She had only wanted to read a book while they were headed towards Quarian space. Apparently her exhaustion had gotten the better of her. She felt her heart racing and sweat was rolling down her skin. She was sweating a lot recently.

She looked around her room, searching for the Catalyst, the mist or the darkness. Nothing. She looked up at the fish tank and was relieved to see all her fish alive and well. Shepard noticed people in the room. She had been too preoccupied with the other things to even notice them at first. She glanced around. Liara, Garrus, Traynor, Joker, Legion and the doctor were all in her room. They were looking at her with frightened expressions.

"What?" Shepard asked. Her voice was shaking. She made the effort to clam herself down by breathing slower.

"You've been screaming and moving around for hours..." Garrus stated. Shepard could tell he was tense. His arms were crossed and his chest was high.

"Hours?" Shepard asked. Her voice was steadier than before, but it still had a slight shake.

"Yes. I've been watching you to make sure you weren't dying on us." Dr. Diaz said softly. She walked over to Shepard holding a black bag. She pulled out a thermometer and a stethoscope, the stethoscope was an advance model that could detect the slightest hint of any lung or heart trouble. The doctor placed the thermometer in her ear and waited for a few seconds till it beeped.

"Your temperatures fine. Now relax." The doctor got the stethoscope and placed it on her chest.

"Heart rates fine." She stated. She lowered the stethoscope and told Shepard to breath in and out. She moved the stethoscope around and after a few more checks she pulled it away and put her stuff back in its bag.

"Your stats are fine Shepard." She said with a weak smile. The doctor turned away and left the room, leaving only Shepard's friends with her.

"Shepard are you ok?" Liara asked sitting on the edge of the

bed.

"Fine." She replied a little too shortly. Liara gave her a concerned look.

"Shepard the frequency of your voice and the irregular movements you were making suggest that you are not well. Recommended that you tell us the truth." Legion stated with his cold and still voice.

"Not gonna lie but you are pretty worked up." Joker said with raised eyebrows. Shepard glared at him before looking at her sheets. She ran her hands over her sheets. She wanted to tell them but she didn't what them thinking of her any differently because of it, even if it was just a nightmare. She took a breath and looked at Liara.

"I was in my room..."

* * *

><p>Shepard leaned forward on the side of the war rooms holotable. They were set to arrive in Quarian space within two minutes.<p>

She glanced over at Liara who was standing next to an officer talking to her about something Prothean related. Shepard had told her friends about the dream. Most of them had dismissed it as only a dream but Shepard couldn't shake off the memory. Something about it had felt real. Too real.

Garrus walked up next to her.

"ETA One minute." Joker announced over the intercom.

"Here we go." Shepard exclaimed.

"I'm not the only one who thinks that this is going to be one hell of a ride right?" Garrus said a loud.

"Well if we go by current rates of Casualties and the appearance of the parasite we could hypothesize..." Legion started. He was standing on the other side of Shepard looking at Garrus. Garrus held up a hand.

"Legion it was a joke." Garrus replied.

"Oh..." Legion said back looking at the Galaxy map. Shepard had to suppress an amused smile.

The ship shook very slightly as the it dropped out of the mass relay stream. The holotable began to flicker and a holographic image of the system appeared in front of them.

Shepard's heart dropped at the sight.

"Brace yourselves!" Joker yelled over the intercom.

The Normandy harshly swerved, barely avoiding a large chunk of debris. Debris floated everywhere. Parts of ships and bodies. The debris count was too high for anyone to count. They could only hang on as Joker maneuvered through the field.

The Normandy nose dived underneath a piece of Quarian ship. It was the front nose of the ship. Scorch marks littered the debris. The Normandy barrel rolled to the side avoiding the hull of another destroyed Quarian ship. A large chunk of a Geth ship floated in front of the ship forcing them to nose dive once more. The high pitched rings of metal on metal filled the air as the Geth debris scratched the Normandy's hull.

Finally the ship reached a clearing and Joker stopped the ship completely.

"What happened here?" Liara asked in complete awe.

"Judging from the debris I would say the Quarians fought against an overwhelming force and lost." Legion replied.

"The Quarians had the largest fleet in the Galaxy." Garrus stated looking at Legion.

"Had." Shepard said grimly. Everyone stared at the hologram. The debris was so plentiful that planet behind it was partially covered up from all of it.

"I can't believe this... How were they beaten so quickly?" Liara stated in shock.

"That's how." Shepard said with a firm voice. She saw what had destroyed the Quarian fleet. She was absolutely terrified on the inside but she couldn't let her crew see that. They looked up to her. She would never let them down. She couldn't.

The crew was silent as they stared at the reason for the Quarians destruction. A fleet of roughly a hundred thousand ships was stationed on the other side of the Quarian home planet. At the center of the fleet were several massive ships, sleek and bulbous.

"Those ships in the center... They're massive." Garrus exclaimed leaning in towards the hologram.

"Estimate puts them at almost thirty kilometers long..." EDI announced over the intercom.

"Dear God..." Shepard muttered.

"They're more than twenty times the size of a dreadnought..." Liara stated. The entire room was silent as everyone soaked in the new information. Shepard bite her lip. She didn't know how she could tell Hackett that the largest fleet in the Galaxy had been destroyed.

While Shepard was thinking EDI spoke over the intercom.

"Commander we have an incoming signal. Audio only." The AI informed.

"Patch it through." Shepard replied. They waited a minute till the signal was patched through.

"Hello? Who is there?" A frantic male voice asked.

"This is Commander Shepard of the Normandy." Shepard replied standing up straight.

"Commander! Thank the heavens!" The voice replied.

"Solidier what's your name? And where is your ship?" Shepard asked. She hadn't seen any intact Quarian ships since they had arrived in the system.

"I am Captain Milas Quartin of the Migrant Fleet. My surviving fleet is behind the fifth planet at the end of the system." The man replied.

"Captain where is your commanding officer?" Shepard asked.

"I'm... I'm in charge Commander. The Admirals... They're gone."

"Captain what happened here?" Shepard asked urgently.

The man sighed over the coms.

"It was only a few hours after you brought our councilor back to Rannoch. We detected several ships appearing at the edge of our borders. We tried contacting the ships but to no avail. We sent in a few scout and diplomatic ships to meet the new arrivals. They never came back. We mobilized part of the fleet and sent them to investigate. A few hours later we received video feed. The video was only a few minutes long, but it showed thousand of ships, with weapons far more powerful than our own annihilating the fleet. By the time we had declared a state of emergency the ships arrived at the home system. The bulk of our fleet defended the planet for a while, but When we realized it was a losing battle, especially once we learned their numbers, we dedicated a few thousand ships to evacuate the planet. We tried to contact everyone, but we couldn't. Somehow the enemy managed to deploy a signal that blocks all of our long range communications. It was then the Geth arrived, or at least a part of their Fleet. They fought alongside us, they tried to help, but then the unthinkable happened. The Geths new home world was attacked. The Geth ships informed us of their impending doom. Our Admirals ordered a full retreat at that point. They ordered us to Turian space. That's when it happened. Another part of the enemy's fleet came out of the Mass Relay and attacked us from behind. Their larger ships tore right through our lines. We had to think quickly or we would all die. The Geth and Admirals came up with a suicide mission. They decided to ram the enemy fleet with half of our remaining fleet, and use that as a distraction so the other half could escape. The Admirals were noble and used their own ships to do it. They hoped their sacrifice would save us..."

"That's horrible..." Liara grieved.

"Indeed but they were desperate. They tried the plan and it worked. However what our Admirals didn't know was that the enemy had left ships to guard the Relay. A few of us managed to make it out before we were destroyed but now we can't make it to the Relay without being spotted." The voice informed.

"How many survivors are there?" Shepard asked.

"We have three thousand ships that managed to escape." The Captain informed. His voice was staticy.

"That's less then ten percent of the Migrant Fleet." Legion informed. The others ignored him. To them his facts were sometimes really negative.

"Do you have any surviving Geth ships with you?" Shepard asked. She needed all the facts to make a proper decision.

"Yes a couple hundred. I'm not sure how their home system fared. I pray the battle was not as hopeless as ours." The Captain sighed. Shepard thought about for a moment. She didn't have the resources or man power to effectively save them all but she had to try something.

"Captain Im sorry but there isn't much assistance we can offer, but if we can get to you, we could think of way to get all your people out of here." Shepard said. The Captain thought it over for a brief moment.

"Thank you Commander."

" be there In a few and You can come aboard my ship and we'll see what we can do about this whole mess."

"Agreed."

* * *

><p>Commander Shepard watched as the Quarian Captain boarded her craft. He was rather small but his demeanor was one of command and she respected that.<p>

Captain Quartin moved over towards Shepard.

"Commander you have my deepest gratitude. We thought the Galaxy had forgotten about us." The Captain said with a curt bow.

"They never forgot, things just got a lot worse out there." Shepard replied placing a firm hand on the Captains shoulder.

"What do you mean?" The captain asked.

"Did your councilor inform you about the Citadel?" Shepard asked. The Captain shook his head.

"He was only back for a few hours and he called a secret war meeting with the admirals but before they could inform us of anything the ships arrived. His ship was one of the first destroyed in the battle over Rannoch." The Captain replied sadly.

"Captain the Citadel has fallen. The Catalyst, the leader of the Reapers, is alive. He released some sort of parasite on the station. The station lasted only a few hours." Shepard said crossing her arms. The Quarain was speechless for a few moments.

"Impossible..." He whispered.

"No its possible. Now that parasite is attacking the Turians and

Krogans."

"By the gods..."

"It's been a day and the parasite have already started a new war." Liara stated. The Captain was quiet again, he then looked up at Shepard.

"Commander I thought the reapers were defeated? How is their leader alive?" He asked.

Katherine shrugged.

"The same way he survived on board the Citadel even before the Reaper War. None of us knew he was alive till it was too late." Shepard explained.

"Then it makes sense how the galaxy was ambushed. The Catalyst must've let the parasite in somehow. He must've hidden them. He did a damn good job..." The Captain replied.

"No kidding." Garrus replied grimly.

"Captain I know you have a lot of worries right now but there was a team of scientists from the alliance somewhere on Rannoch. Do you know where they are now?" Shepard asked looking at the Captain closely.

"Ummmm... I heard something about a team of scientists getting lost after exploring some newly discovered ruins in the southern half of Rannoch but I don't know anything else."

Shepard turned towards the hologram of the system. Something clicked inside her head.

"EDI can you pinpoint where the signal blocking all communications is coming from?"

"I can try..." EDI replied. "Give me a few minutes."

The group waited in silence, till The Captain spoke.

"Shepard what is your plan?" He asked.

"Well Captain for one those scientists are at an ancient ruin on Rannoch, the enemy fleet is orbiting Rannoch and if my hunch is right then the signal is coming from Rannoch." Shepard explained.

As if on cue, EDI spoke again.

"Shepard the signal is coming from the southern half of Rannoch on the far side of the planet. If I'm correct I believe that the scientist were there, seeing as there are several Prothean ruins that are catalogued in an underground cave nearby." EDI stated. Shepard grinned.

"It's too much of a coincidence that the signal is coming from the same side of the planet the enemy fleet is orbiting, and the same area the scientists were last seen. We're going down there." Shepard said as an order.

"Commander I mean no disrespect but we cannot wait. Every moment we do is another chance the enemy has of finding." Captain Quartin stated, urgency plaguing his voice,

Shepard looked at the Captain, and with kindness said

"Captain you've done an excellent job protecting your people. The best you could, but if the enemy wanted to they could've swept the whole system whenever they wanted and destroyed your survivors. There's a reason they're protecting the planet and where the signals coming from. That's why we have to go down there. If they want something that bad it could only mean trouble for us." Shepard's voice was firm yet soft. The Captain sighed.

"Please hurry commander."

* * *

><p>The shuttle zipped through the clouds of Rannoch. It shook slightly as it hit the slightest amount of turbulence.<p>

The shuttle passed over an area of green plant life. They were nearing the ocean on the southern half of the planet.

Shepard leaned against the wall and pressed on her communicator.

"Commander ETA one minute," Cortez announced over the comm.

"Alright, Legion stay with Cortez. Cortez I need you to stay at most two miles away. Their signal is jamming our long range transmitters and if we need evac I need to be able to contact you." Shepard ordered.

"Yes commander." Cortez replied. Shepard released the communicator. She checked her weapons. Each was fully loaded and ready to go. She looked around at her squad. Garrus, Liara, a new N7 operative, and three other alliance marines were checking their own new N7 operatives name was Jacqueline Winters. She had been assigned to Shepard only a few months earlier. It was her first field assignment with Shepard. She had shoulder length blonde hair and green eyes.

Shepard felt the the shuttle begin to slow. She took a deep breath and relaxed. She dedicated all of her focus to the mission at hand pushing all other thoughts from her mind.

"All right men listen up. I'm not sure what may be down there but we can probably expect some of those parasites down there. They're fast, they're strong and they're hard to kill. Aim for the center of their chest to kill them and above all else watch each others backs." Shepard stated strongly.

The shuttle lowered down to a foot high hover above the grass. Trees and all sorts of various plant life surrounded the shuttle. Little scaly creatures scurried away from the shuttle. Bird like creatures flew away as the tree tops shook from the shuttles engines. The side door hissed as it slide open. Shepard jumped down and raised her

weapon, scanning the surrounding greenery. The rest of her squad climbed down from the shuttle, each taking position around Shepard. The shuttle doors closed and the shuttle lifted off, flying out of the greenery and into the distance.

"Let's move. Single file. The ruins are only one hundred meters away." Shepard ordered over the com channel.

"Copy." Garrus replied. The group slowly made their way through the brush. Shepard climbed over a fallen tree. She saw a little scaly creature crossed her path. She tensed up waiting for an attack but the creature scurried away under a nearby bush. Shepard relaxed and continued. She stepped carefully watching her foot placement. She didn't want to get surprised by anything. The trees began thin out, and after ten minutes of walking through the trees and greenery, the group saw a clearing. Shepard stepped past the last trees and into the clearing. The wind was blowing softly, caressing her face with a gentle breeze.

"Nice weather." Jacqueline mumbled under her breath.

"Very." Liara replied.

Katherine looked in awe at the structure occupying a majority of the clearing. It was sleek and tall. Its design She slowed to a stop as the large shadow of the structure washed over the group. She let her eyes run all over the monument, observing every crevice, every corner. Shepard noticed the scientists camp in front of the structure. A large cavernous like opening leading into the structure, laid behind the camp. Shepard gulped. Something gave her an uneasy feeling about the beautiful structure.

"Well if there's one thing I can tell you, it's that that is Prothean." Liara said taking a few steps towards the structure.

"Something's not right about this..." Garrus said squinting.

"What do you mean?" One of the marines asked.

"This structure is huge... How did the Quarians or Geth never manage to find it?" Garrus asked looking at Liara.

"He has a point." Shepard said tightening the grip on her rifle.

"It's possible the structure was smaller and somehow the scientists managed to enlarge the structure." Liara said putting her hand on her chin.

Shepard walked towards the structure. She noticed patches of dirt around the edges of the structure. Katherine could see the walls of the structure covered in a light dirt coating. She motioned Liara over to her.

"What do you think?" Shepard asked.

"Hmmm..." Liara hummed. She moved up to the structure and wiped her hand over the wall. The dirt came clearly off leaving a hand mark on the wall. Liara looked the structure up and down a few more times

before moving back to Shepard.

"Well from the looks of it the structure must have rose up from the ground and seeing how easily the dirt is wiped off I'd have to say it came up very recently, otherwise even the slightest drizzle would've wiped the structure clean." Liara explained. Shepard nodded. Slowly the two made their way back to the group.

As the group awaited orders, Shepard studied the monument. She wanted to leave. Something felt off but she couldn't place it. She felt a coldness fall over the area despite the warm temperature. She didn't show it but chills ran up her spine as she stared into black void of an entrance. She knew she couldn't back away from the mission no matter what she thought.

"Alright check the camp. See if you can find anything that will help us figure out where they went." Shepard ordered. The group moved into the camp. Each person split up and walked around searching for any sort of clue. Liara began to mess with the computers and study the information on them. Garrus worked around in their tents looking for anything that could help the team find the scientists. Jacqueline studied the scientist equipment hoping to find something.

Shepard walked over to the structures cavernous entrance. She stood only a couple feet in front of it. She activated her flashlight. She looked inside and saw that The entrance became smaller as it went on leading to a door in the very back. She could see no way to open the door. She wondered if it was a motion activated door.

"Shepard!" Liara called out. Shepard turned her flashlight off and jogged over to her friend.

"What it is?" Shepard asked. Liara motioned Shepard over so she could see the computer screen.

"The scientists last entry say they were heading in this morning. Apparently the night before, I'm thinking about the time the fleet arrived here and attacked Rannoch, the structure began to rise up out of the ground. When they received reports of the ongoing battle there was an argument, some of the scientists wanted to stay others wanted to go. Those who wanted to stay did stay and they went inside. According to this journal entry that was eight hours ago... " Liara asked.

"So they have no idea the fleet was defeated?" Garrus asked.

"Probably not. I just wonder why they're not back yet." Jacqueline asked, skeptically looking at the structure.

"Probably got lost. It tends to happen. We'll find them." Liara replied shutting down the computer.

"Alright team." Shepard began standing up. "Lets go find us some scientists."

* * *

><p>Shepard walked into an open room her light illuminating the room. It was square and dusty. The lights of her team filled the room as

they too entered the room. Shepard walked around. She noticed the scientist equipment set up around the room but no scientists. She studied the floor looking for any signs of an attack but found nothing. She wondered where the guards were. She figured the enemy fleet would send down something to protect the source of the signal.<p>

She studied the equipment. The few laptops and data pads gave off only the faintest amount of blue light.

She put her weapon on her back, the magnetic locks holding it in place and started messing with one of the laptops. She clicked around the files searching for anything. She found several files and documents about Prothean ruins and devices, and the meaning or value of them, but nothing on the scientists whereabouts.

"Shepard..." A soft voice called out. Shepard spun around. She saw Liara standing on the far Side of the room next to a door. Shepard walked over to her. She noticed something about the door. It was strange even for Protheans. It was triangular. The corners of the triangle were smoothed out, and two lights lined the middle of the door. Shepard didn't see any visible way to open the door.

"Liara?" Shepard asked walking up next to the Asari.

"Notice anything odd...?" Liara asked looking at the door with quizzical eyes.

"Something's different about it but I don't know what..." Shepard said looking at the door. Garrus stood behind the two listening in.

"If I didn't know know better I'd say that wasn't Prothean at all." Garrus stated.

"That's because it isn't." Liara stated walking towards the door. She stopped next to a crate of the scientists equipment and grabbed a scanner. She studied the scanner and looked back at the others.

"And if these scientists were any good then they would've known too." She stated grimly. Liara walked up to the door and placed her hands on it. She grunted as she tried to push it open but to no avail.

"Guessing the doors not motion activated." Garrus chuckled. Liara glared at him.

"No its not, and from the looks of it an Omni tool won't open it either." Liara grunted as she tried to push the door open again.

"Garrus, Shepard, a little help." She called out. The two spectres moved over to their friend and pressed their bodies against the door. All three pushed against the door. Again they failed to move it. They tried several times, eventually the whole group of marines including Jacqueline joined them, but even with all the extra help they couldn't even budge the door. After several more tries Shepard gave up with harsh sigh. She walked away from the door and studied it again she felt a strange urge, as if she should give it one more try. After the group moved away from it, having given up after one final

try, Shepard made her way to it. Something inside her felt warm as she approached it. She felt as if she had seen the door before as she knew how it worked, but she couldn't figure out where she had seen it.

Shepard pressed her hand against the door. She noticed something. The lights grew only the slightest amount brighter when her hand was against the door. She pulled her hand away and the moment her hand left the lights grew dimmer. Shepard stared at her hand, curiosity filling her body. The armor around her hand pulled back and revealed her hand in all its flesh. She pressed her palm and fingers against the center frame of the door. Suddenly the lights grew brighter on the door, simultaneously turning a light blue. Five blue circles encompassed each of her fingers. The blue circles turned green. Suddenly the circles disappeared and the door slide open. Shepard stepped back quickly, clearly surprised. The group slightly jumped at the movement of the door.

"How did you get it to open?" Liara asked bewildered.

"Open sesame?" Shepard said unsure. She lifted her rifle and pointed it inward. Unlike the rest of the ruins the hallway before her was well lit with luminescent light on the ceiling above. Shepard took a few steps towards the hallway. The design was far different from any Prothean ruin she had ever seen, an unknown to her it was far different than any ruin even Liara had ever seen either. The sleek curves and smooth metal was far different than any design she had ever seen.

Katherine walked inside the hallway. She ran her hand over the wall. She looked around the hall on awe. She wondered what race built this. Even though they had built the rest of the ruins, She was sure it wasn't Protheans whom had built this hallway and whatever it lead too, but besides the Leviathans and Reapers she didn't know of any other ancient races.

"It looks like the Protheans themselves were studying these ruins..." Liara said walking into the hall after Shepard.

"But who built them?" Garrus asked walking in after the two.

"Whoever did was obviously held in high regards by the Protheans. I mean they built a whole structure over this hall." Jacqueline said entering after Garrus.

"Question is did they ever figure out what this hall led too?" Liara asked as she examined one of the walls.

Shepard saw something out of the corner of her eyes. A small glint of light. If she wasn't in her exact spot looking in the exact direction there would've been no way she would've seen it. She bent down and picked up the fragile object. She looked over it in her hand and turned back to the group.

"The Protheans might not have, but unless the Protheans wore glasses, I can tell you the scientists did." Shepard held up the pair of glasses in her hands. A small crack ran down the lens of one of them. Shepard turned away from them. She raised her rifle.

"Lets just hope they're ok."

* * *

><p>Shepard stepped onto the bottom floor of a platform. The platform was the only way to cross the giant chasm in front of her. They had been searching the new ruins for half an hour and there was still no sign of the scientists. The further they went into the construct the more nervous Shepard became. It was too quiet and too peaceful in the ruins.<p>

She had looked around the platform when they had first stepped onto it. It was floating in mid air, a huge chasm around it. The sleek walls and lights were out to far for her to even jump to. She looked down trying to see what suspended the platform but had found nothing.

"Whoever built this had a huge mastery over gravity and physics itself." Liara said with awe. Shepard nodded in agreement and looked around the bottom floor of the platform.

Her group was spread out over the two story platform. Liara and Garrus were with her on the bottom floor while Jacqueline and the other marines were checking out the top floor. Shepard noticed a pedestal with a blue hologram panel across from her. A pane of glass floor lined the way to it. She carefully set a foot on it. Once she was sure the glass floor was stable and would hold her weight, she moved freely over it and to the panel. Liara followed her freely while Garrus took it slowly, almost tiptoeing over the glass. He didn't feel safe stepping over a glass floor, especially with the endless looking chasm below them.

Shepard reached out for the panel. She pressed her hand against it. The platform jerked slightly as it began moving forward. She heard static over the comm.

"Shepard we have movement up here." Jacqueline stated over the comm channel.

"On my way up." Shepard replied. Before Shepard could turn around she heard a scream.

"Move!" She yelled at her two friends. The three sprinted to the top floor of the platform. They could here the sound of gun fire echoing throughout the chasm. Shepard vaulted over a barrier and onto the second floor. The top floor had an open roof and walls. Metal barriers and tall metal columns provided the only real cover. Shepard saw a marine in the middle of the floor, a huge hole in his chest. The hole was smoldering.

Shepard raised her rifle. She surveyed the area searching for an enemy. She saw Jacqueline crouched behind a barrier the other two marines behind a metal barrier a few yards away.

"Shepard get down!" Jacqueline yelled. Shepard didn't hesitate. She dove to the floor as a golden beam flew over her head. She cursed underneath her breath and rolled behind a barrier. She noticed Liara and Garrus do the same.

"What the hell was that?" Shepard yelled. She looked over the barrier

and noticed the machine that had targeted her. It was floating and was made of three cylindrical shaped structures that seemed to only float around a center piece. She stared at it for a second partially awestruck by its design. She noticed the center piece beginning to glow gold. She quickly hid behind the barrier as a golden beam lanced over her head. Shepard's shields partially drained from how close the shot was.

"Jacqueline what the hell are those things?!" Shepard yelled. She popped out of her cover and unleashed half a clip of her Avenger rifle before being forced back into cover by another golden beam.

"I have no idea! They came out of nowhere!" Jacqueline yelled. Shepard gritted her teeth together. She watched Garrus and Liara open fire on one of the machines. Their bullets bounced harmlessly off its shields.

Shepard activated her AP ammo and vaulted over her barrier. She targeted the machine closest to her and fired. Her entire clip depleted as she drained the machines shields. She dove behind another barrier and reloaded.

"Any had any luck taking down their shields?!" Shepard yelled as she unleashed another volley on two floating machines. Her heart slightly sank. Their weapons were inferior to these machines. Their bullets were of almost no use.

Shepard counted a total of six machines. She felt disheartened. The machines were few but strong. They were too much for her team and she knew it. She had to find a way to beat them. She quickly came up with an idea.

"Target the one over me. Lets see if some combined fire can take care of our new friends." Shepard ordered over the com. She stood up and aimed for the machine right in front of her. The machine was targeting Jacqueline. Shepard opened fire. The machine jerked slightly, and turned back towards Shepard. Several more weapons opened fire. Bullets riddled the machine on almost every side. The machine fired at Shepard just as she had to reload. Shepard tried to sidestep. The golden beam melted straight through her rifle, barely missing her arm, and drained her shields halfway from the close contact. Shepard barrel rolled and drew her side arm. She opened fire on the machine. The machine turned back towards Jacqueline, its center piece beginning to glow gold. Shepard felt her confidence waning as the shields of the machines still held. Finally though the shields collapsed. The machine suddenly began to fly away. Shepard heard a scream and watched as a machine blew apart into several pieces from a sniper round. Shepard noticed another machine targeting her and managed to duck behind her cover before she got hit. She gritted her teeth as the beam flew over her. She looked up, remembering the scream from earlier and tried to locate the cause. She saw one of the marines bodies near Jacqueline missing their head.

"Shepard we need to go! Now!" Garrus yelled. Shepard looked over towards her friend. Garrus was holding up Liara. Liara was biting her lip and struggling not to cry. A large chunk of her shoulder was missing, the wound smoking.

"Shit..." Shepard cursed under her breath. She poked her head out

from cover and immediately pulled back down as another golden blast shot over her.

"Jacqueline!" Shepard yelled.

"Yes commander?!" Jacqueline replied firing over her cover.

"Do you have an Attack drone?" Shepard asked letting loose a few shots at another machine targeting Garrus and Liara. The machine shot at Shepard instead forcing her to roll to another cover.

"Yes but I don't see how that's gonna be of any use here." Jacqueline replied.

"Program the drone to head out towards the machines. Tell it to fire randomly at all the machines." Shepard ordered. She continued to fire and duck at the machines. She felt her heart racing.

"Done!" Jacqueline yelled. She stood up and released the blue attack drone. The drone fired at each of the machines as it slowly flew into the open space between the machines.

Shepard watched as all the machines tracked the drone and faced away from her team.

"Down to the lower level! Quick!" Shepard yelled. She ran over to Garrus and Liara, and with the help of Garrus, hefted up Liara and made their way down stairs. Shepard heard the last marine and Jacqueline behind them. She heard the machines fire. She knew they had only a few seconds before the machines followed them down.

The group made their way into the bottom floor. Tactically it provided more cover for the group thanks to the closed walls and roof. The only way in was the ramp they had come down.

Shepard and Garrus quickly laid Liara against the back wall. The two drew their rifles and faced the way in. Jacqueline and the surviving marine took up position behind them. Liara drew a side arm with her good arm and aimed at the way in.

Shepard felt sweat building on her brow. Her finger twitched over the trigger. It felt like a eternity waiting for the machines. She knew they were going to die. She figured they could take down at least one possibly two of the machine but the rest would completely destroy her and her team. She could only pray their demises were quick and painless. She had never felt so helpless.

She heard a low rumbling. She saw two machines float in slowly. Her group opened fire. The machines, with a sudden burst of speed, dashed to the side letting in two more machines. The machines central pieces suddenly began to glow golden. Shepard drew her side arm with her left hand and held her rifle in her right. The machines golden pieces were bright and seconds from firing. Shepard felt her heart stop.

"Stop!" A synthetic peppy voice yelled. The machines held their fire. The golden lights on them disappeared as their weapons powered down. Shepard's held her weapons up. Her group had ceased its fire at the sudden demand. She sent a weary glance at Garrus.

Suddenly the machines turned towards the entrance. Another, different machine, escorted by two more of the ones Shepard had been fighting, entered the room. This one was circular with an artificial light as a center 'eye' in the middle of it. The machine glowed a dim blue color. It seemed to study Shepard and the others, moving from one to the other. Shepard wondered what it was doing but she never let her eyes wander away from the machines that had attacked them.

"Oh dear that's a nasty wound. Do not worry we will get that cleaned up." The new machine said looking at Liara. His voice was friendly and cheerful. Shepard found it strange for a machine to have such a voice.

"What are you?" Liara asked in shock staring at the machine with wonder.

"Oh where are my manners!" The machine said angry with itself. It floated away from Liara and in front of the whole group.

"Greeting! I am 248 Reluctant Promise. I am the monitor of this installation. These are my sentinels. I apologize for them attacking you. These are merely defensive sentinels and with the appearance of the Flood fleet above the planet they were ordered to shoot anything entering the facility on sight. Fortunately for you all I happened to see video of your fight with my sentinels. If I hadn't I would never have intervened and you more than likely be dead by now but that's not the case for you! how unfortunate it was your comrades didn't make it!" The monitor said cheerfully. Shepard found it sick that he was so nonchalant about the attacks, but for some reason she felt like she couldn't condemn him. He seemed like a child, like he didn't understand what the attacks had cost them, and her comrades, she figured were the scientists.

"Reluctant Promise I am commander Katherine Shepard of the Alliance. What's the flood?" Shepard asked curiously.

"Ah yes! The Alliance the remnants of the old UNSC." Reluctant Promise said with cheery attitude as he ignored Shepard's question. Garrus was slightly irritated by his quick talk and high pitched voice.

"UNSC?" Liara inquired.

"Yes. United Nations Space Command or UNSC for short. They were one of the dominant factions of the Galaxy about 2.2653 billion years ago." Reluctant said quickly.

"Wait you said that the Alliance was the remnants of the UNSC?" Shepard asked pointing her finger at the monitor.

"Yes. And by Remnants I mean your technology is... How do you say it? Out of date? Haha. Out of date. Ahh" Reluctant laughed.

"Our technology's out of date? Do realize our firepower is now equivalent to that of the Reapers themselves? Not to mention our medical advances have increased lifespans almost fifty percent? Humans live to almost a hundred and fifty years now. The other races live even longer." Liara said obviously offended.

"The Reapers? Oh that sad excuse for a Galactic threat? Hmmm... My

information is little on them but from what I can gather... their firepower was on the low side of UNSC weapons... Interesting they... Wait hold on..." The monitor's voice grew low and alarmed. His blue light turned red.

"We must go." The monitor said worriedly. Suddenly the Sentinels, at great speeds, flew out of the bottom floor and off the platform entirely.

"Come quickly." The monitor stated. He hurried out after the sentinels. Shepard glanced at the others.

"Like we have a choice?" Garrus stated rather upset.

"Help Liara up and meet me up on the top floor. I'm gonna go talk to Mr. promise." Shepard ordered. She let out a nervous breath, though no one noticed, then followed after Reluctant Promise.

Katherine stepped out onto the top floor of the platform. Reluctant promise was floating at the far end of the platform, staring towards the entrance to the giant chasm, the way Shepard and the others had entered.

Shepard walked up to the monitor. She looked at it and followed his gaze. She saw hundreds of Sentinels heading towards the entrance.

"Where are they going?" Shepard asked with a firm voice.

"To deal with the Flood entering the facility. They must've followed you down here." Reluctant stated.

"Who is this flood?" Shepard asked turning towards him.

"A parasitic organism that's sole directive is to consume all life. They are more commonly known as the parasite." The monitor restated.

"They're here?" Shepard asked alarmed.

"Judging by your reaction you've dealt with them before."

Shepard nodded.

"It is logical to fear them. They are formidable. I mean they defeated my creators."

"Your creators?"

"Yes. The Forerunner."

"Not the UNSC?"

"No. But after my creators fall they handed down the Mantle to the UNSC and her allies. Together they defeated the Diadact and his allies and save style Galaxy."

Shepard wondered what the Mantle was but instead she asked "What happened to them?"

"The Parasite. But in all actuality there were multiple factions that were the reasons they fell..."

"What were the others actions ?"

"They are factions that have not been catalogued. But I can tell you together they made something so powerful the Reclaimers were defeated. "

"Reclaimers?"

"Another name for humans and the UNSC."

"So I'm a Reclaimer?"

"No. You are a branch of the true reclaimer race. There is only one reclaimer left."

"Where are they?"

"Outside the Galaxy."

"Outside?!"

"Yes. You see commander the Reclaimers had unimaginable power."

"So did the Reapers."

"Reapers? You keep referring to them. They were weak compared to the UNSC and Reclaimers, but now is not the time for discussion, we must leave quickly the parasite are coming!" The monitor turned away and floated towards the other end of the platform. Shepard followed. Her team trailed behind her, they had came up during her and the monitors conversation.

"Could that evil threaten the Galaxy again?" Shepard asked as the platform stopped, connected by a hard light bridge to large door in the wall. The monitor floated away towards the door ignoring her question. The group followed. The large door slid open. The group gasped at the sight before them. A sleek, graceful vehicle with wings and large engines stood in front of them.

"This is a Forerunner Firebird. This should be able to get past the enemy ships orbiting the planet and get us to safety." Reluctant stated.

"Us?" Garrus asked.

"Yes us. I must keep free of the parasites clutches or they will find the last reclaimer. He is our only hope."

"He?" Liara asked.

"Yes. He"

* * *

><p>"Andromeda had fallen. The Milky Way is the only one left."

"Impossible..."

"I wish he was here..."

"He had the best luck out of all of us.. If only it hadn't run out."

_"If only..." _

* * *

><p>Doctor Catherine Halsey to Admiral Hood.**

* * *

><p>An hey guys! Si hope you all enjoyed this chapter! Its a lot better than its predecessor... Sorry for that 2nd chapter. It was poorly done. It will be rewritten but I'm not sure when. Anyway hope you enjoyed! Review Please! Thank for reading and God Bless!_**

4. Part I Chapter 3 (Un beata'd)

Part I

The voice and face of all evil.

Chapter three: The escape from Rannoch

* * *

><p>Commander Shepard stared at the vehicle in front of her. The design was completely alien to her. It was to graceful looking. It seemed like no threat at all, but something wanted her not to think that way. She had a feeling the small aircraft was a lot stronger than she could imagine. Speaking of strength her mind wandered to what Reluctant Promise had said. He had stated the Reapers were weaker than the UNSC. That statement sent shivers down her spine. But she shrugged off the feeling. She could ask the monitor details later. She had to focus on the task at hand.<p>

"By the spirits..." Garrus exclaimed looking at the craft.

"I've never seen anything like this..." Liara gasped walking towards the craft.

"Please be careful" Reluctant Promise exclaimed.

"I'm rather experienced with ancient technology. Ill be fine." Liara stated. Reluctant promise floated over to her.

Suddenly a shriek filled the air. A shriek that Shepard had heard a day ago on the Citadel. She felt a cold chill run up her spine. It was as if her body was naturally afraid of the sound. As if a six sense told her what was coming.

"Oh crap..." Jacqueline exclaimed. The group turned back towards the giant chasm behind them. Hundreds of bulbous infection forms crawled up the walls of the chasm from the entrance on the other side.

Several combat and pure forms were standing in the doorway staring right at the group. They shrieked and stomped back and forth, obviously upset from their inability to reach their prey.

"Impossible... I sent over two hundred sentinels to deal with them... There's no way they should've got past my guards." The monitor said furious. His light glowed a bright red at his obvious irritation.

"We'll desperate times call for desperate measures." He said angered. Shepard slightly shifted her body away from the monitor. She felt even more uncomfortable with the monitor now. She noted his quick mood changes and made another mental note to be very cautious when she spoke with him.

Shepard saw something she had never seen before. Two small black holes opened up on either side of the monitor. Shepard immediately backed away as did the rest of her group. Two beings emerged out of the portals. Once they had emerged the portals shut behind them.

Katherine was in awe of the beings. They were tall. Very tall. Much taller than even a Krogan. She estimated it at least eight to ten feet tall. The beings body's were completely metallic. Their design was sleek like the rest of structure. Weapons were seemingly attached to their arms. Their legs were skinny as were their Ames but their torsos were broad and large. Their backs were almost hunched back but seemed to be that way due to the large amounts of metal attached to their back. Bluefish lines if light traveled down and around their bodies. Their faces were covered by triangular masks with two slits for their eyes. The creatures didn't even look at Shepard or her squad. The two made their way to the platform and stood in front of it. Another parasite shriek filled the air. The creatures backs opened up like insect wings and their masks opened up revealing the glowing human skulls beneath them. They roared back at the parasite. Shepard found the roar intimidating. Almost as terrifying as the parasites shrieks.

Almost.

"Hurry we must depart at once." The monitor said floating away towards the ship.

"We can't leave just yet." Shepard stated firmly. Reluctant promise turned around and looked at her almost quizzically.

"But why not? At the rate the parasite is spreading I recommended immediate evacuation of this facility." The monitor stated.

"There's a signal originating from here that's blocking all of our long range communications, if we can't disable it there's no way we can save the remaining Quarians or Geth." Shepard informed.

"Ah! Yes the signal! I activated it to disable the parasites ability to contact with the rest of their fleet. When they discovered the facility they would've called for reinforcements and the last thing we want is for them to receive reinforcements. I was hoping to delay the destruction of this planets inhabitants. It seems my plan may have back fired..." The monitor stated. His voice had no edge of

concern in it. Rather he seemed frustrated that his hadn't worked simply for the sake of it not working. To Shepard and the others it seemed like he could've cared less about the Quarians of Geth. His red light beginning to glow brighter. Shepard tightened her grip on her riffle.

"No need to be alarmed commander. I have disabled the signal meaning we really must go now." Reluctant said his light turning back to its light blue color. He floated towards the ship.

"How do we know your not just working with the parasite? How do we know your not lying to us?" Liara asked looking at the monitor.

"I suppose you don't. But what do you call it? Faith is it? Hmmm... Anyway you'll need to trust me if you want to leave this planet. As it is if I wanted you dead you all would've already been dead." He replied as he continued to the craft. As if to support his claim another parasite shriek filled the air. The group exchanged uneasy glances.

"At least he's honest." Garrus replied. The remaining marine snorted at his comment.

>"Shepard?" Liara asked looking over at their commander. Shepard was in deep thought. She kept trying to think of a solution. Trying to find a way around the monitor so they wouldn't have to place their lives in his care. She looked at Liara with angry and defeated eyes though Liara took no hint to it since Shepard's look was one of stone. She looked towards the monitor.<p>

"I don't see another way out. If we don't follow him then those things will tear us apart." Shepard said motioning towards the chasm and the parasite within it. The group exchanged uneasy glances but stayed quiet.

"We must go." the monitor announced from his position near aircraft. "We don't have much time." He said in a worried tone.

"Check that out." The marine said in awe. Shepard turned to see what he was referring too.

Katherine flinched as she saw several combat Flood forms jump onto the platform a pile of ash at their feet. She raised her weapon and was about to fire when the knights lunged. She watched how fast they were.

The first knight had managed to lunge fast enough that combat forms couldn't even react to it. A hard light sword slide out of its arm. In one swift motion it spun around and severed the combat forms body in two. The other forms tried to lunge at it but weren't fast enough. The knight managed to spin around. With its other arm, a hard light weapon built into it, blasted one of the combat forms in the face. Shepard watched as the rounds ripped through the parasites body like paper and the combat form literally disintegrate into ash. She now knew what the ash at the knights feet was. The knights had been defending the, while their backs had been turned.

The other combat forms, three left in all, attacked the knight. They opened fire with several unknown weapons, streaks of blue and green slamming into the knight. Shepard noticed the knights shields flare but that didn't stop it from charging the combat forms. The knight

slammed into one form knocking it to the ground, it swung its arm and sliced another form in half. The third form drew another weapon. It held a hilt of strange design in its deformed tentacles. Shepard wondered what such a small weapon was capable of. Suddenly a very strange looking sword formed from the hilt. It glowed white and Shepard could see the heat it radiated. The form lunged at the knight. Shepard's heart briefly stopped as she wondered how knight would survive the attack. In her eyes the weapon the parasite wielded reminded her of an omni blade, but one that seemed capable of killing in one hit. Then something that completely baffled her happened.

A split second before the sword made contact a worm hole opened up behind the knight. The knight suddenly was pulled into it and the hole disappeared. The sword slashed through the air where the knight had once been. Shepard felt her mouth drop slightly at the sight. Suddenly another hole opened up behind the flood form. The knight lunged out of the hole and sliced the flood form in half. The last form alive had gotten to its feet. Several rounds from the knights weapon disintegrated the last flood form completely.

"That was rather... Impressive..." Garrus stated placing his hand under his chin.

"More than impressive." Jacqueline stated.

"I would not want to fight one of those." Liara muttered.

Shepard couldn't agree more. The speed and size of the things was terrifying enough but with their weapons made them even more way they were a able to just disappear then reappear out of no where, gave her the chills. How could she fight an enemy she couldn't watch.

"Commander we must leave immediately! The enemy ships are moving into position to orbitally bombard the installation!" Reluctant Promise yelled knocking the group out of its momentary trance. Shepard quickly looked back and forth between the knights, whom were fighting another horde of flood forms, and the monitor. She didn't like it but they had no other real options. Suddenly an explosion rocked the entire building. Dust and pieces of metal fell from the roof.

"Quickly on the ship!" Shepard said breaking into a sprint. Her team did not hesitate to follow.

Reluctant Promise turned to the ship. His eye began to glow green for a second. Suddenly a ramp from the ship lowered down onto the floor. The monitor floated on board. Shepard half expected the ramp to start closing once he was on board. To her surprise the engines powered up but the ramp stayed down. The group quickly ran onto the ramp. The moment the last person stepped on board the ship began to lift off. The engines blew away layers of dust that had lined the ship and the floors. The dust twirled around the ship giving it a menacing presence as if rising out of a dust storm.

Shepard walked onto what she figured was the bridge of the ship. It was rather large and spacious. The two seats were triangular with smoothed edges. Strips of pulsating blue light lined the edges of each seat. Holographic panels lined the walls. Shepard noticed how there were no obvious ways to control the ship. Glass windows allowed

the occupants to see outside. The front window or viewport, was shaped rather normally for the bridge of a small ship. Shepard wondered where the rest of her team would sit. She also wondered what type of ship this was. The ship was too large to be a fighter and too small to be a frigate. Either way after a few seconds she classified it as a fighter.

The monitor was floating towards the front of the ship, hovering above the central control panel. Shepard walked towards him. She noticed symbols and strange shapes that made up the central control panel. She wondered what they meant. Shepard stopped behind one of the front seats and looked out of the front window.

The Commander noticed the walls were moving, then remembered it wasn't the walls but the ship. She moved around the seat and looked up and out the front viewport. She noticed they were racing towards the ceiling which surprised her. She couldn't even feel the ship moving at such speeds. It felt as if it was still grounded.

"Where are we going?" Shepard asked. The monitor never responded.

Katherine watched as the roof began to open up in a circular motion. The metal roof pulled away into the surrounding roof and revealed a beam of light from the surface. Shepard could see the stories of dirt buried between the installation and the surface. She noticed the walls moving away faster and figured the ship was speeding up. Before Shepard knew it they shot through the hole in the roof and she watched as tons of dirt zipped by them. Darkness enveloped the craft leaving only the slightest amount of light from the light of the surface above them and the blue lighting within the craft.

"Where are we?" Liara asked walking over to them after noticing their entrance into the darkness. The rest of the group took notice and turned their attention to Shepard and the monitor.

"We are currently rising at 3000/feet per second towards the surface. A slow pace considering this is an older model but it will suffice. But to answer your question we are currently on the crust of Rannoch in the southern region. We will be headed into space shortly." At the end of the monitor's sentence the ship vertically shot out of the hole in the earth and into the daylight of the surface. The group covered their eyes from the sudden change in light. Shepard was barely able to make out the surrounding forest as the ship lifted off into the air. She noticed a few Flood ships already descending down to the installation. She could see the scorch marks on the ground from where the ships had bombed the installation. She was rather surprised when she saw how many scorch marks there were. Dozens littered the ground and the ancient ruins on the surface had been incinerated.

"Commander Shepard I would recommend you contact your ship and shuttle. You should inform them about our current course of action." Reluctant Promise stated.

"And what exactly is our current course of action?" Shepard asked looking at the monitor.

"We will head to your fleet of ships hidden on the outer rim. After that we will depart from this system and move out to smaller system

only a few hundred light years away from the outer rim." Reluctant Promise stated.

"Why on earth would we dare venture out that far? Especially without access to a Mass Relay?" Shepard asked irritated. To her his plan seemed plainly stupid. They would be running away from their only means of transportation to their allies yet alone the Galaxy.

"Commander the enemy will soon find the station and its only a matter of time till the discover the location of the last reclaimer. We must save the last Reclaimer." The monitor stated.

With a sudden burst of speed the ship blasted off into space tearing straight through the atmosphere with ease. Shepard looked out in awe and fear. She saw thousands of flood ships rocketing towards them. The designs of the ships were unlike anything she had ever seen. There were so many designs she could barely even register all of them. Katherine wondered which ship had belonged to the supposed all powerful Reclaimers.

"Activating Slip space drive." The monitor said aloud.

"Slip space?" Liara asked.

He didn't respond. Instead a worm hole, similar to the ones the knights had used to teleport around, opened in front of their ship. The ship entered the worm hole, black space enveloping them. Shepard looked out trying to find any source of light. It was pitch black wherever they were. Before she could even ask where they had gone another worm hole opened up in front of them. Shepard could see the light of stars and planets through the hole in the black space. The ship flew through the hole with ease and re-entered normal space. Shepard looked around quickly trying to locate where they were. She saw ahead the surviving Quarian and Geth ships. It completely baffled her how quickly they had managed to travel the entire system.

"How the hell did he do that..." Garrus gasped.

"Radio the Normandy and let them know where we are. Tell them to get Cortez and get over here." Shepard ordered.

"No need commander. I already transmitted a message for you. Your ship is already on their way... Oh look an incoming transmission." Reluctant promise said cheerily.

Shepard was surprised. She hadn't expected him to do that. She quickly washed her thoughts away as a hologram appeared displaying Captain Quartin.

"This is Captain Quartin of the migrant fleet. I ask who you are and what is your purpose in our system?" The captain asked with fire.

"Your system? Well according to recent events the system now belongs to the Flood. Though I can understand why you would believe it is still Your System despite the fact you and the Geth have basically been evicted." Reluctant Promise stated, completely unfazed by the captains tone.

Captain Quartin was taken aback by the AI's statement. Before he could speak Shepard stepped into the picture.

"Captain this is commander Shepard. It's along story but we have to leave now. This is Reluctant Promise. He's an Artificial Intelligence unit from the installation we found on Rannoch"

"Another AI?" The Quarian gasped. Unknown to Shepard he wasn't too fond of AI's, even after the Geth had given them back their planet.

"Yes. I am an AI. But I recommended we flee immediately. The Flood have already discovered the installation and are seemingly aware of my abandonment. They are already approaching our current location and will soon be upon us if we don't leave immediately."

Shepard felt a twinge of curiosity inside her. She wondered why the Flood would chase them as they fled the system? She knew they obviously weren't a threat. She noted what the monitor had said. That he had abandoned his installation... She had figured the Flood were after the installation not the AI. She glanced at the AI skeptically. She wondered why they would want him.

"You bring death upon my people you monster..." Captain Quartin hissed back at the Monitor.

"Captain enough." Shepard said holding a hand up to his hologram. The Captain muttered something under his breath but stood down. Shepard looked down for only the briefest of moments. She pondered what the AI had said.

"Captain Quartin as of right now we don't have much of a choice in deciding what to do. Those ships are coming for us and unless we want to end up as a pile of floating debris, we need to leave immediately." Katherine stated firmly.

"She is correct. We need to leave here and head to a system a little ways out from the edge of the outer rim. If we..." Reluctant Promise started.

"I'd rather die than listen to the words of an AI." The Captain spat interrupting the monitor's statement. Shepard looked back up at his hologram and internally frowned. She hadn't none he had such a hate for AIs. Then again who was she to judge? It had only been ten years ago the Geth had controlled their home planet. Shepard was sure she would still hate any race that had done that to humanity. Still she was getting frustrated. She understood why the Captain was angry but if he didn't listen they would all die. She didn't even want to test how strong the Flood's fleet really was.

"Captain." Shepard said interrupting the two's conversation again. She didn't know how to convince him, heck she had barely convinced herself, but she knew Reluctant Promise was right. At least about this. She knew the Flood would destroy them. The rest she could worry about later.

"You might rather die Captain, but what about your people? Are you really willing to sacrifice their lives just to appease your pride?" Shepard stated. It sounded harsh but she couldn't play nice right now. They needed to get moving.

"Commander how dare you ally yourself with such filth!" The Captain hissed. Shepard was taken aback by his harshness. She was beginning to think his hatred was a little too much even for her understanding. Something that irritated her.

"You may be willing to sacrifice your people's lives but I am not Captain." She was surprised she was arguing with him. He had been so cooperative before.

"Turn over your command to me and I'll lead your people out of here." Shepard ordered. The Captain's head moved back in shock. He couldn't believe what he had just heard. A stranger ordering him around.

"How dare an outsider order me around." He muttered. Shepard shook her head but could sense his resolve. The Captain sighed.

"We only have about twenty two minutes till the Flood ships arrive. Also Commander, the Normandy has joined the group and is approaching our ship." Reluctant Promise informed. He reminded Katherine of Legion. The two would get along splendidly with their fact telling.

"Captain decide now. Leave your people or come with us." Shepard asked impatiently. The Captain slowly looked up at her. He sighed again and ran his hand over his head. After what felt like a couple of minutes which greatly irritated Shepard the captain spoke.

"Commander I trust your judgement even if it means trusting this AI. Lead and we shall follow." The Captain stated. Shepard could hear the doubt and anger subdued in his voice but she was glad he had at least temporarily calmed himself down though she knew she would later get an ear full from him.

"Thank you Captain." Shepard said slightly relieved. She looked up at Reluctant Promise.

"So where are we headed?" She asked hurriedly. She was starting to get anxious as she wondered how close the Flood fleet was.

The Monitor floated silently for a few moments staring blankly, at least what Shepard thought was a blank stare, at Captain Quartrins hologram. Suddenly he turned one hundred eighty degrees and looked back at her.

"I have sent coordinates to the fleet and your ship. Tell them to follow the coordinates at their fastest possible speeds and that we will rendezvous with them shortly." The monitor stated. Shepard wondered why they would meet them later.

"Explain to me why we are meeting up with them later rather than following them?" Shepard crossed her arms and looked at the monitor with a glare. Garrus and Jacqueline shifted uncomfortably, feeling the intensity of the glare, but as expected the monitor wasn't even fazed by it.

"Commander the Flood fleet will catch us if they are not intercepted. There must be a distraction to stall them so the fleet can get away."

"Let me guess we're the distraction?" Garrus sighed comically.

"Correct. This ship may not be large enough to handle an entire fleet but she does have a few tricks that are enough to stall a fleet." Reluctant promise stated in a devious voice. Shepard shifted her weight onto one leg.

"So what tricks does this small ship have to take on an entire fleet?" Shepard asked with a raised eyebrow.

The monitor looked back at her. His glowing eye flashed yellow.

"I'll show you."

* * *

><p>Katherine stared out of the viewport with a panicking heart. She kept her face and body calm and composed, but inside she was rather nervous. They were going to face off over fifty thousand ships with a single fighter like craft. Even with the monitors plan she thought it was a bad idea, but she knew they had to do it. She knew Reluctant Promise was right. They couldn't run or the Flood would catch them. So they had to distract them and give them the edge they needed to disappear.<p>

Shepard had watched the Remnants of the Migrant and Geth fleets flee the system with the Normandy as the lead. She was still very skeptical about wherever the monitor had sent them, but she could only hope they would be ok. With the Relay being guarded by the Flood there was no other way to escape the system.

Katherine shook her head trying to clear her mind. She had a lot of people resting on her decisions and her decisions were based off sheer trust and luck. It wasn't the smartest situation she had gotten herself into but she couldn't see anyway it could get worse.

Commander Shepard shifted her weight away from the viewport as a high pitched ding went off. The monitor had explained this would happen when they got within firing range. She prayed they wouldn't fire right away.

"Lets be glad they don't have any Reclaimer ships with them." Reluctant Promise announced as he entered the bridge. He had left to inspect the ships weapons.

"Why?" Shepard asked raising an eyebrow. The monitor floated up next to her, staring out the viewport towards the enemy fleet.

"If they did my plan would not work. The ships would be too resilient for my idea to work." He stated. Shepard studied the mass of different ships. She wondered what the Reclaimers ships looked like. She was seeing sleek and bulbous purple ships, rectangular and sure like gray ships, triangular and metallic ships, sleek and smooth looking metallic ships, and so many other various forms she could barely even describe to herself.

A small red light began to blink on the dashboard of controls.

"The enemy is preparing to fire..." Reluctant Promise stated.

"Great." Liara muttered from behind. Suddenly several more seats slide out from under the floor around the rest of Shepard's group.

"You may want to take a seat." The monitor said his eye glowing red.

Katherine didn't hesitate. She sat in one of the front seats and a hard light belt wrapped over her in an X form. The same happened to the rest of her group. Garrus was rather intrigued by the belts.

Suddenly a cold ran over the bridge. Shepard felt her hairs stand up on her arms.

"He doesn't know I'm here. He will try to intimidate you. Don't let him find me or we are all dead." Reluctant Promise stated in an almost shaky voice, his light dimming greatly. Shepard looked at him with a strange awe. She had never heard the monitor sound scared. Even of the Flood. So what could possibly scare him so much?

You know me Commander... A deep and horrid voice filled the air. Shepard knew the voice, but it still managed to send fear crawling up her spine.

"By the spirits..." Garrus gasped with a shiver running down his spine. Shepard felt her body cringe as the voice addressed her.

"Who are you?" She asked. She knew the voice was related to the parasite, or so she guessed, but she needed to know what it was.

"It is him..." Reluctant Promise whispered to himself.

I am the monument to all of your sins... I am what was created by your sins... I am the fifth part... The voice stated.

Shepard was confused. She had no idea what he was talking about.

Now my ships will not fire unless I say so... But if you want to live... You must tell me something... The voice stated. Before Shepard could respond the voice spoke again.

Where is he? The Monitor... I know you know Commander. Do not test me and I will allow your fleet to live... Do not lie to me or the consequences shall be dire...

Shepard looked over at Reluctant Promise. The monitor had floated towards the bottom of the bridge, towards the floor. He seemed to be cowering from the voice.

"He knows I'm here... Despite my advancements... I was given an advancement along with only one other AI. An advancement that allows him to not find me or hear me unless he physically connects with me... If he finds me... Your Galaxy dies... Please do not let him

find me." The monitor stated in a soft and terrified voice. Shepard bite her lip. She didn't want to give up the monitor but she barely knew him. And this voice was offering her a choice... A way to save her Galaxy... Then she realized it. The voice had said the fleet not the Galaxy... The voice was trying to play her.

"Your a liar. You'll destroy us the moment you get the chance!" Shepard spat with a fire filled voice.

Instead of the voice admitting or even just letting his ships open fire, it did something Shepard actually didn't expect. It laughed. And laughed. And laughed. Its laugh was dark and cold. Lifeless and void. Evil and cruel.

Commander Shepard's entire crew shivered and felt themselves crunch down into their seats at the sound. Shepard had never felt so cold on her life.

Ha ha ha ha ha! You are smart Commander. But you are a fool as well. Prepare to die! We will destroy him without the monitor! And we will end all the changes of the five ever coming to light! The voice roared. The entire ship seems to shake from the power behind the voice.

"What's the hell is the Five?" Shepard yelled.

"What the hell are you?!" Liara asked. She grabbed heard her and began convulsing. Her body began to thrash violently back and forth as the voice began to laugh even louder. Her inhuman screams filled the air as she continued to fly around in her seat and tears poured down her face.

"Liara!" Shepard yelled grabbing the hard light belts and trying to tear them off.

"Hold on!" Reluctant Promise yelled.

Suddenly their fighter like craft dived down. The voice disappeared, the atmosphere felt warm and alive again, Liara stopped convulsing and screaming but fell unconscious after her panic.

Shepard watched as the craft dived down and flew at full speed towards the fleet.

"Lets see If your plan works." Shepard yelled at the monitor. They had placed a mine field where the enemy fleet was, before the fleet had arrived, and thanks to Forerunner stealth technology the enemy fleet had failed to notice them.

"Activating mine field. Preparing to fire hard light rockets." Reluctant Promise stated. Shepard watched as mines with blasts equivalent to a blast one hundred times the size of the Hiroshima bomb, ignited up in front if the fleet. Seconds later Hard light rockets shot out from the fighter, twenty in total. The rockets broke apart into a thousand smaller rockets each, equally twenty thousand rockets. The rockets flew the remaining way through the remains from a two thousand ships destroyed by the mines and slammed into the ships behind them.

"Firing final flare." Reluctant promise stated. Shepard didn't even

acknowledge him. She stared in awe. A single fighter was capable of this. A single fighter had destroyed thousands of ships. She wondered how powerful the Forerunners had been, which made her wonder even more how powerful had the Reclaimers been?

She watched as a single light based missile flew towards the enemy fleet. It flew at the fleet and moments before impact it exploded. A bright flash of light, one brighter than the sol systems sun, covered the entire view of the viewport. The viewport managed to polarize in time to keep the crew from being blinded. Shepard saw a worm hole open up in front of them.

"What was that?" Garrus asked in shock.

"A final flare. An large blinding EMP designated to cripple enemy fleets for a quick get away." Reluctant Promise stated. Then they entered the wormhole and disappeared from the battle.

* * *

><p>"So where are we headed?" Shepard asked as she looked around her fleet via the Normandy's holotable in the war room. They had landed the fighter within the Normandy's bay, which took up most of the space. They were traveling at FTL speeds towards a system outside of the galaxy in the darkness between Galaxy's.<p>

"To the last place any of them live." Reluctant Promise stated.

"These Reclaimers you speak of?" Legion asked crossing his arms. The monitor had told Shepard's crew the same exact story he had told her. She still had her questions though. Such as what the hell The Five was.

"No." The monitor replied.

"Then who?" Ashley Williams asked.

"The Last of the Covenant."

-

>
'Test the doorway...'_

'It works mam...'

'Amazing... What my mother and the Reclaimers would've given to see this...'

'Its possible this is the way the Five can be found...'

'Possible'

'But what about the reports?'

'Hopefully they can awake him...'

'If they don't?'

'Then God help us all...'

-

A/N not as long as the last chapter but its decent. Hope you enjoyed! God bless and please Review! Also any questions feel free to PM me.

5. Part I Chapter 4 (Un beata'd)

A/N well hey guys! Long time! Sorry I'm trying to update but writing these chalets are challenging! Hope you like this Chapter!

Part I

The voice and face of all evil

Chapter four: The last of the Covenant

-

"What is this Covenant?" Liara asked curiously.

Shepard stared at the monitor with unforgiving eyes. The monitor had told them they were going to save the last Reclaimer. Now here they were going to find whatever this Covenant was. Shepard degraded herself for her mistake. She should've been more careful when dealing with the Monitor. She could feel how tense the air was. She was glad she wasn't the only one feeling upset by the decoy. Shepard could've sworn if the air was any tenser she could've grabbed it and out it in a jar for keep sakes.

"The Covenant was an alliance of alien races that explored the Galaxy 2.2653 billion years ago around the same time as the UNSC. Their main goal however was to go on something they referred to as the Great Journey. A religious pilgrimage so to speak." Reluctant Promise stated.

"So they were kind of like what the Citadel is? Excluding the die hard religious part." Garrus asked trying to create a small joke to lighten the mood. It didn't work.

"The Citadel?" The monitor asked confused. Before anyone could respond to him he spoke again.

"One moment." He stated, his bright blue eye glowed brightly for a few seconds before returning to its normal brightness. The group barley even blinked by the time the he was done going through the Normandy's systems and gathering all the information he need.

"Ah yes. The Citadel. The center for all diplomatic relations for your Galaxy. Well In a way they were like the Citadel since the Covenant was made of multiple xenomorphic species, but that's where the similarities end. The Covenant was a militaristic society with weapons that could easily challenge and defeat the UNSC at the time or any of the Citadel races. Long ago the Covenant and UNSC fought in the Great War. The two clashed and the galaxy shook to its seams from the fighting."

"Wait so the UNSC was already as strong if not stronger than the Reapers but your saying this Covenant was possibly even stronger?" Ashley Williams said leaning over the war table as she stared at the monitor with unbelieving eyes.

"Yes and they were far more ruthless. After twenty years of war the UNSC was on the brink of defeat when the last Reclaimer saved them once and for all." Reluctant Promise hummed softly as he reminisced on the memory's. How he longed to meet the inheritors of the mantle, well now only the last inheritor.

"Great." Ashley sighed disheartened.

"What happened?" Liara asked softly wanting to hear more about this ancient and unknown history.

"That is no importance right now. What is Important is that we get the cooperation of the Covenant." The monitor stated floating towards the holotable. His eye glowed as he hacked into the Normandys systems again. Shepard watched in awe as the holotable suddenly came to life and displayed several different alien races that Katherine had never seen before. There were eight different races. The most terrifying were the large ones with giant shields. Shepard wondered what kind of damage they could do.

"Now what you see here were the eight members of the original Covenant." Reluctant Promise stated as a hologram of a human appeared next to each race to compare the two races sizes.

Ashley and Shepard were almost terrified to see the ones with giant shields were twice the size of humans if not bigger.

"The ones on the far left."

"Whose left?" Ashley asked. Shepard would've normally considered it a stupid question but decided it wasn't since the war room was circular and there was no definite left.

"My left." The monitor replied slightly irritated but the question.

"Anyway the ones to my left are called the unngoy, more commonly known as grunts. They were the basic infantry of the Covenant. Being about five feet in height, having weaker weapons, and having a generally cowardly attitude, alone they were not much of a threat but whenever in groups they were a dangerous bunch." The monitor stated. He floated over to the next species.

"This critter was called a Kig-Yar or Jakal by the UNSC. They were bird like reptilian creatures with two different sub groups. One is the Jackals and the other the Skirmishers. They were primary used as snipers, scouts, shock troopers, and defensive units due to their heightened senses. They regularly wielded hand held shields that were capable of taking significant punishment before collapsing and were generally taller than most humans averaging between six and seven feet. Unfortunately the Kig-Yar went extinct after the Fall." Again he floated over to the next group and before anyone could ask what the Fall was he continued.

"This species was once called Yanme'e or Drones as humans once called

them. They were around the same size as large humans and were insect like aliens with flight capabilities. They had great understanding of technology and machinery though seemed to lack individuality. They were quick and through their mastery of anti gravity technology they had numerous advantages in battle with not flight capable creatures. They too however long ago went extinct for unknown reasons."

"The Fourth species are the Sangheili. The Elites. They are a proud and noble race whose society is built on honor and pride. They were physically much larger, stronger and faster than humans. They would be able to easily rival your modern day species classified as the Krogan." Reluctant promise stated earning the hologram of the Elites a few uneasy glances.

Shepard was intrigued. A race that could physically challenge the Krogan? She felt impressed by these Elites and she found it odd how they resembled the Turians even if only to the slightest extent. The monitor continued.

"They were the backbone of the Covenant military until the Great Schism where they were betrayed. They eventually allied themselves with the UNSC and helped the last Reclaimer end the war. One particular Elite helped him the most."

"Who was the Elite?" Liara asked.

"His name was Thel 'Vadam, known as The Arbiter."

Shepard noted the name. It was a unique name that seemed like it would strike fear and awe into the hearts of enemy's. Shepard didn't worry however. Whoever he was he was surely dead after two billion years.

The monitor went on to explain the rest of the Covenant species. He introduced the Brutes, Hunters, and Prophets.

Shepard was stunned to learn the savagery of the brutes could rival that of the Krogans and was even more surprised when the monitor told them that their strength surpassed the Krogans. She was happy to learn the brutes had gone extinct a while back.

When he had explained the hunters to them the entire group had gone deathly silent. The strength the beasts possessed was terrifying. Their weapons even more so. Their sheer existence was terrifying. Katherine had been relieved to learn they were generally friendly unless pissed off. She told herself to remember to never piss off a hunter if she ever meet one.

Shepard immediately didn't like the prophets. She didn't like the way they ran things and lied to their people, and the were ugly. Really ugly. She thought they looked like a two hundred year old grandmother. What she hated the most however was how their actions so resembled those of the council. She was more than relieved when she learned they were extinct as well.

Finally after an undefined amount of time the monitor finished his introduction of the Covenant. Shepard briefly wondered what their military was like. She looked up at Reluctant Promise.

"What was their military like?" She asked letting a hint of her

curiosity show. She wanted to know a lot of other things as well and she figured there wasn't a better time to ask than now while he was spilling his guts to them.

"Their military was very formidable in strength but lacked any true tactical brilliance. However their numbers and sheer brute strength gave them a huge advantage on the battlefield over their UNSC counterparts."

"What about their naval power? What were their ships like?" Liara asked.

"They had several ship classes. The largest being the Super Carrier which reached a length of thirty kilometers. Each ship was made of an strong purple metal. The designs were sleek and bulbous." The Monitor pulled up a hologram of the ship classes ranging from smallest to largest. Shepard immediately recognized the largest ship.

"So that's the ship we saw in the middle of the Flood fleet." Liara stated staring at the same ship as Shepard.

"Correct. Their ships however were not nearly as nimble or maneuverable as your own but their firepower was greatly beyond yours. Be glad you never saw the glassing of a planet." Reluctant Promise stated with a somber voice.

"What exactly is Glassing?" Ashley asked quizzically.

"Glassing occurred when the Covenant would fire a high powered beam from orbit and literally burn the surface of a planet to glass. They normally only used this on certain spaces of land such as UNSC factories or military strongholds. However they did glass a few planets entirely rendering them uninhabitable for decades to come."

"That's insane. Why would someone do that?" Liara naively asked. Shepard shook her head at the monitors information. She knew an enemy would do whatever it would take to win a war but burning an entire planet? Even she thought that was a little much, since even the Reapers hadn't done anything that drastic.

"What about this Great Schism?" Shepard asked referring to the earlier mention of it.

"Ah." The monitor said with a sigh.

"Towards the end of the Great War, while the UNSC was near defeat, the Covenant had a civil war. The Prophets betrayed their Elite allies, using the Brutes as their new military backbone. They tried to wipe the Sangheili extinct. It didn't work however and the elites ended up joining the UNSC."

"Why would they betray their own?" Liara asked.

"The elites leaned about the truth of the Great Journey something the Prophets rejected as heresy." Reluctant Promise simply stated.

"And what was the truth about the Great Journey?" Shepard asked curiously.

"That is a story for another time. We have arrived." The monitor stated his eye glowing a bright green. Shepard eyed him curiously. She would like to hear the whole history between the Covenant and the UNSC.

Katherine watched as the holotables display changed into a large planet with a Saturn like ring around it. It had several large moons and was the only celestial body orbiting its own star. The surface was rocky looking with bodies of water spread throughout the surface. It reminded the commander of Earth just more barren and at least ten times bigger.

"Commander we've arrived at the coordinates Reluctant Promise gave us. Scans show it has an earth like atmosphere. Also I'm not sure the fleet has enough fuel for the journey back into the Galaxy. The Normandy only has two tenths left of its tank." Joker stated over the intercom.

"Great..." Shepard sighed pulling part of her hair behind her ear. Suddenly an alarm began to sound.

"Shepard incoming contacts! They just appeared out of no where. Two hundred ships surrounding us on all sides spaced out evenly. Each one is at least three kilometers in length." Legion informed looking back at Shepard from a terminal within the war room.

"Stupid decision to surround such a larger force." Garrus chuckled.

"Shields up. Tell the fleet to prepare to fire on my command." Shepard ordered crossing her arms and ignoring Garrus's comment. The holotable adjusted to display her fleet of a few thousand ships to the ships surrounding her fleet. They were large and bulbous.

"Is this the last of the Covenant you were talking about?" Shepard asked looking towards Reluctant Promise.

"Yes Commander. I suggest you let me handle this. They will listen to an instrument of their Gods." He stated a little too confidently. Shepard shook her head.

"Send out a transmission. Lets see if we can get some negotiations going before we start another war." Shepard said looking over at Liara. Liara nodded and hurried over to another terminal.

"It has been a long time." Reluctant Promise sighed happily. Shepard raised an eyebrow at his statement.

"Shepard receiving an incoming transmission." EDI stated over the intercom.

"Patch it through." Shepard replied. She was only the slightest surprised to know they had already received a transmission from the new fleet. She had half expected that would happen when the ships first appeared. She was also glad they hadn't just opened fire like the other half of her had expected.

The holotable flickered and its image changed. The two fleets disappeared from the holographic display and morphed into a large being with slick and pointed armor. The being had its arms behind its

back and it stretched its four mandibles. Its skin was scaly and its body lean.

Shepard would've been shocked more by its appearance if the monitor hadn't shown her the races of the covenant, though she was a little startled to actually meet a living so soon. She figured the monitor meant for this to happen. She decided to wait and let things play out. If things got ugly she could just blow the monitor to smithereens.

"An actual elite..." Liara muttered under her breath. The hologram looked at her quizzically before looking back at Shepard.

The elites mandibles moved around and noise came from its throat like it was talking to them. The language it spoke however was far too different for anyone to understand. It was heavy and gurgly. It finished speaking and waited for a response. Shepard looked over at Liara for help. Alien languages weren't really her thing.

"What are you saying?" Liara asked frustrated. The elite looked at her strangely. It looked down and seemed to mutter something to itself. It looked up again and spoke.

"I am Fleet Master Thran' Fredum of the Sangheili fleet Majestic Torch. Now I ask why have you dared to enter our system?" The elite asked with a commanding voice, though everyone could hear its apparent struggle to speak English. Shepard noticed the slur of his S's. She wondered how the elites knew how to speak English. It was a question she could ask later.

"My name is Commander Katherine Shepard of the Systems Alliance. We were brought here by this monitor Reluctant Promise." Shepard said making room for the monitor next to her.

The Elite stared at her with unbelieving eyes seeming to have ignored her statement.

"I never thought I would see a living human." He mumbled. Shepard looked at him oddly. Before she could respond the monitor spoke.

"Greetings! I am Reluctant Promise of installation 345 on the planet Rannoch! I was designed and created by the Forerunners as a monitor of that installation." He stated with a voice far too gleeful for Shepard's taste.

The elite seemed taken aback for a moment as he looked to the monitor. He studied the monitor before speaking again.

"I have heard such things before... Old myths and legends... But the last of the Gods' great structures were destroyed long ago and even if you were created by the Gods I must ask you to leave peacefully or I will force you to leave." Thran' emphasized the last part. Shepard immediately knew he wasn't kidding.

"Fleet Master Thran' there are three Forerunner installations still intact. One installation, mine to be exact, has been compromised. The other holds the last Reclaimer. And the last..." The monitors stopped speaking for a moment as if contemplating what to say.

"What was I talking about again?" The monitor asked cluelessly. Shepard shared a confused glance with Garrus.

"You were talking about the last Forerunner installations..." Shepard whispered to the confused AI.

"Ah yes! Anyway there are three left. And we need your help. We must speak with your leader." Reluctant Promise stated, avoiding the topic of the third installation. Shepard engraved it in her memory to ask the monitor why he didn't speak of the third installation.

"I am the leader of the Covenant." Thran' stated proudly.

"Yes yes... But not you. I want to speak to him..." The monitor's eye glowed red.

Shepard stepped back from the bipolar AI.

"Who is this him you speak of?" The elite asked. Shepard knew the others didn't hear it but she did. His voice had wavered only the slightest and that, showed that he knew what the monitor was talking about. He was just playing hard to get.

"You know of whom I speak..." The monitor replied with a dark voice.

"He will say the same as I have." The elite retorted.

"Fleet Master I am almost certain his response will be different. He knew the last Reclaimer and will willingly take us to him."

"You speak of the Last Reclaimer... He is nothing more but a myth as well. He died a long time ago." The elite stated.

"That's where you're wrong. He is very alive and the Galaxy needs him once more. In fact your leader can even confirm this."

Thran' stared at the monitor having seemingly forgotten about Shepard. It made Katherine uneasy. She wasn't used to being on the sideline. She was used to being the one arguing and making decisions. It made her feel attention obsessed or selfish, but she knew that wasn't it. That last time she sat on the sidelines the Reapers had managed to sneak up on the Galaxy and almost managed to destroy it. She didn't like leaving the fate of the Galaxy in the hands of an unstable AI, but what choice did she have? She hated to admit it but she had no idea what the AI was talking about. She barely knew any of it. All she knew is that they had to save this Reclaimer if they wanted to save the Galaxy and she would do almost anything it took to save it.

"And why would you need his help to find him?" The elite stated.

"Because only he knows where he is. Also these ships do not have the capability to make it to that far out into deep space. We need your help." The monitor seemed to almost plead with him.

The elite thought about it carefully. He could not risk his people's safety, but he could also sense the worry in the monitor's voice. He couldn't just sit on the sideline and do nothing while someone pleaded

for help. His honor would not allow it.

"I will send you coordinates where you can land a shuttle. Meet with the greeting party I will send to meet you and they will transport you to my desired meeting location. We will then discuss this in private... Commander..." he said turning back towards Shepard.

"My fleet will escort your fleet to our moon. If they try anything we will not hesitate to obliterate your entire fleet. I recommend that you don't arm yourselves when you arrive on my planet. My people have not seen an outsider for a very long time."

"Agreed." Shepard and Reluctant Promise stated at the same time.

"Good. I will see you soon." Thran's hologram flickered away as the communication was cut off.

"I don't trust him." Garrus stated.

"He probably doesn't trust us either." Ashley Williams retorted.

"Enough." Shepard snapped. She looked up at the monitor.

"Liara tell the fleet to follow the coordinates he sends them and update them on the situation." Shepard ordered. She didn't even need to see the Asaris nod to know she was already on the task. Katherine looked up at the monitor.

"I hope you know what your doing."

* * *

><p>Katherine stepped out of the shuttle and covered her eyes. The star, or sun of the planet, was beaming down on them through the reddish orange sky since hardly any clouds were in the sky. Shepard could smell the fresh air and the salt of the ocean. She wasn't surprised when she felt the humidity hit her full on. She wish she had tied her hair up. Her straight red hair was going to curl badly.<p>

She looked around the dirt landing sight, a large cliff dropping off into the ocean behind them. She could hear the waves of the dark blue ocean crashing against the rocks. Katherine turned away from the ocean searching for the party meant to greet her and her team. No one was within in sight. Well no one except the CSS battlecruiser floating off in the distance. Garrus and Jacqueline stepped out of the shuttle and made their way next to her. Shepard had brought the, for one reason. Besides Legion they were the two best fighters she had. If things got ugly she'd need them.

"Cortez." Shepard started as she pressed down on her com.

"Remain here until further notice. We don't want provoke the natives." She strongly emphasized the provoking part. The others nodded in agreement.

"Oh this is a lovely planet!" Reluctant Promise announced as he floated off the shuttle. His eye glowing a bright blue.

"Hmm I wonder if my creators ever knew about this system? It wasn't on any data files or any archives." He continued confused.

"Promise, just keep it to yourself will you?" Shepard said trying to polite. The monitor didn't reply as he just stared off into the distance. Shepard shook her head.

Dust that floated up into the air in the far distance managed to catch the commanders attention. The dust was swirling around what Shepard saw as purple vehicles. The vehicles floated off the ground a foot or two, and were racing straight for them. Shepard hoped this was really a greeting party and not an attack party. She had to resist the urge to ready her biotics and draw her weapon even though she didn't have one. Garrus and Jacqueline both shifted uncomfortably as they too noticed the vehicles.

"Oh look here they come!" Reluctant Promise said with glee. Shepard felt herself beginning to steam underneath her armor. She was starting to get annoyed with the monitors big mouth, then again who wasn't?

The vehicles were smooth and made of a purple metal. Several were smaller crafts with two wings that had mounted guns underneath them, a single pilot in each of the crafts. The others were larger vehicles that seated three people and had larger mounted guns on the back. Finally there was the last type of vehicle. It was the same size as the second type but had a large cannon replacing the mounted gun. On the sides were two mounted guns meant for the passengers while the driver was in the front. The odd placement created a triangular looking front for the vehicle while the back was squarish with rounded corners. The squared back of the vehicle allowed for several passengers to sit in the back while protected by an automated shield. The last type reminded Shepard of a small tank. They were a lot different from anything the Citadel races had, though they had a few similarities with Turian design.

The convoy was made of three small craft, four of the mounted gun ones and two of the large tank like ones.

Shepard felt both intrigued and threatened by the vehicle designs. The greeting party had some pretty big guns for just one shuttle full of people.

The vehicles pulled to stop around fifty feet from Shepard and her team. Several Elites hopped out from the tank like and mounted gun vehicles. Several small aliens which Shepard immediately recognized as Grunts, hopped out besides their larger comrades. The group wielded various weapons ranging from a small curved green light weapon to a larger sleek blue light weapon. Shepard looked around for Thran' Fredum. She hoped she would recognize him but she couldn't tell the difference among all the elites. The only thing she really saw different was their armor and its color. She cursed herself for not paying more attention to Thran's armor design. Maybe then she would've recognized him. She was supposed to be observant. Was she getting to old? Were her skills slowly decaying with time? Shepard blinked a few times bringing herself back to reality as a group of elites approached them.

"Are you the one named Commander Shepard?" The lead elite asked

loudly not even bothering to greet Shepard and her team. He stood a good few feet over Shepard and stared at her with unimpressed eyes. He held a small blue weapon in his hand. It reminded Shepard of a sub machine gun. His armor was a dark red color and was sharper looking than the rests. She wondered what that meant.

"I am." Shepard stated staring at the elite with a gaze of stone. The elite held a gaze that had struck fear into almost anyone she had known. Shepard however didn't back down.

"And I am Reluctant Promise of installation..." The monitor started. The elite held up a hand to the monitor rudely cutting him off.

"Good. Follow me. I will take you to Fleet Master Thran'." The elite said ignoring Reluctant Promise's introduction. He turned around and walked away with a scoff. Shepard glared at him from behind.

"Well he was mighty friendly." Reluctant Promise stated a bit downhearted. Shepard couldn't help a small grin.

"Do we follow?" Jacqueline asked in hushed tone. A few elites looked over at her with confused expressions, that were fortunately none hostile.

Shepard looked around the greeting team. She wanted to leave but with these unknowns owning this small system she doubted it was safe to just leave after agreeing to come down. She sighed as she accepted their only option.

"Like we have a choice..." Shepard hissed following after the elite.

"I'm really getting tired of these one sided choices..." Garrus sighed as he and Jacqueline followed after the Commander. Shepard couldn't agree more. These stupid one sided choices made her feel powerless. She felt like fate was stripping the power she held during the Reaper war away from her.

Shepard began to doubt herself as the lead elite motioned for them to sit in the back of the tank like vehicle. The team sat in the vehicle and Shepard stared out into the distance not even registering the vehicles driving away from her shuttle, mountains of dust picking up after the vehicles.

Shepard let out a soft sigh. She hated this feeling. Ever since this whole ordeal had started she kept getting pushed around as if she had no say. When the darkness stabbed Ashley she could do nothing for her friend, when the council damned her she could do nothing, when the Quarians and Geth were annihilated even though she didn't know what was happening she still was powerless to stop it, and now Reluctant Promise, an AI, was making all the calls when it came to this Covenant. She hated it. She hated feeling so powerless. She felt a moral responsibility to protect her galaxy and yet she wasn't even the one making decisions. How could she protect her Galaxy and all the people in it if she couldn't make any choices? If her life and their lives all rested in the words of this monitor? She just prayed to God that she would be strong and smart enough to save her Galaxy.

"So where are we going?" Reluctant Promise asked one of the elites sitting near them. The elites just stared at him in confusion. They turned to each other and muttered something in their native tongue.

"Guess they don't understand English?" Garrus stated rhetorically.

"I guess not. I will try their own language." The monitor stated. He suddenly began speaking in the elites native language which the elites were surprised by. Shepard watched as the two conversed for a few minutes before the monitor seemed satisfied and turned back to her and her team.

"They are taking us to their Capital called... Well actually I don't know if there's a word for it in your language Commander. Lets just call it... Infinity." The monitor stated with a satisfied voice.

"Why would they take us to their Capital?" Jacqueline asked baffled.

"Guess that's where their leadership is, though its rather a bad idea to take an unknown to the heart of your civilization. Hehe guess they didn't think it through." Garrus replied deciding to join the conversation. Shepard agreed, unless these soldiers were merely civilians acting as soldiers which would explain their reckless decision. She looked around and studied the actions of the elites in the vehicle with them.

After a few minutes of careful observation she could tell these elites were not military. They were civilian. Their actions were far to smooth and relaxed for military personal. They talked to much and were undisciplined. Shepard wondered why this once glorious Covenant was using civilians as it soldiers.

The vehicle dropped slightly as the ground dipped down causing Shepard to bounce a little. She watched the vehicles traveling behind her. They were fast and nimble, as well viciously elegant. Katherine let herself ponder what kind of firepower they had.

Minutes flew by as a howling wind began overtook the caravan. Shepard watched the terrain as it flew by. She noted the orange dirt and dust that made up the landscape. Strange and various forms of vegetation littered the surface. Rolling clouds began to pass by as they soared high in the sky. Soon the sky was covered in dark clouds. Thunder boomed across the sky as lightening began to lighten the sky. A sleek rain began to drizzle down on the convoy. Shepard listened as the rain batted against the sides of the alien vehicles. It created a soft drumming that drowned Shepard into a blissful peace.

After another couple of minutes of listening to the relaxing beating of the rain, Shepard felt the vehicles beginning to turn and she looked out towards the way they were turning. She only got a glimpse of the massive city they were approaching but was none the less awe stricken by it.

The vehicles drove into the large city, rain zipping by them. Shepard and her team watched as large sleek purple and blue buildings flew by them, lights illuminating the sky from all the buildings. The

buildings were smooth and curved. Sleek and graceful. At first they were smaller and wider but as the vehicles drew into the city the buildings grew taller and skinner. They towered up and into the sky, the sleek purple metal reflecting the light from the lightening in beautiful colors. Dozens of elites and grunts were milling about holding a strange form of umbrella. Strange looking ground vehicles drove by Shepard and her convoy. She noticed how the civilians seemed completely unaware of the military convoy or were just used to the military presence. As it was the 'civilians' barely even looked at Shepard and her convoy. She noticed a few other elites with military armor standing guard at various buildings they drove by. She wondered how integrated the military was with the civilian population.

Suddenly the vehicles slowed to halt. Shepard looked back and noticed the elites in her vehicles motioning for her to exit. Shepard complied and hopped out of the vehicle. She stretched her arms and legs letting the blood flow back to them. She stared up into the clouds and let the rain fall on her face. It had been a long time since she had just enjoyed the feeling of it. Garrus and Jacqueline stood on either side of her eyeing the building that stood before them. Reluctant Promise was engaged in another conversation with a different elite. Shepard found it amusing when she saw the elite was trying to answer the monitors questions but seemed rather annoyed by the persistent AI. At least she wasn't the only one slightly annoyed with him.

"That's one big building..." Jacqueline muttered under her breath. Shepard looked at the building in front of her. It was massive. The base was cylindrical with two towers raising up to the sky from it. The tops of the towers disappeared into the clouds, lightning flashing all around them. Lights from within the structure shown out into the dark sky. Shepard noticed dozens of flying vehicles flying around the towers in a proteins circle. She also noticed what she figured were dozens of other civilian flying vehicles flying in an orderly manner around the buildings.

"Its around 45,000 feet tall. A rather large structure for the technology available to them." Reluctant Promise stated floating over to Shepard.

Shepard heard the heavy footsteps even in the rain. The lead elite just walked past her and motioned for her and her team to follow, which they did.

They entered the building through a couple of round sliding doors. The lobby of the building was beautiful. Flowing water falls ran along the side walls while green vegetation accented the ground. In the center was a large desk with several elites sitting at it. Dozens of windows lined the walls not covered by waterfalls. Elevators dinged in the back of the lobby as elites and grunts waited to get on. Several large metal benches were spread around the vegetation. Lights hung from the ceiling giving off white light that contrasted brilliantly with the dark skies outside.

The elites escorting Shepard didn't have to check in with the front desk. The desk elites simply glanced over and saw the lead elite and would quickly return to their work. Shepard could see the fear in their eyes. She concluded that the lead elite was either a real jerk or simply commanded the respect of his fellow elites. She felt like

it was the first option more than anything.

Katherine watched as the elites lead them not to the elevators in the back but towards a back room with two elites in black armor and with managing armor standing guard. Shepard on instinct tensed up for a moment ready to fight in a second should things go wrong.

The lead elite said something to the guards in their language and one guard opened the doors to the back room. The lead elite motioned for Shepard and her team to follow him. They followed and were rather surprised that none of the others followed them. The lead elite closed the door as Shepard noticed the room was just another elevator lobby. The doors were a dark purple with white lights lining them on the outside. The lights suddenly turned green and the door slid open revealing the elevator. Its was large and bulbous. The lead elite entered and stood in the back with his arms crossed. Shepard and the other hesitated exchanging a few nervous glances.

"Inside." The lead elite said coldly. Shepard glared at him before complying. The group stepped inside the elevator and the doors slid shut. Katherine felt a jolt as the elevator started upwards at tremendous speeds. She studied the elevator. It was too large for her and her team but she figured it was because it was designed for elites who were a few feet taller than her, Garrus or Jacqueline. The ride up was silent and tense. Shepard could feel the eyes of the lead elite burrowing into the back of her skull. She wondered why he seemed to hate her so much. Shepard looked up and noticed strange symbols switching around on a panel above the door. She figured it was the elites form of a numbering system. She wondered how high they were.

"Its very interesting how these remnants of the Covenant have managed to get this far on a technological scale and still have not yet moved out of this system. I wonder why." Reluctant Promise muttered to himself. Shepard however was wondering the same.

The elevator slowed to halt and finally came to a soft complete stop. The lights inside turned green and the doors slid open. The group walked out of the elevator. The lead elite pushed past Shepard and her group earning him a serious of death glares.

The room they were now in was large and circular. Another desk with two elites sitting at it was on front of them. A set of doors was located on either side of the desk. The room was light by darker lights and was only lined with large couches and a few paintings of elites in golden armor. Shepard figured that the golden armor symbolized a high rank.

The lead elite walked over to the desk and exchanged a few words with one of the elites sitting at it. The elite glanced behind the lead elite and towards Shepard and her group. Her eyed them for a few seconds before giving the lead elite and curt nod. The lead elite said something back and moved towards the set of doors to the right of the desk.

He looked back at Shepard and with a twist of his head motioned her to follow. Again she followed. She was getting tired of all the following she had been doing.

The doors slide open and revealed another large chamber. A huge round

table was in the center of the room with thirteen seats around it. Several fluorescent lights hung above the round table giving the room a serious feeling. Eight seats of the round table were filled with Gold armored elites, four seated several grunts in a bright purple armor and in the last seat sat an elite in white armor. Shepard figured out who it was after a few seconds. Thran'.

The lead elite walked over to the table in between two of the gold armored elites. He raised a fist and placed it across his chest. He bowed slightly towards the elite in white armor and said something in their language. The white elite nodded and stated something back. Katherine was wishing she had a translator when the lead elite walked over to them.

"Fleet Master Thran' and the council will see you. Do not disrespect them or I will have your head." The elite hissed getting a step to close to Shepard. He stared her down for a split second before walking past them and leaving out the way they came.

The group stood in an awkward silence as the council and Thran' just stared at them. Shepard was slightly surprised the monitor had nothing to say, she had been half expecting him to immediately start talking the chance he got to. Shepard shifted uncomfortably and crossed her arms.

"Fleet Master Thran' I presume?" She said staring at the white armored elite. He nodded.

"And you are Commander Shepard?" The elite said. His voice was for more commanding in person than over a hologram.

"Yes." Shepard decided to take a daring move and walked forward to the table. Most wouldn't have considered it daring at all but when in a room full of huge, strong unknown aliens who could kill you at any moment it was taking a huge risk. Fourth agley for Katherine the elites didn't seem to mind. In fact a few of the golden armored ones grinned at her move, seemingly impressed.

Shepard stated at the white armored elite for a split second before speaking.

"Fleet Master Thran' you said you would help us?" She stated.

"I never said I would help. Merely discuss." The white armored elite replied. Shepard sighed internally.

"Then discuss we shall." Reluctant Promise said floating forward next to Shepard.

"Monitor" Thran' greeted.

"Yes. Fleet master again I plead with you that we need to speak with your leader. He is

>The only one with the knowledge of the Last Reclaimers where about's." Reluctant Promise stated. Shepard now understood. The monitor had no idea where the last Reclaimer was so he needed the Covenants help. Shepard decided to talk to him later about being clearer with his plans.<p>

"And why do you need to find this last Reclaimer?" Thran' asked

placing his hand together. Shepard noticed the others watching the conversation intently. Before the monitor could respond to Thran's question Shepard spoke up. It was time for her to represent her Galaxy.

"There's something called the Flood that has attacked our Galaxy. Its a parasitic organism that is starting to infect our civilian populations. Our military's are trying to hold them off but I do not know how long they can manage that. Their ships are far superior to our own and if this last Reclaimer can help us... I will do anything to obtain his help and save sky Galaxy." Shepard stated leaning over on the table. Her voice had been strong and loud. The reaction was not one she expected.

"The parasite?!" Several elites yelled. A few even got to their feet and roared. The grunts seems to cower deeper into their seats and covered their faces. One elite stood up and raise ships fist.

"We must burn them to the ground! We must destroy them once and for all!" He roared. He drew a weapon. A hilt of some sort. He activated it bringing to life a sword made of pure energy. Two blades protruded up out of each side creating an almost V like sword. Shepard had seen this sword before. One of the flood forms she had seen had wielded such a weapon.

>Shepard looked back to Thran'. Unlike his brethren he sat calm and collected. He raised his hands and ordered silence. The other immediately complied. He put his hands backs together and took a deep breath before speaking again.<p>

"We have stories of the parasite called the flood. We know of them and their capability of destruction. They destroyed the Reclaimers and the old Covenant. Now I ask you why should I risk my people and our safety to help your people? Your galaxy will fall even with my help." Thran's voice was remorseful but his tone indicated he was not willing to change his mind, still Shepard had to try.

"Because the last Reclaimer knows how to beat them." Reluctant Promise stated. Shepard was grateful he was helping her out. She honestly had no response to Thran's claim.

"How?" Thran' asked.

"I don't know. We must ask him himself. We need to speak to The Arbiter." Reluctant Promise stated again. Thran's' and the other kites and grunts stared at the monitor and Shepard wild eyed. Shepard had heard that name before but she had come to the conclusion he was dead. How could someone love for over two billion years?

"How do know that name..." One of the golden armored elites asked in shock.

"I know his name because he helped the last reclaimer debate the flood a long time ago..." The motion stated softly. Shepard turned and looked at him in shock.

"You never told me that." She attend beginning to feel her anger rise at him.

"You didnt ask."

"You told me the flood defeated the UNSC and her allies."

"And they did."

"So how could they have defeated them if they were defeated?" Thran's asked confused by the monitors statements.

"I'm sure you know of the Great War?" The monitor stated. The elites and grunts all nodded. They had all read the ancient history. The Great War was the time before the peace between the UNSC and Covenant. They all hated the prophets.

"Good. Well at the end of the Great War the last Reclaimer and The Arbiter fought together against the Flood on something called the Ark with a band of UNSC and elite ships as their aid. They were able to eradicate the Flood from the Galaxy once and for all. However they did not anticipate the Floods return. They never knew the Flood had originated outside the Galaxy." The monitor stated boredly.

"Wait the Flood originated outside the Galaxy?" Shepard asked baffled.

"And I know of these stories of ancient times. How still can they defeat the parasite? As you said all of the gods installations were destroyed. There is no ark left to defeat the flood." Thran' added.

"To answer your question Shepard, yes they did which is why the Survived. And to answer your question Fleet Master, my creators creation may all but be destroyed, but the Reclaimers still have many hidden secrets out there and only the Last Reclaimer knows of them and only The Arbiter knows where he is." Reluctant Promise stated.

"So you want me to help you based on the assumption that this Reclaimer knows how to defeat the parasite?" Thran' stated.

"Yes." Shepard stated. Thran's looked her and the monitor over. He pondered what to do. His heart said one thing while his mind said another. He hated having to make tough decisions but he would never complain about it. It was a part of his honor to make the choices only he could make for his people.

"This is non sense. We don't want to risk our people for a simple guess." One elite said

"The parasite will find us now that they are in the galaxy. Its only a matter of time." Another elite retorted.

"We've hidden for a billion years and they haven't found us yet." A grunt stated in his high pitched annoying voice.

"Because they didn't care about you." Shepard hissed. The entire rooms eyes fell upon her.

"You don't think an enemy with the capability of defeating the Reclaimers and the Covenant of old along with your gods, the forerunners, doesn't have the capability to find your hidden planet?" Shepard stated.

"They'll find you eventually and they'll destroy all of you. They could even be on their way here right now!" She exclaimed raising her voice. Reluctant Promise was impressed. She had gotten a quick grasp on what he had told her.

A few elites and grunts began to object but Thran' silenced them with the raising of one of his hands. He breathed in and out. His mind was racing with all of his possible choices.

Thran' stood up. He looked at the other elites and the grunts before looking at Commander Shepard.

"This matter is not for me to decide. Follow me but only Commander Shepard and the monitor. The rest stay here." Thran' stated. He walked over to a corner in the room and pressed his palm against the wall. A piece of the wall next to him slide up and revealed a secret elevator. If Thran' had never opened up the wall Shepard and her team wouldve never even known it was there. The secret elevator was different from the one Shepard had used earlier. The metal lining it was old and the purple of the metal was showing sighs of fading away. There were no lights on the elevator, just a single button of to the side that glowed a bright blue.

Thran' pressed the button and stood in front of the elevator with crossed arms.

Shepard exchanged a glance with both Garrus and Jacqueline before walking over to the elite. She ignored the stared from the other elites and grunts and stood next to Thran', crossing her arms as well. Reluctant Promise floated up next to the two and stayed silent much to Shepard's surprise.

Moments later the doors slid open revealing a similar interior car as the elevators earlier. Thran' stepped in, Shepard and the monitor following his lead and stepping inside after him. Shepard managed to sneak a tensed look at Garrus before the doors slid shut. She had no idea what to expect. All she knew is that they were going to meet The Arbiter, a two billion year old being. She wondered how this would turn out.

* * *

><p>Shepard stepped out of the elevator. The ride down had taken a lot longer than she had originally anticipated. When they had rode up earlier towards the meeting room it had only taken a few minutes at most but this one had taken at least twenty minutes, which felt even longer with Reluctant Promises constant questions of Thran'. She wondered where they were as she gazed around.<p>

They had been left off in a huge cavern. Shepard could see the water dripping from the ceiling as well as running down the walls as she let out foggy breath. It was rather cold in the cavern, fortunately Shepard's armor kept her mostly insulated. Ten Elites in pure black armor stood on each side of the cavern. They all turned to Shepard and stared at her before looking away. Shepard could see their muscles tense up. A few dim blue lights lite the cavern, reflecting off the water to give the cavern a spiritual feeling. What most surprised Shepard however was not the cavern or the elites or the lights, but what laid at the very end of the cavern.

It was large a cylindrical shaped with a rectangular glass panel on the front. The glass was covered with ice obscuring whatever was inside. Huge tubes and wires protruded out from it and buried themselves deep into the wall behind the structure. The metal was ancient and sleek. The gray metal covered in what seemed to be ice sheets. Blue lights pulsates along the sleek metal. A medium sized pedestal was next to it, a blue holographic display on top of it. It reminded Shepard of the installation back on Rannoch but the metal design was slightly different.

"Come commander." Thran' stated softly as he walked past her, Reluctant Promise already on his heels.

Shepard followed him wary of the elites around her. She hoped Thran' was a kind leader. If he wasn't she knew shed be dead in seconds. She shrugged off her worries and kept going forward. Thran' raised his hand for them to stop when they reached a few feet in front of the cylindrical shaped object.

Thran' walked forward to the pedestal and pressed in a series of commands to complicated for Shepard to follow. Shepard stole a glance at Reluctant Promise whom was just staring at the object before them. She wondered what the AI could possibly be thinking about.

Suddenly a hiss filled the room. Air vented out from the side of the object and the ice that encased the glass and covered the metal began to quickly melt away creating a puddle on the floor before them. Thran' walked back over to them as the glass panel lifted up and disappearing into the metal behind it. Steam and fog escaped and covered the object for a few seconds. Shepard felt her heart racing in anticipation. She wanted to see this Arbiter.

A loud thud echoed through the Cavern. Thran' and the other elites all got down on one knee with a fist over their chests.

They all chanted together something in their own language. Shepard quickly glanced back at them before turning back to the object.

Before her was a large... Very large elite on one knee and fist planted on the ground. His breath was heavy. His armor was an old silver and had the design of what seemed to be ancient times. Shepard stood her ground. And slowly and surely the elites head slowly raised up and stared Shepard straight in the eyes. His eyes were menacing and powerful yet somehow trusting and understanding.

"I am the Arbiter and Why have I been awoken?"

* * *

><p>My lord we have discovered the Knight...

Good. Destroy him.

The voice and face are already moving to destroy the solider and the hero it would be pointless to destroy the knight.

Hmmm... Watch the soldiers and hero's actions. If they get too far kill the knight and then the cycle will finally end and we will win...

Agreed...

* * *

><p>AN hope you guys liked it! I should be updating more regularly now that summers here! if any questions leave a review! Please review! Thanks again for reading and god bless! Let me know if there's anything I can fix or clear up and I will do my best to fix it.**

6. Part I Chapter 5 (Un beata'd)

A/N This chapter I'm not too proud of it but oh well. hope you enjoy.

* * *

><p>Part I

The voice and face of all evil

Chapter 5: The Reapers

* * *

><p>The Arbiter slowly stood up. He felt his muscles burn with lactic acid. He breathed in the air, filling his lungs for the first time in ten thousand years. He flexed his hands and feet getting the blood to flow back into his appendages. He looked down at the human before him. She was small and looked rather fragile. Yet she had a look in her eyes that the Arbiter found impressive. Though she looked fragile, the Arbiter refrained from making any quick assessments. If there was one thing he learned it was that humans were unpredictable. He straightened his back and let out a small roar. Finally he looked back at the human and repeated his question.<p>

"Why have you awaken me?" He asked in his deep voice.

Commander Katherine Shepard snapped out of her trance. She was completely in awe of the elite before her. She noticed how his stance oozed authority and honor. Finally she remembered that she needed to reply but again the monitor beat her to it.

"Greetings I am Reluctant Promise! Monitor of installation 345! We have come to ask of your assistance in locating the one designated as the last Reclaimer." The monitor started.

Right to the point then... Shepard sighed in her mind. She stole a glance at Thran' and noticed him staring at the monitor with annoyance. She quietly chuckled to herself.

The Arbiter looked at the monitor with questioning eyes. He moved forward and noticed the humans attention immediately snap back to him. He noticed her fists slightly tense up. He wondered why she was so jumpy. Last time he had been awake humans and the elites were on good terms, then again that had been thousands of years ago.

"Why do fear me human?" He asked ignoring the monitors

statement.

Shepard felt the rooms eyes fall on her again. She slowed her breathing and tried her best to sound confident.

"My name is Commander Katherine Shepard and trust me I don't fear anyone." She said with fire. The Arbiter looked at her impressed. He hadn't seen a human with so much fire in her in a long time... Then again he hadn't seen any human in a long time.

"And why are you here Commander?" He asked.

"Same reason as him." Shepard stated nodding towards Reluctant Promise. He nodded as he looked back at the monitor.

"Monitor you speak of the last reclaimer?" He asked.

"Yes. We need his help to save the Galaxy from the parasite." Reluctant Promise replied.

"Hmmm..." The Arbiter looked to Thran', whom had finally stood up along with the rest of the elites.

"What is your name Fleet Master?" He asked.

"Thran' Freedom sir." Thran' replied with a voice in awe. Shepard noticed this. She concluded that Thran' had never met the Arbiter before. She wondered how long the Arbiter had been asleep.

"Thran' take me outside. I wish to feel the rain once again. Commander, Monitor, please join us." The Arbiter said waking forward towards the elevator. Thran' followed hastily while Shepard and the monitor exchanged a glance before following the true leader of the Covenant.

* * *

><p>Shepard held onto the railing for dear life. Her hands were freezing and her hair was whipping about. She could've sworn she felt ice crystals beginning to form on them. Rain pounded away at her. She felt the chill even through her armor.<p>

Katherine gritted her teeth together as she tightened her grip to the railing on the roof of the building. She cursed herself for going out onto the roof outside the penthouse. She hadn't wanted the Arbiter or Thran' thinking any less of her just cause she wouldn't go out into a measly storm, but now she was having second thoughts. This storm was far from measly. It was a monster of another level entirely.

Shepard watched through squinted eyes as the Arbiter just stood on the roof, neck stretched out towards the sky, eyes closed and standing still despite the force of the wind and rain. Even Thran' was having to balance himself on the railing, and the monitor, even with his advance anti gravity technology, was still having to fight against the force of the storm. She didn't understand how on earth this eight foot tall elite could just stand there through this monster storm and not even move a muscle.

The Arbiter breathed in deeply. He could here the commander struggling against the forces of nature. He was impressed She was

still holding on. It meant two things. She was determined and strong. He stared up into the clouds and let his memories flood back to him. All the bad and all the good. It was torment and relief.

Lightning tore through the sky above the building. Thunder roared and almost obliterated Shepard's ear drums. She couldn't believe how loud thunder was when it was close by. She wondered how tall the building was for them to be up in the heart of this storm. The rain alone was torment but the wind, lightning, thunder and now hail were just making it even worse for her.

Shepard pulled her head down as the hail began to pour. She could here Thran' grunt as the hail began to hit him. A piece of hail smacked her in the back of the head, and for a split second Shepard lost her grip of the railing. The wind tore her hands from the railing entirely only a few moments later.

"Commander!" Thran and the monitor both yelled, yet Shepard couldn't hear them over the wind and thunder. She felt herself slip on the wet roof. As she lost her footing a gust of wind that rivaled that of hurricane wind slammed into her and pulled her. She felt her side hit the railing she had once held onto for dear life. She felt her weight and momentum turn against her as she kept going, and finally she flipped over the railing. Shepard saw her life flash before her eyes.

Suddenly a large hand grabbed hers, yanking her back up with relative ease. She looked up at her savior. The Arbiter stared her in the eyes. His eyes full of pain, anger and vengeance. Yet it wasn't evil. It was justice he wanted, and Shepard could tell that much just from the look in his eyes. He pulled her over the railing and instead of setting her down, he pulled her into his arms, and like a child, carried her. Thran' and the monitor followed the elite and Commander as the Arbiter made his way through the shield of the penthouse and inside.

The top floor of the enormous building was a entire penthouse meant for Thran', though he hardly spent any time here since he thought he deserved no more than his fellow soldiers and normally lived in a regular apartment across the road.

The penthouse was nice and furnished. It had a circular display that reminded Shepard of a TV hanging on the front wall. It had slick couches, paintings, and a fully furnished kitchen and bedroom for Thran'. It also had a large fireplace that was designed with grace and elegance. Shepard thought everything looked too slick, too purple and just far too alien for her liking.

The Arbiter walked over to one of the smaller couches and set her down while Thran' turned the shields onto full power, a basic lock so to speak.

Shepard sat up and stared at the elite with bewildered eyes. She felt embarrassed that she had to be saved but she was even more confused why he had saved her. She had known him only for a few minutes and yet he had already saved her life once. That was not a debt she could live down.

The Arbiter didn't even glance back at her, and turned away from the commander walking over to the fireplace. He pressed on a button,

Shepard watched as a fire suddenly bursted to life in the fireplace. Water dripped from his skin and armor and onto the floor.

The monitor floated over to Shepard. An orange light appeared from his central 'eye' as he scanned the commander.

"You seem to be fine commander though your facial expression suggests otherwise." Reluctant Promise stated.

Shepard didn't even bother to look back at the monitor. She just nodded her head towards the Arbiter.

The monitor understood her gesture.

"I'm not sure either." He whispered to her. Thran' walked over to the two, holding a towel over his shoulder and another in his hand.

"Commander." He said holding out the towel. Shepard eyed him cautiously before taking the towel.

"Thank you." She replied unsurely. She wondered why these elites were so kind to her. She didn't even know them and yet they were being truly kind, not just good hosts. Thran' gave her a curt nod then looked over at the Arbiter. His face seemed to twist in confusion. Shepard understood. He too was confused by how the Arbiter was acting. Like her he had expected a glorious leader who would be proud, loud and yet strong. He had expected the Arbiter to be glorious, yet this Arbiter was quiet and modest. He didn't seem to proud of himself but something told Thran' there was much more to him than meets the eye.

Shepard took a breath and stood up from the couch, but the Arbiter beat her to it.

"I saved you Commander because it was the right thing to do." He stated turning around towards her.

"I have met evil humans and elites. Even evil Forerunners." He said nodding towards the monitor. "However I can tell you are not one of these. You seem proud and strong yet have a sense of duty. You remind me of myself when I was younger. Ready to fight and to charge head on into things without thinking. Be careful with your pride Commander. It could kill you one day." He turned back towards the fireplace, missing the bare from Shepard.

Shepard felt herself blush with anger.

_How dare he... _She seethed in her mind.

"How on earth could you know that after knowing me for only half an hour at best?" She asked through gritted teeth.

"No human with any sense would've gone into that storm the way you did. So you are either very confident and proud in your abilities or you are just a fool." The Arbiter opened his mandibles and let out a yawn.

"Judging by your rank as commander, and by the way you present yourself, I believe you are just proud. Though I have been wrong

before." The Arbiter said after he finished yawning.

Shepard took a few steps towards him. She didn't mind too much when people criticized her but for someone to make such ridiculous claims was something else.

"Look." She stated trying to keep her temper suppressed. "I may seem proud and confident but I'm not... At least not entirely. I went out into that storm because you did." Shepard replied.

"But why?" The Arbiter asked never once losing his calm composure.

Shepard sighed and walked over to the shields. She looked out at the storm, and even behind the shields she could still feel the cold rain and the terrible wind.

"Other species have always looked down on humans. I didn't want you to think the same just because I wouldn't walk out into a stupid storm." She knew it was a stupid reason but it was the truth. It had taken years for humanity to become equals with the council races and still there were times that humans were frowned upon. She had wanted to prove to the Arbiter that humans were just as strong as elites, that they were equals.

She turned back to the Arbiter with her defiant gaze.

"That's why I went out there." She finished crossing her arms. The Arbiter simply nodded. He finally turned away from the fire to face the others.

"You wish to find the last reclamer to save your Galaxy?" He asked clasping his hand behind his back.

Shepard nodded while the monitor simply agreed.

"And how do you wish to accomplish this?"

Shepard looked at the monitor.

"Well We know the forerunner installation is far out of the Galaxy. Too great of a distance for the Commanders ships to travel without slip-space capabilities and the forerunner craft is damaged, its slip-space was only capable of two jumps and we used them already." Reluctant Promise informed and for once he didn't sound peppy or annoying but actually concerned, however, Shepard felt a twinge of anger. Why hadn't he told her the craft was useless till now? She really needed to have a talk with him about sharing important information.

"And what do you want me to do?" The Arbiter asked still calm. Shepard looked at him.

"I want you to help us. If you have any way of getting there then help us. If not then give me a ship and I'll never bother you again... Besides you're the only one who knows where this last Reclamer is and if Reluctant Promise here is right then he's the only one who can save my galaxy." Shepard felt relieved. Finally their request was out and now she just needed an answer. Even if he didn't help her personally, they could use a ship and a location. If all else failed

she would just get the location and shed figure out how to get there later.

"I wish to help commander, but alas I do not know where the last Reclaimer is." The Arbiter turned back to the fire. Shepards world slowed down. She replayed his words in her head. Over and over again. She looked at the monitor, her anger towards him boiling up to the surface.

"You said he'd know!" She hissed. She was so angry. So defeated. There went her only chance at saving the Galaxy.

"My information dictates that he does... He is either lying or my information is outdated." The monitor said looking only at the leader of the covenant. Shepard glanced back at the Arbiter. His shoulders heaved as he released a sigh.

"Your information is outdated. I once knew where he was... Alas I no longer know... I am sorry." The Arbiters voice was heavy as he closed his eyes.

Shepard gritted her teeth together and clenched her fists. This had all been a waste of time. They had trying to find someone and they didn't even know where he was. She could've been helping her Galaxy this whole time. This whole time she could've been looking for a real solution not the hero of some lost time. They had defeated the Reapers, they could defeat the flood. Shepard didn't even say anything as she turned away. She was the only one to move, the monitor and Thran' being deathly silent. She reached the door, and the door slid open. She lifted her foot to take a step out when a voice rang out.

"Commander I do not know where he is but is I do know how to find him." The Arbiter called out. She blinked a few times trying to register what he had said and turned back the group.

"How?" She asked with a col and confused voice. The Arbiter didnt reply. Before anyone could continue he strode forward and kneeled down onto the floor. He stood back up, pulling the hologram up with him. He expanded his arms to their full length and the hologram of the Galaxy engulfed the room. Shepard gasped slightly at the sudden movement. The Arbiter looked around in front of him and touched a planet to his right, the hologram suddenly shrank and formed into the planet selected in front of the arbiter.

"The things is Commander. Is that I once knew where he was but now I do not. My current body does not know where he is thanks to the trails of time fading my memory however there is a way for me to remember. On this planet before lies a facility of Covenant origin, deep within the planets surface. Inside is a small room with a powerful computer. I put the coordinates of his location within the computer. The room can only be opened by myself and a few others. If it were attempted to be breached a subroutine would send off an alarm to my armor and would transport me and any other Sangheili within in twenty feet, to the location to stop the breach. Otherwise the facility only runs a few subroutines, one of which is a signal that detects a any seismic scans or any scan in general, that runs over the base. It detects the signal and absorbed the signal. It decodes the signal, rewrites the signal and sends it back out to its point of origin. When it rewrites it, the signal is rewrote to tell its point

of origin that nothing is down below, therefore being able to avoid any detection." The Arbiter clicked on a select spot on the planet, zooming in on it.

"That seems rather advance..." Shepard said with a raised eyebrow of disbelief.

"Its is. It was made by the humans of my time. The ones you refer to as Reclaimers." The Arbiter stated. Shepard exchanged a glance with Thran'. Even the elite had been impressed by the technology.

"This is where we must go if you what to find the last Reclaimer." The Arbiter continued.

"We?" Shepard asked.

"You need me to open the door to the facility." The Arbiter simply stated. Shepard nodded and looked back at that planet.

"So where is this planet?" Shepard asked studying its surface. It seemed familiar but she couldn't place it.

"These are the coordinates to its location." The Arbiter pulled up a series of numbers. Shepard looked at them. She raised her arm, activating her omni tool and input the coordinates. She waited a second till the coordinate were found. Her head shot back slightly in surprise.

"Thessia?" She asked out loud. The Arbiter looked back at her.

"Is that its new name?" He asked.

"Yes. It is home to race of humanoids called the Asari." The monitor stated joining the conversation.

"Yes... Its old name was..." The Arbiter started but a beeping on Shepard's omni tool interrupted him. Shepard frowned as she answered the call.

"What is it Garrus?" She asked annoyed.

"Shepard its Thessia. Its under attack." Garrus's voice was dark and filled with concern.

"What?!" Shepard yelled. She had been gone for a little more than a few days and now the Asari capital was already under attack.

"Yeah not good. Hacketts trying to get a hold of you on the Vitcom." Garrus informed. Shepard nodded.

"Get ready we're leaving"

She looked at the Arbiter.

"So are you gonna help us or not?"

* * *

><p>The Normandy fell out of the mass effect stream and rocketed towards Thessia, the planet growing larger as they approached.

Shepard paced back and forth angrily. She had talked to Hackett and Anderson and both had confirmed Thessias distress signals. However the Alliance and Salarians fleet were already to spread thin to help. Shepard didn't want to see what was attacking Thessia. The signals had been cut off before the Asari could confirm anything but Hackett had had his suspicions, and least of all they unnerved her.<p>

With the signals gone Shepard and her team were being sent to see what happened to Thessia. She couldn't believe she had wasted her time with those elites. The Arbiter had wanted to help but the council had refused not even a single ship or weapon had been given to aid her and her crew. The only thing she was grateful for was the Quarians and Geths safe transport back to the galaxy but all that time wasted on a false lead pissed her off. She didn't even bother to look at the monitor. She wanted to rip him apart piece by piece. He had convinced her to waste her time with the elites and now Thessia was paying the price. She could've been helping fortify and commanding troops. Instead she had been conversing with squid heads.

"Commander we are approaching the planet." The deep voice rang out over the war room. The Arbiter approached the holotable with crossed arms. She still couldn't believe he had come along. Shepard grinned slightly to herself. At least she got one good thing out of this, maybe her time with the elites hadn't been a complete waste. They could find the reclaimer with The Arbiter's help but they had no way to get to him. She frowned at the thought.

The Arbiter sighed. It pained him to separate from his people but after listening to the council's arguments of being safe by being hidden and how they needed to keep out of Galactic affairs to protect themselves, he realized how ignorant they were. They would die if they didn't act, just as they almost died during the Great Schism. Once again it was on the Arbiter's shoulders to save his people, even if they didn't know it. Thran' hadn't been happy about his departure but as leader of the Covenant, The Arbiter had certain rights. If only those rights had been enough to convince the council. Even as the leader, they had refused him. He was not surprised. He didn't expect to just wake up and for them to follow him without question. Those actions had almost killed them in the past.

Holograms of the planet and its surroundings finally came to life on the war room's holotable.

"Shepard look..." Ashley gasped in horror. Shepard didn't look though. She was just staring at the table, completely ignoring her surroundings, lost in thought.

"Shepard we have an incoming distress signal coming from Thessia. Short range." EDI stated over the comms.

Just like Rannoch... Shepard thought to herself.

"Patch it through." Shepard replied coming back to the real world. EDI patched the voice through.

"Commander Shepard! Thank the Gods!" Lithia cried over the comms. Gunfire could be heard in the background along with terrifying screams.

"Lithia! What's going on down there?" Shepard said leaning onto the

railing of the war room.

"Shepard its bad. We're getting demolished. Our fleets in orbit are getting obliterated. We've lost already half of our major cities and seventy percent of the country side. We've been trying to get civilians out of here but its impossible. The odds are overwhelmingly against us."

"I can see..." Shepard mumbled. Her grip tightened on the railing, her knuckles turning white.

"Lithyia what measures have you implanted against the flood invasion force." Shepard asked looking up to the hologram. She needed to see what they were up against. Her heart dropped when she finally saw what Ashley had been talking about.

"Shepard this isn't the Flood. Its the Reapers they're back."

* * *

><p>Thran' paced back and forth. He slammed a fist on the table and roared angrily.<p>

"How can you all be so foolish?! Inaction is not the way to protect our people!" He yelled at the others surrounding the round table. The others exchanged glances.

"Thran' the parasite have no idea where we are. No one does. If we stay hidden we can protect our specie's survival indefinitely." One of the golden armored elites retorted calmly.

"Bah! They will find us! And our honor demands we help our human allies!" Thran' roared.

"These allies don't even remember us! Why should we help them when they don't even know we exist?" Another elite stated.

"Beside the parasite cannot find us. They haven't in billions of years." A third stated.

"They will! I guarantee it! We cannot hide forever like bumbling cowards! They came to us for aid and yet we refuse and sentence their galaxy to a doomed fate at the hands of the parasite!? They parasite will destroy the, without us! We cannot just abandon them in such a hour of peril!" Thran' said leaning on the table.

"Thran' we cannot risk our own safety for theirs. If they are to die so be it." The first elite stated. Thran' glared at him. Sometimes he hated democracy.

"If you won't help. Then I shall." He hissed.

"Thran'..." Another elite warned.

"I will resign if we do nothing." He threatened.

"Thran' we cannot be so reckless."

"Yet the Arbiter, our leader, went without question to their aid."

>"He believes in old customs. Times have changed."<p>

Thran' sighed. He had read the stories of elites and their once glorious honor.

"If only they hadn't..." Thran' mumbled to himself As he finally conceded.

* * *

><p>They have refused to help the hero...

Good. Continue to plant doubt and we will eventually be rid of them.

Agreed.

What of the hero now? They travel to find him...

The Reapers are once again in play they should suffice in dealing with her..

She defeated them once...

Embodiment... It is time to release the hounds...

Agreed...

She will not survive against them...

She will not indeed...

* * *

><p>AN so yes times have changed and the elites are now cowardly. I mean they've almost been exterminated twice if not three times, of course they're going to be wary. The Arbiter of course has been in a similar position and once again is the only one who remembers the danger the flood poses just as he understood what firing the Halo Array would do. Please Review and sorry if anyone was too OCC. thanks for reading! God Bless You All!

7. Part I Chapter 6 (Un beata'd)

****Part I ****

****The Voice and Face of all evil****

****Chapter Six: Race to the temple****

* * *

><p>Shepard scanned the battle raging over Thessia. Reaper capital ships were decimating the defending Asari fleets, and with the rest of the Galaxy busy with the parasite she knew no help would be coming. She studied the scenario. She wished they could help Thessia but the Normandy couldn't take on a whole invading Reaper fleet by itself and she had her orders. Save Lithyia.<p>

The thing was she had another task to complete besides that one. Find the hidden Covenant installation.

If this had been fourteen years ago, before the first Reaper war, then she would have never gone to complete another task over her orders. However, from experience she knew that this risk had to be taken. Katherine personally believed Reluctant Promises and if he was right then everything depended on getting the last reclaimer to help her, and to find him she needed to find that installation.

"Lithyia what is your location?" Shepard asked her voice void of emotion as she pulled her mind back into the present after a millisecond of thought.

"We're in the Prothean temple." Lithyia stated, gunfire echoing in background with the all too familiar scream of a husk.

"Of course." Shepard sighed under her breath. Memories flooded her mind as she remembered her last mission to the Prothean temple during the Reaper War.

"All right listen up. Lithyia you and your troops need to hold that position as long as you can. We'll be down as soon as possible. Keep the radio open in case I need to contact you." Shepard ordered.

"Yes Shepard." The councilor responded a hint of panic in her voice.

"Shepard what about the Arbiter?" Liara asked once the councilors transmission had cut off.

"What about him?" Shepard replied.

"Have you told Hackett or anyone about him?" Liara asked.

"No. At least not yet. As of right now we need him, and I don't need any bull shit regulations keeping him from helping us." Shepard replied. Liara nodded understanding exactly where Shepard was coming from. Politics and regulations had almost cost them the first war with the Reapers.

All the while Shepard had come up with a suitable plan of action.

"Garrus, Liara, Legion suit up. We're departing in ten. EDI tell Cortez to get the shuttle ready. Also find me the nearest and relatively safest landing point to the temple. Arbiter." Shepard said turning to the giant elite. He looked at her with neither cold nor friendly eyes. They were determined. Determined and ready to kill.

"Arbiter, put in the coordinates for the installation on the holotable, we need to know exactly what we're looking for." The Arbiter walked forward, calmly slipping past Shepard, and entered the coordinates onto the holotable. A green light popped up and hovered on the location of the Prothean temple. Shepard glanced at the hologram skeptically.

"Are you sure you entered those coordinates right?" Shepard asked in disbelief.

"Yes." The Arbiter answered not understanding her skepticism.

"Well this is just too easy." She stated in all seriousness. She looked away from the holotable, heading towards the hall that lead to the galaxy room and the elevator.

"EDI contact Hackett. Tell him..." Shepard took a deep breath as the Arbiter followed after her.

"Tell him the Reapers are back..."

* * *

><p>Shepard held onto the inner railing of the shuttle. She could hear the sounds of distant gunfire and the occasional explosion of a rocket that indicated the Asari forces trying to repel the invading Reapers. Despite the recent advances in weaponry, the Reapers' substantial numbers and weaponry was still too much for the Asari's small military.<p>

A loud explosion went off nearby causing the shuttle to shake violently for a few seconds. Shepard checked her weaponry and armor. Everything was functioning perfectly. She clenched her hand around her rifle in her free hand. She really didn't feel like fighting the Reapers again.

"Ready up guys. ETA thirty seconds." Cortez stated over the com channel.

"All right get ready. We're two miles out from the Prothean temple. We'll have an Asari special ops team backing us up all the way there. We'll have to be careful seeing as the Reapers control mostly the whole area around the temple. There's a small choke point between two buildings next to the temple, we'll have to go through there to get to the temple with the least amount of resistance. Once there Garrus, you and the others are to secure a landing zone for evac. Me and the Arbiter will head down into the temple, locate the installation, grab the coordinates and meet you back up top. If we don't make it back you are to leave and get Lithia to a safe zone as soon as possible even if it means leaving us behind. Saving the councilor is top priority right now." Shepard released the railing after her instructions were given. Though she trusted the Arbiter she didn't trust him enough to go to the installation without any supervision. What if he had been lying to her?

She shrugged in her armor, adjusting it to her shoulders one final time, and walked up next to the sliding door. Garrus and Liara stood up from their respective seats, each of them doing a quick check up on their weapons. Legion was already standing and just moved behind Shepard. The Arbiter was in the back of the Shuttle his arms crossed.

Shepard spared the Arbiter a glance. He was very quiet and reserved only speaking when spoken to, or when a question he knew the answer to was left unanswered. She glanced at the weapon on his back. A dark purple color, long and bulbous like the elites' ships. She wondered briefly about what the weapons were capable of when she heard the shuttle door suddenly open.

She looked back outside as the shuttle lowered down to a five foot hover above the ground. The shuttle was off to the side of the courtyard behind a couple of trees that helped them in avoiding any unwanted attention.

Gunfire laced across the courtyard of the building in front of her. A rocket flew from one side to the other engulfing a small pillar in flames.

Smoke raised up into the air from various shuttles and cars that had been destroyed as well as from the various building on fire. Bodies littered the courtyard. Dozens of dead Asari and Husk laid about with bullet holes or claw marks gashed into their bodies.

She quickly assessed the battle and determined who controlled what side. The Asari controlled the right side of the courtyard while the husk controlled the left. She saw a downed shuttle in the center of the courtyard.

"Go! To the shuttle!" Shepard yelled after the two seconds it had taken to survey the battlefield. The group charged from the shuttle creating a diamond shaped formation as they ran for the nearby cover behind the downed shuttle, their backs to the Asari on their right. The group let loose a small barrage of bullets as they moved swiftly to the cover. They ducked behind the cover, Shepard being the last and Legion being the first to get behind the shuttle. She noticed the Arbiter was not with them. Her heart sank with fear as she wondered where he was but quickly pushed away the thoughts as the screech of a husk brought her back to reality.

Shepard looked up over the shuttle. She noticed several husk and marauders approaching their position. She opened fire with her Avenger rifle successfully taking out two husks. She ducked down as several shots soared over her head. She glanced to the debris behind them. She counted around a dozen Asari still standing and firing their weapons.

"Lara find us a route around this!" Shepard ordered before she again opened fire.

Lara opened her omni tool and quickly drew up a map of their surroundings area while the others covered her.

"Shepard there's an alley too our right between two buildings! It'll get us away from this firefight and give us cover for a block or two." Lara stated closing her omni tool.

Katherine looked to her right. She noticed several pile of debris laying out in the courtyard before the courtyard connected to the alley between the two buildings. The alley was small but it seemed to have escaped most of the fighting.

"All right. Garrus give me and Lara cover fire. Legion, you and me are gonna make a run for that alley. Once we're there we'll give cover fire and you two sprint for us." Shepard quickly looked back to the Asari still fighting from the debris, wondering if they were ever going to contact her and her team. Apparently they were too busy fighting the Reaper forces behind Shepard to really care about their arrival which was something Shepard could understand.

"Now!" Shepard yelled. She burst from behind the downed shuttle and made a full sprint, while simultaneously firing her rifle towards the Reapers forces. Legion sprinted after her, his mechanical legs carrying him faster than hers.

Garrus and Liara both popped out of cover and opened fire with their rifles. They gunned down several husks and a few marauders.

Shepard ducked her head as she ran avoiding a round from a marauders weapon. She sent out a biotic blast towards the marauder forcing it back into cover.

Katherine and Legion dove into the alley as a rocket soared past them. The explosion slammed into the side of the building behind them and blew a hole in the wall, showering the two with debris.

The Commander quickly got to her feet, ironing the debris flailing off her armor. She looked back to the downed shuttle, and watched Garrus and Liara both duck behind it and reload their weapons. Legion got up beside her, the two took positions next to corner of the building in front of them and opened fire. The Reaper forces having momentarily forgotten about them were shredded by the combined fire of the spectre and the Geth.

Liara and Garrus, seeing their two squad mates momentarily distract the Reapers ground forces, quickly sprinted from their cover and over to the alley.

Shepard's gun clicked empty as she spun back around into the cover of the alley, Legion moved up and increased his rate of fire covering her while she reloaded. She dispersed the empty thermal clip and slapped another one into her rifle as Garrus and Liara stumbled into the alley only a split second. Legion finished the last few shots of his clip and slid back into the alley with the others. Shepard watched as the remaining Asari seemed to take advantage of the brief respite caused by Shepard and her squads assault. They moved up on the courtyard and unleashed a barrage of biotics on the Reaper forces. The remaining Reaper forces fought back but were completely outmatched now that their numbers had been reduced. Shepard knew the Asari would win this skirmish. She turned away and started down the alley way in a jog holding her weapon at the ready, her group following after her.

The stomping of boots on the ground echoed through the alley as the group slowly made their way forward. Shepard and the others were openly wondering where the Arbiter was. Shepard knew he wasn't on the shuttle still. She had called Cortez and asked. So the only place he could be was on the ground, but where?

Katherine decided that if he didn't show up, she would leave without finding the installation and without him. After all according to the elite she would need him just to get inside.

"Liara where do we go from here?" Shepard asked as the alley finally opened up into a street. The sleek and curved Asari's version of cars littered the streets along with piles among piles of debris. Several downed shuttles were still smoking as they laid across the street, a few smashed into several cars. Dozens of bodies littered the ground. Most looked like Asari civilians. Shepard quickly glanced up and down the street. Aside from the cars and bodies, the street was empty. She

could still hear the bang of far off gunfire, but from what she could tell they were too far away for the shots to be of any worry.

A distinct low horn blasted through the air. Shepard and the others tensed as they heard it. Shepard located the source. A Reaper destroyer was off in the distance. She caught the red flash as its main gun obliterated a small building. She let out a sigh of relief as she realized it was heading the opposite way.

"Shepard we need to take the left on this street. Then follow for a few more blocks before we get to our next turn." Liara stated.

"All right. Let's move. Liara keep me informed on where we need to go." The commander ordered. Liara nodded.

Katherine checked the streets once, making sure it was clear, then ordered her group to move. They moved together, swiftly and silently through the debris. Liara silently mourned the dead Asari.

They jogged past several destroyed vehicles, eventually taking a right down another alley that Liara told them to go down. For ten minutes they went completely unopposed as they ran down the alleys and streets of Thessia making their way to the Prothean temple as fast as they could. Shepard kept eyes on her. She scanned the area, looking up into each building as they ran, but could never find the source. She shrugged it off as her mind playing games but the feeling never completely left.

They trudged down another street coming to an intersection when suddenly all hell broke loose. A rocket flew straight at the group and Liara was barely quick enough to raise a biotic shield. The rocket slammed into the shield, the force of the blast throwing the group back as dozens of marauders and husks suddenly emerged from the debris in the intersection.

Shepard rolled to her side, still laying on the ground and opened fire. Several husks fell before the marauders began to fire on Shepard.

The spectre rolled to her right as the bullets pelted the area around her. Several rounds managed to hit her, draining her shields a fourth of the way before she reached cover. Shepard got into a crouch behind the cover and slapped in another fresh clip. She quickly checked for her team, discovering Liara was wounded behind a pile of rock on the other side of the street. She was applying medigel to an obvious bullet wound while Legion covered her. Garrus was behind a car closer to them than Shepard, and was already returning fire to the Reaper forces. Shepard decided to help him and popped out of her cover unleashing half a clip before being forced back into cover. Shepard turned on her cryo ammo and prepared for another barrage when she heard heavy footsteps and growling. She immediately dove away from her cover as a brute fist came down obliterating the piece of rubble she had been hiding behind.

Shepard scrambled to her feet unloading her entire clip into the brute's armor. The brute turned towards her and charged. She dove out of the way at the last second, the brute smashing into a car that had been behind her.

Garrus and the others noticed the brute and prepared to open fire

when marauders fired on them. The group was forced into cover, unable to help Shepard without getting shot themselves. Liara shot a biotic throw at the brute. The brute stumbled back as Katherine got to her feet. She unleashed another barrage of bullets and as the brute charged for her once more. She blasted a warp at him. The warp slammed into the brute, tearing away at its armor but not slowing it. The commander rolled out of the way. She spun to her feet and continued to open fire on the brutes back. The creature roared angrily then stormed back towards her.

Suddenly a gun smacked into the back of the commanders head. Shepard rolled onto her back to find a marauder standing over her. She twirled her legs managing to trip the marauder and spin on to her feet. The brute charged at her a third time. She tried to dive out of the way but wasn't quick enough this time.

The brute grabbed the commanders leg with an iron grip. With a swing of his arm he sent her flying over several destroyed cars. Shepard slammed into the street, her shields flaring as she tumbled harshly against the floor till she came to rest in front of another debris pile. She gasped for air, feeling a dull pain throbbing in her ribs.

By the time Katherine regained her sense's, and got back on her feet, the brute was already upon her. The brute swung its mighty arm trying to hit the commanders upper body with a fatal blow. Shepard rolled underneath the swing, she spun to her feet drawing her omni blade, and struck at the best. The blade effectively cut off a chunk of the brutes armor but it was too thick to cut straight through. Shepard ducked under another swing of the brutes arm, and rolled backwards, drawing her rifle at the same time. She unleashed a barrage of bullets, draining her entire clip by the time the brute was on her again. She dodged his next attack and hit him with a strong biotic blast. The beast stumbled back from the attack as Shepard's breath became staggered. She reloaded and unleashed another hail of fire on the brute. The creature, regaining his balance, charged straight at her.

Katherine watched as the beast approached her. She remembered how they fought. Their charge was fearsome but they couldn't really turn while charging and that little fact gave her the advantage she needed. She quickly side stepped to her left and hurdled over a destroyed car. The brute roared in anger as it stopped in its tracks and hurdled over the car after her. Shepard continued her sprint away from the beast and subsequently her friends. The brute charged after her while her team continued to deal with its allies. Shepard turned to face the brute, having gained enough distance and once again opened fire with her rifle. She could see the brutes armor finally beginning to chip away under her relentless assault.

She heard it too late.

As she fired on the brute she heard the heavy footsteps of another brute approaching behind her. She spun around to face the creature. It stood a few feet from her and lunged. The new brute smacked her rifle from her hands effectively shattering it into pieces. Shepard swore under her breath. Suddenly the brute she had been originally been fighting slammed into her and once again threw her. Instead of throwing her into the air like before he threw her against the wall of a nearby building.

The commander slammed into the wall feeling her body scream with pain, her lungs gasping for air, and a rib or two cracking underneath the force of the collision. She looked up seeing the two brutes feet in front of her. She scrambled to her feet only to get knocked back into the wall by one of the brutes. Her shields were completely drained by this point. Katherine knew she had once last chance. She drew all her energy into one biotic blast. She was moments from firing when suddenly a piercing white sword of blazing plasma cut straight through the arm of one of the brutes. The brute roared in pain. The second brute turned to face their new attacker.

The Arbiter stood before them, his plasma sword drawn in one hand, and an upgraded plasma rifle in the other. The two brutes charged the elite with a fury only rivaled by that of an enraged hunter.

The two monstrosities swung at the alien. The Arbiter easily sidestepped the two arms. He raised his rifle and unleashed a torrent of plasma in the armless brutes face. the brute stumbled back as its armor began to melt from the extreme heat. The second brute charged the elite, managing to slam into him a full force. Shepard watched in awe as the elite held his ground, feet planted and pushing back against the massive brute.

The Arbiter kicked off the brute, creating a good distance between the two. Again the brute roared and charged for him. Katherine could've sworn she saw him grin, or at least an elite version of what she figured was a grin.

The Arbiter sidestepped the brute as it ran right past him. As the brute charged past him, he spun in a low circle, pulling out a what Shepard figured was just a blue grenade.

The elite lunged at the brute, activating the grenade. At the last second the Arbiter released the grenade, sliding past and around the brute in one fluid motion.

In a great explosion of blue, purple and white, the brute disintegrated from the heat of the plasma grenade, whatever pieces remained were charred and burned.

The Arbiter never changing his expression turned to face the already hurt brute. The brute was circling him, planning the best way to kill this new threat.

Finally it just decided to charge, and charge it did. The brute put everything it had into the charge determined to end the elites life quickly and brutally. However that never happened.

The Arbiter crouched down as the monster charged him. As it reached him, he sidestepped and with a quick and graceful slash he slid his sword straight through the body of the brute, severing its body into two whole pieces. The two chunks fell to the ground with a thud as the last of shots fired by Shepard's squad echoed through the street, her squad successfully defeating the Reaper ground forces.

Shepard pulled herself to her feet still in shock of what just happened. She couldn't even fathom how the elite had so quickly managed to kill two brutes in close quarters combat.

The Arbiter walked over to her, powering off his sword and sheathing his rifle.

"Are you ok human commander?" he asked with much concern. He looked her in the eye. Shepard was surprised to see true worry for her well being in his eyes.

"Yeah I'm fine. Nothing serious." She said waving him off. She pulled out her sub machine gun since her rifle was in shambles. Garrus and the others jogged up to the pair. They gave Shepard worried glances before Liara asked what they were all thinking.

"What happened? Are you ok Shepard?" Her Asari friend asked, voice full of concern as well.

"I'm fine. The brutes cornered me and if it wasn't for him" Shepard stated nodding towards the Arbiter. "I would probably be dead right now."

The group looked at the Arbiter.

"Thanks for watching her back" Garrus said with a curt nod that the Arbiter returned.

"Yes Thank you but I cant help but wonder where have you been until now? " Liara asked her voice null of any conviction but full of just true curiosity. The Arbiter noticed this and took no offense to the question.

"I was using what you humans would call active camouflage. I believed it would be best to keep myself hidden from the enemy so long as i wasn't needed. Then when the time was right I could surprise them when they least expected it." He stated.

"I was never more than thirty feet from the team." He added. Shepard felt a pinch of annoyance. She was more than grateful the elite had saved her but she was annoyed he hadn't told her. She didn't want him ending up like the monitor, doing whatever he wants whenever he sees fit. She had to say something since an attitude like that could easily get someone killed in the battle field.

"Arbiter, thank you for saving my life, but I have to ask that you please talk to me first about doing anything like that, at the very least at least let me know what your planning to do ahead of time. It could mean saving someones life one day." She said trying her best to be modest. The Arbiter simply nodded in return.

"I will respect your wishes Commander. My apologies for I forget that, here, I am not the commanding officer." The Arbiter stated sincerely.

"No apologies needed." Shepard replied with a shake of her head.

"Liara how far are we from the temple?" Shepard asked changing the conversations topic.

Liara typed in a few commands on her omni tool before looking back up at the people around her.

"We still have a little more than a mile to go." She responded. Shepard nodded.

"All right lets get going. We still have a job to do people." Shepard stated with a firm voice.

"Liara." She said implying for the Asari to lead the way. Liara nodded in acknowledgment to the order and moved past Shepard, in front of the group.

"We need to keep heading north." She stated. "Unfortunately there are a few buildings blocking us from a direct path. We will have to take the streets if we want to get there quickly. We need to take a right at this intersection."

"All right. Liara you let us know when we need to change direction. Lets move people." Shepard ordered.

The group took off in a light jog. They took a right down the intersection and continued down the street for a time, ignoring any bodies or debris that littered the road. Buildings smoked from huge craters or blasts in their sides. Shepard felt saddened. Thessia had barely finished rebuilding only a year before and now here they were again, at the whims of their strength fighting for existence against the Reapers.

The group came to a stop as they approached an intersection blocked off by vehicles. Shepard vaulted over the cars and her heart broke. In between the piles of cars, in between that last barricade was a group of Asari. There were old and young alike, and there were at least two dozen of them. Liara gasped and forced herself to hold back tears. Shepard grimaced. She knelt down and closed the eyes of an Asari soldier who died with a pistol in her hand.

"What have we done to deserve this?" Liara asked to no one in particular.

"There are few who deserve this." The Arbiter stated feeling the need to say something. Liara and Garrus both absent mindedly nodded.

Shepard silently agreed with both of them. She truly wondered what had the galaxy done to deserve this? To be attacked by Reapers and the Flood. She erased the thoughts and focused on the present. She could wonder about that later.

After an order from Shepard the group continued on. They turned left down the next street. Surprisingly they met no more resistance. However the group never let their guard down.

Shepard scanned the buildings. She felt off. She expected more resistance from the Reapers. She expected a lot more. She figured there wasn't as much resistance since the Asari numbers were much lower than their first invasion of Thessia which meant the Reapers didn't have to throw millions upon millions of troops. They could use a lot less and still beat the planets inhabitants. She frowned at the thought. She could only imagine how easy it would be for them to conquer the galaxy with the Flood already taking care of the Turians and Krogans, leaving only the Systems Alliance and the few other space faring races of the galaxy to oppose them. The galaxy didn't

stand a chance and she knew it. That's why she needed the Arbiter. That's why she needed to find this last reclamer. If they could stop the Flood, then maybe they could stop the Reapers once more. It was a long shot but it was her only hope just how the crucible had been ten years ago.

Shepard leaped over a car, Thessia's star shining down on them as dusk approached. Her shadow flickered in the light of the flames from a destroyed car. What none of the group noticed is how Shepard's shadow flickered in the light, and suddenly slide away from its owner, into the shadows amongst the buildings.

* * *

><p>The group slowed to a halt as they reached the end of the choke point between the two buildings near the temple. The temple and the whole surrounding area had been rebuilt from the ground up after the original Reaper war. Around the entire temple was a huge circular courtyard, buildings lining the edges of the courtyard. Fountains and various statues littered the courtyard. Many were destroyed and crumbling in all their magnificence. The temple itself was much grander. It was taller with sleeker walls and more lighting. Pillars and various debris lined the outside walls of the temple as its defending forces held out against the Reapers ground invasion. The other things different about the new temple was that it stretched under ground. Under ground was where all the research and testing of the protean ruins happened. They left nothing of importance on the surface. They learned no to after the first reaper war when the beacon was stolen from them.<p>

The small squad watched as gunfire flew across this courtyard. Most of the gunfire pelted the temple as husks and brutes charged the temple. They watched as the defenders from the temple returned fire. Rockets and turrets opened fire as the husks and brutes got closer to the temple, tearing them to shreds. Gunfire never ceased as the two sides continued to trade fire while another wave of brutes and husks lined up in the cover of the buildings away from the temple.

"So how are we gonna cross this without getting shot? There are two many of the Reapers forces for us to go unnoticed." Garrus stated.

"Agreed. Commander it's suggested we find another route to enter the temple." Legion informed.

"The whole surrounding courtyard is under fire Legion, there is no clear path." Liara stated.

"Arbiter any ideas?" Shepard asked. The elite scanned the area.

"It would be easy if we had several devices for camouflage. Regrettably I only brought my personal one." He replied. Shepard watched as gunfire continued to fly between the two sides. Hundreds of bullets passing through the air constantly.

"Now what?" Garrus asked to no one in particular.

Shepard mused over her options.

"Lithia were at the choke point. Please respond." Shepard asked

through her com. She gave the hand sign for her group to take defensive positions. It took a few minutes and they were set up defensively around the alley waiting for Lithya to reply.

Shepard was preparing to send another broadcast when the Asari councilor finally responded.

"Shepard! My friend you have arrived in the nick of time. We're beginning to run low on ammunition. Besides that we have dozens of casualties. I hope you can get us out of here. The Reapers haven't let up on us in over an hour." The councilor stated with a small cough escaping her as gunfire sounded out near her.

"Lithya we cant get to you. We managed to make it to the choke point but the amount of gunfire the Reapers are putting out makes it far to danger to cross considering how large and open the courtyard is." Shepard informed. She could her Lithya sigh with frustration.

"Shepard I'm no solider. Ill get you Katrina. She's the commanding officer here and she's done a splendid job of keeping a good amount of us alive. Maybe she can help you." Lithya responded hopefully.

Shepard waited as the councilor took a few minutes to locate Katrina, inform her of the situation, and transfer the comm line over to her.

"This is Lieutenant Katrina of squad Firebird. Is this Commander Shepard?" The voice of Katrina was slightly low and unfriendly.

"Yes. Katrina I'm sure Lithya informed you of our predicament." Shepard asked. Once the Captain confirmed that Lithya had informed her Shepard continued.

"What can you do for us then lieutenant? We're not of much use so far from you." Shepard stated.

Lieutenant Katrina pondered over Shepard's question for a brief moment.

"Commander I have an idea."

Shepard swore the Asari was grinning.

* * *

><p>AN: Well Hey guys! sorry its taken so long to update im pretty sure some of you are upset about that. Anyway see this chapter was supposed much longer but after seeing how long it was going to be I split it into two even possibly three parts. So just hang in there! Next chapter is definitely gonna be wild because I will be introducing a new enemy! Oh and the Master Chief isn't going to be in play for a while now so your still gonna have to wait for him. Anyway please review guys! Thanks again for reading! **

I have not done a disclaimer and well you know i don't own halo or mass effect. only OCs and plot are my creation.

* * *

><p>Part I**

The Voice and Face of all evil

Chapter Seven: The Hounds of Evil

* * *

><p>Shepard steadied her breath as she awaited the lieutenants signal. The commander was crouched next to the wall of a building on the right side of the alley, her rifle at the ready. She had to admit, the Asari's plan, while somewhat impressive, was almost suicide. She muttered something under her breath as she continued to wait. She stared out into the courtyard, watching as the as the Asari and Reaper forces continued to trade fire. She wondered when the lieutenant would set her plan into motion.<p>

Behind Katherine was Legion holding his own rifle at the ready. The Geth almost looked bored as he waited with her. Across the small alley from the two, crouching next to the building on the left side of the alley, was Garrus and Liara. The two were similarly quiet as they waited for the lieutenants signal.

The Arbiter on the other hand was invisible somewhere. Shepard had agreed to his idea of staying invisible when he had suggested it. It would keep him hidden and safe while they crossed the courtyard, and it meant Shepard had an ace up her sleeve for the time being.

Suddenly Shepard noticed the Asari from within the temple, cease fire. Her muscles flexed and her heart pumped adrenaline into her system as she waited.

The Reaper forces continued to open fire but Shepard noticed a significant draw back in it. She figured the Reapers ground forces were confused by the sudden turn of events.

The Commander noticed the Reaper forces beginning to pick up the fire when the Asari Lieutenants plan burst into action.

More than a dozen rockets suddenly flew out from the temples defending forces. The rockets roared forward but instead of impacting the forces on the ground they slammed into the surrounding buildings the Reaper forces where they had set up firing positions. Debris flew out in every direction as the Reaper forces tried to return fire, but their positions to shocked or damaged to return any significant amount of fire.

Before Shepard or the Reapers could act the temples forces opened fire with their regular arms. The brief distraction caused by the rockets gave the defending Asari the opening they needed to cause some serious damage to the Reapers firing positions.

"Now!" Shepard yelled the moment the conventional arms began firing. The Commander and her squad burst into a sprint across the courtyard

as the defending temple forces continued to pound the Reapers positions with constant fire.

The plan was simple. The Asari inside the temple were to create a large distraction so the Reaper forces would focus on them rather than Shepard and her team, and what was a better distraction than a lot of explosions and gunfire? So far it seemed to be working as the Reaper forces were desperately trying to reorganize themselves after the surprise attack as well as fire upon the temple.

Katherine was glad that no Reaper ship was around. Their plan wouldn't have worked if that was the case.

The group ran down the courtyard sprinting around fountains, downed shuttles and a few other obstructions as they made their way to the temple. Gunfire echoed throughout the area in such heavy amounts Shepard could barely hear herself think. She heard the distant shrieks of husk and the sound of turret fire.

Shepard was beginning to notice something by the time they were halfway to the temple. She noticed how the fire towards the temple was getting heavier and the temples defenders were starting to slacken their fire. An alarm began to go off in Katherine's mind as she realized what was happening.

The Reapers forces were already pulling themselves back together after the attack and seemed to be pushing the defenders back into cover. Shepard watched as several rockets flew over head her and her team, and slammed into several buildings.

If she didn't know better she would've thought it was a random rocket strike but she knew what the defenders were doing. They had fired the rockets into buildings nearest Shepard and her team. The defenders were trying to buy her and her team more time by distracting the Reaper forces.

The group was closing the distance between them and the temple. The Reaper forces seemed too distracted to notice or care about them. Shepard noticed puffs of dust lifting off the ground and could hear the ping of bullets bouncing off nearby surfaces. She swore under her breath as she realized what was happening.

Suddenly the pinging bullets became even more noticeable as several slammed into Shepard's shields. The Reaper forces seemed to finally notice the Spectre and her team.

"Cover!" Shepard yelled to her team. Non of them questioned her and immediately reacted on instinct. Shepard dove behind a nearby fallen statue. She was still in the air moments from reaching the safety of the statue when she felt a shockwave hit her from behind.

The Spectre flew forward and smacked into the ground as debris from the rocket explosion showered over her. A vicious high pitched ringing plagued her hearing. She shook her head trying to clear it. She could hear the voices of her team over her comm but couldn't make out what they were saying. She felt her body ache from the landing but other than that she felt fine.

Katherine managed to clear her head after another second and got into a crouch leaning on the statue behind her. She was glad the rocket

hadn't been any closer.

"Can anyone hear me?" She asked through her com. She peaked over the statue, looking for the shooter of the rocket. She was forced back into cover by a series of bullets raining on her before she could locate the shooter.

"Shepard! Are you alright?" Garrus asked his voice full of concern. Katherine looked around for the turian and saw him about thirty feet away behind a chunk of debris looking over at her.

"Im fine. What happened?" The Commander asked. She drew her sniper rifle and looked over the statue again. She spotted three husks off in the distance and with deadly precision, ended their existence. She ducked back under cover as machine gun fire concentrated back on her.

"Several marauders located us and assaulted us with both rocket launcher along with machine gun fire. We are fortunate you noticed when you did." Legion responded over the com. Shepard glanced over her statue again and located the Geth along with Liara. The two were taking cover behind a large nearby fountain.

Katherine got back behind her cover and looked back towards the temple. It was only around two hundred feet away but that was easily enough time for a rocket or barrage of bullets to tear her team down.

"Lieutenant Katrina we're pinned down about two hundred feet from the temple." Shepard stated over the com.

Static filled her ears for a few seconds before the Asari responded.

"Damn it. The Reapers are picking up fire. I don't have any way to get you here safely." Katrina replied.

Shepard bit her lip, trying to think of a quick solution. She stood up and took out a few more husks before returning to her cover. She reloaded her sniper and let out a quick breath as an idea came to her.

"Liara if we can combine our energy we might be able to create a barrier long enough for us to make it to the temple." The Commander stated over the com.

"Shepard thats going to take a lot out of us." Liara replied.

"Its the only chance we've got."

Liara sighed in agreement.

"So how are we going to do this Shepard?" The Asari asked as she took down three husks.

"Meet me halfway and on my count we throw up a barrier. Garrus, Legion, I need you two to cover us while we make the barrier large enough then get behind us as quick as you can. We only have one shot at this." Shepard stated.

She peaked over her cover. She noticed the marauders firing at her and her squad stop and reload. Several green lances leaped out from thin air. The Commander figured that was the Arbiter trying to help them out as much he could.

"Now!" She yelled.

The Asari and the Spectre dashed towards one another while the turian and the geth opened fire.

Shepard and Liara almost crashed into each other but managed not to. With an unspoken agreement, the two powered up. A blue glow surrounded them and at the same time they threw up a barrier. It was small at first but with a grunt Shepard and Liara poured more of their strength into it causing it grow a good deal larger.

Shepard suddenly felt eyes on her. She thought it was the Arbiter but she wouldn't have felt so unnerved by his gaze. Even with the enemies all around her, her team right next to her, and bullets flying everywhere, she suddenly felt very alone. A dark chill ran over her. She glanced over towards a dark building and into the shadows. She felt something in there a presence, of pure evil.

Reaper bullets slammed into the barrier not five seconds after the two had brought it up. The sudden barrage brought Shepard back to the world and she mumbled to herself never to lose focus like that again. She wondered why she kept doing that.

Dozens of bullets ricocheted off the biotic barrier. Garrus and Legion continued their cover fire for only a second longer, they then dashed over to the others and behind the barrier. A rocket flew towards the group and slammed into the barrier. The force of the rocket caused Shepard to stumble back and Liara to completely fall over. Legion helped Liara up while Garrus stepped out of the barriers protection to unload a burst from his rifle, trying to give the two holding the barrier a brief respite from their attackers.

Slowly the group began their march backwards. Bullets and a few Rockets rained down on the group as more, and more Reaper forces began to notice the small group, the barrier announcing their existence to the world. The barrier provided excellent protection just as Shepard hoped it would. Garrus and Legion continued to return fire, trying to lessen the strain from the barrier but their efforts were almost useless. There were just too many Reapers shooting at the group now, and even with allied fire from the temple, the Reapers would soon overwhelm the group.

"Keep going!" Shepard grunted as another Rocket slammed into their barrier. The barrier flickered slightly showing that the twos strength was beginning to fail.

"How much further?" Liara half yelled.

Garrus looked towards the temple and studied the distance before turning back to the team.

"Only about fifty feet." He replied when another rocket slammed into the barrier.

"Shit." Shepard grumbled as she felt herself slid back and the

barrier flicker even more.

"We cant keep this up much longer." Liara grumbled.

"No we cant." Shepard said as a barrage of bullets rained down around them causing dust and small chuncks of debris to fly up into the air.

"We're gonna have to make a run for it." Garrus stated.

"On three." Shepard announced.

"One." A rocket exploded next to them.

"Two." Bullets continued to rain down on the group as another rocket was fired at them.

"Three!" The rocket slammed into the barrier, exploded and cause the barrier to fail completely.

The group turned as they made a mad dash for the temple. Shepard could see several Asari giving them what cover fire they could as the group ran towards the temple.

The Commander could here the bullets whizzing by her and heard the explosion of a rocket hitting nearby by. A second later pieces of small debris fell down on her.

The group finally dashed between the pillars of the temple, a ravengers shot barely slipping over Liara's head as they hid behind the pillars, finally in the relative safety of the temple.

"At little to close for comfort." Liara stated. The others agreed with small nods. Shepard looked around the pillars and chucks of debris being used as makeshift covers. Asari were standing and ducking as they traded fire with the Reaper forces. She noticed how many of them were injured and had bandages wrapped around different places yet they were still fighting. She noticed a turret and the Asari that seemed be enjoying the use of the heavy weapon as she tore down husk and marauders, even the occasional brute.

"Commandeer Shepard!" A familiar voice yelled.

Katherine looked through the doors of the temple and saw Lithyia waving them in.

The group made their way inside the temple. The inside of the temple had been transformed into a makeshift headquarters. Various stations were set around, some treating wounds, others for desperate needed rest, a few with ammunition and weapons. Finally in the center of the temple was a large tent with two Asari guarding it.

Seeing them enter, Lithyia ran over to them and pulled Shepard into a great big bear hug. Before the commander could hug back the Asari pulled away.

"Thank you for coming commander." She said in a voice filled with relief.

"No problem Lithyia." Shepard said with a curt nod.

"So where's Katrina? If we want to get out of here alive I need to speak with her." Shepard asked looking around.

"This way." Lithyia replied and took off in a quick walk towards the large tent being guarded.

The Spectre and her group followed the counselor, and after a brief explanation to the guards they made their way inside the tent. Shepard noticed the tent flap hang open just a second too long after the last person had already made their way inside. She smiled to herself knowing only one invisible person, or alien who could still be following them.

Katrina, a small Asari with several scars on her face stood over a map on a table a small light hanging above them. Several other Asari stood around the table and seemed to be discussing something before they all looked up at Shepard and the others interrupting their meeting. Katrina slowly looked up and though her face stayed emotionless, Shepard could see the glint of relief in her eyes as she took in the sight of the great Commander Shepard.

"Commander Shepard." The lieutenant saluted standing up straight at attention. Immediately the other Asari around the table followed suit, realizing who stood before them.

"At ease soldiers. Lieutenant Katrina I presume?" Shepard stated walking over towards the Asari and sticking out a hand. The Asari promptly shook her hand.

"Yes mam." The Asari replied.

"So what's the situation?" Shepard asked already knowing the answer. Katrina sighed and turned back to the map.

"We're running out of ammunition. Most of my troops are either injured or dead and as far as I know you're the only reinforcements we're going to receive. Needless to say we're in a tight spot."

Shepard nodded.

"I need to speak privately with the lieutenant." The Commander stated looking towards the other Asari and her own team.

The other Asari looked amongst each other before looking at Katrina for confirmation. The lieutenant nodded to them, and the Asari made their way out, the Normandy team right behind them.

"What is it commander?" Katrina asked eyeing Katherine curiously.

"There is something I need to show you." Shepard stated. She looked around the room searching for any sign of her friend. Hoping he was there Shepard called out to him.

"Arbiter please show yourself to Lieutenant Katrina."

Katrina looked at the commander as if she had gone mad while in the corner of the room, behind Katrina, a large elite suddenly appeared

as his camo turned off.

"Commander." The Arbiter stated in his deep voice.

Katrina jumped at his voice and spun around drawing her pistol. She aimed it at the elites head and yelled

"Who are and how did you get in here?!"

"Katrina stand down! He's a friend." Shepard ordered placing a hand on the Asari's shoulder. The Lieutenant glanced back at Shepard and seeing she was serious reluctantly lowered her weapon.

"Lieutenant is everything ok in there?" A guard called from right outside.

"Yes everything's fine." Katrina yelled back. She holstered her pistol and looked the elite up and down.

"What are you? Some sort of mutated Turian I presume?" Katrina stated crossing her arms.

"I am a Sangheli. A proud and powerful race. One that once guided this galaxy alongside the Reclaimers such a long time ago." The Arbiter explained, his voice getting softer as the sentence drew on.

"A what?" Katrina asked with a baffled expression.

"Lieutenant you need to listen. The Arbiter here is a part of a race from over a billion years ago, long before the Reapers or Leviathans. They once fought the parasite that attacked the Citadel and is now spreading throughout the galaxy. They fought it and beat it with the help of a race called the Reclaimers." Shepard stated. She left out the part about the Reclaimers, or UNSC, basically being an ancient humanity. She didn't want it to seem like the humans were trying to grab power while the other council races were under attack.

"So what? As you can see I'm currently preoccupied with a Reaper invasion." Katrina stated her tone becoming sour.

"Katrina underneath the temple is a facility build by a faction the Arbiter here once led. It contains the coordinates for the location of the last Reclaimer and if we don't find him we wont be able to defeat the parasite." Shepard quickly explained.

"So why is he here then?" The lieutenant asked nodding towards the elite.

"Only he knows how to get in the facility." The Asari shook her head at Katherine's response.

"So thats why you're here? Figures. I should've known it was to good to be true when Lithyia told me the great Commander Shepard was coming to save us. Pfft." Katrina stated coldly as she turned back to the map on the table.

"Katrina listen to me. We don't have the resources to fight the flood. They will beat us. Don't ask how I know I just do and this reclaimer seems to be our best and only hope." Katherine said.

"The flood?"

"Another name for the parasite." Shepard explained.

"And you think this Reclaimer will save us?" Katrina asked looking back at the Commander.

"Yes." Shepard said looking at the Arbiter.

"Sounds like a load of crap." Katrina replied with venom lacing her words.

"That's what everyone said about the Reapers and look how that almost ended." Shepard replied her voice becoming aggressive.

Katrina stayed quiet this time. She bunched up her hands into fists. She debated over what Shepard said. Sure it did seem very sketchy but when everyone thought that about the Reaper they almost destroyed everything. If Shepard was really telling the truth then everything depended on her getting down to that facility.

The Asari sighed as she stood up and faced Shepard.

"Commander your story's really hard to believe but I trust you. You did save us once before and I'll be damned if I'm the one who gets the galaxy destroyed. What do you need?" Katrina replied softly. Shepard let a smile form in her mind but kept her face emotionless. She gave the Asari a curt nod.

"Time. I'll leave the others of my squad up here with you and your troops. They can help with fortifying any positions. Also I want them to help get you and your troops out of here in anyway possible. I'll contact the Normandy and get them to assist you with evac and fire support. A few hours should be all we need." Shepard quickly explained.

"Commander we also must reach the lowest point in this facility to reach our destination." The Arbiter suddenly interrupted. The two other looked at him slightly surprised at his sudden statement.

"Why?" Shepard asked.

"You will see once we are down there." The Arbiter replied. Shepard wanted to question him further but decided against it. She was short on time as it was.

Katrina shook her head. She was still disapproving of following this fairytale chase but she didn't really have much of a choice.

"Fine. I'll stay up here and work on getting my people out of here. Commander if you're not up here when we're evacing we are leaving you. I'm not risking my people's lives anymore than needed." Katrina explained. The Spectre nodded in acknowledgment.

"If I'm not back by the time you've evacuated take my team with you. They'll be more helpful alive with you than dead with me." The Commander stated. The Asari nodded.

"So whats your plan Commander?"

"Wheres the lowest point in the temple?" Shepard asked.

"Thirty stories down."

* * *

><p>Footsteps echoed through the dark and abandoned halls of the twenty eighth floor down below the surface. Commander Shepard and Thel' Vadam' swiftly walked down the halls.<p>

The halls had been abandoned hours ago when the invasion had started and the mess of a hurried evacuation was obvious. The under ground floors of the temple were large and open, the smooth and sleek design of the Asari showing everywhere. Dim blue emergency lights was all that lit the halls, casting dark and long shadows over the whole place. The air was cold and the silence reigning over the place was unnerving for the Spectre and the elite but neither voiced their discomfort. They had a goal to accomplish.

Commander Shepard stepped over a large pile of glass from some sort of fallen container. She didn't see the piece she stepped on and flinched when she heard the crunch of glass disrupt the calmness of the dark. She noticed something scurry in the dark and passed it off as a rat of some sort. What she didn't noticed was how the shadow of a nearby cart carrying boxes was gone.

The Arbiter ignored the crunch and kept going forcing Katherine to quicken her pace to keep up with him. He had a purple and bulbous weapon out, a long barrel extending out from the middle. It was an upgraded Carbine model. The rounds would now accelerate at four times the speed of their original speed, and the temperature of the plasma rounds had actually been tripled allowing the plasma to melt through almost anything that wasn't shielded. His plasma sword was holstered on his thigh.

Shepard had her M-27 Scrimitar out and ready to go. Despite the relative large size of the halls she still thought it was a good idea to have a shotgun in the closer quarters.

The two continued down the hall, each occasionally glancing around and studying the area around them. Despite being in friendly territory neither was going to let their guard down, both had learned from experience.

Garrus and the others hadn't taken to well to the news that Katherine was going down with the Arbiter and leave them up top to assist with the evac, but she had eventually convinced them, though she figured if it came down to worst her crew would wait for her. They were loyal till they end and she wouldn't trade them for the world.

That still didn't compare to how upset Katrina and Lithyia had been. The two Asari were rather displeased that the commander was leaving them when she was supposed to be helping. Lithyia had been understanding as possible but Katrina, well needless to say she wasn't. Shepard couldn't blame them though she couldn't agree with them either. She trusted the Arbiter but she wasn't going to leave the fate of the galaxy in someone else's hands, even if he was the great leader of the Covenant.

The hallway suddenly came to an end a large single door of an elevator showing the way down to the next level.

The Asari had specifically designed the underground halls this way. One elevator would only lead down to the level below then one would have to walk across the whole floor to reach the next elevator down. It was time consuming but a practical defense measure. It put thirty floors of security and any other Asari between any intruder and the prothean artifacts. As another precaution they had set up intersecting hallways as choke points and rooms were appeared around ready to used as firing positions.

The precautions impressed the Spectre. The Asari had learned.

Shepard walked forward and called the elevator. They could barely here the elevator slowly rise up and watched as the light turned green signaling its arrival.

The doors opened, the two stepped in and the doors closed taking the duo down to the next floor.

"Commander tell me about these Reapers." The Arbiter suddenly asked, breaking the silence between the two.

"Well where do i start..." Shepard replied as the two stepped off the elevator and onto the twenty ninth floor.

As the two walked through the floor they exchanged stories. The Arbiter had seemed impressed by Shepard retelling her adventures with the Normandy and how she allied the galaxy in a time of great trial. He also seemed very interested when it came to biotics but only asked a few questions and eventually stopped asking once Shepard couldn't explain any more to him.

By the time they reached the next elevator the Arbiter had told his own share of stories though an abbreviated version of them all. He had enough war tales to spend a week listening, and Shepard told herself that one day she needed to hear all of them.

Katherine was very impressed by the man called the Master Chief or Demon by the elites and Covenant. She was baffled how one man was capable of so much, destroying a weapon called a halo, defeating the flood and Covenant, defeating the Didact, going on a galaxy wide search for his friend the AI. Of course most of this was only brief details as the Arbiter didn't know everything that had happened just the basic stories. She noticed however how the Arbiter never mentioned what happened to him though.

The Commander was intrigued how the Arbiter had allied the elites and basically saved humanity and how he eventually reformed the Covenant alongside the UNSC when they began to colonize other galaxies.

She was even more impressed when she learned of their extensive technology and how it made Mass Relay travel and all other technology she knew seem obsolete especially their ability to devolve sentient species and to alter memories and thoughts.

The Commander was completely baffled how at the peak of their power

the two alliances controlled over five thousand galaxies and over thirty million different intelligent species were under their protection or had allied themselves with the two superpowers.

By the time they made it to the last floor the Arbiter had reached the climax of his stories. The final war between the Covenant, UNSC and the flood. He started his story in a dark tone and the two had gone maybe fifty feet into the last level, fifty feet into the main hall with two corridors on either side of them, when suddenly he stopped dead in his tracks and his body froze.

The Arbiter studied the area around him. A chill had run down his spine and a sixth sense was warning him of something dangerous around them. He checked his motion sensor but found nothing out of the ordinary.

"What is it?" Shepard asked as she too studied the area around them.

"Something is not right." The Arbiter replied still looking around. He was about to let his guard down when he noticed movement to Katherine's left.

"Commander down!" The elite yelled at full volume.

The Spectre didn't hesitate and immediately fell on the ground. A dark shadow flew over her and slammed into the Arbiter, missing its target.

The elite grunted as he hit the floor and his upgraded carbine clattered to the ground away from him. He looked at the beast on top of him. He could see pure red eyes, felt claws scrapping against his metal armor despite his shielding, and could see the snout and ears of a human dog on the creature's face. He placed his feet under the beast and using his powerful legs managed to throw the beast off of him.

The dog slammed into a wall with a yelp and fell to the floor. It scrambled to its feet and let out a snarl as the Arbiter too got to his feet. The elite noticed the beast literally resembled a large dog with pure black fur except that a black substance dripped from its mouth and the beast had a horrid odor to it. Its eyes were a glowing red.

The Arbiter drew his sword and took a fighting stance, ready to end the beast's life.

Shepard was already on her feet and stared at the black wolf in wonder. It was too large for a dog and maybe even a wolf but she had no idea what else to call it. However she had seen those eyes before.

She watched as the Arbiter drew his sword and aimed her shotgun when she heard something running behind her.

She spun around and saw another wolf running straight for her out of the shadows. She opened fire and felt relief swell in her chest when she knew both shots would hit the wolf dead on. At this close of a range the wolf would become shredded meat.

It took her by complete and utter surprise when that didn't happen. Inches from being hit the dog suddenly seemed to transform in a black smoke, from its head first all the way down to its tail. The smoke trails bypassed the bullets and before Katherine bullets had even hit the floor the smoke snaked behind her. Her bullets dug themselves into the floor with a loud ping as the smoke reformed behind her into the wolf.

The wolf snarled and jumped onto Shepard completely tumbling her over. Her shotgun flew from her hands. Fortunately however, the beast had misjudged her light weight and the hound fell forward over her.

Katherine wasted no time and pulled herself up. She blasted a biotic throw at the wolf, and was satisfied when the wolf failed to dodge it, getting thrown against a wall of the main hallway.

The Commander quickly scrambled to her feet and drew her sub machine gun. This time she heard the patter of another wolf approaching from behind her. She spun around into a crouch and opened fire.

She was correct in her assumption and several of her bullets impacted the black wolf as it charged at her from out of the darkness of a corridor.

The creature shrugged off her bullets and to avoid any more injury, like its brethren, it transformed into a screen of black smoke. The screen of smoke split into two and shot towards Shepard from either side.

Shepard was quick to react and immediately rolled under the two streams of smoke. The smoke streams collided right where Shepard would have been and together they reformed the wolf which landed on the ground, turning its head to look back at Shepard.

The Spectre was now separated from the Arbiter, the two wolves now between her and him as well as the wolf the elite was till currently engaged with.

The two beasts in front of her, the one she first engaged already back on its feet, moved towards her both of their mouths opened and a black bile falling from their lips.

Shepard noticed how the bile sizzled when it touched the metal floor. It would then move and literally join the dark shadows anywhere nearby. For some reason she shivered slightly. She knew then these beasts were something else entirely.

The closer wolf suddenly charged the Commander. Shepard powered up her omni blade and fired a burst from her weapon. The beast slyly dodged the attack, leaped up towards one of the side walls, kicked off the wall and towards Shepard.

The Spectre swung at the beast. The wolf again turned into black smoke, Katherine's omni blade passing harmlessly through it. Before Shepard had even brought her arm down the smoke whirled around her, wrapping around her extended arm, and formed back into a solid tentacle of black bile coming out of the wall. The wall was pure black and the metal seemed to be sagging from the black covering it.

With a mighty heave the tentacle flipped Shepard over causing her to land hard on her face with a sickening crunch.

Blood drained out form the Spectre's nose but she quickly brushed off the pain and tears, trying to stand back to her feet. The tentacle above her broke apart into smoke then reformed into a wolf. The wolf stood onto of Shepard and with a snarl sank its teeth into the woman's shoulder.

The teeth sunk through the armor like a hit knife through butter. Her shields didn't even register the attack and a barrier would've done nothing to stop the attack either. Shepard yelped in pain as the teeth sunk down into her flesh. She swore she could've felt a canine scrap against the bone.

The pain was unbearable but the wolf wasn't finished yet. It backed up and with a twist of its neck and unnatural strength sent the Commander flying back towards the other wolf.

While in midair the other wolf charged at the commander and with its front legs, claws fully extended, it basically closed lined Katherine.

The Spectre coughed after she hit the ground. The blow had been strong enough to knock the air out of her. She was getting sick of that happening. She heard the wolf land behind her and knew it was only a matter of seconds before they sunk their teeth back into her.

Rather than trying to get to her feet, the Commander simply rolled over, saving her a second or two. Her weapon still in hand, she quickly activated her armor piercing rounds and fired. The rounds slammed into the nearest wolf and with a yelp the beast jerked backwards. However, it didn't die. It simply transformed into smoke and disappeared. Literally the smoke flew into the wall and vanished.

Stuck in a state of shock Shepard just stared at the wall but the movement of the second wolf drew her back into her surroundings.

The wolf lunged for Shepard. The Spectre fired again and again the wolf turned into smoke, the wisps trailing behind her, just like she expected it would. The moment the wolf reformed she let lose a pure biotic blast. Violently, the wolf was sent backwards into the wall. Sickening cracks could be heard as its bones shattered from the force of the blast.

Katherine raised her weapon and let lose the whole clip. The wolf yelped in pain and tried to get to its feet as Shepard let loose a warp biotic. The biotic attack slammed into the beast and began to tear it apart. The wolf suddenly stopped struggling and stared at the woman. It suddenly split apart into something Shepard could only describe as someones nightmare. The body split apart transforming into something that looked like the leaves of a Venus fly trap. Bile flew from the beasts mouth, or whatever it was and onto the Spectre's armor. Her shoulder armor immediately began to dissolve and Shepard hurriedly tried to rip the pice of armor off.

Tentacles shot out towards the Spectre, wrapping around her body like

vines would on a tree.

One wrapped around her neck and began to choke her. Drawing her omni blade, Katherine used the blade to slice the tentacles off of her. The tentacles stayed solid, and feel the floor wriggling before disintegrating.

She focused back on the monstrosity before her and set lose a cryo freeze. The freeze did its job and the thing froze in place. Quickly picking up her fallen shotgun, Shepard blasted the ice at close to point blank range, shattering the frozen creature. The pieces scattered to the floor and instead of melting they just disintegrated.

Silently from behind her dark rope like items suddenly lunged out of the wall and wrapped around Shepard. Two wrapped around her left arm and snapped it like a twig.

Katherine screamed and was pulled to the wall by the ropes, dropping her shotgun once again. They tightened against her, plastering her against the metal wall. Across from her, out of the other wall, a pool of dark black liquid pooled onto the floor. A huge snake head slithered out form the pool, the pure glowing red eyes, it opened its mouth and moved closer to Shepard.

The fangs were easily as large as her head and the razor sharp teeth behind looked painful. As Shepard stared into the mouth of her death she realized something. A rope was tied around her wrist right where she could activate her right omni blade. She activated the orange blade which ripped straight through the rope and using a great amount of her remaining strength, drove the blade through the creatures head.

The snake shrieked in pain and drew its head back, splitting it in half. The torn head disappeared into the pool of liquid and the ropes released the commander, the liquid then seeping back into the floor.

Shepard dropped back to the floor and yelped immediately bringing her left arm up. It was horribly broken. She groaned and got back to her feet. She looked over to the Arbiter and watched him decapitate the wolf he was fighting. The head rolled to the floor and disintegrated along with the rest of the body.

The Spectre was about to call over to him when tentacles launched out of one of th shadowy corridors and wrapped around her once again. They slammed her to the floor with a sickening crack. Shepard felt several ribs snap.

The Arbiter called out to her and charged toward her. Suddenly a dark pull formed beneath his feet and several ropes flew out wrapping around the elite and pulling him down. The ropes couldn't pull him flat against the ground but they managed to hold him in place. The Arbiter actually struggled using all his strength to pull at the ropes. He began to twist his arm trying to cut at them with his energy sword.

Between the two, wisps of smoke flew out form the walls and formed a smaller wolf. It walked over to Shepard slowly and surely, savoring the moment. Shepard struggled but it was pointless. She was hurt,

bloody from her nose, and tired from having to use so many biotic abilities to beat just one of the wolves.

The wolf placed one of its feet on her head and pushed it against the ground. With a horrid snarl the beast sank its teeth into the Spectre's broken arm.

Katherine let loose a scream as she felt her bones shattered underneath the teeth, the teeth sinking in deep through the muscle. She felt the blood beginning to seep out despite the wolf's teeth still imbedded in her arm.

Suddenly a large scaly hand wrapped around the wolf's neck. The Wolf released Shepard and tried to turn and bite whoever had grabbed it. Before it had the chance however the Arbiter sent the beast flying. He roared and drew another one of his energy swords.

The skin on the wolf began to bubble. The wolf stood up on two legs and transformed into another beast entirely. Its form was that of an ancient samurai. Except everything was jet black and its eyes were still a glowing red color.

The samurai drew two swords and stood in a fighting stance. The Arbiter grinned and the two began to circle each other.

Shepard rolled onto her side staring at the two and holding her severely damaged arm. She could feel the aches of her ribs as she breathed.

She watched as the two suddenly charged each other.

The Arbiter struck towards the samurai's legs. The samurai blocked it with his sword which surprised Shepard considering the heat of the elite's sword. The Arbiter drew his sword back to him and the samurai struck at him with a downwards left slash. The Arbiter raised his sword and easily blocked the blow. He quickly spun around and struck at the samurai's left side which was blocked again.

The two continued to trade blows in a dance like state, one would hit, the other blocked. As Shepard watched she noticed how none of the blows were delivered with heavy force. The two combatants were striking at each other but she could see each was saving their full strength for the killing blow and that all depended on who screwed up first.

Only seconds after she thought that the samurai made a fatal mistake. He lunged towards the Arbiter, just an inch too much, and that gave the elite the opening he needed.

The Arbiter side stepped the samurai and using the side of his armored arm, he bashed the back of the dark samurai's head. The warrior went tumbling to the ground. The Arbiter spun over the samurai's body and raised his sword, then swiftly brought it down with all the force he could muster.

However, the dark samurai wasn't finished just yet. It split apart as the energy sword sunk into the metal floor. Tentacles shot out from the creature and wrapped around the Arbiter this time managing to force him to the ground due to his stance.

The tentacles separated and stuck themselves to the floor as the elite struggled to get free. The rest of the samurai turned to smoke and flew behind the elite. It reformed and placed its sword on the elites neck preparing to deliver a finishing blow.

Shepard had only a second to react as the samurai brought up his swords. She raised her good arm and prepared to fire a cryo blast when the samurai turned to her and suddenly threw his sword at her. The sword imbedded itself into her good arms shoulder, completely ignoring the armor and shields, and stuck out the other side. Shepard yelled as the warrior drew another sword and raised this one as it now focused back on the elite.

With excruciating pain, with blood seeping out, with shattered bones, the commander raised her bad arm and let loose the cryo blast as the samurai brought his sword down.

Only an inch from the elites neck, the samurai turned to ice and froze in place.

With a roar the Arbiter broke free of the tentacles and got to his feet. He turned around and looked at the now frozen warrior. He slowly picked up his energy sword, which had fallen out of his hand when he had freed himself, and powered it up. He reeled his arm back and thrust the sword into the beasts head.

Instantly the beast shattered and disintegrated. The Arbiter dropped his arms and let out a heavy sigh.

Katherine leaned back against the wall and let out a sigh of relief.

What the hell... She thought to herself, letting out a pained sigh.

* * *

><p>The hounds have failed...

Kill her!

She must die!

We will not fail again!

Silence!

I will deal with her personally.

She beat you once before and she will do it again. This hero cannot defeat you just as before.

She will not.

If you fail...

You shall be disgraced.

It matters not he will be dead then.

May i kille her then?

Do as you please.

When your monuments and sins fail do not ask for help.

I need no help from you.

Enough. You two are to work togetehr to destroy her then none can win.

Why?

_She defeated you once and you the solider can beat. Together however you can beat her. _

Then we shall.

Yes we will.

_Good. Finish the great Commander Shepard before she causes our plans more trouble. _

What of the knight?

He has only discovered his armor he is if of no worry.

Good. Now go and destroy her.

With pleasure.

* * *

><p>Hey guys! Now before I get killed for Shepard being able to kill those creatures better its only because o her biotics. Physically the Arbiter was far more capable as without biotics he basically beat two on his own. Also sorry if the whole temple thing kinda sucked i did my best. Oh well. So yeah. Anyway please Review guys! Thanks for reading and god bless!

Oh also if this story breaks a hundred review with this chapter ill post two chapter next time i update! so yeah!

9. Part I Chapter 8 (Un beata'd)

Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil

Chapter 8: Who is the rest?

* * *

><p>"So what the hell was that?" Shepard voiced out loud. She grunted in pain as she straightened herself against the wall.<p>

"I have never seen such monstrosities." The Arbiter replied sitting down next to her.

"Well, I hope we never see them again cause they sure pack a punch." Shepard groaned as she tried to straighten out her broken arm. Her armor opened up as the Spectre began to apply medigel. She finished with her arm, letting the armor close back up then moved to her shoulder which was bleeding a lot heavier than her arm.

"What is that?" The elite asked.

"Medigel. Works wonders." Katherine replied as her armor closed back over her wounded shoulder, the medigel already working on the gashes her arm had received.

"Are you sure you can continue Commander?" The Arbiter asked. Katherine couldn't tell if he genuinely cared about her condition or was just asking because she would slow him down.

"I'll live." The Commander grunted as she used her good arm to push herself up off the floor. It took a little longer than it should have and she looked goofy doing it, but the Commander managed to get to her feet.

"We should continue. In case any more of those... things show up." Shepard stated.

"Agreed." The Arbiter stated. He quickly walked away from to pick up his carbine and her shotgun, before returning to her. He handed her the shotgun which she placed on her back, preferring to use a submachine gun since she only had one good arm.

Finally the two started off again. The rest of the walk was silent as the two warriors made their way through the hall. AS they walked Shepard could tell the Arbiter was injured. He had the slightest limp and kept flexing his right hand as if to make sure it still worked. She wondered why he didn't say anything. She figured it was pride since she would've never let him know about her injuries but they were pretty obvious considering how much bleeding she had done.

"Shepard stop." The Arbiter suddenly stated. The Commander stopped in her tracks and looked at the elite with a confused expression. She didn't notice how he had been glancing at his wrist since they had started their walk and when she finally saw it she noticed a blue holographic panel on the display. It reminded her of an omni tool. She was about to condemn herself again for not being vigilant enough when a wave of dizziness hit her. She stumbled back causing the Arbiter to react and catch her before she fell.

"Thanks." Shepard managed as she tried to steady herself. She looked at towards her shoulder and noticed how the bleeding was beginning to increase in flow. She didn't have a long time before she fell unconscious or bleed to death.

"Lets just get this over with. Where is this facility?" She asked slightly agitated at the turn of events. She hated being injured, mostly because it hampered her ability to do anything of use.

"Its one thousand feet below us." The Arbiter stated. Shepard looked over at him.

"And how are we supposed to get down there?" Shepard asked slightly

annoyed that she hadn't known this earlier.

The Arbiter didn't respond. He pulled out a small circle from the armor on his thigh. He placed it on the ground, pressed a few holographic commands on the circle then backed away. The Spectre was ready to ask him what he was doing when a stream of light poured out from the device. It formed a solid diamond shape above the circle and just floated there.

Shepard raised an eyebrow as she looked back at the Arbiter.

"This will take us down there." The elite stated.

"What is it?" The Commander asked.

"A teleporter. One of reclaimer design. It will transport us down there to the receiving teleporter." The Arbiter stated.

"Why didn't we just use this when we we're up top? We could've avoided the whole demon dog confrontation." Shepard asked slightly upset though she kept her voice and face emotionless.

"Your structures and technology are different from ours. There's no telling what could've happened if we had tried to transport ourselves through all of this structure." The Arbiter motioned to the walls around them.

"Your technology could've hampered or even disrupted the process which could've killed us or worse." The Arbiter simply stated. Shepard nodded in acknowledgment.

"That's why we came down here. It's the least interference from our technology." Shepard stated. The Arbiter nodded and stepped into the teleporter. He disappeared with a flash, leaving Shepard alone.

"Great." She replied. She walked forward and stepped through the teleporter.

With a flash she disappeared from existence, her very molecules separating.

Katherine fell to the floor in heap. Her head was spinning and she felt ready to hurl up everything she had eaten for the past week and a half.

She looked up and saw the Arbiter a few feet in front of her staring down at her with an amused look.

"Teleportation is unpleasant for those not used to it." The elite said walking over to her.

"Tell me about it." Shepard replied as she tried to get to her feet. With some help from the Arbiter she managed to get to her feet. She looked around her. The structure she was inside had a very bulbous and circular layout, which she then concluded they were in a hallway of sorts. A purple tint coated the metal making up the structure. A few luminous lights hung over head and the Spectre could see a what she figured was a door not far from them, two red large lights glowing from the door.

The Arbiter walked away from her and towards the door. A part of the wall next to the door slide up and revealed a small holographic panel. The panel slid out and extended itself to its full length. As Katherine approached she could tell how the panel had been designed for Elite usage.

The Arbiter typed in a few commands and the panel scanned his hand print before sliding back into the wall. The wall slide back over the panel, concealing it from the naked eye once more and the lights on the door turned green.

The elite motioned for the Spectre to follow him and walked into the room beyond. Shepard followed inside and the doors slid shut behind her.

The Commander gawked at the room in front of her. Dozens of holographic computers laid around the room. In the center a huge holographic display. She noticed how the room was void of everything but one chair.

"What is this place?" She asked walking up next to the elite whom was typing away at a smaller computer off to the side.

"It was my personal storage. I recorded and stored everything in here. Many being dangerous secrets that if had fallen into the wrong hands would've meant war and death. Something my people have seen to much of." The Arbiter stated. He backed up from the computer and touched the screen. He pulled the information off the screen and dragged the hologram up to the larger holographic screen in the front. He released the information and the information expanded upon the larger screen giving the two a better view of it.

"Whoa." Shepard stated. She saw how the info expanded and revealed what looked like system of a hundred stars but after a few moments of studying she realized they weren't stars.

"Are... Are those... Galaxies?" Shepard asked walking up closer to the screen. The Arbiter whom had backed away from the screen to study it from afar looked over at the Commander with an amused grin.

"Yes,. Section 1 to be exact. The section your Galaxy is located." The Arbiter stated walking over to her. He reached up to the screen and zoomed in on the Milky way galaxy leaving Shepard speechless.

"How many sections are there?" Shepard asked trying to regain her calm composure.

"There were four hundred and twenty two sections each containing a hundred galaxies."

"And you controlled all of them?" The commander asked.

"No. The New Covenant shared control of sections one through two hundred with the Reclaimers. But sections two hundred to two fifty were under our control only while the reclaimers controlled only sections two fifty to three hundred."

"What about the other sections?"

"They were not under any official control though they had major political parties. They were more freelance Galaxies whom we were still in negotiations with. The party in power over these sections were called the Dauntless. They were brave a faction whom considered us tyrants. Maybe they were correct." The Arbiter stated. He seemed to drift off into deep thought for a brief moment before returning to the present.

"So how were you all beaten?" Shepard asked returning to their conversation from earlier. They had been interrupted by the shadow creatures while the Arbiter was in the middle of his story of the war for the universe. The Elite visible sulked and glanced at the floor briefly.

"As I said earlier the climax of the war was the battle for the Galaxy called Allegiant. The Flood had been fighting us but we had managed to bring them to a stale mate. However that didn't last. Something happened to the Dauntless. The Gravemind invaded their minds and turned them against us somehow. I will never forget the evil in their red eyes as they turned on us and destroyed Allegiant. Anyway that left only the Reclaimers and The Covenant to defend the galaxies against the parasite. We could not hold them off forever..."

"Wait you said the dauntless's eyes turned red?" Shepard asked suddenly. The Arbiter gave her a quizzical look before answering.

"Yes but..."

"Were they a pure red? And when they turned did everything seem cold? As if everything had frozen over." Shepard asked her heart beginning to race.

"Yes."

Shepard took a deep breath and closed her eyes.

"That's happened to me. I've seen those types of red eyes and everything was cold."

"Where? When?" The Arbiter asked getting closer to her, his senses suddenly on alert.

"Well it was in a dream... These things talked to me and... Never mind it's probably just a coincidence." Shepard stated looking back up at the screen.

"In my lifetime Commander I've learned there are no coincidences. Whatever it was we must look into it but for now let us focus on the mission at hand." The Arbiter stated which Shepard wholly agreed to. Was she really starting to dream seriously? She shook her head and had to resist the urge to laugh at her own thoughts.

The Arbiter typed in a few commands on a holographic keypad and the screen shifted away from the Milky Way, and over the darkness between galaxies. Something fluttered within Shepard. As if something clicked and hope had been restored within her.

"This is where the last reclaimer lies." The Arbiter stated looking over at the Commander.

"In between the galaxies. In the darkness of space."

* * *

><p>The two warriors made their way through the back door of the temple interior, and back into the ground floor of the temple where the temporary command post of Katrinas had been set up. The Arbiter had stored all information regarding the Reclaimer and his own past into a portable harddrive now attached to his thigh armor.<p>

Katherine had no idea how long it had taken them to get down there and up but she felt like it had taken days. She figured it was because she was injured and the constant dizziness spells were really starting to take a toll on her. She needed to get some medical treatment soon or she would bleed out.

When she looked up, about to call out for Garrus or Liara, she froze in her place just as the Arbiter did. No one was there. The whole temple was abandoned. The center tent was still there but everything else was gone. They had actually left them. She honestly had never expected them to, but they had.

Now her and the Arbiter were stuck on this planet with the Reapers bound to find them. They were stuck here with the only information that could save her galaxy.

"They left." The Arbiter stated walking towards the tent to make sure it really was empty.

Shepard raised her omni tool and sent out a call to the Normandy. It didn't answer. That was bad. Very bad. Either the Normandy was out of the system and out of her reach or the Reapers had destroyed her ship. Either one was bad. She walked towards the doors of the temple and walked outside. She squinted as the sun of Thessia glared down on her. She could see the plumes of smoke raising in the distance and the sounds of distant gun fire. Maybe hope wasn't all lost. If they could just find their way to another evac sight then they could still get off this planet.

Shepard opened her mouth to call for the Arbiter when another wave of dizziness hit her. Stumbled forward and wrapped her arms onto a nearby pillar. The pillar kept her steady as the wave finished its run when she heard footsteps behind her.

"Commander." The Arbiter stated walking over to her.

Katherine straightened her posture and turned to face the Arbiter. He was holding something strange in his hand. However, before either could speak a large and deafening boom filled the air. Shepard flinched slightly and spun around.

She watched as a Reaper destroyer landed in the courtyard of the temple. She stepped forward a little as if defying the Reapers presence, The Arbiter a few steps behind her.

Several more booms sounded out and four more Reaper ships landed around the first. Two behind it the other two on either side of the first Reaper.

Five Reapers stood before her in the courtyard of the temple.

"Well well... If it isn't Commander Shepard." A sinister voice called out from the lead Reaper.

"You..." Katherine hissed once she heard the voice. She knew that voice on instinct.

"Ah yes me. The Catalyst. The bane of your existence." The voice stated. The Reaper boomed as if to cheer at the Catalysts statement.

The Arbiter watched the display with squinted eyes. He already knew who the Catalyst was from Shepard earlier stories.

"What does he want..." The Arbiter muttered to himself, however the Spectre still heard him.

"What do you want Catalyst?" The Commander hissed shifting her posture slightly.

"Me? Nothing. The rest? They want you dead."

"And who are the rest?"

"Oh Shepard still trying to hard to figure out what is going on. You'll be long dead before you ever find out."

"What do you mean whats going on?" Shepard asked a confused look spreading on her face.

The Catalyst hesitated to speak. He hadn't realized Shepard didn't have a clue what was going on and he had just unintentionally told her something bigger than what she knew was actually happening.

"Never mind Shepard. I have business to attend to."

"Not before you answer our questions Demon." The Arbiter stated walking forward.

"And who is this?" The Catalyst asked suddenly intrigued. He wondered who this was.

"He is one of flesh and faith..." A deep voice announced. A green mist began to swim around and covered the whole courtyard, and the sun seemed to dim in its brightness.

"You..." The Arbiter hissed drawing an energy sword. The blade hissed to life.

"Yes. It is I. The bane of your existence proud warrior!" The voice roared, its voice far more menacing than the Catalysts.

"Enough of this. Lets finish them." The Catalyst stated.

"With pleasure." The voice added. Large decaying tentacles swirled out of the green mist and began to crawl forward.

Did I not tell you they would betray you? Now you will die and your people will never come back for you... A voice whispered into Katherine's mind. The shadows swirled around and slipped from behind Shepard and began to slip up her body.

"Now fall great commander..."

The red beam of the lead Reaper began to charge and Shepard released her breath, preparing for the inevitable. The Arbiter raised his sword anticipating the oncoming attack.

Suddenly a large purple beam shot down from the sky and hit the lead Reaper. The Reaper sulked and crumbled down, the beam blasting right through it.

"What is this?" The Catalyst roared in anger. The lead Reaper went up in an explosion of great magnitude causing Shepard to raise her hand to block all the dust headed for her.

"hmmm... Till next time warrior." The deeper voice stated and the green mist retreated along with tentacles till both were none existent.

The four remaining reapers looked up to the sky and three let loose their main weapons, their red weapons lacing into the sky.

You fools... The voice in Shepard head cursed. She wondered who too since it obviously wasn't aimed at her. Suddenly the presence retreated from her mind and the suns full brightness shone onto her.

Two blasts of purple slammed into the two front Reapers, obliterating both with just a single shot. The bodies of the Reapers groaned and fell forward in a million pieces.

Shepard and the Arbiter exchanged a glance, both wondering what was happening.

The other two Reapers didn't bother staying a with massive blasts from their engines shot off into the sky. Shepard walked forward a bit a stared up into the sky where the two purple blasts had come from.

Five sleek and bulbous ships lowered themselves down towards the ground. The Arbiter grinned realizing whom it was.

"What? You didn't think we'd actually leave you Shepard?" Garrus's voice called out over the com.

Shepard smiled at his voice.

"Took you long enough." She replied trying to sound angry, though her true happiness shined through.

"Had a few delays." Liara chipped in.

Shepard grinned but felt a question poking at her mind. Something the

Catalyst had said unnerved her for some reason.

Just who was the rest?

* * *

><p>A figure moved through the sleek metal halls with light blue lines of light lining the halls as the female went.<p>

She was graceful and her stride just glowed with the power she held, with the strength she had. The doors at the end of the hall slide open for her and she made her way through them.

A viewport of a delicate and graceful design was where she now stood. She looked out over the millions of stars coating the Universe.

"Have we located any yet?" She asked. A hologram flickered to life. It was in the form of one of her knights.

"Yes. The fifth. She is currently within the..." A red light flickered on.

"Its seems one of them has entered our realm..."

"Yes."

"Begin to scan for his location. Also keep an eye on her. We will need her alive to succeed. If she needs help you are to give."

"Mam." With that the hologram flickered off and the woman stared out the window.

_How beautiful the universe was yet it held such deadly secrets. _

* * *

><p>AN So hey guys! Alright umm don't know what to say i hope this was done well... If theres any questions feel free to review/PM me. So thanks for reading! Review! God Bless! **

Oh also I thought the teleporting thing was justified since ME and Halo use different means of technology and well if something as delicate as teleporting was done around such foreign technology i figured it could have unfavorable consequences. So yeah.

10. Part I Chapter 9 (Un beata'd)

**Part I **

The Voice and Face of all Evil.

Chapter 9: An injured Shepard

* * *

><p>Commander Katherine Shepard stepped through the sleek doors and onto the bridge of the Covenant super carrier The Light of

Intent.

Her wounds had been treated, but despite what everyone telling her to rest, she headed up to the bridge. She needed to see who was in charge and why exactly had the Covenant had suddenly come to their aid.

Garrus, Liara and The Arbiter followed behind her, each just as curious as she was.

As they entered the bridge, a familiar elite, in pristine white armor, was standing towards the front of the bridge as he watched his fleet combat the Reaper forces. Suddenly he turned towards them.

"Being the head of the Council allows me certain... Privileges." Thran simply explained with a curt nod as greeting.

"These men will follow me to the death." Thran said turning back to the screen, intently watching the small battle at hand.

"Unfortunately for my actions we cannot return back to our home in the fear that we might be followed, but we will help you in any way possible Commander Shepard. I feel that you need us more than our home does." Thran humbly stated.

"Why did you come?" Shepard asked. She was grateful but still curious. Why would this elite, even if he was a leader, disregard the concerns of his fellow generals and take a fleet to help someone he barely knew.

"Because you need our help Commander. The Covenant, My people, will not stand by idly as the parasite destroys another Galaxy."

Shepard blinked as she took in his words. She couldn't express how grateful she was. She stepped forward to thank him but suddenly a wave of cloudy vision and dizziness fell over her. She stumbled forward and felt two large hands steady her.

Her side and arm throbbed as blood slowly seeped out of the wounds. She was far to injured still to be milling about, but she was stubborn. sometimes to stubborn.

She turned around and was barely able to make out the Arbiter's face.

The elite lifted her back to her feet with ease and steadied her.

Thran and the other were staring at her with concerned looks.

"I believe the Commander needs medical attention." Thran stated.

"Yes, she does." Garrus instantly agreed and swiftly moved towards her. The Commadner however didn't even hear them. Her vision was blacking out and all she could do was focus her breathing and staying conscious.

"Is the medical bay running?" The Arbiter asked looking over at the younger elite. Thran nodded.

"Good." With practiced ease the elite lifted her off her feet and into his arms. Quickly the elite made his way out of the bridge, his jog light and graceful as he hurried to get the commander to the medical bay.

The last thing the Commander heard wasn't the Arbiter voice, the pounding of her heart, the reassuring voices of her friends. No what she heard was a sweet feminine voice full of compassion.

Save him... Was all it said and finally blackness engulfed her.

* * *

><p>Shepard awoke with a gasp and shot up in her bed. She quickly looked around her room, surveying everything and once she finally determined nothing was wrong she relaxed a bit.<p>

She felt the dull pain from her injuries and groaned slightly. She was getting tired of getting injured. She belittled herself for performing so badly in battle and promised herself to do better.

Slowly the Commander peeled the sheets off her and got out of bed with a great amount of effort.

Her body screamed with pain as she stood. She gasped and spent a few minutes catching her breath.

After the pain had finally subsided she slowly made her way towards her little office in the cabin. She opened her mail and looked for anything interesting.

After nothing came up she sighed.

"EDI?" She called out softly, her soft voice cracking slightly.

"Yes Shepard?" The AI replied.

"Where are we currently?" Shepard asked. She wanted to go to the bridge and find out for herself but she was too tired.

"We are currently in Earths orbit mam."

Shepard froze and her breath caught in her throat. Her mind was racing and her heart pounding.

"Are we still docked within the Covenant ship?"

"Yes Commander."

Shepard's face paled. Why had they dared to enter Alliance space with her out of commission while onboard an alien vessel. No one had cleared it! The Alliance could've attacked the Covenant and started a whole new war. A grim feeling fell over her and she mentally prepared to run off and find Thran. She need to give him a piece of her mind for just entering human space without clearance.

"Shepard, Garrus also told me to tell you once you woke up that he got it cleared with Admiral Hackett for the Covenant to retreat into Alliance territory. The battle was getting worse and despite their formidable ships the Covenant was greatly outnumbered. They did a slip space jump and got us out of their. Thessia is lost however. The Asari's population has halved and they are currently residing with Alliance territory till a plan can be laid out for their resettlement." EDI stated.

Shepard let out a breath she didn't know she had been holding. She had forgotten about Garrus and the others. They had enough experience with strange and tough situations that she knew it would've been easy for Garrus to get the Covenant ships cleared for entering human space.

However, she felt a wave of grief fall over her. It was the second time the Asari had lost their home in only ten years. She could only imagine how she would feel if Earth fell again.

"Mam Admiral Hackett, Fleet Master Thran and Garrus are waiting for you in the war room. The Admiral wants to know what's been going on." EDI informed.

Shepard sighed. She felt a headache already forming as she thought about explaining everything to the Admiral and more than likely the Council.

"It's going to be a long day..." She muttered.

"Seems like it mam."

"Not helping EDI..."

* * *

><p>AN I am so sorry for keeping you all waiting for so long! I've been beyond busy and my brain is ready to burst thanks to College. I will try to update more often and hence this is my new offer... **

**I will try to offer at least a few times a week but! The chapter will be short like this one. Between 1000 and 3000 words rather than the 8000 to 10000 I've been updating. **

So whatever the majority votes for I'll do.

Also sorry if this chapter was disappointing but I felt like you guys deserved something to let you know this fic isn't dead and I needed to update you about this new option I'm thinking about. Anyway thanks for staying loyal to this fic! Thanks for reading! God bless! have a great day!

11. Part I Chapter 10 (un beata'd)

Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil

Chapter 10: Meeting with Hackett

* * *

><p>"So you're telling me Shepard that the Reapers are back?" Hackett asked, his hands clenched into fists as he leaned over the war room's holo table. The Commander had told him everything. Well, everything Relevant to the current war at least, which was the Reapers, The flood, who the covenant were, and to an extent had tried to explain Flood were with Thran's help but stopped when Hackett had cut her off from it since she herself still was confused on their history.<p>

Shepard sighed internally. She was frustrated that out of everything she had just told him that the thing he was really concerned about was the Reapers. Then again could she blame him? Only ten years ago had they almost destroyed the galaxy, and in comparison he barely knew anything about the Flood, so why would he worry about them? In fact so did she, but she had seen what they were capable of and she wasn't going to risk it. Especially after what Reluctant Promise had told her.

"Yes. They are back, but Admiral you need to realize they are not the biggest threat anymore." Shepard stated keeping her voice calm and collected. She may be still slightly injured but that didn't dampen her political or reasoning abilities.

"Shepard I know what you mean, but now that the Reapers are here... We can't fight two wars. As it is Im already getting reports of Reapers ships attacking Alliance colonies."

"Already? They've only been back for a few hours or a day at most." Garrus stated in a slight state of shock.

"Yes unfortunately." Hackett replied. The group was silent. Thran' glanced between them wondering why they were so downcast. The Reapers weren't that bad in his eyes. It was the Flood they should truly be worried about.

"So what do we do?" Hackett asked looking up at Shepard. He wasn't directly asking her for advice but it was stated none the less. He was out of ideas and this war had barely been going for a few days to a week at most.

However before the commander or anyone around the table could respond a peppy voice, one that Shepard hoped wouldn't interrupt as she was trying to keep him a secret, interrupted them.

"Why you find the Last Reclaimer of course!" Reluctant Promise stated, loudly announcing his arrival.

The group turned to see the monitor and the Arbiter both walk in from one of the side doors.

"Great..." Shepard sighed more to herself than anything. She hadn't told Hackett anything about the monitor or the Arbiter as a matter of fact.

"And just who are they?" Hackett asked purely curious. As usual before the Commander could speak, Reluctant Promise be her to it.

"I am Reluctant Promise of Installation 345." He stated with much enthusiasm. The floating ball glided over to Hackett and studied him with his blue eye.

"You are Admiral Hackett of the System's Alliance correct?" The monitor stated.

"I am." Hackett replied his voice and posture steady.

"Interesting I have been wondering when the Commander would introduce us to you." The monitor replied. Shepard closed her eyes and bit her lip in frustration.

"Its a pleasure to make your acquaintance Reluctant Promise. Now may I ask who is our other guest." Hackett stated with a polite nod towards the Arbiter. The Elite had opted to stay off to the side, content with observing but now that he was addressed he made his way towards the holo table.

"I am Thel' Vadam, The Arbiter. Leader of the Covenant and of the Sangheli." The Arbiter stated with a curt nod.

Shepard noticed for being an extra terrestrial he was pretty well versed in human greetings.

"Admiral Hackett." Hackett replied with a curt nod of his own.

"Now." He stated turning back to Shepard. "As we were discussing I have no real option on how to defeat the flood or the Reapers. Conventionally we might be able to hold them off for a month or two, but our numbers are too small to start a war of attrition. We could lose before the year is out. Now you said something about the Last Reclaimer."

Hackett looked over at the monitor.

"Is the Commander aware of this option?"

"Why yes! That is why she saved me and meet with the Arbiter here." Reluctant Promise stated oblivious to the situation he had put Shepard in.

Hackett didn't respond and just turned to Shepard with a raised eyebrow. He had known the Commander well enough to know when she was keeping a secret she had a good reason behind it, but now he figured it was time for him to know about this. If only to help her out as best as he could.

"I was going to get to that part." Shepard said sending a pointed look towards the monitor.

"What the monitor here says is that a long time ago... There was an ancient branch of humanity that was to say the least powerful. There was a war a long long time ago between the Covenant and these humans who called themselves the UNSC." Shepard started.

Before Hackett could ask anything, the Spectre continued.

"Somehow this Last Reclaimer saved them and Reluctant here thinks he

can save us from the Flood since he did it before." Shepard stating motioning towards the monitor.

"This Reclaimer defeated the flood?" Hackett asked hinting at his disbelief.

"Yes. With help, but ultimately yes he did." The monitor replied.

"It was mostly luck." Another voice suddenly spoke up. The heads of everyone turned towards the Arbiter, whom had spoken.

"I was with him, and we should've died. We were lucky. Nothing more. Now how do you expect him to defeat the Flood once again? We have no weapons to defeat the Flood." The Arbiter stated turning towards the monitor.

"The Reclaimers left certain secrets behind that only he can access. If we can get him to find these secrets they may be able to save us." The monitor replied.

"You're wrong..." The Arbiter said shaking his head.

"How is he wrong?" Hackett piped up.

"Because the Last Reclaimer was not awake during the final war that defeated his people. He was asleep as I was. He does not know of their secrets. He was not there. He only remembers the times of old." The Arbiter stated.

"But... No... I am sure he was awake then. I have reports of him and pictures." The monitor stated.

"Incorrect. They were falsified. To create hope in the people. To keep fighting knowing that he was fighting with them. He was asleep, long lost by his people." The Arbiter retorted.

"How would you know this?" Reluctant stated in disbelief.

"Because I'm the one who left him sleeping."

The silence that followed was deafening and the Commander could've sworn she heard every person's heart eating. To say the least this had been an unexpected turn of events.

* * *

><p>AN Hey guys! yes another short chapter but that mean you get another update sooner than expected which means I can update again probably around Tuesday or Thursday this week. Anyway hope it was alright.**

**Also I need a BETA reader for this story. someone who can beta all the previous chapter ands all future ones. Its hard for me alone to find plot holes and spelling/ grammar mistakes. Send me a PM if interested. **

Thanks for reading and God bless!

12. Part I Chapter 11 (Un beata'd)

****Part I****

****The Voice and Face of all Evil****

****Chapter 11: The Council and The Arbiter****

* * *

><p>"What do you mean you're the one who left him sleeping?" Hackett asked, giving voice to the question on all of their minds.<p>

The Arbiter sighed. Not one of annoyance but of sheer exhaustion. He was tired. A billion or so years of life would do that to anyone, even if he had spent most of it in a cryo tube.

"Its best if tell this story from the beginning. After the last fight with the one who called himself the Didact, myself and the demon, your last reclaimer, fled the shiel world we we're on." The Arbiter said noddng towards the monitor.

"which is why I pursued you. you were the last one to knoe of his location." Reluctant Promise stated.

" Yes I was, but let me continue. It will make more sense if i finish my tale." The Arbiter replied.

"As you wish." The monitor agreed receiving a nod of thanks from the elite.

"We fled the shield world we we're on. Escaping from the mechanical planet, however something happened... My memory is blank of what transpired after but I have an idea of what may have happened. None the less I awoke, weeks later on a ship surrounded by my allies. The asked me what happened but alas I did not know. Time moved forward and after years of searching... The humans finally gave up. None could find him and as much as I tried to remember, I could not. It plagued me but I had an Alliance resting on my shoulders so I pushed away my worries. When the time came, I was old and my human allies were gone, long deceased, my generals came up with an idea. They said what if they would ever need me once more? What if I died and they needed me once again? I told them it was natural and they would find a way to overcome their obstacles, but the answer was not suited for them. After a year of debate and arguing, they convinced me to sleep in a cryo tub, till the time came I was needed once more. It was strange, when I agreed. It was if I had felt this happening before. As if it was pre determined." The Arbiter squinted and focused on the hologram of Earth floating over the holotable for a few moments before continuing.

"I was awoken over a thousand years later. The protocol had been enacted and the new general had awakened with no option left. When I awoke..." The Arbiter closed his eyes as his voice died off.

"You awoke to the Flood." Shepard finished off in a small voice. She had heard parts of this before. When they had shared storied on Rannoch before those things... those hell hounds, had attacked them.

"Yes." The Arbiter replied opening his eyes, an old and long forgotten anger in his eyes. "I awoke to death of many Galaxies. They fell and I felt helpless. Alas I did what I could. Even helped save several systems, but it was not enough. They could not be stopped. Not this time. So I met with the new human leaders and we devised a plan. It was called the Reclamation, where we would reclaim what we had lost even if it meant our lives. We created a weapon, the size of a planet, with the power to wipe out all life, not just sentient, everything, within the known universe and beyond. It the Titan. However before we unleashed it upon the galaxy we made sure to create worlds to house specimens of every living being that was not the flood so the universe t be re filled with life once we we're gone. In secret though, my race filled special capsules filled with information of our past so our descendants could learn from our mistakes. I was on my way to my home planet... We had found another suitable embryo in one of the females, and I was to go collect it. I was ambushed by brutes, the traitors attacking me in cold blood and destroying my ship. Fortunately another ship was nearby. They destroyed the brutes and saved me. However, it was at that moment everything changed. They had knocked me on the head with something. Something hard that indented my skull and my body was dying. I was placed into immediate surgery where the partially rebuilt my body." The large elite motioned to the rest of himself.

"You mean to say you were'nt always that tall?" Shepard asked intrigued.

"Correct. I was stronger and faster when I awoke but even more important a memory had returned to me. I may have not known where exactly the demon was... But I knew how to find him. A knew a place that held the information and I had a vision of my friend. He was lying asleep in a cryo tube much similar to the one I had slept in. I knew then he was alive and well... And that I myself had apparently put him there. So I went immediately. I was enroute to the planet called Rannoch, which was still under our control, searching for the location of him when the unthinkable happened. Earth, this very same planet." The Arbiter said nodding to Earth's hologram floating over the war rooms holo table.

"Had fallen to the Flood. The human leaders in panic activated the Titan and the beam swept across the universe. I had moments and knowing where the information to find my friend was I would not let myself die. Another ship, one of my own, was around me. I ordered to jump into slipspace and I followed. The darkness of slipspace protected us and we survived. We pulled out of it to find the universe clean of life, but that much was expected. I found a small system, one away from the galaxy and had my people begin a new there while I went to find the information I so dearly needed. I stood before the small terminal that held his location. I stood before only a command away from making it tell me where he was but a thought occurred to me. If I had been through what my friend had been through... losing his closet friend. His better half. Suffering more than I had. fought the Flood alone. Been in the Didacts grip so close to death. I though would I truly want to wake?... I knew he was alive. I knew he was safe. A gut feeling you humans would call it."

The Arbiter glanced at each person hoping they understood before continuing.

"So I left him alone. The Flood had been defeated and there was no reason for him to suffer anymore. So I let my friend rest rather than pursue him. I believed it was the right thing to do." The Arbiter finished his little story calmly and just stared at the hologram of Earth rather than meet anyones eyes.

"You said humans?" Hackett asked all the more curious. Shepard hadn't told him about any ancient humanity.

"Yes, what he refers to is the branch of humanity once referred to as the reclaimers." Reluctant promise chipped in.

"If they were human, and so are we, then why would we need this last reclaimer?" Hackett asked leaning on the holo table and watching the two elites and floating circle closely.

Shepard listened in a little closer. She herself had been wondering this but with everything happening hadn't had an appropriate chance to ask.

"You are human, but not the same. You are capable of reproducing with the xenomorphic species you know while the humans of my time were not. You are different in only the smallest details at a genetic level from what I have come to conclude. Am I right?" Reluctant Promise stated looking towards the Arbiter.

"Yes, you see to prevent anymore catastrophes such as the Flood, the humans of old reengineered the bacteria and human embryos that would grow to be you. They made you more capable of survival by adding the reproductive process's and they made you incapable of activating Forerunner relics where the Flood had been released from the second time. As well you cannot activate any of their machines. Your very genetic material is to different. They didn't want their weapons falling into the hands of anyone. They deemed it too destructive." The Arbiter explained.

"Genetic Engineering on that scale?" Shepard asked with slightly widened eyes.

"Yes, which is why we need the last reclaimer again. Only he can use the weapons they left behind." The monitor stated.

"And how exactly would we find those weapons? He wasn't awake during those time and I'm pretty sure they wouldn't trust the secrets of such powerful weapons to anyone not their own. No disrespect meant Arbiter." Hackett stated as politely as possible.

"None taken." The Arbiter replied dismissive of the statement.

"We can hurdle that log when it comes." Shepard stated finally joining in and causing the others to all turn to her.

"Hackett the things is, like you said we are hopelessly outgunned. If this reclaimer can get us weapons to beat the Flood and Reapers what choice do we have?" She stated.

Hackett sighed and looked back at Earth.

"The Commander is right. Even with my ships as aid, we are it a few. We cannot hold back this storm on our own. Even if I were to bring

all of our army it wouldn't be enough. The parasite are limitless." Thran' stated joining in on the conversation.

The group was quiet finally. Each was in though while Shepard watched Hackett. She trusted him and knew he would make the right decision.

"So the reclaimer?" Hackett asked looking up at her.

She simply nodded in return.

"Then I'll make sure to do what I can to hold the fort here. If you need I'll even get you some ships to aid you. Arbiter where is the reclaimer?" Hackett asked.

However before the Arbiter could even move, the door leading from the tech labs and Galaxy room opened up, letting in a rushed Liara.

"Shepard. The Council has just contacted us and they want to talk to you and Hackett." She exclaimed before anyone could ask.

"EDI let them through. Put the hologram on War Room so everyone can see." Shepard stated.

She knew EDI acknowledged her when the hologram of Earth disappeared and was replaced by the image of several people, Lithyia and Captain Quartin, the captain from the remaining Quarian fleet, among them. A Turian and Slarian she didn't know stood with them and finally Jeffery the human councilor appeared next to them.

"Sorry I'm late." Jeffery stated.

"No apologies human councilor. We have important matters to discuss." The Turian stated holding up a hand.

"Council." Shepard stated with a nod.

"Commander." Most of them greeted back.

"Council I have to ask why did you call." Shepard asked. The Turian councilor took the lead.

"Commander I am the new councilor for the Turian. My name is Ardvik and this is Silenna the new Salarian councilor. I'm sure you know the other here." He stated motioning to the other councilors and captain Quaritn.

She nodded in response.

"Well Captain Quartin has been voted as an emergency temporary councilor for the Quarrians, but anyway. Commander we have recieved word that you have a... new development." He asked with what she figured was a raised eyebrow.

"Yes, but how do you know..." Shepard asked, a warning alarm going off in her head.

"Sorry Shepard I guess I let it slip." Lithyia stated softly. Shepard felt bad for her friend but for some reason the warning was still i

her head. Something was off and she knew it. She just couldn't figure out what.

"Its fine Lithyia." The Spectre stated not to worried it was her friend that let it slip. She hadn't exactly told her to keep it quiet.

"Commander we want to meet him. The alien. We need to discuss what his intentions are and what our next course of action is. The parasite and the Reapers are slamming our borders and we are slowly losing territory to them. They're moving to fast for us to properly come up with any way to combat them." Ardvik stated drawing her attention back to him. He wasn't rude just persistent. However, before Shepard could say anything, The Arbiter moved in front of her and into their view.

"I am the Arbiter and I will meet with you. Know this, we must hurry for we have a way to save your people but time is short." He stated.

"Well..." Silenna stated obviously shocked by his appearance.

"Alright alright." Ardvik stated raising his hands in a claiming manner.

"We will meet. Lithyia, Captain Quartin and Jeffey are already on Earth and I myself will be there shortly. Silenna?" He asked.

"I will be on my way shortly." The Salarian stated.

"Good. Shepard I presume Admiral Hackett is somewhere on Earth? I need you to ask for clearance form the council to have an emergency session on Earth. Its not the citadel and I would be respectful to ask this of him." Ardvik asked.

Shepard moved back into his view. The war rooms holo table had a limited field of vision and the councilors couldn't see Hackett of the others. Which was fortunate in the case of Reluctant Promise. The Spectre didn't need another headache.

She motioned for Hackett to join her, and the Arbiter took his leave being replaced by the Admiral.

"Well seeing as how you asked nicely... I'll have a place set up and security in place. No need to repeat what happened on the Citadel." Hackett stated.

"Agreed. Well till then. Commander. Admiral. Arbiter." Ardvik said with curt nods to each even though he couldn't see the elite. The hologram cut off and the group was once again alone.

"So Commander when do we get to meet with this council?" Reluctant Promise asked.

"Not you. You stay here."

"But why? I'm sure they would be more than intrigued to meet me. I could explain so many..." Shepard cut him off with a raised hand.

"No." And for some reason it drew a small laugh out of the group. It was nice. A glint of happiness with so much death and despair. If only she knew the tragedies and trials that awaited her. Her journey was far from over.

* * *

><p>AN Hey guys! Well its a little longer so hope its ok! For the council scene I'm not sure if its possible to have communications through the war rooms table but for my sakes it is. If its a problem let me know and I can address it next Chapter. Hopefully I can get another Chapter out sometimes this weekend. We shall see. Anyway thanks for Reading and God Bless You All! Please Review!**

Also still looking for a BETA reader so please please PM me if interested. And if theres a problem with the Arbiters story and I will either explain it next time or ill address you in the next update. Thank again! God Bless you guys!

13. Part I Chapter 12 (un beata'd)

**Part I **

The Voice and Face of all Evil

Chapter 12: Meeting of two times.

* * *

><p>Shepard stepped off of the shuttle and onto the hard concrete of the landing pad. They had just landed outside of the Galactic Trading Center, a massive and glorious skyscraper within the sea of buildings, in the heart of the rebuilt New York city.<p>

It was the new political center for Earths politics and it was no surprise to Katherine that this had been the chosen meeting place between the Council and themselves.

As for the skyscraper itself, it was tall and sleek, curving slightly off to the left to give it a more elegant look with it white metal plating. The windows were a tinted blue and greenery surrounding the building trying to give it an appealing look, which it succeeded in doing. However, all the beauty was lost on Shepard as she approached the building.

She stared up the building and wondered briefly how long it had taken to construct it. She shook herself out of her thoughts as they made it to the front doors of the building, having walked the short pathway that led from the landing pad and streets to the building itself. They walked under a large stone archway serving as a symbolic entryway for the sliding glass doors behind it that actually led into the building.

The Arbiter calmly walked in next to her as the glass doors smoothly slid open allowing the group to enter, Shepard and the Arbiter in front, Thran' and Hackett in the middle then Garrus and Liara taking up the rear.

Immediately all the people working in the foyer stopped what they were doing and looked up at the group. Almost all recognized Shepard and Hackett but their gazes drifted to the two sangheli that were accompanying the famous Spectre and Admiral.

Before anyone could react a lower ranking military officer hastily made his way to the group and saluted before the Admiral waved him off.

"Admiral Hackett. Commander Shepard." He stated firmly his blue eyes gleaming. Before Shepard could say anything she noticed something. His turned the slightest hint of teal and almost green before completely becoming blue.

The Spectre blinked a few times and glanced around. She noticed one of the lights flickering and a fountain in the center of the foyer with green and blue lights. She relaxed and shrugged off the incident.

"At ease soldier. Where is the meeting taking place?" The Admiral asked.

"In the World meeting room sir. I'm to escort you there." He replied proudly. Shepard smiled slightly. The boy had spirit for sure. Who ever got proud of being an escort within a building within the most protected place in the Universe?

"Then lead the way son." Hackett replied. The soldier nodded with a smile and politely asked the group to follow him.

As the group progressed through the building, the hall and lights being bright and warm colors along with the occasional painting on the wall or shrub in the corner, the amount of people they encountered seemed only to increase as did the stares. Shepard at first wanted to ask the soldier if there was a more discreet way of getting the two elites to the meeting but after seeing the Arbiter nod politely at a scared woman and Thran' pick up something that someone had dropped when the person had seen the two, she shrugged it off. They were capable of handling themselves and seemed even more polite than half of the people within the building. Then of course it could've just been them playing diplomats.

They moved through several hallways and finally to a large elevator, which was fortunately large enough for the two elites. The group then made their way down two levels, into the underground section of the building. The reason the room was underground was simple. Being underground was plainly a safer place for high ranking officials and diplomats, who would meet in large groups, where as being above ground left them more open to attack or assassination.

After at least three security checks, which only Shepard and Garrus were cleared to carry weapons, after five more minutes of walking down pristine halls with paintings of Earth's known history, before the group finally made it to the meeting area.

They entered through large polished oak wood doors and Shepard actually never having been in here, took a moment to look around the room. It was oval in shape with hundreds of seats, similar to those of an auditorium, that took up three fourths of the whole room. The seats had red cushions and had movable desks in front of them with

small movable lamps as well. The other fourth of the room was a stage area with a podium up front and towards the middle was a large bench, similar to what judges sat behind, but it was elongated to sit at least twelve people.

The way the room was used was that people involved in any matter would gather in the room, those listening to someones proposition or idea sitting in the audience seats while those presenting the idea would sit in the bench on the stage with a mediator standing at the podium to keep things civil and organized.

The group made their way down a flight of steps and onto the stage area where the solidier quickly moved the podium out of the way.

The Council of the Citadel was sitting at the bench believing it to be a seat of power as everyone looked to them.

The solidier was quickly dismissed and left with much haste, leaving only Shepard's group and the Council in the massive room.

The two groups seemed to study one another with only Admiral Hackett being neutral.

Garrus, Liara, and Shepard already distrusted the Council due to previous encounters, though as people, Lithyia and Captain Quaritn were the only two they really trusted.

The Arbiter even without looking at the others felt odd. He hadn't spoken to Shepard about this council much but something about them unnerved him. As if a darkness surrounded them. It was familiar but he couldn't place it. He couldn't place where he had felt it before.

Thran' wasn't sure how to feel. He decided he would let the words and actions of the politicians decide for him.

Shepard glared at the council save lithyia and the Captain. The last she had been in a meeting like this the Council had tried to condemn her of false charges.

"Commander. Admiral." Arvik, the turian councilor stated with a curt nod. The two alliance officers replied in kind.

Arvik had obvious scars on his face and held an air of both confidence and pride. However it was too much pride. He was dark skinned and had worn clan markings on his face. He held his head high and he spoke with authority. He was a born leader and Shepard could tell he would be a good spear head for the council.

"Council Arvik this is the Arbiter and Thran' Fredum. Both are leaders of an xenomorphic alliance known as the Covenant." Katherine stated nodding towards the two elites. The two stepped forward, the Arbiter just slightly further ahead of Thran' and he spoke.

"Councilors. I am the Arbiter. Now you must have questions so please feel free to ask. However, time is short and we must hurry. The parasite is spreading quickly and must be stopped." The Arbiter stated with even more authority than Arvik. Arvik raised an eyebrow at this.

"Well I for one have a question..." Silenna the salarian councilor stated. The Arbiter nodded in acknowledgment.

"Arbiter you say you are a part of a alliance called the Covenant? Now I must ask who exactly are they? And what exactly are your intentions especially since you brought your own ships right into our galaxy without even so much as an warning to us." Sileena stated.

Thran' stepped forward as if to answer but the Arbiter raised his hand to hold him back.

"I understand your concern." The Arbiter started. "But as for our ships, I have learned, that sometimes action must be taken before words are spoken. If we had no acted, the Commander and the councilor here, and some very sensitive information would've been lost, if not for Thran's actions. Now to address the issue of who we are." The Arbiter placed his hands behind his back and began to pace back and forth in front of the council.

"We were formed a long time ago. The basis of which we united was on a prophecy called the great journey where we would activate a relic of the Gods and join them in their transcendence. However, I learned that out prophets, whom we entrusted our lives too, whom we served willing, had lied to us. The Journey was a lie and by activating the relics we would destroy the galaxy. My race split from them and we formed a new Covenant. Our my time some of the old races, after the old Covenant fell apart, joined with as and now we reside in a small system outside of the Galaxy. Its a safe place, but no longer is it safe now that the parasite have once again risen." The Arbiter finished his statement and Shepard watched the Council to see their reactions. She couldn't read Arvik's but Sileena looked suspicious while the others seemed baffled or confused even more than before.

"I see. Now tell me how do you plan on helping us?" Sileena asked.

Shepard and the Arbiter exchanged a glance before the elite continued.

"Well... We..." The Arbiter stopped. They weren't even five minutes into the meeting and Shepard knew something was wrong.

The Arbiter stared up at the council. He had just realized where he had felt the darkness before. He had felt it such a long time ago. When he first met the demon and was in the clutches of the most evil being he had ever known.

The Arbiter roared and steppe back drawing his two energy swords.

Several councilors gasped and shrieked while Shepard and Garrus both drew their side arms. Liara glowed a violent blue as her biotics flared up in power and the Admiral stepped back. Thran' stared at the Arbiter in complete and utter shock.

"Arbiter stand down!" Shepard yelled.

"What the hell are you doing?" Arvik growled. The Arbiter roared again and Shepard felt her finger hover over the trigger on her pistol. Maybe she should've brought reluctant Promise instead...

"They are influenced! He is controlling them! At least one!" The Arbiter roared pointing his sword at the council.

"Who?!" Shepard asked with a yell while Garrus ordered for him to drop his swords.

"The parasite! but... wait..." The Arbiter lowered his swords. His eyes widened even further and he took another step back as he raised his swords once more.

He had stopped talking to think. He knew the parasite was strong, but to directly control such people was a lot. The Arbiter knew he could only do it a close proximity like how he hurt the demons computer friend and that's when he realized something. Something very terrifying.

"He is here!" The Arbiter roared but before anyone could act a voice echoed through the chamber.

"You were once one of flesh and faith! But now you are of mind and heart! Strong and resourceful! But you have failed once again... For this planet is MMMIIIIINNNEEEEE!" A cold a terrible voice roared through the air.

Shepard screamed and fell to the floor clutching her head as images filled her head, images of the war between the Forerunner and Flood.

Tentacles suddenly ripped out from the ground, shattering the wood and sending debris of wood and metal every where while green mist poured out from the hole in the ground and it seemed the very light in the room itself dimmed. In that moment the Arbiter finally confirmed his suspicions.

The Gravemind was on Earth. He always had been.

* * *

><p>AN Hey guys! so this is kind of a fast paced chapter but its supposed to be like this for plot reasons. This segment of being on Earth is going to be a few chapters long but dont worry! soon we shall get to see the Master Chief and then yay! SO yeah. Review and thanks for reading! God bless! **

Still looking for a Beta Reader!

14. Part I Chapter 13 (un beata'd)

Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil

Chapter 13: The battle of minds.

* * *

><p>The thick and sickly looking tentacles shot towards the Council and the Arbiter.<p>

Lithyia activated her biotics and created a barrier around herself and Captian Quartin, successfully repelling the tentacle headed for them. Jeffery, the human councilor, dodged the one headed towards him juts in the nick of time. Arvik managed to dive behind the bench to safety but Sileena wasn't as lucky.

"You failed me... Now you are mine." The voice growled as the tentacles circled the councilor. The tentacles wrapped around sileena, the salarian screaming bloody murder. They closed and the salarian broke like a twig and her body was pulled into the hole the tentacles had come from.

Garrus opened fire, and the Arbiter charged the tentacles headed for him. The pistols bullets hard;y did anything to any tentacles the Turian managed to hit.

The elite ducked underneath one of the tentacles and raised one of his energy swords before bringing it down hard on the very same tentacle.

To his surprise the sword burned and sizzled the top layer of flesh but didn't even sink half an inch through the tentacle.

Before the Arbiter could react, the tentacle swung around him and easily wrapped around the large alien. He struggled to break free while Garrus tackled Liara to save her from an attacking tentacle.

"Shepard!"

Shepard's groaned loudly but her mind was elsewhere. The images changed from the war to something else.

Swirls and the map of a galaxy. It moved fast and explosions began. She saw a man in orange blasting away a nameless evil, yet it was so familiar. She saw another person, different from the first, a large beast in purple armor fighting against something large in space. She saw a light. A then a voice.

"You must fight it.

Don't give in.

Find the Reclaimer and the universe will be saved.

Only you have the chance.

If you don't... Then everything is lost." A voice stated in her head.

The voice was of a woman. It was sweet and calming but suddenly the darkness returned and once more Shepard's mind filled with chaos. Battles, scream of men, women and children, the flash of a great weapon being activated, the voices of evil from the first dream she had back on the Normandy, and finally it she saw five people. Five

silhouettes of heroes standing in the light, then the images stopped.

Shepard gasped as she finally opened her eyes and looked at the chaos around her. She jumped to her feet and drew her side arm. She was Commander Shepard, and she wouldn't fail.

Slowly but surely she climbed to her feet. Her body was heavy and it felt like she had just ran three marathons. It wasn't the worse shape she had been in but neither was it the best.

She raised her pistol and activated her cryo ammo. Noticing how no one had seen her get up, she aimed and fired several times at the tentacles around the Arbiter.

The bullets hit their mark and ice began to spread over the tentacle.

She began to grin but it faded once she saw the ice shatter and one of the tentacles shot towards her at full speed.

Katherine had only a second to react and decided on an evasive plan of action.

She dove to the ground on her right, the tentacle shooting past her, and immediately shot a warp at it. It was enough to grab the tentacle and hold it in place for a few moments allowing her to get up before it broke free and raced towards her once more.

She drew her omni blade and side stepped the tentacle, bringing her blade down on it in a similar way that the Arbiter had. The blade hardly even scratched it and the tentacle immediately wrapped around her.

Shepard grunted and struggled to get free but soon realized it was useless as the tentacle lifted her off of the ground. She looked around and saw how outmatched they were. Thran' was unconscious. The Arbiter was captured like her as well as was Hackett. Garrus and Liara was backed up against a wall, tentacles threatening to tear them apart. Lithya and Captain Quartin back up against another wall, a biotic barrier between them and the tentacles desperately trying to reach them. Sileena was missing, having been taken into the hole, though the commander didn't know that. Arvik and Jeffery were both in the clutches of several other tentacles.

It was a horrible situation.

Then out of the darkness of the hole in the floor came something. It was large and sickly. Like a head of a plant but its skins was dead and looked like a thousand flood forms put together. It was massive and raised itself to the roof before taking a breath and releasing green mist everywhere.

Shepard and the other stared at it with bewildered eyes, while the Arbiter looked at it with hate filled recognition.

Finally the massive head lowered down to Shepard level and moved its mandibles displaying its gruesome looking inside.

"Well, well..." The Gravemind finally stated green mist reaching

Spectre's nose causing her to gag from the rancid smell.

"Ahh and you... Of flesh and faith..." He stated raising the Arbiter up next to Shepard and seemingly began to study them both.

"You failed proud warrior. Both of you. Alas you could not beat me." He stated in his booming deep voice.

"Ill kill you I swear it." Shepard growled through gritted teeth getting over the nausea caused by the mist.

"You? HA!" The monstrosity roared and opened its mandibles getting frighteningly close to Shepard.

"You are young human." The Gravemind continued running one of its appendages across Shepards face. "Young and foolish. You cannot defeat me. None can but one. And you have failed to get him. What chance do you have now Commander? I have controlled your Council! Your friends! You are in my hands, at my MERCY! HOW COULD YOU DO ANYTHING?" The Gravemind roared in triumph.

He had done it.

"You know you're not the first one to doubt me." Shepard stated staring up at the beast.

"The Council doubted me, hell the Galaxy thought I was crazy, but I still beat the Reapers."

"You continue to say you beat them. Yet they are alive and well. They are a small threat and yet you praise yourself over a temporary victory? Foolish. You will die against the most powerful being in the universe!" The Gravemind retorted triumphantly.

"You're the fool if you think you're going win." Shepard spat back.

"How can I not win when I have you working for me?" The Gravemind asked.

Before Shepard could ask what he meant, the beast leaned forward and suddenly she was plunged into mental darkness.

Her mind pounded as she felt a foreign presence in it. It was painful to have another conscious within your own mind.

It was strange and terrifying. Her mind was a swirl of colors while the invader was just black and grey, swirling dark mist that tried infecting her own.

It was a battle of minds. The mind of an evil entity with the intelligence and minds of millions of its victims, under its power, trying to take control of the mind and body of the hero that saved a Galaxy. The hero was struggling, her colorful mind fighting the hardest battle of her life as it tried to resist the powers of darkness.

No matter how hard she tried though, she would fail. One mind no matter how strong could not resist the strength of the Gravemind. Against the millions of minds it had at its disposal, the strength if

its mental assaults was unparalleled.

Slowly but surely the colors of the Commanders mind began to wither and die away. The colors paled and flickered out of life as the darkness began to crush her resistance till finally there none of her left, none but a small strand of light in the corner of her mind. The Gravemind laughed cruelly at this. He loved destroyed his victims minds.

The light began to flicker and Shepard felt her mind beginning to slow lose itself. She knew this was it. It was over. She was going to lose and the galaxy would die, because she had failed.

And when all hope seemed lost, when the light was about to flicker out of existence, another light appeared and halted the Graveminds assault.

The bright white light appeared within the Graveminds own mind and suddenly his laughter turned to roars of agony.

The Darkness retreated from her and Shepard conscious retook control over her own mind beating back the darkness and completely pushing the Gravemind out.

Find him... There isn't much time left...

Shepards eyes shot open and she gasped for breath. She quickly took in her surroundings and saw Garrus leaning over her.

A constant ringing was in her ears, and she could see that Garrus was yelling at her but she couldn't hear him. The turian grabbed her arm and hoisted her up allowing her to see what had conveyed.

The Gravemind was gone, the last of his tentacles slithering back into the ground. Everyone who had been in his grasp was free and climbing back to their feet.

"Shepard?!" Garrus's voice finally echoed in her ears. She shook her head and stared at him.

"What happened?" Katherine asked truly confused on what had just occurred.

"Well seeing you were in trouble i came to help!" A familiar voice said floating down from the stairs with a marine task force.

"You've got to be kidding me..." Shepard stated astonished. The Arbiter, Thran', Hackett, Liara and the remaining councilors moved over to the group as the marines secured the room, the squad leader walking over to the Commander and Hackett.

"I am not. You were in dire need of help, which I must say was difficult as I had to exert fifty percent of my power into single blast to free you from that monsters clutches, and Joker was not hard to convince to let me out." Reluctant Promise stated happily.

"I can't believe I'd ever say this... But I'm glad your here." Shepard sighed with a smile.

"Yes but unfortunately our arrival is not good news." The marine

squad leader stated.

"What do you mean?" Garrus asked.

"Moments before he got down here to tell us you were in trouble there were portals of unknown origins right outside Earth's atmosphere..." The Marine stated.

"What do..." Before Hackett could finish his question the lights shut off and were replaced by flashing red ones as an alarm began to wail.

"What the hell..." Hackett muttered.

"This is not a drill! The building is being evacuated! I repeat the building is being evacuated and all civilians are to head to the nearest evac port for planetary evac! The Reapers have just appeared in Orbit and have begun an assault! I repeat this is not a drill!" A voice stated hurriedly over the intercoms.

"Crap..." Shepard said drawing her pistol.

* * *

><p>Shepard dove behind a nearby nearby car as gunfire rained down on her.<p>

"How the hell do we always end up in these situations?!" She yelled, peaking out of her cover and shooting three times with her pistol before being forced back into cover.

The group had made it to the surface safely but now they were in a firefight against Reaper forces.

The Marine squad, the galactic trade centers security force, Reluctant Promise, Shepard and her team along with The Arbiter were fighting in the streets, trying to clear it for an evac shuttle against hordes of husks and several marauders while Thran' Stayed back with Hackett and the Councilors, and Cortez in the buildings foyer.

Their original shuttle had apparently been blown to hell which was why Cortez was protecting the Councilors.

By sheer dumb luck he had been out of the shuttle to take a leak and that's when the Reapers had hit.

"At least there are no parasites." Reluctant Promise stated as a highly concentrated beam of energy fired out from his central eye and reduced a Marauder to ash.

As if on cue shrieks filled the air and a green cloud of mist began to grow out from the very top of the galactic trade center.

"This World is mine!" The Graveminds deep voice boomed out over the skies.

"It appears I may have spoken too soon..." Reluctant Promise stated.

Shepard only grunted in annoyance as she drove her blade through a husks skull. Her days were just getting harder and harder.

* * *

><p>AN Hey guys! So I know these chapter are short but this Earth battle is gonna take at least five chapters so about 8000-10000 words then after that we get to rescuing Chief! Whoo! Its gonna be one heck of a ride. Trust me this story is far from over. We're still on part I and there's going to be 5 parts. So yay! Anyway thanks for reading! You guys are the best! God Bless you all! Also if you have any major concerns or questions feel free to PM me. Still looking for a Beta Reader!

15. Part I Chapter 14 (un beata'd)

****Disclaimer: I own nothing****

****A/N Shoutout to everyone who reviewed on the last Chapter****

****Dracconnis ****

****WOLF****

****DevineWhisper16****

****And to whoever said their my biggest fanâ€¦ Your'e awesome! :D and there will be a sequel to this. But you still have four more parts of this story and part one isn't even like halfway done yet.****

****Also to answer whoever asked a question, there will be romances but not till later. Till a lot later. After we get to Chief and finish the small story arch with him we will have a few chapters of just peace where more character building and things like Romance and friendships will occur. ****

****Also I changed the font of the story cause yeahâ€¦****

* * *

><p>Part I

****The Voice and Face of all Evil****

****Chapter 14: The battle for Earth Part 1.****

* * *

><p>Private First Class Anthony Rogers of the Systems Alliance groaned as he ducked down behind another barricade. He heard the marching footsteps of several husks and marauders as once again he was bypassed by the patrols. Finally the dozens of loud footsteps became softer as the dozens of Reaper soldiers moved on.<p>

He gulped and pressed his assault rifle closer to him. At this moment he really wished he was a biotic. He was afraid and alone. His squad had been deployed to get the mayor of the city out of the area when the Reapers had started invading. They had succeeding in getting the

mayor out of his office and even the building when they were ambushed. They weren't just ambushed by the Reapers however. Something a lot worse had assaulted them along with the Reaper troops.

The parasite.

His squad had not been prepared to fight them and he had watched most of them, along with the mayor, get massacred by the combined might of their enemies.

He had ran. He was afraid. When the last of his team had fallen, him having been knocked away a dozen feet by a parasite with tentacles, he had scrambled to his feet and ran as fast as he could.

They had chased him. Fortunately he had ran straight into a battle zone with dozens of marines versus the rampaging parasites. It had been a good distraction and he had almost stayed with them to help but no more than a few minutes had passed when a Reaper destroyer had landed and force them to retreat.

During the retreat most of them were picked off and all hell had broken lose as they were ambushed during their retreat.

Now he was alone running through New York and his com was broken from him falling over more than a few times.

He checked once more over the barricade and noticed the street was clear. He quickly took off in a sprint, diving into an alley as the thundering of a Reaper destroyer could be heard heading towards him.

He shuddered as the footsteps grew louder and debris around the alley slightly began to shake as the monster let out its booming horn to intimidate people.

After a few moments the shuddering began to subside as the Reaper moved on allowing the marine to relax slightly as it searched for other victims.

He stuck his head out into the street and scanned the area. Before he could decided whether it was safe or not, a body slammed into him sending him reeling into the ground.

The husk roared in his face and his rifle was knocked out of his hands. He yelled back in response and grabbed the husks throat trying to push the monster off of him.

Out of the corners of his eyes he saw several marauders and husks coming out of the buildings and beginning to converge on him. They had laid a trap for any stragglers.

The marine cursed under his breath and was prepared to say his farewell to his life when machine gun fire filled the air.

The husk suddenly looked back at its comrades and the momentary distraction gave the marine the advantage he needed. He place his feet under the husk and threw it off of himself. He didn't waste any time and grabbed his rifle, spinning around to fill the husk with lead.

The husk had already regained its focus but it was too late. Bullets slammed into it and the husk shrieked as it fell to the ground defeated.

Anthony climbed to his feet, his heart beating erratically with fear and looked into the street. The few marauders and husks that had been there were all dead, and a group of soldiers were walking towards him. A few humans, several of the marines, an asari and a turian. Along with two aliens he didn't recognize and a floating hunk of metal.

"Guess we should've left a few more husks for you to beat." The turian stated in joking manner.

"That would've been unwise." Reluctant Promise replied.

"It was a joke lightbulb." the tyrian shot back.

"What's your name soldier?" One of the humans, a woman, asked. She had red hair and an air of confidence about her.

"Commander Shepard! Admiral Hackett!" He said recognizing the woman and one of the other humans. He snapped to a salute and answered them.

"Anthony Rogers! Private First class sir!" He responded with well built discipline.

"Relax marine." Katherine said with a soft smile.

"Sir." He stated relaxing from the salute.

"What happened to your squad soldier?" Hackett asked. The Arbiter and Thran' had turned away and were watching their surroundings in case someone tried to ambush them.

The marine squad that had been with them since the Galactic Trade center had already created a small perimeter around the group.

"Dead sir. All of them—| Im—| The only one left—|" The marine stated his shoulders sagging.

"Damn." Cortez mumbled softly.

"Shepard I have movement on my tracker." The Arbiter called back aiming towards a building across the street from them.

"Let's get going then." Shepard replied leveling her rifle at the same building. The group simultaneously broke off into a jog down the street, bypassing the bodies, the debris, the abandoned cars, and everything else.

Together the group turned down another street and continued on their way, most of the team watching the building while Shepard and Garrus had point.

"Commander where are we going?" Anthony asked confused on their current path. If from what he could tell was true they were headed towards the explosions and gunshots dining through the air.

As if to confirm his theory several unships flew over the street they were at and towards the explosions at break neck speed.

"We're heading towards an evac zone near the eastern seaport. They're still holding out and pulling out as many people as possible. Its one of the only ones left." Shepard responded as she checked her omni tool to make sure they were on the correct path.

"Isn't there one at the Galactic Trade Center? Its a lot closer than wherever we're going." The marine questioned. He had been heading to that evac zone as it was.

"Galactic trade centers gone son. Comms are blocked too. Reapers and the parasite blew the trade center to hell along with the evac sight and somehow are blocking communications. Anyway we barely made it out as it is." Hackett stated motioning to his arm where a very bloody bandage was at.

"Medigel sir?" The marine offered.

"No need. Hit with something that cancels out the effects of the medigel. Fortunately its not to serious." Hackett replied.

Before the marine could say anything else several shots rang out and Liara cried out in pain.

"Cover!" Shepard yelled opening fire on one of the buildings.

The others dove to the nearest cover which for Anthony was the smoldering remains of a car. Shepard and The Arbiter together grabbed the downed Liara and pulled her behind cover with themselves.

Garrus peaked out over the slab of twisted concrete that had fallen off from a building. He checked out the building on their right where the bullets had come from.

Whoever it was, was hiding now. Waiting for them to show themselves. Shepard returning fire had forced them into cover. Garrus figured it was a lone gunman as he searched for the culprit, otherwise they would be drowning in enemy gunfire by now.

"Shit." Shepard stated looking at Liara's wound. It was a clean hole through the Asari's thigh. A hole the size of her fist. The round had completely bypassed her shields and armor as if they hadn't even been there. The blood was flowing out and Shepard new Liara needed medical attention as soon as possible.

Katherine pulled put a medigel kit and quickly applied some to her friends wound, though it hardly did anything.

"Damnit. Medigels not working again." Shepard stated looking up at the Arbiter. His eyes and forehead were scrunched as if in thought.

"This is strangeâ€¦| Ive never seen anything like it." He stated with a defeated voice.

"Theres is only one way to stop the bleeding." The elite stated drawing his energy sword, the blade blazing to life.

"What do you mean?" Shepard asked.

"My blade is superheated. The heat can seal the wound but to stop the bleeding completely I'll have to sever her leg." The elite stated grabbing the Asari's leg and positioning it just right.

"Wait maybe!" Katherine started but was too late. The Arbiter brought his blade down and severed the Asari's leg.

The elite left his blade over the wound and the sizzle caused a light smoke to rise up from the stump of what had been a leg.

Shepard let out a distressed sigh and looked back towards the building where the shoot had come from. Whomever had opened fire on them was gone now.

A shriek filled the air.

"Contact!" Hackett yelled firing with his pistol down the way the group had come. Several Flood combat forms had dropped down from the buildings and were charging straight for the group firing blindly.

Garrus, and Thran' opened fire alongside the Admiral. The marine group around them had already begun firing at the parasite horde but they were out numbered.

Shepard felt her heart drop as she saw just how many parasite troops were charging at them. Dozens were jumping out of the buildings, and dozens upon dozens more were leaping over the debris and cars on the street heading for the group.

It was a flood of them. Hundreds charging at the small group.

Shepard jumped to her feet and threw out her hands. Several biotic warps and singularities flew out towards the monsters, smashing into the ranks and killing at least five each. However, despite Shepard's attacks and the firing of her team the Flood continued on.

"Fall back! Fall back now!" Shepard yelled firing another warp at the nearest parasite. She spun around and started to pick up Liara. Her people didn't hesitate and after each firing a few more shots everyone broke ranks and ran.

They weren't stupid. They were too greatly outnumbered and the parasite was getting closer.

As Katherine hoisted Liara up, two strong arms grabbed Liara's body instead and pulled her away as if she was a paper weight.

The Arbiter slung Liara over his shoulder and grabbed Shepard's arm dragging her along.

"Shepard look!" Garrus yelled pointing to something as the group turned a corner and spilled onto a street, the Flood only a hundred feet behind them. She looked and saw a subway entrance. Sure they were old, but it was still an effective way to get around the city, so they had never been demolished.

"Everyone head for the Subway!" She scrambled at the top of her lungs. In front of them a Reaper destroyer landed. It boomed its horn and marched towards them.

"Shit!" Shepard muttered under her breath.

A scream filled the air as one of the marines fell, a long spike straight through his chest. He collapsed and a flood form jumped down from one of the buildings, spikes sticking out from its front.

"What the hell!" Another marine yelled.

Shepard raised her gun ready to fire as she ran towards the subway.

However, Thran' beat her to it and slammed himself into the flood form before it could move. He drew his sword and sliced the thing in half before returning on his run towards the subway entrance.

Another marine screamed and Shepard looked back to see why. A Flood combat form had landed on his back and was beating the man to a pulp, the rest of the horde was only about fifty feet behind them.

Another yell and a third marine was taken alive by an infection form, his chest being ripped open and his body taken in a matter of seconds.

"Arbiter do you have any grenades?!" Shepard yelled as she approached the entrance, firing up at several flood forms jumping down at them from the buildings around. There was too many. If they didn't get down the subway in a few seconds they would be overwhelmed.

"Several. You wish to collapse the entrance?" He replied looking back and firing a few shots at the horde following them.

"Yes." Shepard hissed as a sharp spike flew past her head.

The Commander reached the subway at the same time as the Arbiter, both taking positions on the side of the stairwell and providing cover fire for the team. The stairwell down was three flights of stairs and the roof started covering about halfway through the first flight. It would be enough debris to seal the subway entrance from their pursuers and could buy them precious time to keep moving if they blew the roof behind them.

Hackett, Garrus and Thran' charged down the stairs, immediately checking to see if the subway was clear.

Reluctant Promise stopped next to Shepard, while Anthony and three surviving marines charged down the steps with the remaining councilors. Lithya briefly turning around to give Shepard a confused glance before being pushed by the others underground.

"Commander I recommend immediate retreat the Flood are!"

"Shut up Promise and get under ground!" She yelled firing her rifle at a flood form that had gotten a little too close for comfort.

The Reaper destroyer approaching them let its horn bellow one more time as its red beam began to charge up.

"As you wish." The monitor said fleeing under ground with the others.

"Lets go!" Shepard yelled as plasma blasts and bullets slammed into the twos shield and the ground around them. The Flood were only about fifty feet from them and dozens more were starting to fall from the buildings.

The two charged down the stairs and made it just to the second flight when a Flood form, out of sheer luck, landed right in front of Shepard slamming her to the ground with a hit of its tentacles.

"Get them out of here! Seal the subway!" She yelled as she raised her weapon at the Flood form, only to get it smacked out of her hand. The Arbiter stared at her and could hear the Flood horde were only feet from reaching the stairwell.

Th Arbiter looked up and after a split second decision decided. He drew a newly developed plasma grenade, one that could be primed and charged, then lunged at the flood form while throwing the grenade to the ceiling where he had just been, halfway down the second flight of stairs.

The grenade stuck and glowed blue having been primed to detonate in only seven seconds. The new grenade was far stronger than the old ones and would obliterate the entrance and burry it under tons of debirs.

He blasted the flood form with his carbine several times, melting it to a pulp and pulled Shepard up as the horde poured over into the subway entrance.

"I will not leave a friend to die. Not one who has fought honorably by my side." He said drawing his energy swords.

The Reapers beam fired.

And as the Flood closed on the two warriors, Shepard smiled and drew her omni blade. Elite and human fighting side by side one more time against an enemy as old as time itself.

Then the grenade blew and a scream shook the air.

* * *

><p>"Son of bitch." a woman mumbled to herself as she watched a hologram projected battle for Earth. They had been so close and yet their enemies seemed to always be one step ahead.<p>

She was graceful as was the room she was in. Filled with blue lines of light and sleek metal walls, the spoke of power and wisdom.

"Mam?" Another voice spoke up.

"Send another to them. they need the help. Break the siege on the

planet." She whispered.

"Mam if we reveal ourselvesâ€|"

"I know! Just save them. Save the Commander. Without herâ€| Then we all lose."

"As you wishâ€|"

"Thank youâ€|" The woman said with a sigh. She leaned over the table. Things were moving to fast. It wouldn't be long now till the others came, they needed the Reclaimer. They needed him now.

* * *

><p>In a place across the galaxy, in the heart of weapon of mass destruction, a blue light suddenly came to life in the darkest depths of the weapon.<p>

"Its been a long time."

* * *

><p>AN So heres another chapter yay! Hope you guys liked it. Dont worry the fight for Earth is gonna be rather long. This is just a part of the whole fight. Soon we'll get to the Chief. Don't not worry. Anyway please Review guys! It inspires me to write quicker. that, and its November Novel something month and I'm entering that so it'll be hard, but ill keep trying to update at least once a week.**

**Still looking for a beta reader! Anyone interested message me!
**

New thing anyone interested in co-authoring a story with me just let me know! I think it'd be fun!

Thanks for reading as always and God bless you all!

16. Part I Chapter 15 (un beata'd)

Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil

Chapter 15: The battle for Earth Part 2.

* * *

><p>Captain Harold Johnson watched as four of his cruisers and six destroyers took on a Reaper Capital ship along with a smaller destroyer, swathing his view form the holotable too the display above it that showed the actual bate rather than just a hologram.<p>

"Cruisers 1 and 2 open fire on the left side of that Capital ship. 3 and 4 the right side. Slam in with everything you got and use strafing maneuvers to avoid getting hit. Destroyers 1, 2 and 3 distract that destroyer. 4 through 6 hit the Capital ship from head

on. Wait till the cruisers open fire on it then combine your fire and hit head on. Make sure to concentrate fire on a single spot. Hopefully that'll weaken it enough for the Reverence to move in and take it out." He spoke over the Comm links to his advancing ships. He didn't have time to address them all by name so he just assigned them numbers.

His squadron of ships had been compromised of two dreadnoughts, ten cruisers and twelve destroyers. Now he was down to six cruisers, six destroyers and only his own dreadnaught. The Reapers and Flood had hit them hard.

The Alliance fifth Fleet protecting Earth was being overwhelmed. They were severely outnumbered and outgunned even with the other fleet of xenon heaping them out. The whole fifth fleet had two hundred ships left over Earth and even then their numbers were declining. Still at least the invasion wasn't as bad as the one that hit Earth ten years ago.

Now he couldn't afford to lose ships so he was gaining up on them one at a time.

He watched on the display how his ships opened fire on the Reaper ship and the Reaper returned fire.

He gritted his teeth as one of his cruisers failed to avoid the blast and took a critical hit to its port side. The Reaper fortunately had taken the bait and as one the three destroyers fired.

"Move up the Reverence and prepare to fire on my mark." He stated over the Comm. '

On the display his ship began to move up towards the battle his remaining battalion of ships followed behind, watching the back.

He watched as the Reaper and his ships traded fire and one of his destroyers now took a critical hit. Unfortunately it wasn't as lucky as his cruiser and the blast tore through the ship and hit the engine, igniting it and sending the whole ship up in a glorious explosion.

"Open fire! Bring that damn squid down!" He yelled.

His ship shook lightly as it fired on the Reaper. Two hits it took to break the Reapers armor and his Cruisers and destroyers finished it off with their combined fire, destroying the Reaper in a brilliant explosion.

"Captain contact behind us!" One of the crewman shouted. The Captain looked down at the holotable and saw three holograms of enemy ships appearing behind his own on the holotable.

"Pull us around 180 degrees! Destroyers and Cruisers with us are to pull a defensive perimeter around the Reverence! Cruisers 1-4 and destroyers 1,3 and 4-6 take care of that destroyer then flank the enemy on the left side!" He yelled.

Three Reaper Capital ships were attacking from behind and he watched as they took out another destroyer and cruiser with a combined attack before his dreadnaught could turn around. The ship surrounding his

own were already firing at the three Reapers but it wasn't enough even when his dreadnaught joined in only one Reaper was showing any damage.

With a brilliant flash another Cruiser went up in flames.

"Shit.." He mumbled under his breath. They were getting destroyed out here. They needed reinforcements.

Suddenly he watched on the display above the holotable as one of the Reapers vanished.

"Sir one of the Reapers has been knocked out!"

He stared up at the display, watching the floating wreckage of the Reaper ship as one of the two remaining Reapers turned to face the enemy flanking it.

He watched as it fire to red beams before it was blown apart by a very powerful lance of blue energy.

"What the hell is going on?" He yelled.

"Greetings non reclaimers! We are here to help!" A voice piped up over the comm systems.

Harold watched as five ships appeared on the screen and obliterated the final Reaper ship.

They were large and almost resembled giant keys, with blue lines of light running along the sides. They had a very elegant and menacing look to them. He wondered who it was.

"I am 343 Guilty Spark and we have come to help protect the Reclaimer home world!" The cheerful voice said over his comms again.

Before he could respond another crewman spoke up.

"Sir Twenty Asari and ten Salarain ships have just arrived sir! half are coming to aid us over here while the others try to even the odds around the planet." A cheer went up through the bridge.

Reinforcements were coming.

"Guily Spark, I dont know who the hell you are but if your here to stop the Reapers then lets do this!" Harold yelled.

He watched on the holotable as around a dozen Reaper ships were regrouping ninety degrees to their left, away from Earth, just out of range of his dreadnoughts main cannons.

"Turn us around to face those Reapers and lets show them our new friends!" The Captain yelled.

All of ships, now regrouped, turned to face the enemy as ten Asari and five Salarain ships arrived right next to them, their unknown allies facing the Reapers with them.

"All right people lets show them the might of the System Alliance!"

He yelled, about to order his ships to move up and engage when it happened.

Hundreds, if not thousands of wormholes , opened up behind the Reaper fleet, piercing the darkness of space as ships began to fill the display and overrun the holotable displaying a 3d view of the battle.

Out of them came dozens of Reaper ships, and hundreds of various flood ships, all recognizable by the pale and degraded biomass covering their hulls. Two massive thirty eight kilometer ships slipped out of the wormholes, but thats not what scared him.

No, it was the one hundred kilometer long monster that appeared out of the wormholes, towards the back of the new enemy fleet that scared him. It had similar designs to his new allies but the lights lining the ships were a pale green instead of bright blue.

"As you humans would say, it has hit the fan." The peppy voice of Guilty spark stated over his coms.

* * *

><p>Shepard groaned and slowly sat up. Her vision was blurry and her head fuzzy. She couldn't remember where she was or why she was in a dark tunnel<p>

Rubbing the back of her head she looked around her and found Garrus, Cortez and Lithya staring at her with worried eyes. She looked up at them and raised an eyebrow.

"Did I grow a third eye or something?" Shepard asked in a completely serious tone.

The group let out an audible sigh and visibly relaxed.

"You hit your head pretty hard." Garrus informed her and extended his hand to help her up.

The Commander said thanks and took his hand, pulling herself up to her feet. She quickly glanced around them and noticed they were underground., specifically in an old subway tunnel. It was then everything rushed back to her. The Flood, the Reapers, her and the Arbiter side by side and a wave of Flood charging at them.

"What happened?" she asked looking at everyone, her eyes landing on Lithya whom gave her a small smile.

"The grenade went off, but a moment before I used my Biotics to grab you and the Arbiter with a singularity and pulled you guys in here. It was quick and I didn't really have time to put you guys down safely, so You kind of hit your head on the ground, fell unconscious, and well we thought you had gone into a coma. Fortunately you were only out for about ten minutes." Lithya explained looking down at the ground, embarrassed for having knocked out the Commander.

"Thank you Lithya." Katherine stated placing a hand on the Asairs shoulder for reassurance. The councilor smiled and nodded.

"So Whats happened while I've been out?" Shepard asked turning back

around to face Garrus.

"Nothing really. The Arbiter and Thran' went down the subway scouting it out. Should be back in a few." Garrus replied with a shrug.

"Alright. When they get back we need to move. We need to Hackett out of here and we need to return to the Normandy." She stated reaching for her assault rifle only to remember it was gone. She instead pulled out her pistol, loading up cryo rounds before relaxing slightly.

"How are the others doing?" She asked Garrus.

"Liaras out cold still. The Councilors are all ok. Marines are ok, but freaked out, then again we all kind of are. Well except for that one marine. he seems pretty upset, also wounded." Garrus said nodding towards a marine who was sitting further down in the station than the rest of them. He seemed to be crying silently as his shoulder seemed to be sagging.

"We have returned." The Arbiter announced as he and Thran' walked up to the group.

"Well that was quick." Garrus chuckled not having expected them to return so soon

"It seems clear. We should proceed before the parasite begin to search for us." The Arbiter stated looking at Commander Shepard with concerned eyes.

She gave a nod which he took as her being ok, then stated she agreed with his plan of action.

"Lets get moving! We're not out of danger yet!" She ordered the remaining marines and councilors whom were sitting down and taking a breather and Reluctant Promise who was floating around and whistling some sort of ridiculous tune.

"No." On marine pipped up.

Everyone turned to him, shocked to hear a marine defying orders.

"Excuse me son?" Hackett asked confused.

The marine was sitting away from the group, his hands were twitching, blood dripping down from his shoulder.

The Arbiter noticed the spike protruding out of his shoulder. However he couldn't figure it out, at least not quick enough.

The Marine stood up, his head tilted to the side a little and his eyes a dark and pale green.

"I have defied Gods and Demons!" He said, though it was not his voice. His body suddenly ripped apart and something came forth. The Purest flood form ever created. Not just a pure form. The Pure form.

And before anyone could react, it charged.

* * *

><p>AN Hey guys sorry for the wait. Its been hectic. Ill do a reviewer shout out next week hen i post. I just wanted to get something out to you guys so here this chapter. Sorry if anythings rushed or grammars horrible. I did this in a rush. Anyway thanks for reading and please Review! Also say thanks to my new beta reader monstahmikelson16. This chapter wasn't beta'd yet because i wanted it out there but it will be soon, also im rewriting the old chapters as now monstahmikelson is able to beta them and help me figure things out. **

Again thanks for reading! God Bless!

17. Part I Chapter 16 (un beata'd)

**A/N Thanks for reading my great fans! **

Shoutout to Ecomadness, Hattu, z, s, Dracconnis, and 970910 for reviewing!

**You guys are awesome and I'm glad to have such dedicated readers. **

**970910: I understand why you didn't like the last chapter. However, Guilty Soark is alive. The Forerunner trilogy has him alive, I actually found that out right before I wrote the chapter hence why i added him in. And for the Forerunner things, well theres a reason why the Flood still have all these ships is practical with what i have planned. It will all be explained in due time. **

And to everyone waiting for the Chief his time will come. I just feel the need to give Shepard her own spot light for a bit before Chief comes in. Though however the story might stay form mainly Shepard point of view even if chief comes in. Im still deciding.

And if anyone can guess what clues are in this story to future events I'll let out a secret about whats happening.

Now hope you enjoy the Chapter!

* * *

><p>Part I**

The Voice and Face of all Evil

Chapter 16: The battle for Earth part 3

* * *

><p>Katherine studied the beast before them. It was huge, similar in size to a hunter and much larger than a krogan. Its arms were massive and bulky as well as having tentacles encircling them. Its legs were armored and the beast seemed to walk like a gorilla. Its chest was covered in heavy plating as well as its back.<p>

Shepard barely had enough time to move before the monstrosity of a Flood form charged. She rolled out of the way just in the nick of time as it barreled through the air she had just been in, the others in her group doing the same.

Garrus and the few marines left alive opened fire with their respective weapons. The bullets tore into the pale armor but hardly did any damage no matter where they hit.

The Pure Form, having missed its targets spun around on its heels turned back towards the group of survivors.

Reluctant Promise, having been off to the side humming to himself joined the fight. His eye glowed red and a beam of pure hard light energy shot forth, slamming into the monster's chest. The creature only stumbled back a few steps before it put up its arm to block the blast from its body. The arm suddenly began to bubble and mutate, in a matter of seconds creating a shield of sheer organic matter on its arm, effectively blocking Reluctant Promise's constant stream of fire.

The monitor ceased its firing when it realized he was no longer doing any harm.

"This is new." He stated somewhat worried. Shepard wondered for the briefest of moments if the Pure form was adapting to their attacks but she waved off the thoughts and left her mind in the battle.

She fired off a few shots, watching as they hit the beast but only seemed to piss it off. The monster roared a grotesque battle cry and charged for the nearest target, Lithia.

Lithia threw a singularity at the beast, before throwing a wall of biotic energy in front of her as protection seeing as she didn't have enough time to avoid its attack.

The singularity slammed into the beast's chest, pulling it off the ground and letting all of the squad open fire on it.

However, the beast wasn't finished.

Somehow, it twisted its body and the blue glow around was shattered through sheer force, the singularity obliterating as the beast physically overwhelmed it.

The firing stopped as the group stared in shock, only the Arbiter and Thran seemed to have not been affected by the event, both still firing at the beast which it effortlessly blocked with its shield.

There was no beast alive that could do that. They had never seen anything like it and that shock gave the beast the chance it needed to attack them. Showing intelligence however, it didn't bother attacking the larger group of people or the two still up and running elites. No, it chose an easier target. One who thought that singularity would end their problems.

Within seconds the Flood form made it to Lithia, piercing the biotic energy with its hands and ripping the barrier in front of her apart

with ease.

Too stunned to move Lithyia made an easy target. two tentacles grew out of the monstrosities back, dagger like appendages on each of them, that then shot towards Lithyia and sliced straight through her clothing and into her gut.

The Asari screamed.

The Arbiter sprang into action.

The elite warrior drew his energy swords, discarding his carbine with a toss and charging the beast.

The Pure Form saw it coming, tossed Lithyia like a rag doll across the subway and slamming her hard against a wall, an spun to face the elite.

It swung is massive shield arm at the elites legs hoping to cut them off. The elite was smarter than that. He used his momentum to propel himself into the air with a jump, using the shield to propel himself even further and right into the beast.

He tackled it and sent the two sprawling to the ground, energy slicing away at pale flesh.

Katherine snapped out of her trance, for some reason it had held her longer than it should've, and she felt a familiar chill go down her spin as the shadows seemed to flicker the slightest.

She watched the Arbiter and pure form roll around, knowing that the Arbiter could only hold it off for a few minutes on his own.

"Garrus get Liara, Hackett and the councilors out of here! Marines protect them at all costs!" She yelled drawing her omni blade and activating her cryo rounds for her pistol.

"Shepardâ€|" The tyrian began before being cut off by a yell from the Arbiter whom was finally tossed off the beast.

"Just do it! Thran' you me and the Arbiter will take care of this monster. Promise you stay back and analyze this thing for a weakness." She stated.

The group split, Garrus picking up the unconscious Liara, another marine carrying the now unconscious lithyia, an then they were off down the tunnel the two elites had scouted earlier, the councilors and Hackett following closely.

The monster instead of attacking the Arbiter noticed its escaping prey and made a dash towards them.

Shepard and Thran' opened fire. The cryo bullets froze the beasts leg and the plasma burned away at its armored hide. The beast slowed significantly as its leg became useless.

Its roared in agony when it then flexed its leg shattering the ice around it. Now able to move again, it barreled at them at full speed.

Shepard ducked underneath its arm, and lunged forwards, driving her blade into the beast's side and slicing through its flesh and armor easily. She moved past the beast, dragging the blade through its side till she ended up behind it and spun around to attack it from behind.

However a massive arm slammed into her as she spun around, throwing her back into a wall, hitting her head hard, and busting one of her lips as she bit into it on accident.

Katherine fell to the ground and slowly stood back up watching Thran' fight the beast in close quarters, barely managing to keep out of its grasp.

She slowly got her feet, when a large hand grabbed her shoulder and helped pull her up.

"Thanks." She muttered to the Arbiter just as Thran' was hit by the beast and sent flying down the tunnel.

"It has regenerative capabilities." The Arbiter stated watching as the beast roared in triumph.

"So do Krogan."

"Yes but its capabilities are almost instantaneous. The gravemind must have found a creature with such capabilities thenâ€¦" He was cut short as both him and the Commander were forced to dive away from each other as the beast charged them, missing and then slamming into the wall for the tunnel.

The Arbiter rolled to a crouch, drawing one of his energy swords. Shepard doing the same with her omni blade only a couple of feet down from him.

"He must have reprogrammed this pure form's DNA to regenerate like this. I wonder what creature could possibly heal so fast." The elite stated.

"He is correct commander. These capabilities will make the beast much harder to beat." Reluctant Promise stated from his safe distance down the hall.

"It can still die!" Thran' yelled firing his carbine with one hand as his other held his energy sword.

The beast having turned around, charged Shepard instead of Thran'.

She rolled out of the way, only for a tentacle to grab her leg and fling her down the tunnel like she weighed nothing. She slammed into Thran', sending the two to the ground with a hard thump.

Katherine groaned and slowly climbed to her feet as the Arbiter engaged the monster, trying to slice and dice it but ultimately failing as the creature instantaneously healed any injury.

"Shitâ€¦" Shepard sighed as she powered up her blade again. Things just kept getting worse for them.

* * *

><p>Captain Johnson stared at the fleet before him.<p>

He was outnumbered and outgunned. There was no way he could win this and he knew it.

"Captain what are your orders?" One of the crew men called out, fear filling his voice.

Johnson didn't bother to respond. What could he tell them? They were going to die and Earth was doomed. What else could they do?

"Captain I believe we should think of a new strategy. I only have five ships. and there are several Forerunner and Reclaimers class ships within the enemy ranks along with many unknown. We will be defeated unless we act quickly." Guilty spark stated.

"What about that large ship?" He asked finally using his voice though it was ridden with fear.

"Forerunner Fortress class. Captured during our war with the Flood. Im not sure where they've been hiding it all this time, but the Gravemind must really want to take this planet if he's just starting to bring out the big guns."

"So you know how that things built?" He stated a plan beginning to formulate. It was risky and suicidal been most plans were. Either way it was his only chance to save Earth and his family. They were on board a civilian evac waiting to depart from Earth once enough of a hole had been opened in the enemy lines.

"Yes butâ€|"

"Can its engines be overloaded?"

"The slip space drive can be. It would cause a massive uncontrolled slip space hole to rip open around it, and tear the ship apart if it were overloaded correctly."

"And how exactly do we overload it?"

"You are a daring human Captain."

"Like I have a choice."

"Well seeing as your current plan is our only option of survival I will tell youâ€| Let us just hope that we can survive long enough to pull it off."

* * *

><p>Have you found any of the others?

Noâ€| They continue to elude us.

And the knight?

He begins to grow strong.

Use the tyrant there and try to keep him from advancing. We have enough to deal with as it is. This place is costing me many troubles as it is.

Ahhh so you are having trouble?

Yes and as are you the Face.

Ahh but they will be dead soon enough.

_Granted you can actually accomplish this task. You have failed us multiple times before if not this universe would be ours. _

It is not my fault. The Reclaimer is strong.

Not as threatening as the others.

They are all equal. Except for the second. They areâ€|. Different.

What do you mean Embodiment?

I used the chaos spirit to find the fourth and its seems there are two capable of being the fourth. Either being capable of defeating us if they are properly trained.

Impossible.

No its is true. A light resides with one of them. It will allow them to defeat you.

None can.

We must move quickly. Face and Voice I need you to send a squadron of ships to this place and destroy the second before they can become a threat.

Fine.

* * *

><p>The woman watched over the galaxy map as several vessels began to leave the galaxy, headed for dark space. She knew what they were doing and it was, to say the least, bad for her and all of the galaxy.<p>

"Sent whatever we can to halt their ships. Keep them from finding her." The woman stated switching the view to a raging battle over the planet designated 'Earth'.

"Mam we are interfering to much are we not?"

"No. They are accelerating their plans I believe and if we let them, they will destroy one of our only hopes, and all will be lost."

"Mam I will send everything we can afford to send." The Voice replied kindly.

"Thank you.." She sighed once again. She wiped a droplet of sweat off her forehead. Things were getting complicated now. She hoped this

Commander Katherine Shepard was all she was made out to be. If she wasn't then it was already over. Then they had already won.

* * *

><p>AN Thanks for reading! Hope you all enjoyed it! Have a great Thanksgiving! Please Review and post any questions in a Review of you have any! Ill answer as best I can without letting out a spoiler. God Bless!**

18. Part I Chapter 17 (un beata'd)

A/N thanks to all my reviewers! Also thanks for being so patient! Its been busy with finals and everything else going onâ€|

**Anyway! **

Hattu: Close with some of your predictions but others are off. Which ones I wont tell. Sorry! :p

Just a Question: There will be a romances but i will not say with who and it will be a while before they start up.

Hope you enjoy!

* * *

><p>Part I**

The Voice and Face of all Evil.

Chapter 17: The battle for Earth part 4

* * *

><p>Shepard rolled to her feet and threw another biotic blast at the beast, ignoring the drops of blood falling from the side of her head.<p>

both purple and red blood stained the floor. Thran' laid by unconscious, The Arbiter across from her panting heavily and Reluctant Promise laying in on the floor offline. The battle was not going well for them to say the least.

The beast was to much for them. It was absorbing all their attacks, healing itself, and was hitting them back. Thing was they couldn't heal like it could.

"What the hell are we gonna do?" Shepard stated spitting out blood from her mouth. She was really starting to find the taste annoying.

"You and I both wish for an answer." The Arbiter retorted firing his carbine at the beast as it charged them again.

The plasma charged melted the beast hide but almost instantly it healed itself, slamming full force into the worn elite.

Shepard cursed under her breath and threw a singularity at the beast, however the biotic ability flickered and died about halfway between the two and Shepard finally collapsed on the ground.

The Arbiter swore as he held his ground against the beast. He grunted and drove his knee into its side before pushing off it and drawing his energy swords once more.

"Come beast." He taunted it.

With a mighty roar the two charged each other.

* * *

><p>"How the hell do you think we should do it then?" Captain Johnson stated as his ship shook violently. The enemy was toying with them. The bulk was staying behind, while several broke off and attacked at a time. Others still broke off and slipped past the defenders, into Earths atmosphere, reinforcing the already attacking Flood and Reaper forces.<p>

"Captain your boarding party would get massacred the moment you got onboard. There are simply too many flood forms on the ship." Guilty Spark stated over the open comm channel.

"Sir we just lost another Asari ship!" One of the crew members yelled out, his voice raspy.

Johnson grit his teeth and slammed his fist into the holotable. Things were definitely not going their way.

"Alright what's your idea?" He finally asked.

"There's is one last power suit on board my ships. It only has enough power to get to the drive and get out. You could board with this suit and make it through with significantly better chances. However you would still need some support and I only have a few Knights at my disposal, not enough to help with significant effect." The monitor stated.

"Greatâ€¦" Johnson sighed.

"Now onto my ideaâ€¦" Guilty Spark stated causing Johnson to look up in surprise. "A boarding party may not work but blasting the drive with a specific frequency could work."

"That requires us breaking through that damn thing's shield and hull. How do you propose we do that?" Johnson snapped. Another shockwave rocked his ship and a few red lights began flashing.

"Sir shields are going down fast! There's too many!" A crew member yelled from his computer console.

"Shitâ€¦ Alright who are we doing this?" Johnson asked.

"I will transport five ships right behind the Fortress class ship. Using your FTL systems your ship could ram itself into its shields while the other four fire on it. If my calculations are correct then the only the four first shots along with your ship could manage to deactivate their shields. Then if my ships can combine their own fire

power into one lance ill strike it into the heart of their ship. If it works right then the fortress class should collapse and create an unconfined slip space hole, ripping it and any other ships around it to pieces." Guilty Spark stated.

"Great so our plan is based on suicide and has almost no chance of success?"

"It has a 3.786 percent chance of success that involves no harm to any of our own forces."

"I wasn't asking." The Captain snapped. He looked out over the bridge and over the holotable. They were going to lose Earth. He knew that much, but maybe he could at least delay it.

"If we do thisâ€¦ Will you promise to take care of my crew?" The Captain stated crossing his arms.

"Yes."

"Alright. Men new Orders!"

* * *

><p>Shepard climbed back to her feet, a coughing fit racking her body. The constant use of her biotics had drained her. She normally wouldn't have used them this much but since regular weapons were completely ineffective against this thing her biotics were her only defense.<p>

"Commander!" The Arbiter yelled noticing she was now standing. The beast roared and pushed against the Arbiter. The two were locked in place, neither giving way to the other as they pushed back and forth. The Arbiter growled and pushed back, his legs muscles burning as he tried to keep the monster back.

Katherine looked at the Arbiter and the beast. She drew her pistol and fired, the rounds slamming into the beast's flesh with no obvious effect.

She drew her omni blade and charged, the organ blade glowing brightly as she tossed her pistol to the ground. She wasn't quick enough when the beast spun around and slammed its shield straight into her.

Flying back and slamming into the wall, her nose cracked and bloody the Commander slowly slid then to the ground.

Moments later the elite fell down right next to her.

"Looks like we have all the luck huh?" Shepard asked with a smirk slowly getting to her feet. The Arbiter only grunted in response as he too got to his feet.

"Commander we are out of options. I have no real idea how to beat this beast." The elite stated redrawing one of his energy swords as the beast pounded on its chest in victory.

"I am strongest!" It roared in a mangled form of english.

"Now it can talk." Shepard groaned drawing her own omni blade and power up for a singularity despite the protesting of her body.

The monster beat its chest again then the two charged.

Swiftly the Arbiter faked an attack on the creatures left and dove for its center while Shepard struck at its non shield arm.

The beast roared and spun around trying to avoid the two but ultimately failing. The two blades seared unto its flesh, the plasma sword burning as it sliced through the beast. Shepard stumbled forward as the beasts arm fell off. For a second she was happy then saw the arm regrowing.

Before either could retreat from the monster, it countered them. It wrapped its free shield arm around the Arbiter and with a mighty swing it twirled the elite around and slammed him into Shepard. The two flew back, hit the ground and began to roll.

"You weight a lot did you know?" Shepard groaned as the two rolled to a stop.

"I thought the other alien was the one who joked a lot." The Arbiter stated referring to Garrus.

"I only do it to brighten the mood." Shepard stated as the two separately got to their feet. The Beast roared and pounded on its chest again.

"How do we kill a monster that cannot die?" The Arbiter growled drawing his other energy sword as his first had fallen to the floor near the beast when he had been thrown.

Shepard looked at the beast and yelped when it slammed its arms into the ground, dozens of cracks working their way through the tunnel and throwing up dust and debris.

The cracking of the tunnel reminded her of something. The way the subway entrance had collapsed. An idea suddenly came to life in her head. The beast could heal. But what if she blew it to bits?

"Arbiter do you have another grenade?" Shepard asked throwing a singularity at the beast. It would only hold it for a second or two but that was all the time she needed. Her breathing became labored and heavy. She couldn't keep it up much longer.

"One." The elite said pulling it out and showing it to the human, curious to what she had in mind.

"One's all we need." Katherine stated as the beast broke the singularity and dropped to the ground.

"Ten seconds?" The elite asked.

"Ten."

The beast charged the two, its newly formed arm twisting and forming into a sword to compliment the shield it already had.

oneâ€|

Shepard rolled underneath its swinging shield using her momentum to roll back onto her feet. The Arbiter doing the same on the other side, except slamming his sword into the beasts side only to lose it in the monsters flesh.

twoâ€|

The beast spun around roaring and managing to catch the arbiter in the side, sending him into the wall as Shepard charged him with what little strength she had left.

threeâ€|

The beast turned and slammed its shield into Shepard, sending her into a wall, her head hitting the wall and her vision becoming blurry.

_fourâ€| _

She got to her feet only to hear the Arbiter yelling her name and a blue grenade flying towards her. She caught with one hand.

_fiveâ€| _

The elite jumped onto the beasts back momentarily distracting it. The beast flayed its arms around trying to hit him and Shepard charged, her omni blade glowing to life.

_sixâ€| _

The Arbiter was hit hard by one of the beasts arm, throwing him to the ground and allowing the beats to turn towards Shepard. However, it wasn't quick enough this time. Shepard rolled under it, turning back up on to her feet.

_sevenâ€| _

Reversing her momentum she jumped onto the beasts back, using her blade as an anchor as it stabbed into the beast flesh. She lifted her arm up mentally counting down.

eightâ€|

The beast somehow turned around, its body twisting around in a terribly gruesome manner to where its front now face Shepard. She gasped when its mouth opened and hundred of razor sharp teeth shined on display.

nineâ€|

Shepard retracted her bade, the wound already beginning to seal up and as she fell form the beasts back, she drove the grenade into the wound as far as she could. The beast wrapped its arms around her and Shepard released the grenade as the beasts hide healed over it.

tenâ€|

"Shitâ€|" Shepard muttered pouring all her energy into a barrier.
Then the grenade blew.

* * *

><p>My liege the knight has created a new way to liveâ€|

As predicted. You serve us well.

Yesâ€|

_My liege I have no way to break free of my prison. I wish to help
but how can I?_

_Create a dark version of the one who put you in there. Where there
is light, there is darkness! Show them to fear
us!_

Brilliant.

Face and Voice what are you doing?

_We are accelerating our plans. the hips are headed to the system as
well. They are not to far now. It shouldn't take long to find her.

_

_Good. Make sure this light does not reach the others. _

We will not and how about you?

My plans accelerate. We are doing well.

I hear of another first coming into being?

Seems there are more than the first time we fought.

_Yes. Embodiment the ships go to the second, find this impostor of
the first and destroy them._

_Agreed. She will be easy to destroy. She is young and weak. No more
than nuisance. _

* * *

><p>"Here I Stand!" The girl screamed into the snowy sky.<p>

"In the light of day!"

"Let the storm rage on!" The girl in blue yelled as her pristine home
finally finished in all it glory.

Outside, darkness fluttered around and two red eyes opened in the
dark. The time was near. Soon they would rule all, all that was pure,
innocent, kind, all light would be vanquished and would become
theirs.

The time is near.

* * *

><p>"Son of a Bitch!" the woman yelled finally losing her cool. Her fist slammed into the holotable.<p>

"Madam?"

"They're going after the others already. Those men and women are not yet ready to face such threats. As it is Shepard is having enough trouble and she has seen death and war!" The woman yelled before sighing and slouching.

"The ships are close mam. Just a little more time."

"I know. Then we can reveal ourselves. Besides they'll need our help to win this."

* * *

><p>AN So has any seen any of the clues? Theres a lot being hinted at. Of course the whole main plot hasn't been but several major characters will be coming into play soon besides Chief though chief will come first and have a few chapters of greatness before anyone else. Anyway hope you all enjoyed and please Review! Only three more finals to go! God bless you guys!**

19. Part I Chapter 18 (un beata'd)

A/N: Thanks again to all my reviewers!

Reconghost5: Maybe maybe not. Librarian probably not but the Didact. Who knows.

* * *

><p>Part I<p>

The Voice and Face of all Evil

Chapter 18: battle for Earth Part 5

* * *

><p>Shepard forced her eyes open only to see that it was the same as before. An everlasting darkness and that was it. She took a shuddering breath and tasted how stale and cold the air was. It was as if she was in an old tomb.<p>

Suddenly she felt something else in the darkness, something more. It went from being simply lifeless to full of pure unadulterated hate and rage. It entwined around her when she tried to move, locking her in place with dark tendrils that were somehow darker than the infinite void around her.

She tried to call out for help but nothing escaped her mouth. The space around her tried to control itself. It wanted to tear her limb from limb and revel in her pain and suffering but it restrained itself from doing so.

Images darted in front of Shepard's eyes like she was flipping

through channels on her holoscreen. Only instead of boredom she felt only fear and dread. Finally an image slowed down.

She was in an infernal tunnel, claustrophobic and made of shaped stone. She spotted a young girl in purple pajamas running out of the void at the end of the hallway. She had tears falling down her young face in small tributaries with an expression of fear set in stone.

The girl ran through Shepard as if she never even existed. This gave her a clear view of a man running for his life. A familiar shriek resounded down the enclosed space and one of Gravemind's tentacles wrapped around him. It smashed him into the wall with a sickening crunch and dragged him back into the void.

The roulette of images appeared again. This time Shepard steeled herself for the next barrage of memories that weren't her own. The darkness found the next set faster than the first and plunged her in.

This time it showed a planet covered completely in the glowing orange lights of cities. In the space above Reapers and Flood ships alike fired on unknown and strangely built ships. Down in the streets below a man in a brown coat fought through hundreds of Flood and Reaper forms, chopping them down with a slender blue sword. He yelled for vengeance as he nimbly dodged attacks. The memory was torn away from her and she gasped in pain.

Shepard was back to the same running list of old and forgotten memories in the black abyss. This time the next memory was found almost instantly, shoving her into another world.

This world was filled with wonders. A massive temple was raised in front of her as she spotted a young woman in blue sweats and T-shirt. She had two ponytails of brown hair as she stood proudly next to a bald man with odd tattoos and looked like a monk.

Behind them a green mist crept out of the open wooden doors, seeking its next victim. Shepard tried to run to them but she was still bound by the dark tendrils. The green mist encircled the two and the memory went black.

The next memory came immediately after the previous one ended. It showed a large and powerful man with spiky hair in blue and orange clothing. A blue light emanated from his palms as he roared into the darkness. The darkness roared back with the power of a thousand voices and everything went black.

The next place was a world of ice on a mountain. Snow rained down around a single blond woman who hummed and sung to herself as she climbed a flight of ice stairs. In the ravine below a green mist fluttered out and sunk back in.

Another place. A city of golden buildings torn to the ground. It laid in smoldering ruins as a piercing boom sounded out. Shepard clutched her ears, unaware that she could move freely. She turned to see a familiar Reaper crash into the ground. Harbinger let out another robotic roar as the screaming started again from the direction of the broken city. On the ground in front of Harbinger was a massive warrior in what looked like highly advanced armor with the letters

IOM scrawled across its arm.

Now it was her turn as the darkness consumed her. She let out a scream as it tried to split her apart slowly.

* * *

><p>"No!" She screamed jumping up and drawing her omni blade, her eyes glowing and whole body glowing a vicious blue.<p>

"Commander!" a voice called out.

She spun around, ready to kill at a moments notice despite her violently shaking, pain racked, body. An alien she recognized was standing just a few steps from her, his hand holding the hilt of a weapon, his eyes scanning her.

"Arbiter." She sighed relaxing, the blue glow fading from her.

"Are you alright human?" The Arbiter asked walking over to her, catching her as her legs gave out.

"No.. No I'm not. Iâ€| saw things," Shepard said with a shiver. Mentally she scolded herself for being so weak but something about the things she was seeing unnerved her.

"Things?" The Arbiter asked as he helped steady her on her feet.

She was bloody and weak, barely having survived the plasma grenade blast. Fortunately for them it had killed the beast. Dozens of pieces of him laid around the tunnel covering the walls. Shepard nodded and weakly looked around, momentarily satisfied with their small victory. Someone placed a hand on her shoulder.

The Commander freaked and spun around, the blue glow coursing through her, and a blast slamming into the chest of her 'attacker'.

Thran roared in surprise and stepped back a few steps, almost falling over from the weak blast.

"Sorry.. You startled meâ€|" She stated relaxing once more.

"Things?" The Arbiter asked looking at her suspiciously.

"We'll talk about it later ok?" She sighed rubbing her neck. She looked over to the out of power or conciseness, Reluctant Promise, pathetically laying useless on the ground.

"We should catch up to the others." Shepard said reaching for her comm. Before she turned it on she asked the question on all their minds. "Who carries the AI?"

* * *

><p>Captain Johnson couldn't help the sad and proud smile that had crept over his face. His crew, all of them, had refused to leave him. They were going to stay by his side till the very end. They would make sure these bastards who were trying to attack their home never got the chance.<p>

He watched as they exited what Guilty Spark had called slipspace, four of the AI's five ships next to his own in a defensive perimeter.

He hadn't told the AI of the fact he was going to fire on the ship before ramming it. Maybe it wasn't the best idea but any inch of shield they drained was of help.

"Get ready!" He yelled gripping on the railing over the holotable.

They rocketed out of slipspace and straight into a battlefield. Dozens of other ships of smaller design designated to Guilty Sparks were fighting the Flood ships, tearing apart weaker ones and fighting hard, brutal battles against stronger ships.

"What the hells going on?" He yelled as his ship shook slightly from a nearby exploding Flood infested ship.

Of course the 100 km ship was still in one piece and from what it looked like it was starting to move. Straight for Earth.

"Captain new contacts arrived just a moment before you exited slipspace. One hundred and fifty three ships. All forerunner class. Apparently to act as reinforcements for us," Guilty Spark stated over his comm, the AI's voice filled with excitement.

"What about that Fortress class ship?" Johnson asked as he felt his ship shake, having opened fire on a nearby enemy ship.

"Heading for Earth. Your fleets have noticed and are forming a perimeter however even at thirty to one odds they're severely outclassed.

"Well then we stick to the plan!" Johnson yelled.

"Get us near that thing! Make sure all point defenses intercept any enemy missiles and fighter getting near us! Shoot that ship as many times with the main gun till we're within five hundred meters," The Captain ordered. His crew complied, and the Dreadnaught slipped away from its Forerunner protectors and chased after the Fortress class ship.

Outside his ship, blue lances of hard light flew towards the Flood ships, tearing chunks in smaller ship with weaker shields and battering those with stronger shields. Multitudes of red, green, yellow, blue and even purple blasts flew back at the Forerunner fleet. Their shields were impacted and a few drained significantly while most were only minor irritations.

The Forerunner fleet moved into a triangular formation and combining their firepower, and firing into the fleet, instantly obliterating at least two hundred ships. It was the same attack the ships used when causing a stellar collapse.

The Forerunner ships then charged into the fleet, using their enemies brief disarming to try and separate the fleet, effectively weakening it.

Johnson watched the statistics of his ship. Their shields were only at twelve percent and his main cannon was doing next to nothing to the Fortress class ship's shields.

"Sir six hundred meters!" One of the crew called out.

"Good getâ€|" Johnson started but was interrupted as his ship shook violently.

"Shields gone sir! Major hull damage in decks the through thirteen! Venting atmosphere on deck ten, eleven and twelve. Sir we can't take another hit like that!" Another crewman reported.

The Captain watched on the holotable as a large kilometer and a half ship, blocky and gray with Flood biomass covering a lot of it, moved closer to his. On the side it read UNSC Retribution in blocky white letters.

"Damn it. Pull us into FTL! Launch us at that ship and lets bring it down!" He yelled. He could hear the hum as his ship prepared to go into FTL and slam into the Fortress class ship.

The Flood controlled UNSC ship prepared to fire its MAC canon once more, preparing to finish of the ship. Johnson closed his eyes. It was his time. He prayed the others succeeded where he had failed to protect humanity.

A second before his ship jumped, several wormholes opened up inside his bridge and throughout his ship. The screaming of his crew forced him to open his eyes. Large, tall mechanical beings, glowing blue light emanating form them, triangular masks covering their faces, large hunched backs and made of a sleek metal. Dozens of them covered the bridge.

He reached for his gun when he was grabbed from behind, and pulled through a portal as was his entire crew just as the ship launched. The Systems Alliance ship, Reverence, went up in a brilliant ball of blue, orange fire as it slammed into the Fortress class ship at FTL speeds.

* * *

><p>Johnson shrugged himself out of the machines grasp and looked at the only organic being that wasn't his crew and what he figured was a woman standing before him.<p>

"What the hell do you think you're doing?!" He yelled. She gave him a warm smile

"Calm down young one. Theres is a lot you need to lean still. Besides..." She said her voice then turning sad.

"The battle for planet rages on," She said turning away from and toward a highly advanced holotable behind her.

He walked towards the table cautiously. His eyes grew big as he watched. The battle for Earth was in fact raging on still.

"I want answers," He demanded looking over at her.

"And you will get them."

* * *

><p>Shepard walked forward her only remaining weapon, her omni blade, at the ready. The Arbiter walked beside her, casting her odd glances every now and then. He was curious to what the Commander had seen. He knew after years of nightmares, that only nightmares based on real events could have such an effect on people.<p>

Thran grunted as he shifted the ball of dead weight in his arms. He didn't want to carry the AI but being the lowest rank didn't have much a choice. It was funny how, he a general, was the lowest rank.

The group continued down the subway at a brisk pace. Their footsteps echoing through the tunnel as they moved on. Shepard wondered how far Garrus could've led the group. She wondered how long it had actually taken them to bring that monster of a Flood form down. In her mind it had taken too long.

Finally they came to an intersection, stairs leading up to the surface, light of day coming down through the ragged openings, and then two more tunnels. One going in the direction they had been going, another going off at an obtuse angle in a different direction.

"Great," She sighed. "Split up and see what you can find," She ordered.

"This is Commander Shepard to Garrus can you read?" She asked, activating her comm again. She waited a few moments, only hearing static, then repeated the message. Again only static.

"Great," She repeated.

She looked around, hoping to find a clue about where the group had gone.

"Commander." The Arbiter called out. He was standing towards a wall next to the stairs. She jogged over to him, Thran joining the two moments later.

"Looks like Garrus left us a message," She smiled. She knew she could count on Garrus. She looked at the message carved into the wall, obviously by an omni blade.

Heading towards Turian Embassy. Received transmission Transports to the Evac site are there. They're holding out. Hurry. - GV.

"Good." She smiled. "The Embassy is not far from where we came down. Lets just hope we didn't walk in the wrong direction," Katherine stated.

She motioned the two along and together they made their way up the stairs and into the streets above. The Commander squinted slightly as they entered the impossibly bright daylight.

The city was a mess. At least three fourths of the building around her were damaged in some way, and most were smoking. Debris was

everywhere. Dozens of bodies, Alliance, Flood and Reaper alike, covered the ground.

Evidence of a hard fought battle was everywhere. Massive craters from unknown sources, giant ravines of the collapsed subterranean railway system, devastated buildings and monuments and of course corpses in various stages of dismemberment lay in growing pools of blood on the war torn ground.

"Your kind still fights valiantly," The Arbiter complimented as he walked over to a closed a dead marine's open eyes.

"As does yours," She said with a curt nod, receiving one of thanks back.

The Commander gathered her surroundings. Fortunately she knew where they were. Only a few blocks from the embassy.

"Lets move." She stated. Together they were off again.

The trio, avoided as much debris as they could. Running around downed tanks, bodies, burnt out cars, and even one large Reaper destroyer that had been taken down. Shepard had glared at the thing as they past it. She hoped they had taken out dozens more. She hated the Reapers with all her guts.

They continued on their path. She could hear the distant echoing staccato of gunfire and knew they were only about three blocks from the Turian Embassy.

"Commander!" The Arbiter suddenly yelled.

Shepard spun around, hearing the footsteps but wasn't quick enough. A Flood combat form slammed into her at full speed tackling her to the ground. Several more jumped down from building, engaging the two Elites in seconds.

Tentacles wrapped around Shepard's throat and the Flood form shrieked. It raised her head and slammed it into the pavement. The thing was going to beat her to death.

Suddenly a bullet ripped through its head. It didn't kill it but two more heavy powered sniper rifle shots tore it to bloody pieces.

"What would you do without me?" A certain cocky Turian asked offering a hand to his longtime friend.

"Probably in a shallow grave somewhere," Shepard commented with a smile. She took Garrus's hand and together they helped her stand up.

"You look bad," He stated bluntly.

"Feel bad too," Shepard agreed. She couldn't lie. She was beat.

"Come on Shepard," The Turian stated helping her along when she almost tripped. Apparently the fall had caused her to twist an ankle and pretty badly too.

She watched as at least a dozen marines raced past her to help Thran and the Arbiter deal with the remaining parasitic forces.

"Where are the others?" She asked with concern as the two reached the transport area. Several shuttles were lying around, dozens of marines and a few civilians racing about to get in one.

"Liara, Lithyia, Cortez and that marine Anthony went back up to the Normandy, don't know why but Lithyia insisted on sticking with us. Said we're probably the safest ship in the galaxy. That marine was helping Cortez carry Liara and just kind of went along, not that anyone really cared. Hackett took the others to a nearby Dreadnaught and are already en-route to the Relay. They're going to head to Salarian space and try to regroup the remaining Alliance forces. Apparently the Flood and Reapers have started attacking the rest of Alliance space. A lot of worlds were caught off guard," Garrus said sadly as he helped Shepard to a shuttle. She knew what he meant. The poor planets were caught off guard again and wouldn't stand a chance against the combined might of the foe they faced.

Thran and the Arbiter walked up to the two, Thran tossing the still inactive body of the AI into the back of the shuttle with annoyance.

"Alright I'll get a pilot. It'll be nice to get back to the Normandy," Garrus stated walking away.

Shepard leaned back against the metal seat. She wondered why she was always caught up in the worst of wars.

* * *

><p>Shepard limped over to the holotable. Garrus, the Arbiter, Legion and Lithyia, were all there watching the battle over Earth. Thran had returned back to his fleet whom was currently engaged in a brutal fight against four dozens Reaper ships. However, their attention was on the big battle happening between the hundred of enemy ships, their ships, and the unknown ships.<p>

"So what's happened?" Shepard asked. The Normandy was effectively hidden behind Luna and was staying there. They all knew it would get massacred in a dogfight with the other more powerful ships.

"Why you were planet bound commander, dozens of unknown ships entered the system via unknown means, though they seem to travel by similar means as Covenant ships. Unknowns engaged enemy ships. At first turned the tide but are now too outnumbered to win the battle. Numbers saved depleted and only one hundred of their ships in their fleet remains. A one hundred kilometer ship appeared and tried to break through our lines but our ship along with unknowns managed to bring it down thanks to sacrifice of the Alliance Dreadnaught Reverence, sacrificing herself by ramming the ship at FTL speeds. Unfortunate however chance of victory for Earth is at 0.5 percent. Commander Earth will be lost." Legion stated.

She only nodded in response.

"Arbiter see if you can contact Thran. Tell him to pull back to whatever coordinates we send him," Shepard said. The Elite walked

away without a word.

"EDI contact Hackett. Find out where they're meeting. Tell him we're on our way and we need to discuss our next plan of action now that Earth's lost."

"Yes Commander," The AI replied.

"Shepard just received a message from Hackett," EDI informed and then played the voice message.

"Shepard tell our ships to pull back. Earth is lost. Get them to Salarian space or somewhere else still controlled by our forces. I'll send you coordinates for a meeting place. Sorry Shepard we cannot lose more men. Even if it means we have to give up Earth," Hackett's voice faded out. Shepard glared at the holotable but she kept quiet.

"Garrus send the message. Let them know Earth is lost," Shepard said running a hand through her still bloody hair.

"Let us just hope the war isn't," Lithyia muttered.

Shepard could only nod in agreement.

* * *

><p>AN: Hope you guys enjoyed! I was thinking about drawing the battle for Earth out longer but decided to cut it short. You guys deserve to have Chief! So after next Chapter you get Chief! Whoo! Ha. Please review and thanks for Reading! Also I wonder if any can predict where anything is heading. God bless you all!

20. Part I Chapter 19 (Beata'd)

A/N: You guys are really lucky all my classes keep getting canceled and now I'm just updating. Imagine that. three chapters in three days. Yay! At least it gets the plot going.

* * *

><p>Part I**

The Voice and Face of all Evil.

Chapter 19: Meetings and disagreements.

* * *

><p>"Shepard the Council and the others won't agree to this. I agree simply because of all the crap we've seen but they haven't seen everything we have. We have no proof," Garrus whispered to Shepard as the two walked through the Salarian Capital building.<p>

Hackett and the others had gotten what was left of an organized political body to meet on the Salarian home world and those who couldn't make the conference were joining through holograms.

Above the world, at least five hundred Salarian ships, the remaining

Earth Defense Fleet and Thran's own fleet surrounded the Planet. There was no way they were going to let what happened to Earth happen to Sur'Kesh.

"We have the Arbiter and Mr lightbulb here. That'll be proof enough, especially with that fleet of unknowns helping us out." Shepard replied back just as the elevator they were taking came to a stop and opened up into the meeting room.

It was nice with fresh long tables, water fountains, tile and nicely painted walls. She didn't know Salarians could decorate.

The Arbiter was the first to step off the elevator along with Thran'. Reluctant Promise floated after them. After seeing the last footage of Earth and the unknown fleet, the AI had become unusually quiet. For some reason it annoyed Shepard more than his constant talking. Garrus pushed out the wheelchair carrying the incapacitated Liara, Shepard following out after him with Lithyia following after her.

All eyes from the Representatives of the Galaxies races fell on them. Most studied the two strange aliens and the floating machine.

Only humans and barely a handful of the other races had seen the Elites. The Volus, Batarian, Krogan and others hadn't seen them at all.

Shepard rolled her eyes as she heard Urdnot Wreav's growl of a challenge. The Arbiter was an imitating figure. She knew Wreav or Wrex would want to spar with the Sangheili leader. She wondered how good of a fight it would be.

The Commander gave a nod to Hackett and the Councilors as her group came to stand by the table as the front was set aside for the Council.

"Now that everyone is hereâ€¦" Hackett stated nodding towards the group.

"Greeting fellow Diplomats. As you know I am Councilor Lithyia of the Asari Republic. We have gathered you all here today to bring all our kinds together and discuss what the best course of action should be," Lithyia stated with a flowing grace only the Asari could accomplish.

"We know why we're here," Wreav groaned out of boredom to which Wrex nudged him roughly to get him to shut up.

"Good," Lithyia nodded to Hackett. The admiral clicked a few commands into his own omni tool and a hologram of the Galaxy appeared over the Council table.

"As we know, the Citadel, Palavan, Earth and over a dozen other worlds have already been lost and its only been a few weeks. The rest of the Galaxy has already began sending their own ships to help fight the Parasite and Reapers but as you all probably know we can't win this one," Lithyia stated grimly which not even the Krogan bothered to retort.

"So here we are, on the edge of our hope. Why have you brought us

here Asari?" a familiar voice asked.

Shepard watched as her old Prothean friend walked out of the shadows from the back of the room and towards the front, his arms crossed and his face looking annoyed.

"Yes why are we here instead of fighting the enemy out there?" Wreav asked standing up. Before everyone began talking Shepard stepped up.

"Because of these three," She said nodding towards the two Elites and the Monitor.

"And just who exactly are they . . . gasp . . . Earth clan?" The Volus ambassador asked, his voice old and scratchy.

"Those two are called the Sangheili, or the Elite. They are like the Prothean. Except they are from a time before the Reapers." Shepard informed the group.

"From before the Reapers?" the Batarian Councilor gasped.

"Impossible," Javik stated.

"It's true. Over two billion years ago, our Galaxy was ruled by two different entities. The Covenant and the UNSC. The UNSC was made of humans. Genetically different than us but human none the less. The Covenantâ€¦" She started but looked at the Arbiter for help. The Elite then stepped in knowing how to explain his past better than she could.

"A religious hierarchy of species dedicated to eradicating humanity and finding the Great Journey," The Elite told everyone.

"And what was this Great Journey?" Lithyia asked, interested in the history lesson.

"The Great Journey was to activate a set of powerful ancient rings called the Halos. Promise," He said motioning for the Monitor. The silent AI came through and created a 3D hologram of a Halo ring.

"These rings were created by an ancient race called the Forerunners. The rings' sole purpose was to eradicate all sentient life in the Galaxy. Meant to destroy everything the Flood, or as you know them the Parasite, could use as food as a last resort. Unfortunately our war with ancient humanity had killed off most of our Warrior-Servant Caste. Even then our powered armor did nothing to stop the growing infection and the rings were fired." The Monitor said to everyone.

The Arbiter jumped back into the conversation. "When the Covenant first came into contact our holy Prophets told us they were filth to be cleansed off the Galaxy. We waged war with the Humans for 27 long years. In that time we burned world after Human world to molten glass, making the planets inhabitable."

The hologram changed to a different scene. Shepard watched as from what she could tell were Elite ships, glassed a planet's surface. She

could even here the screams of people. Several people gasped, Javik scowled at the elite, and the Krogan seemed amused. Well at least Wreav did.

"The war ended with humanities victory due to the fact we unleashed the Flood from their prison on the Halos. They were monstrous but we eventually defeated them, together Elites and Humans fighting side by side. Six years after that the last living Forerunner named the Didact awoke from his own prison and declared war upon our new found peace. We defeated him, but just barely and at the sacrifice of one of my friends," the Arbiter looked down slightly before looking up at the others as the image changed.

It was a large being clad in gray metal armor. Orange light shined around his armor as his pointed fingers were shaped in a claw and reaching out towards something. His look was evil.

"Then we expanded. We traversed the Universe. Colonizing Galaxies. Uplifting races. We built an empire. The UNSC and the New Covenant as allies. But like all good things it did not last. We were attacked. At first we believed it to be another space faring empire like our own but we were wrong. It was the Flood again along with creatures we had never seen. They destroyed our galaxies, our homes, our systems. No matter what we could not win, so we created a weapon of massive proportions. A planet sized weapon, powerful enough to wipe away not only the Flood, but all life in the known universe. We fired it and ended the war along with the ceasing existence of several races. However we had created worlds that could be protected from the blast and alas we refilled the Universe with life. Eventually I'm figuring your Reapers somehow came into play and well we know the rest," The Arbiter finished.

The looks of the other races ranged from disbelief, to shock, to anger to even sorrow for the Elite.

"Well this is all find and dandy but how does this help us?" Wreav asked leaning back in his chair and placing his feet on the table.

"Because the weapon, the Titan is still out there," Reluctant Promise stated.

"What?" Shepard asked in disbelief. Why hadn't she been told.

"It is out there. And only one can activate it. A human of old. Only one lives. And we must find him to save your Galaxy," The Arbiter stated. Shepard briefly wondered if the two had coordinated their speeches to run together.

"So your telling us that the only way for us to save our Galaxy is by destroying it? Seems like a faulty plan," Javik said walking closer to the Elite, hand on his side arm.

"Javikâ€|" Shepard warned.

"No. The Titan can create a slipspace hole large enough for thousands of ships to fit through. We send our ships through, set the Titan to fire while we're inside and the Galaxy is saved. Simple," Reluctant Promise stated with a bob in the air.

"Simple? You mean you want us to evacuate every planet and every ship so we can fire this weapon to just destroy all life in the Galaxy? And thats only to defeat the Flood. What about the Reapers?" A very vocal Batarian stated standing up from his seat.

"Either that or your galaxy perishes as mine did, and the Titan can be coded to target synthetics too. The Reapers will be destroyed as well," The Arbiter said in a warning voice. Shepard noticed his hands hovering over his swords. She really hoped nobody pushed the Elite. She'd prefer it if no one else died today.

"We beat the Reapers once. We can do it again and the Flood too." Javik stated turning away from the Elite.

"Fools! The Titan is your only chance and by that the Reclaimer is our only chance," Reluctant Promise huffed. Shepard almost face palmed. Why did the idiot AI have to call the easily tempered Prothean a fool?

"What did you call me?" Javik stated stopping in his tracks.

"This outta be goo,." Wreav chuckled form his seat only to earn a sigh from Wrex.

"Oh noâ€¦|" Liara stated trying to move her chair to intercept her Prothean friend from starting a fight. Garrus held her back telling her this wasn't a fight she should get mixed up in.

"You are being foolish. It is foolish to simply throw away your only viable option. Without it what else can you do?" Reluctant Promise asked.

Javik roared. He hated AI's as it was and he definitely did not need one telling him he was a fool. He still wondered why the Galaxy let the Geth live after what they did. He spun around drawing his side arm only to stop in place. Between him and the AI was the strange alien, the Arbiter.

"I would put that away," The Arbiter stated forcefully, powering up his Energy Sword with a crackle. "The AI speaks the truth. Do not be a fool as I once was," The Elite continued calmly. The air in the room had quickly tensed up.

"Javik..." Liara stated a moment before Shepard could.

"Now is not the time Commander and Dr. T'soni." The Prothean growled staring the Elite in the eyes.

"Nah. I have better things to waste my ammo on," Javik finally conceded putting back his side arm and continuing on his walk away.

Silence filled the room for a few moments before someone decided to speak up.

"Commander and what of this unknown fleet that apparently aided our forces defending Earth?" The Salarian Councilor asked breaking the awkward silence.

"Actually I don't know a lot about them but I think I know someone

who does," Katherine answered while turning towards the Monitor. Reluctant Promise looked around the crowd before realizing she was talking about him.

"Me?" He asked.

"Do you?" She asked suspiciously. The AI sighed.

"Yes I do. Its actually what has been troubling me for the past few hours," The AI turned towards the delegates. "You see the mysterious fleet that helped out in the defense of Earth was none other than a small Forerunner fleet. Do not ask how as I though the last of our ships were destroyed long ago. I too am confused by their arrival however I can assure, after seeing the battle, wherever they are, they will fight by our side." The Monitor said before looking away from the delegates and returning to his unusual quiet state. Shepard was annoyed by his antics of keeping information from her, but when she thought about it the Monitor had never done anything to harm her and with everything going on she had really no choice but to trust his word. She took a deep breath and took a step towards the delegates.

"Alright so you see now what the stakes are. Whats your decision? Are we gonna fight, and find this last Reclaimer so we live to see another day, or are we gonna let stupid politics get in the way again?" She asked crossing her arms over her chest.

"I don't know about the rest of these cowards but the Krogan will fight!" Wreav roared standing up.

"We will fight," Wrex agreed standing up and raising his fist.

"As will the Bartarins."

"And the Volus."

"Count the Hanar in."

"The Salarian are with you."

"You already know the Turians are on your side Commander."

"The Asari will fight to reclaim Thessia."

The room cheered as all of the Galaxies species began to cheer. It was a lot easier uniting them this time then it and been when they first fought the Reapers. Shepard smiled.

"Good." Shepard smiled, nodding at the room as a whole.

"I can't believe it was actually that easy," Garrus laughed. "I thought we'd have to bring them video proof or pictures, kind of like how we had to with Saren." The Turian laughed good heartedly.

"I think they've learned, especially with the war being right in our faces." Shepard smiled.

"One more thing Commander." Promise said floating over to her.

"What is it?" She asked still trying to remind herself about the talk

her and the little AI needed to have.

"We need ships."

"Why?"

"We have to go get the Reclaimer still."

"The Normandy can handle that on its own."

"Unfortunately not. Apparently the Flood have discovered his location and ships are already en-route to it. We'll need a fleet."

Shepard face palmed. If the Flood knew what they knew then they would send almost everything to stop them. She could only imagine the numbers they need to distract the fleet while the Normandy slipped in and got the Reclaimer out.

Katherine grit her teeth and with steel in her voice said "Then lets get us a fleet."

* * *

><p>"Commander we are approaching the planet," Joker informed her over the comm. Shepard let out a sigh. She wondered how badly outnumbered they would be.<p>

"Bet this battle will be one for the books," Garrus piped up from across the holotable in the war room. Legion was quiet, Javik grunted having come along just to fight more Reaper, Liara was nervous in her chair and Wrex, her old Krogan friend stared at the table with expectant eyes.

"Lets just hope these Elites are up for the Reapers challenge," Javik retorted.

"We are more than ready," The Arbiter stated from his place next to Shepard.

"Enough you two. We have enough to worry about right now without you two tearing each others throats out," Shepard told them while clearly annoyed. The two glared at each other for a moment before turning back to the holotable.

Suddenly the Normandy and the fleet dropped out of slipspace created by Thran's fleet. The holotable activated, the hologram filled with a planet. Large and machine in nature. Apparently it was a so called Shield World created by the Forerunner according to Reluctant Promise, and was apparently towards the edge of Galactic space, a decent way from where the fighting was taking place. She hoped the little AI and the Arbiter knew what they were doing. She sure as hell didn't.

"Whoaâ€¦!" Liara gasped.

Shepard watched with wild eyes as the hologram expanded outward. Thousands, tens of thousands of ships were surrounding the planets in a swarm. Almost immediately the ships turned and began approaching Shepard's own relatively meager fleet. She could only watch as the Flood and Reapers fleets prepared to destroy her own.

"Shit. We gotta move now." Shepard stated.

"Gear up guys! Lets get this done before our whole fleet is massacred!" She shouted, running towards the shuttle bay and armory.

Garrus, Javik, The Arbiter, and Wrex followed leaving Liara alone next to the holotable.

"Two thousand against over one hundred thousand? How can we win?" The Asari sighed to herself.

The Galaxy had leant what ships they could, with Thran's fleet at the helm, but it was not enough. Now she really understood what Shepard and the Monitor meant by the Reclaimer being their last hope.

There was no way to win this war without the last Reclaimer.

* * *

><p>AN: So here's another Chapter. I'm not to good at diplomatic scenes but yeah. So Chief next chapter! YAY! Finally! I've been wanting to write him. And for those asking questions, give it like five chapters and all of your answers will be revealed! Well not all but a good chunk. Things will really start changing once Chief comes into play, and in weird ways. Anyway thanks for reading! Review please! God bless you guys!**

21. Part I Chapter 20 (un beata'd)

**A/N Disclaimer: I own nothing except OC characters and plot line. All others belong to rightful owners. **

* * *

><p>Part I**

The Voice and Face of all Evil.

Chapter 20: The Last Reclaimer.

* * *

><p>"Lets do this boys." Shepard called out as the Shuttle came to a sudden halt, AA fire sodding out everywhere. The doors of the shuttle slide open, and the group of five jumped out. The terrain was a bouldery, lightly forested area. They had plenty of cover but so did the enemy. The door they needed to reach was around a kilometer and a half away in the side of a mountain. Right behind all the enemy troops.<p>

The shuttle lifted away at top speed barely avoiding AA fire.

Instantly they were greeted with enemy fire, plasma blue, red lasers, mass effect rounds, and bullets. Lots of bullets.

"Cover!" Shepard yelled, diving behind the nearest boulder she could

find.

She could here Wrex grunt as the Korgan was forced to dive behind cover. The Arbiter on her other side had activated his camouflage. Garrus was hiding behind a tree and Javik was behind a boulder far away from the group.

Shepard popped up over her boulder and fired a few rounds off. A few mass effect rounds hit her shields, draining them and a plasma blast bypassed her shields and hit her arm straight on. She yelled, ducking down and tearing her armor off as the plasma ate away at the metal.

"Shit! Guys kinetic barriers don't work against the blue and purple stuff! Probably plasma!" She called out to her team.

"Correct but worry not Commander my shields can hold." The Arbiter replied.

"Yeah but only yours." Garrus retorted.

"How many do we have out there Arbiter?" Shepard asked reloading her weapon.

"Hundreds commander. They are blocking the entrance to the installation below." The Arbiter confirmed, his camouflage allowing him to sneak closer to the enemy while the others were pinned down.

"Great." Shepard hissed. The enemy had predicted their move and now here they were. Their fleet outnumbered and outgunned. Their ground teams outnumbered and outgunned.

Garrus hopped over his cover and fired a few rounds, knocking out a canibal before diving behind a boulder. A few bullets scratched the top of his cover.

Javik used his superior biotic abilities managed to send a few singularities at the hordes before them. He managed to pick off a few but was forced back into cover.

"These monstrosities have advanced weaponry." The Prothean spat.

"The Flood have the ability to learn and use weaponry from any race they assimilate." The Arbiter informed as he ripped a Flood form in half with his sword.

Wrex moved from cover firing his shotgun at random before rolling to cover. His aim was perfect but the range his enemies were at made his shots almost useless.

Shepard peaked out of cover and fired a few times, knocking out a husk or two. She used her biotic abilities to create a barrier and charged for the cover Garrus was at. Her shields flared and failed as a mass effect round and bullets bounced off them.

A red laser and plasma blast missed her by inches. She slid to cover next to Garrus.

"Told you this would be one for the books." The Turian laughed. He stepped out of cover, took aim with his sniper and blasted a flood form to bits, then slid back into cover before his shields failed.

"Not the time Vakarian." Shepard said. She stood up and fired of a few shots accompanied by a warp before ducking back into cover. Another plasma blast missing her by inches.

Javik again moved to cover but was unable to get a shot off. A green plasma blast slicing his arm.

"Damn their weaponry." The Prothean cursed.

"Its hurts don't it?" Wrex commented throwing off a part of his arm armor. It had been melted through by a plasma blast.

"Joker whats the situation upstairs?" Shepard asked firing off a few rounds, missing the marauder by inches before diving behind a nearby tree for cover.

"Not good Shepard. We've already lost thirty ships. Thran's trying to form a perimeter around our ships. Our ships just can't take this kind of fire power. Our dreadnoughts are holding out but the other ships, especially the frigates, are getting blown to bits. We've taken down at least twenty of their own but damn Shepard theres too many of them." Joker replied.

The Commander let out a frustrated sigh as she tried to make a move for another boulder further up but jumped back as a few plasma rounds burnt the ground in front of her.

"At this rate the fleet will be destroyed before we even get to the door." Shepard stated trying to take down a few Flood forms. The forms noticed and manage to evade her shots.

"We need reinforcements down here." Garrus replied. "No way us five can take this whole army on our own."

"Even I have to agree on that one." Wrex stated. He blasted away a husk that got to close for comfort.

"No way we're gonna get any now though. That AA fire if starting to pick up." Garrus sighed.

Shepard looked up. A few fighters had come down to clear a landing for the Commander and her team but now the fighters were being picked off by the heavy gunfire. Theres no a transport would get down in one piece.

"Commander this is Thran'." A new voice said on the Comm channel.

"Thran'? Whats up?" Shepard grunted rolling to a nearby tree, gunning down a Flood form that had tried charging them.

"Commander I heard you need reinforcements. I have several Special ops teams that can help. Their on their way now."

"Thran' its suicide trying to send them down here! There to much AA

fire!" Shepard yelled over a nearby explosion of green.

"They should be arriving soon. good luck Commander. We have a battle to win." The elite stated before cutting off the communications.

"Cocky bastard." Wrex huffed. He stood up, charged a husk, blasted away a marauder and threw a flood form over his shoulder before having to duck behind cover as his shields failed. "What does he think he is? Krogan?" The bitter alien stated before blasting away another husk.

"Don't know why he'd want to be a smelly brute." Garrus called out over the comm. He rolled out of cover, blasted off the head of a marauder and rolled to cover again.

"Can it you two." Shepard stated. She charged out of cover heading to where Javik was. She took down another Flood form with her rifle, and a warp tore another one to pieces.

"But I agree with Garrus." Katherine finished, blowing a husks head off.

"These things disgust me." Javik commented blasting a husk away.

"You're telling me." Shepard said throwing another warp at the Flood. She was finding biotics to be effective against the corpses of rotting flesh.

"Incoming!" Garrus stated.

Shepard looked up. She saw pods flying down towards them, flying down very fast. The whistled down towards the earth. She followed them as they crashed down in front of her team at separate intervals, some smashing enemy troops to pieces.

The front of the pods burst open, and a war cry followed.

Elites and a few grunts hopped out from their respective pods. Elites blasted away any nearby attacks before taking cover, while grunts set up turrets or opened fire with their fuel rod guns.

"Thank the spirits." Garrus stated.

The Commander agreed and made her way to the nearest pod. She made sure to try and stay low. At least two dozen of the enemies in front of her had been killed off but there was still hundreds more before them.

A black armored elite kneeled down next to her, as she took cover behind a large boulder.

"Commander. Captain Rasul Sordem of the Fifth Battalion. Special ops team." The elites greeted standing up. He took aim with his carbine and took down a husk that was trying to sneak up on one of his elites then ducked down next to Shepard.

"How many of you are there Captain?" Shepard asked reloading her weapon again.

"Ten in my squad right here. Thirty more spread out over the area. They're going to knock out those AA guns and allow our transports to land. Once they do are troops are going to create a base and try to give they enemy something else to shout while we get to the door and get inside." Rasul stated heavily.

"Sounds like a plan, but a lot of men are going to die." Shepard stated, both of them standing up together and taking down there marauders before getting back into cover.

"They will die with honor. They will die stopping the parasite from destroying the Galaxy once again." the elite stated with a nod.

"Thens lets make sure we stop them."

* * *

><p>"Sir Shields at seventy two percent! The humans just lost another frigate!"<p>

"Squadron 10 just went dark sir."

"Asari reporting one of their ships has been boarded!"

Thran' stared at the screen showing the battle raging out side. His ships had tried to create a barrier of protection for the weaker ship but they couldn't protect all of them.

"Tell the Asari to detonate their ships engine. They will die either way." Thran ordered.

"Put all power to the starboard shields. Make sure nothing gets through them. Fire all starboard weapons on the nearest enemy ship. Tell the humans to fire their dreadnought at the nearest ship as well." the elite stated walking back to his seat and sitting down.

"Sir we just lost one of the frigates!" An elite cried. "The frigates left a hole in the perimeter! enemy ships are trying to get through!"

"Tell the Ascendant Justice and the Resurrection to close up the whole. Send squadrons one and two to reinforce them." Thran' stated. the one advantage of being outnumbered so badly was that not all the enemy ships could fire on him at once. It gave them the smallest chance of fighting back.

He watched as a ship belonging to the Salarian went up in flames from a MAC round.

"Tell the Salarians to focus their fire on the ship with the MAC cannon. Bring it down before it an do anymore damage." Thran' ordered. He watched as an old, flood covered, UNSC ship went up in flames.

"Good are there any forerunner vessels in the fleet?"

"Negative sir! Strongest vessels in their fleet are old covenant

warships." One of his officer reported. The elite wondered why the Flood wouldn't send stronger ships to protect a planet they didn't want them on.

"Sir you have one of those turians on the com."

"Let him through."

"Commander Thran! I am captain Ventures." The turian stumbled as his ship was hit by another enemy attack.

"Our ships are taking to much damage! We cant hold out forever!" The Turian stated.

"I know but we must hold till the Commander ship can get out safely. If not the fleet will bare down on them." Thran' replied

"Call for reinforcements!" The Turian pleaded.

"Even with reinforcements they would out number us. We must hold." the elite stated through grit teeth.

"Alright. Lets hope that Commander knows what she's doing."

* * *

><p>"I have no idea what I'm doing." Shepard muttered as she drove her omni blade down a flood forms throat and blasted a husk away with her biotics. "how the heck are we supposed to get over there?" She groaned rolling back behind a boulder.<p>

"Just give it time Commander. The teams will have those AA's down soon." Rasul replied over the com.

"Dang it sometimes these things just won't stay dead." Garrus hissed over the com as he brought his foot don on a Flood form that had tried getting back up.

Shepard spun around as a husk lunged at her. She kicked it in the chest and shot it a few times before spinning back towards the door and throwing a warp at a nearby marauder.

She noticed how the left side of the battlefield had suddenly grown quitter. She looked up and saw now AA fire from that side.

"Looks like your men got the job done." Shepard complimented as the rest of the AA fire soon died down.

"Yes. Phantoms inbound. Lets keep pushing forward! We'll have artillery soon enough." The elite stated.

Shepard nodded in agreement.

Katherine moved ahead, gun at the ready. She fire off a few rounds putting down a husk, a few mass effect rounds hitting her before the attacker was out down by a quick shot form Garrus. She counted down her current path, dodging enemy fire, rolling to cover, firing at the enemy. She sent a shockwave out obliterating a few husks that got to close for comfort.

A flood form managed to catch her off guard and tackled the Commander. This time though she wasn't tired or wounded.

Placing her legs on its gut, the commander kicked the beast off her. With a burst of energy she hopped to her feet and drew her omni blade. Not bothering to give the monster a chance to get up, she drove the blade through its gut and upwards.

"You know what I've been wondering how did the Flood know we were coming?" Garrus stated as he shot another marauder through the head.

"Maybe we have a traitor." Javik stated nonchalantly.

"Can the gravemind control people this far away?" Shepard asked reloading.

"No at least not from such a distance." The Arbiter replied as he slashed two flood forms in half with skilled and nimble moves.

"See no worries guys." Shepard stated with a smile. It was just small talk.

"Unless he has someone infected." The Elite retorted.

"But then they'd look like ugly here. Yuck." Garrus stated wiping a piece of rotten flesh off him. "Remind me not to shoot them at point blank with a sniper. You gets guts all over you."

Shepard smirked and continued firing when fear struck her.

"Wait Arbiter you remember that marine back in the subway on Earth? He didn't turn till we were underground in the subway."

"So?" Garrus asked.

"What the Commander means is someone among us could be infected and we wouldn't even know it." The Arbiter stated.

"At least its not one of us." Wrex grumbled ramming an older pure form head on.

"Then who?" Garrus asked his voice starting to become serious. The likely hood of a traitor was all too possible now that he thought about it.

Shepard ducked down behind a large boulder, elites moving up on her side as she thought. Her mind raced with possibilities. She wondered how the Flood would have gotten the information so quickly. Reluctant Promise had intercepted an encrypted signal from one of their forerunner cruisers in Turian space headed towards the fleet in Quarian space. If he had told the Flood then why would he tell them the Flood were on their way? No its wasn't him.

The red head stood up and blasted away a maunder with biotic blast. She leaped over the boulder firing a few shots as purple airships, fast and small bombe the Flood forces with green plasma. Using her momentum she rolled behind a nearby tree to reload as her team and the elites pushed forward.

Liara? No Liara had been unconscious and in a wheel chair. Besides that she had been with Shepard or Dr. Diaz almost every moment since they had gotten aboard the Normandy. Garrus? No. She would've seen it. Wrex? Maybe. He had seemed quiet but only during the meeting. Maybe it was him.

Katherine looked over to where he was and saw the all too familiar smirk of a Krogan enjoying the battle.

No not him she concluded. Then it hit her. Lithyia. The Councilor who had let the information of the Arbiter slip so the whole Council, Shepard, and her team would end up in the room under the Galactic Trade Center. The Asari who for some reason just wanted to be aboard the Normandy when they left Earth.

"Shit!" Shepard cried both from the revelation and from blasting away a flood form that had gotten the jump on her.

"It's Lithyia!" she yelled over the com. Not waiting for a reply she radioed Joker.

"Joker come in!" She yelled. No response.

"Shit! Joker!"

* * *

><p>Lithyia smiled at the body of the unconscious pilot. Him and the AI had been easy enough to take care of. Legion was out as well. Liara locked in her room. Traynor dead and straggled. The rest of the crew? Shot or left alone to believe their pilot was still in charge.<p>

She had been so glad when all the fighters had gone down. Legion was alone, and Liara was injured. It had been too easy.

Her eyes glowed a vicious green as did her biotics. She walked around to the front of the pilot chair and sat down. She checked the instruments and made sure everything was ready. Once it was, she pulled the Normandy out of the planet's atmosphere and shot towards the battle.

I have taken the ship

Good Now we have fun_

* * *

><p>"Communications are blocked with the Normandy Shepard!" Garrus stated.<p>

Shepard slammed her rifle into a husk as hard as she could. She couldn't believe it. The Gravemind had Lithyia. The councilor who was her friend.

Shepard heard something. A high pitched whining. She looked up as a shadow fell over the battlefield and the Flood and Reapers' forces began to pull back.

With a thud, the earth shaking beneath it, a Reaper destroyer landed

right over the door to the instillation.

It thundered its massive horn and its beam powered up.

"Everyone down!" Shepard yelled. A red flash blinded her and a resonating of the Earth is all she felt. She flew back and hit a tree, her ears ringing and her eyes hazy from the explosion.

Blinking her eyes, Katherine slowly got to her feet only to see the red beam powering up again.

As with another Earth shattering thud three more machines fell from the sky, except these ones stood facing the Reapers, on four legs, with dark purple armor and were one hundred meters in height themselves two thirds of the Reapers height.

"Scarabs!" A random elite cried out.

Before the Reaper could retaliate the three walking platforms opened fire with their main guns. A pure beam of super heated plasma firing at almost half the speed of light. The bright white light was a contrast to the Destroyers red.

The Reapers groaned and stepped backwards away from the assaulters before returning fire. Its red beam glanced off one of the scarabs new armor and obliterated nearby landscape instead.

"That's the last of the reinforcements I can send you Shepard." Thran informed though his voice was riddled with static.

"Thran! Do you know where the normandy is?" The commander yelled as she ran. dozens of other Covenant ground troops hopped out of the scarab and aided the advancing ground teams. Hunters included.

"Iâ€¦. Normâ€¦. Whâ€¦. sâ€¦. Commâ€¦. Losingâ€¦.conâ€¦. goâ€¦ ckâ€¦." thran's voice finally clipped out.

"Damn lost contact. Garrus keep trying to reach them. We have to warn Joker." Shepard ordered as she helped a nearby grunt deal with a husk.

"Got it Shepard I'll keep trying." the tyrian replied as he reloaded and fired an overload at a group of marauders.

Katherine stumbled as the four behemoths above her continued to trade fire.

"Commander!" A voice called over to her. She looked and saw Rasul waving her over to him. she ran over to him, avoiding what enemy rounds flew her way and safely made behind the large boulders the Captain was behind. Several other elites and grunts were there standing around.

"What going on captain?" She asked walking up to the group.

"Commander these are the squad leaders sent down here. I gathered them and over here to inform of progress on the battle in space and

here. According to what communications I have received the fleet only has an hour or two before they are completely overwhelmed. We must move quicker. Now commander, the squads will set up defensive perimeters and once that Reaper is destroyed we will set up a small base of operations over the doorway. Commander you'll only have an hour. I can only guarantee that. We are mighty but not enough to hold the parasite back forever. Hurry and get the human. I will send several of my quad with you. Raaz and Litz!" The elite called. To other elites ran over to him from a nearby boulder. they both had red armor.

"You and your grunts will accompany the Commander down in the installation. Make sure they get in and out at all costs." Rasul ordered.

"Sir." the two elites nodded.

"Go commander!" The elite roared. The others roared as well and together the group charged back into the battle.

* * *

><p>Shepard shot the last husk in the head four times before moving on. It had cut her pretty badly on the check. Thats what she got for spending to much time on that brute who had charged her.<p>

"Shepard there you are. I was worried you got lost." Wrex said as she walked up to the group next to the large metallic door sticking into the side of mountain. The two elites groups were there with Captain Rasul along with her own.

They could hear the massive steps of the two remaining scarabs. One had been destroyed but they had brought down the destroyer at least.

"Im fine thanks for worrying but we have bigger problems. We have an hour to find this guy before we have to get out of here. The Captain assured me they could hold this position for that long but any longer hes not sure." She informed them reloading her rifle.

"Then lets get this done." Javik said walking up to the door.

"Now how do we open this?" The Prothean asked.

"Commander!" A far off voice called, high pitched and annoying.

The group looked around

"Commander!" the voice called out again. It was Garrus who spotted the owner, up in the sky, flying down towards them.

"Well if it isn't lightbulb." He chuckled, earning a confused glance from the elites around, except the Arbiter who knew the nickname.

Reluctant Promise floated down to them in a matter of seconds huffing and puffing as if he was out of breath.

"Promise what are you doing down here?" Shepard asked.

"Lithyiaâ€¦ Killed Traynorâ€¦ Joker unconsciousâ€¦ control over Normandy." The monitor stated.

**Flashback**

Reluctant Promise whistled lowly to himself as he floated through the halls headed to CSC room. He couldn't help but wonder about the Forerunner fleet. His creators were dead weren't they? Then how could there still be a fleet?

He shook himself and continued down his path when he heard voices. Agitated and strained. He hovered around the corner and froze in place.

_There was the blue Asari councilor, holding the young human named Traynor by the throat and up in the air. Traynor's face was bloodied and her nose obviously broken. The rest of the crew? dead. Shot or thrown about with biotic abilities. _

_"Poor specialist Traynor. Never getting to admit her feelings for the Commander." The Asari hissed though her voice was mixed with another. One that paralyzed him with fear even though he was an AI and he shouldn't feel fear. _

"She'll stop youâ€¦" Traynor managed to state, blood leaking from her mouth.

"Please. She can barely handle one of those Flood forms. Like she's a challenge for me."

"Fuck you." Traynor said spitting blood onto the Asari's face.

_"You'd like to wouldn't you?" Lithyia laughed, her eyes glowing a violent green. She clenched her hand, her biotic power surging through her and she gathered a warp in her free hand. _

_"Goodbye Specialist." She laughed and plunged the warp into her gut. A manic deep laugh echoing through the room. _

Before the monitor could do anything, he was grabbed from behind and pulled back into the hallway.

It was the Geth named Legion who had grabbed them.

_"AI Promise. Leave and find Shepard. I will distract and fool the organic traitor. Quick go. Make sure Shepard knows of this." The Geth stated drawing his gun and moving past the monitor and into the room with Lithyia. _

And that's what the AI had done. He hacked his way into the systems and fled through one of the escape pods, making sure the systems read that the escape pod had never left. He didn't know it but it had worked in fooling the Asari, especially once Legion had lied to her about the AI being rampant and him being forced to 'knock out' the monitor.

**End Flashback **

"So Lithyia has the Normandy?" Shepard said her voice soft and

cold.

"Yes."

"Crap!" the Commander yelled glowing blue with her biotics.

"Great one more problem to add to the list." Garrus sighed.

"I will inform Thran' about the Normandy. You need to get down there." Ralus stated.

"Agreed. Now how do we open this thing." She questioned.

"Oh allow me!" The monitor stated happily.

"And hes backâ€|" Garrus chuckled.

* * *

><p>The group slowly made their way down the pristine and smooth metallic halls of the Forerunner shield world. It was dark besides their own flashlights and the light blue lining of the walls.<p>

"Well its just nice and peachy in here isn't it?" Garrus sighed.

"Shut up Turian." Wrex retorted.

Shepard moved around a corner, gun at the ready.

"Where to Promise?"

"Forward Commander. We are near." The AI replied. Apparently the Arbiter only knew where the door and planet where, not the exact location of where the Reclaimer was. Fortunately Reluctant was a Forerunner AI and was able to hack the systems and find out where the Reclaimer was.

The group continued. Their footsteps were heavy as they half jogged down the halls. Time was running and they didn't have a lot of it.

Shepard heard something. Footsteps, but not from her group.

"Hold it!" she ordered throwing up a fist.

A split second later a squeal filled the air as a grunt in the back died.

"Flood!" an elite yelled.

Shepard looked back. It was one of those monster Pure forms she and the Arbiter had fought, except now there were two.

"Run!" She yelled as the group opened fire, the Pure forms healing almost instantly as they charged after them.

"How did they get in here!" Garrus yelled.

"Unknown!" Promise stated, floating backwards and blasting one of the beasts back with his own beam.

They sprinted around another corner, the beasts still after them.

"Commander find the Reclaimer! We will hold them off!" The elite named Raaz called out, him and the other elite dropping back, drawing their energy swords. They ordered their grunts to stay with the Commander and the few grunts willing obeyed though one stayed behind with them drawing his plasma pistol along side his fellow soldiers.

Shepard didn't have time to argue as the others continued down the hall. All she could tell them was a thank you before following the group.

Wrex however had other ideas.

"Go Commander!" He yelled turning around and standing with the elites.

"Wait Wrex!" She yelled stopping only to be grabbed by Garrus.

"Come on Shepard. He knows what he's doing." The tyrian stated.

* * *

><p>The two beasts stopped before the red armored Elites and Korgan. They roared and beat on their chests, ready for their next kill.<p>

"Today we die with honor." Raaz growled as he twirled his energy sword. The grunt yelled something in his own language. A battle cry of his own.

"Today we die like Korgan!" Wrex roared cocking his shotgun.

Roars filled the air and the four charged at the Flood forms.

* * *

><p>Shepard ran into a room. The Arbiter and the other had been caught up in a firefight with a few flood forms but she had managed to slip through and follow the monitors directions.<p>

She looked around the room and like Promise had said there was only one thing in the large room. At the very end was a cryo tube. Similar to the one she had seen the Arbiter in.

The red head checked the room before moving in any further but with only the cryo tube in there she didn't find anything.

Slowly the Commander made her way towards the cryo tube. She studied the room and wondered briefly what the Forerunner were like in their prime. They seemed even more advanced than the Prothean. More elegant.

Finally she made it to the cryo tube. She could barely see inside it. A large human in green armor, a golden visor. His armor was bulkier

than any Alliance marines. She wondered if all the soldiers of his time wore armor like that.

She wondered if Reluctant was sure in his directions. He had told her to poke the glass and a certain series of symbols would pop up. The Arbiter then informed her that she would be pressing the one shaped like a planet to the left, the triangular symbol in the middle and to the right she would press one looking like a sword.

Carefully, Katherine pressed on the glass and was intrigued how dozens of different blue symbols appeared on the glass.

The Commander checked behind her, wary of anyone trying to ambush her.

It took her a few minutes but Shepard managed to get all the right symbols. When she finished the symbols all disappeared.

The glass door hissed and Shepard backed away.

Fog leaked out of the cryo tube. However, this was not going to be like the Arbiter's awakening.

Before she knew it, a fist was in her gut and she flew back hard into the ground.

Her shields had failed and her armor was slightly indented. She heaved for air and sat up only to see the green armored human charging her.

The Commander rolled away as his fist slammed into the floor where she had been, the metal denting slightly.

She threw a singularity at her attacker and spared a glance at the cryo tube hoping the Reclaimer was awake and would help her. When she saw it empty was when she realized the Reclaimer was the one attacking her.

The green armored man spun around her attack and continued on his sprint at her.

Shepard rolled to her feet, firing her pistol before being tackled to the ground.

She knelt her attacker in the gut but was unsuccessful at getting him off like that. Instead she, at point blank range blasted out a shockwave. That did the job and sent her attacker flying off her.

Katherine climbed to her feet just in time to avoid another charge.

Now it was a fist fight.

Shepard blocked a hit to her face, twirled around and blocked another punch to her gut. She returned the favor with several jabs to her attacker's gut but all were effortlessly blocked.

A hard punch sent her reeling back and she threw out a biotic punch in retaliation.

Her hand was caught and twisted the wrong way, her arm popping out of its socket instantly.

She cried out in pain and was knocked to the ground with a hard kick to the gut.

A knee on her chest and a knife to her throat.

"Where am I?" the green, what she could now tell was a man, asked. His voice was deep and scratchy. It also sounded tired. As if its bearer had seen to much for a lifetime.

"In some Forerunner installation!" Shepard coughed. Her lungs were being crushed under his massive weight.

"And who are you?"

"Commander Shepard. Systems Alliance." She stated trying to catch her breath and push the knee off but to no avail.

"And how did I get here?" The man asked pressing the knife against her throat.

"I don't know! But theâ€¦" She started.

"Demon!" Another voice interrupted. The two looked towards the door. Shepard group, minus two grunts were standing there.

"Arbiter?" The man asked hesitantly.

"Shepard!" Garrus yelled raising his rifle. The Arbiter grabbed it a forcefully lowered it. He could tell the Demon was not well.

"Yes. Its me friend. We have come to get you. We need your help." The elite calmly stated slowly walking over to the two.

"And she?" The green armored man asked looking at Shepard.

"A friend. A trustworthy one like Lasky." The Arbiter explained.

Slowly the green armored man released the Commander who exploded into gasps of air and a few coughs.

"And who exactly are you?" Garrus asked glaring at the man.

"Sierra 117 orâ€¦" The man started.

"The Master Chief."

* * *

><p>ARRRRRRGGGGHHHH!

They have awakened the fourth!

No!

Stop them!

Kill them all!

They shall perish under the might of the Reaper!

Enough! We are not done yet. Have the ship arrived at the planet with the two girls?

They are only hours away sir. The first one may be challenging but the other? HA! That planet is weak. Too innocent to do anything or have anything that can harm us!

_Make sure they are destroyed embodiment. _

_I will. _

Good. Now Gravemind?

Don't worry.. I will take care of them.

* * *

><p>AN Whooooo! And we have a chief! Now it had to be different cause well what ME/HALO vic doesn't have a fight scene between Commander Shepard and the Master Chief? Finally we have a chief. Dont worry next chapter he'll show off some moves and what not. The plot thickens and more... 'heroes' are going to appear now but well it won't be what you expect At least for a bit. But everything makes sense and ties together Now our heroes They still have to get back up top so the Chief can show off some. And what about Lithya? Can they save the Normandy and her surviving crew? Read next time to find out! Thanks for reading! Please Review and God Bless you all!**

22. Part I Chapter 21 (beata'd)

A/N Thanks to all my reviewers again! Also thanks to my beta reader LethoztheDestroyer!

**ChasCT2: The Flood took over the universe once with the war against the Reclaimers. The forerunner are all but extinct. **

Delat 8: Cortanna may or may not be back. you'll have to see.

**AK74FU2: Yes there will be a part 2. There will be five parts to this story. **

* * *

><p>Part I**

The Voice and Face of all Evil.

Chapter 21: A new Ally.

* * *

><p>"So you're the last Reclaimer?" Shepard asked looking the man in

green up and down. He was impressive but in all honesty she had expected more. A man commanding respect and shouting victory to the heavens. Instead they had this man, in worn armor, and who seemed to prefer the company of the air than of people.<p>

"Apparently." Master Chief replied. He walked back to the cryo tube and grabbed the only weapon inside, his trusty assault rifle. He turned around and eyed the small single Grunt curiously. The little alien was only staring at him in awe not fear. He wasn't used to that.

"Not impressive." Javik stated out loud, earning a glare from Shepard. She didn't want to piss this guy off. They needed his help.

"That looks old." Garrus stated as he inspected the weapon from afar.

"He hasn't been awake in a long time." The Arbiter defended. The air was filled with the cocking of the rifle gaining the attention of the others.

"How long?" The man in green asked.

"Approximatelyâ€|" Reluctant Promise started before being cut off by the Arbiter.

"A long time. We will explain for now we must go." The Elite stated glaring at the machine. The AI only stared back in confusion. "The parasite have returned." The Elite stated taking a step towards his old friend.

The Spartan looked up at the Elite then back at the others, his visor hiding his face from them. Shepard wondered how he looked but when she heard loud footsteps coming from behind them she decided it could wait.

As one, all of the group spun around, weapons at the ready.

It was Wrex, carrying a heavily bleeding Elite, his own green blood dripping to the floor.

"They weren't that tough." The Krogan coughed before falling forward onto one knee and dropping the elite.

Garrus, Javik, and the Arbiter rushed forward to their wounded allies. The Arbiter checked his fellow Elite while the other two helped up the large Krogan.

"How are you holding up Wrex?" Shepard asked rushing over to her old friend. The Krogan shrugged the other two off him, his pride wounded slightly from having to be helped up,.

"Fine. Though Its wise to avoid those things if we can." The Krogan stated looking past Shepard, at the man in green armor whom seemed to be just staring at them.

"And is that him?" The Krogan asked clearly disappointed.

"Yes. His name is the Master Chief or at least thats what he calls

himself." Shepard stated looking at their new 'friend'.

"He doesn't seem that tough." The Krogan grunted drawing his shotgun from his back and loading it up.

Shepard decided not to get into it with him and turned away.

"All right guys listen up." the Commander called. "At all costs we protect him." She said pointing to the Spartan. "He gets out in one piece even if we don't. Now we need to hurry so no pit stops. The fleet can't hold out forever. Let's move!" She yelled earning a few nods from several of the troops.

She looked over at the Chief who gave her a small nod. She hoped he followed orders. At least for right now. She had to get them out alive.

"I'll have to stay in the back and carry him. He won't survive if he gets shot again." The Arbiter stated as the group exited the empty Forerunner room and moved back into the installation. Garrus, Javik and Shepard took point. Wrex and the Chief stayed in the center. While the surviving grunt and the Arbiter took the back, Reluctant Promise covering them.

The group's footsteps echoed through the ancient and abandoned halls. Shepard tried a few times to contact the Normandy but could never get through no matter how many times she tried. She hoped that Lithia hadn't killed everyone or destroyed the Normandy.

either way she pushed the thoughts aside and focused on the present, tightening her grip on her weapon.

She was lucky she had as a roar echoed through the corridors and another monstrous Pure Form came charging at them from the darkness in front.

When they all opened fire, Shepard even throwing a singularity to slow it down. It tore through the singularity easily and slammed straight into the group. In such close quarters they had no room to dodge.

The beast tossed Katherine into a wall like a rag doll, Garrus over its shoulder like paper, Javik fared no better as he hit the roof then falling back to the floor.

Its momentum kept it going where it barreled through the grunt, Wrex and the Chief before finally toppling the Arbiter his comrade and the monitor.

It roared in triumph as it charged twenty feet down the hall before deciding to turn around. When it did several of its enemies were already standing.

"What is this?" John asked as he fired his rifle at the beast, enticing another roar from it.

"An abomination." The Arbiter replied getting to his feet.

the monster charged at them again but this time its charge wasn't with opposition.

"Get them out of here." The Chief stated before charging the monster himself.

"Demon!" The Arbiter yelled.

"Wait!" Shepard yelled as well but it was too late.

John fired at the beast, realizing his bullets did nothing he instead tossed his weapon at it. As the beast deflected the metal weapon he slammed into its front.

The two behemoths clashed, the Spartan versus the Beast.

The Chief grabbed onto both its arms, placing his feet down firmly and used all his strength to hold the Beast back. It roared in anger and tried to punch back, but surprisingly the Beast couldn't. The two were locked in a match of sheer strength.

However, despite the man's incredible strength, the Flood had more endurance than he did.

Slowly the Chief was pushed back. He grunted underneath his helmet, tightening his grip.

The group behind the two watched in awe. Even the Arbiter and Wrex hadn't been able to hold out as long against the beast.

Shepard raised an eyebrow. This man was certainly a lot stronger than her.

Chief had to think fast. He released the Beast and sidestepped forward, then drove his knee into its gut as it lurched forward. The Spartan grabbed it and pushed it back as hard as he could, which was enough to send it stumbling back.

The Pure Form roared and slammed its two arms into the ground. It was filled with rage and an animalistic sense of challenge. It felt threatened.

"Go." Chief stated glancing back at the others as he drew a combat knife from somewhere on his armor.

Shepard pushed past the other and gave a nod to Garrus.

"Let's go everyone!" Garrus called out. The group looked back between him and Shepard, seeing her staring at the beast, omni blade drawn, they got the hint. The Commander would fight with this man. They would bring the monster down.

"Get outside with the others and radio Joker to come get us. We'll meet you up there." Shepard stated never looking back.

It took a few seconds but the group was off after that. Fortunately the Beast wasn't interested in them only in the Spartan who dared to stand against it. They left the two heroes alone against a monster made from death and plague.

"Well this should be fun." Shepard stated her eyes glowing blue, a singularity forming in her hand. She had put her weapons away. They

wouldn't do much against the beast.

"You should've gone with them." The Spartan replied shortly.

"You can't beat it alone. Even you know that." Shepard replied as the beast charged.

"Maybe not." John replied as the two lunged at the monster. They clashed. Monster versus Spartan and Hero.

* * *

><p>In another place, in another time, lightning struck in the distance as a a teenaged girl with dark brown hair cried out in pain. She watched a part of her get destroyed in front of her. It was a terrible feeling. She cling to her blue Eskimo like clothing as pain racked her body and as she lost consciousness a vision of green and red filled her mind.<p>

* * *

><p>Thran' stumbled to his chair as the ship shook violently once more. He grumbled a few unpleasant things under his breath before sitting down in his seat and tapping a few commands into the side controls of it.<p>

"Sir hull breach on the lower levels! We're venting atmosphere!" A Elite cried.

"Shield down! We need to recharge sir! We're sitting ducks!" A second Elite called out.

Thran' slammed his fist on the chairs arm rest. A growl escaped his mandibles. They were losing. Of course, he knew they would, but things were going even worse. Most of his ships had lost their shields and were now taking the bulk of the attack with their hulls. The hulls were thick and strong but they could only last so long.

"Move us behind the other ships! Are the Ilysums and Retributions shields still operational?" He asked.

"Yes sir. They still have close to full power."

"Then pull them in front of us. Tell the Humans and the ones called Turians to fire on the ships nearest us. If we fall then a hole will open in the defenses one large enough for the enemy to exploit." Thran' explained. His ship was easily the biggest and strongest of the allied forces fleet. They couldn't fall or else the fleet would fall even quicker.

"Tell the fourth, sixth, ninth and tenth fighter squadrons to pull back and make sure no enemy fighter gets through. I want them to destroy everything that dares to pass them." The Elite ordered his annoyance with the battle showing.

"Sir incoming transmission form the Normandy!." A Grunt called.

"Shepardâ€| Patch it through!" the Elite ordered as another shake ran

through his ship. The battle was not going well. At least ten percent if not more of their ships were destroyed, only a few of his own but still. Another sixty percent was damaged. The others were fine but they could only provide so much help in such an intense war zone.

"Thran'! Thank the gods!" Another voice stated. Thran' knew it wasn't Shepard though he believed he knew the voice.

"You are Lithina?" He asked unsure.

"Lithia! Thran'! By the gods they've killed Shepard! We barely got out of there! The Arbiters in cirtical conditions as is Garrus! We need to retreat! The reclaimer is dead! He's gone! They got themâ€|" Lithia said, her voice catching in her throat as tears filled her eyes.

Thran' stared at the screen in front of him as another Asari ship blew into a billion pieces. He couldn't believe it. The Commander, The Arbiter, even the Reclaimer. He found himself in shock, unable to move. Now what could they do?

"Thran' please we need to go now!" Lithia cried over the com. He shook his head and saw the others of his crew staring at him with wide and shocked eyes. Everyone was silent. Thran flexed his mandibles and straightened his posture.

"Send a message to the fleet. We are falling back." Thran' ordered with a voice of steel. His friends had failed however he would not. He could still protect his people and the others. The war was far from over.

* * *

><p>Shepard slipped underneath another of the beasts swings, driving her blade through its arm just as the Chief slammed his heel into its back sending it stumbling forward.<p>

She was impressed with the soliders abilities. He was fast, strong and had a great mind for combat. He was a bit quiet though.

She fired off a warp at the beast, catching it in its arm as she climbed to her feet next to the Spartan, still wielding his knife.

"We need to kill this thing now." Katherine stated through heavy breath.

"How?" Chief stated. He had fought plenty of monsters in his time, but none of them could heal like this thing. the kicks and punches he had given to it were bone shattering attacks. Ones that would've killed almost anything, save a Brute or a Hunter. A Brute was just too dumb to realize how hurt it was.

"Wish we had a grenade or something. It will die if we can blow it up from the inside." Shepard informed him as the Beast turned and lunged at them once more.

She side stepped it and twirled around it, while Chief simply ducked under its arm.

the Beast roared again as it spun around once more to face them.

A large group couldn't dodge in the hallway but two enhanced soldiers? It was easy for the two. If only killing the thing was just as easy.

"What about those blue things you're shooting at it? What if we put on inside it?" The Chief asked as he threw his blade at the beast to buy them a few seconds to talk. The blade sunk to its hilt as it hit the beast. The throw was hard enough to cause the creature to take a few steps back.

"Maybe but how are we gonna open up a hole that big?" Shepard asked throwing up a barrier of biotic energy in front of the beast as it tried to charge only to hit the barrier head on. It didn't have enough momentum to rip clean through the barrier but the blue shield did crack all around.

"Leave that to me." John replied as he charged the beast, the barrier shattering into a million blue pieces before fading away.

Shepard watched as the Spartan took the beast on again in close quarters.

Chief ducked under one of the beast's swinging arms, and drove his fist into its center. The Beast stumbled back from the blow and swung at him again. He stepped back just out of reach of the arm and lunged forward. His hands slammed into its side and the two moved back as the Beast was forced backwards a few feet.

He slammed his foot into the Beast's center. Again the beast stumbled back allowing him to reach and grab his knife.

With a great tug he pulled the knife down, opening a huge foot long gash in the Beast's chest.

An arm slammed into the Spartan and sent him flying back and into the wall, landing between Shepard and the beast with a thud, knife still in hand.

Shepard knew that was her opening, and poured everything he had into a single warp. She cast the warp into the wound, where the gash sealed up almost a second after the warp had entered.

The Beast roared but its roar slowly died as its body began to crumble and fall apart, molecule by molecule.

John got to his feet as the beast turned into a pure pile of ash in front of him. He pulled out his rifle and readied it up for action.

"It worked." Shepard said with a smile and brushing part of her hair behind her ear.

The Spartan didn't say anything as he sheathed his knife. Without a word the Spartan turned around and looked at her, before looking at the hallway behind her.

"Right." She stated.

* * *

><p>It only took the two a few minutes to catch the others at the entrance, the purple blood of the bleeding Elite had been a easy bread crumb trail to follow.<p>

They two had said nothing to each others. Well Chief had said nothing. Shepard had said a few things trying to learn more about him. After all he was supposed to be their savior and she wanted to know more about him. She wanted to make sure he was on their side. Though all her attempts at small talk failed.

Finally they made it to the entrance and the two stopped, confusion littering their thoughts as they stood at the end of the hallway. Over two dozen people were inside, standing near the door. Many were grunts and elites. Shepard wondered what had happened. Why they were still there.

"Garrus why are you still in here? And Captain Rasul what are you doing here?" Shepard asked confused. The Spartan tilted his own head in confusion. He had clearly heard them get ordered to go outside and radio evac.

The Elite walked over to her with Garrus. She look behind them and saw Wrex, and two large looking aliens, Hunters, holding the doors. A pounding echoed from the outside as well as very soft shrieks.

"What happened?" Shepard asked as she saw the Elite captains left side of his head wrapped in cloth.

"The fleet was defeated. The enemy landed their own troops. Hundreds of thousands against us. We didn't stand a chance." The Captain sighed.

"What?" Shepard deadpanned with wide eyes.

"Shepard the fleet is gone. They lost. They enemies won. We've run out of luck." Garrus sighed placing a hand on her shoulder.

"No. No. Jokers still up there. We have to get to the Normandy! Lithyia is still up there!" Katherine stated looking at them with defeated eyes. Garrus shook his head, Javik was staring at the ground with crossed arms, and even the monitor was quiet, his blue light dim.

She sighed and ran a hand through her hair. She knew she had to keep herself together. For her men.

With a another sigh she meet the Captains eyes.

"How many of your men survived?" She asked.

"Twelve in total." The Elite stated looking back at the survivors. The Arbiter made his way to them.

"Our fellow Elite is dead. He bled out." The old Elite stated calmly. Shepard shook her head and looked towards her group.

"I'm sorry." She stated before glancing up at the Spartan. He was

just watching them not saying anything. She ignored him and looked back to the elites.

"Now what Commander? We can't hold out forever." The Arbiter said motioning to the door as a loud thud echoed from the outside, the metal starting to dent inward despite the Krogan and Hunters holding the door in place.

"Now you can come with me." A voice stated from behind the Spartan. No one had ever seen Shepard and the Spartan spin around that fast with raised weapons.

A woman stood before them. Her skin looked soft and more pale colored. Her clothing was elegant

and she held a confidence, a sense of power about her. John had seen a similar figure before.

Next to her was something else. A machine. A Promethean Knight, its lights blue and it stood calmly next to the woman.

"And you are?" John asked before the others could. His sensitive ears could pick up the others' attentions shifting to them and even heard a few guns cock up in defense.

"Someone who wants to help but quick we must go. That door will not last long." She stated nodding towards Wrex and the Hunters.

"And how do we know we can trust you?" Shepard asked skeptically.

"You don't. But you don't have much of a choice at this point. The Flood are coming and I want to help but we must leave now." The woman said in a worried voice, flinching slightly as the door bent inward even more from the outside.

Shepard shared a glance with the Arbiter and the Captain.

"Where are we going?" She asked.

"A place safe from them. The Reapers, the Flood and their allies." The woman stated.

"Allies?" Chief asked again in his short voice.

"All will be explained but we need to go now." She stated as the door bent inward again and light entered the hall, a screech filling the air as the hunters and Krogan stumbled back as the door finally gave way.

The woman went and pressed something on her wrist. A small slipspace portal opened up in front of her.

"Quick!" She yelled motioning for them to go inside as rifle fire filled the air.

Shepard grunted. They had no choice but to trust her.

"Let's go!" Shepard yelled. She turned and watched as the Captain and several others ran into the portal without question. Chief and the Arbiter stood by her firing in the close quarters at the five Flood

Forms that had managed to make it in. Wrex stumbled back to them as well as the Hunters. The combined efforts was enough to annihilate the five Flood Forms. However, like their name sake dozens began to flood in.

"Time to go Commander." The woman stated. She raised her arm, a white weapon in her hand.

Shepard and the other watched as a beam of pure blue light shot forward and cut the dozen or more Flood Forms in half. Still more began to pour in.

Suddenly the Knight rushed forward and cut a few in half.

"We leave now!" Shepard stated. The other nodded and charged for the portal, except for John.

"Go!" She yelled firing off a singularity to help the Knight.

"Shepard! Reclaimer!" The woman yelled as she backed up towards the portal herself, firing off another shot of her weapon.

"Damn it." Shepard muttered as she turned and ran for the portal, the Spartan on her heels.

Together the three slid into the portal, the Knight exploded in a shower of flames from a self destruction, falling apart into pure data before disappearing completely.

The hall filled with rampaging Flood Forms and husks. Horrid shrieks and cries filled the air.

* * *

><p>Lithyia grinned as she watch the fleet retreat. She couldn't believe her luck. They had believed her act without question. She should become an actor she thought to herself.<p>

She prepared to follow Thran's ship into the slipspace portal when a footstep echoed from behind her. She spun around and threw a biotic blast in the general direction of the galaxy room. It hit a console and caused it to explode in a shower of sparks.

She looked around confused and walked into the galaxy room. She looked around and saw someone stand up near the elevator.

"This is why I hate aliens." Ashley Williams stated raising her rifle. "You forgot about me you bitch. I'm still here. And now your fucked." Williams stated with a grin. The Asari had forgotten about her. Locking herself in her quarters for a few weeks due to depression and anger from the events of earlier had apparently helped her out. Because now she was the last one. The last one to fight for the Normandy.

"Oh look who it is. The useless human who is stuck in the Commanders shadow. Tell us Ashley how does it feel to know you'll never measure up to be her? To know you will never equal the great Commander Shepard." Lithyia smiled, her body glowing a pale green as her biotics activated.

Ashley stepped towards the elevator.

"I don't know. How does it feel knowing you're doomed?" She retorted.

"Doomed? It looks like I've won not you." Lithyia stated forming a Warp in her hand.

"Please. People like you always lose." Ashley laughed. She moved just in time to dodge the warp that slammed into the wall next to her.

She opened fire on the Asari.

The fight had begun. The fate of the Normandy was in her hands.

* * *

><p>Chief lightly shook his head to clear it, still holding his rifle at the ready. Shepard was next to him and the woman was nowhere to be seen.<p>

"Where are we?" Shepard asked looking around. They were in a room. At least two dozen feet high, the walls built of a sleek and graceful metal. Blue lines running along the walls and pulsing with light. Several Knights were around them moving crates around. There were two doors, exactly like the ones in the Forerunner installation, one on each side of the room.

"You are in my ship. Massive and powerful. She a good ship. Never failed me." The woman said from behind the two.

The two heroes turned to face her.

"Where are our friends?" Shepard stated harshly, flexing her finger on the trigger.

"Here Shepard." Garrus stated as he, The Arbiter, Javik, and Wrex walking in from the doors in front of Shepard, behind the woman.

"And where here exactly?" John asked in a no nonsense voice.

"Relax Reclaimer. I am a friend. Besides you've met my mother."

"And who was your mother?"

"My mother was the Librarian. And I am the Keeper. Her daughter."

* * *

><p>AAAARRRGGGHHHHH!<p>

HE WAS IN MY GRASP! THEY SHALL SUFFER! I HAVE DEFIED GODS! DEMONS! THEY SHALL DIE!

Angry are we? Relax. they have not won yet. Find them and destroy them.

We shall.

Good. Good. And for the second?

The ships are almost there. She will die within three days.

We shall win again. None can stop us.

* * *

><p>AN So thats that! Now the next few chapters are where things really get interesting! Ashley vs Lithyia! Secret unfold as the Keeper shows herself! Ah ha! Hopefully you guys like what I have planned. Thanks for reading. Review! God bless you all.**

23. Part I Chapter 22 (Un beata'd)

A/N So heres the next chapter. Things starting to get revealed. Thanks to everyone who reviewed! My beta is busy and when he gets to beta this chapter I'll re-upload it. Express opinions in the reviews!

* * *

><p>Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil.

Chapter 22: Realms.

* * *

><p>Katherine stepped into what, the Keeper called the bridge of the ship. It was unlike any bridge she had ever seen. Smooth, elegant, dim blue lighting that gave the bridge a sense of serene calmness.<p>

The whole ship had a similar feeling. The halls were mostly empty, hundreds of doors, dim lighting, Promethean Knights and floating machines, she learned were called Sentinels, floated around. She wondered what Tali would think. Her thoughts drifted to her Quarian friend. She wondered what had become of her.

Tali had been exiled still so fortunately as far as Shepard knew, she wasn't anywhere near Rannoch when the Flood hit. However, it had been years since Shepard had heard from her. For all the Commander knew Tali could've been killed years ago by baratrians, or a pissed off Krogan. None the less, she could really use her tech expert with all of this new technology.

Shepard was brought back to the present when the Keeper addressed her and the others as they moved around a large, circular, and metal table.

The others that had accompanied her were, The Spartan, the Arbiter, Reluctant Promise, Wrex, Garrus, and Javik. The elite captain and his troops were off in one of the barracks aboard the ship, tending to wounded and unwinding from the last mission.

"Commander Shepard. Spartan." The Keeper satiated, nodding towards the respective title holders. "There are many mysteries throughout the universe. Some dark and destructive. Some kind and beautiful. Others still, are exhilarating and confusing. Would you like to learn a few more secrets?" She asked with a smile.

"What kind of secrets?" Shepard asked before the Spartan could raise his voice. She figured he wouldn't speak either way. The guy wasn't a talker at all.

"It has to do with two beings in particular. The Gravemind and the Catalyst. Are more dangerous than you think." The Forerunner said bringing up holograms from the table. Numbers and symbols none of the crew, other than the Arbiter and Reluctant Promise recognized.

"We've seen what both of them can do. The Gravemind can influence people and controls the flood. The Catalyst controls the Reapers who can indoctrinate others. What else could you possibly tell us?" Shepard asked crossing her arms. Normally she hated being so rude but she was definitely not in the best of moods, not after everything.

"You all have no idea what's at stake do you?" The Keeper stated in a sad tone.

"What's at stake is our homes so stop wasting our time and tell us what this is all about." Wrex growled annoyed. He hated meetings.

The Keeper sighed.

"I must start from the beginning then. Where it all began with the Precursors." She stated pulling up a hologram of an alien being that none of them had ever seen.

"They were Galactic traveling beings. Moving between galaxies and seeding them with life, then watching over the galaxies. Watching so they could find whom they would pass the mantle down to. I do not know much about their pasts or even their technology, but my mother discovered they were fleeing the edges of the Universe from something. She wasn't sure what at first but had her suspicions." The keeper stated bringing up a pair of eyes in what looked like a cloud of sorts over the hologram table.

"What could make being capable of almost anything imaginable flee... What's is that strong?" The Keeper asked.

"The flood." Garrus stated with clear disgust. The Keeper shook her head causing all of them to shoot looks of disbelief her way. Even Chief turned to look, a slight tilt of his head signaling his curiosity.

"The Gravemind." She attend through closed eyes.

"Impossible. The Gravemind is a creation of the Flood." Reluctant Promise stated. The Keeper shook her head again.

"The Gravemind was not always apart of the Flood. He is an entity. An entity of both mental and physical power." The Keeper started. "When

the Precursor's were defeated by my people, they created the Flood as a final test for both the Forerunner and Humanity to see if the were worthy of the mantle, in respect ready to face the Gravemind. However their plan backfired. The Gravemind saw the flood as a tool, a weapon to be used, so he took control over them. The Flood served this monster but we managed to defeat him with the use of the Halos. Of course I can only speculate most of this but this is what me and mother tried to piece together. For all we know the Gravemind only retreated from his war with us."

With a heavy breath she continued.

"When the Reclaimers and the New Covenant took to the Galaxies. The Flood were there again. The humans won this time, but at a cost. They fired the titan and wiped the entire Universe clean of life. They stored specimens, species, so they could restore the Universe with life."

Shepard glanced at the Arbiter. She remembered him mentioning something about this when they were on Rannoch.

"Several of these species were released into the Milky Galaxy. It was the first galaxy to be repopulated after the Titan was fired. That was when the Catalyst entered the picture. A part of him was created by the Leviathans, beings that had been released in the Milky Way's repopulation. The other part of him came from a similar place as the Gravemind. When the original AI defeated the Leviathans, The Catalyst himself entered the galaxy and melded with this AI creating the being you faced on the Citadel ten years ago Shepard. They needed organic tissue for the Floods and their own numbers. They worked together, creating a cycle, that every 50,000 years the Reapers would wipe out sentient organic species, indoctrinating even more, and using their numbers to fuel the war machine the Flood and they had built."

"So the Titan didn't work." Javik spat. "These Reclaimers were not as powerful as you claim obviously."

"The Reclaimers were amazingly powerful and the Titan did work. However this is the spot things get complicated." The Forerunner replied. "You see the Titan should've wiped the Universe clean of life. So how did the Gravemind survive?"

"A shield world." Chief stated.

"Slipspace like myself." the Arbiter replied.

"In a way" The Forerunner started. "Slipspace as some of you may know, is another dimension entirely. A plane of existence not tied to our own. It ties reality together. Like the fibers of a blanket."

"So did he hide in slipspace?" Shepard asked.

"In a way. My mother and I tracked the Gravemind and you, Arbiter. The elites with you Arbiter, and the Gravemind himself, you were the only ones to escape the Titans blast. you entered slipspace. So did he. But within the slipspace stream he opened another portal. When that happened he created a huge flux of energy that my mother replicated."

"What happened next?" Garrus asked.

"For two billion years the Reapers and Flood consumed all life in the only Galaxy that had life in this Universe. They used the storage specimens to constantly repopulate the galaxy for the cycles."

"What happened when your mother replicated the opening of the two portals?" Shepard asked wanting the forerunner to get to the point.

"Like I told him." The Keeper nodded towards the Prothean. "It is complicated."

"Well theres not much more you could me that would really be surprising. We've seen it all." Shepard stated looking at the forerunner.

"You have not. Not even close commander." Before any of the others could respond the Forerunner pulled up a picture. Ships. Hundreds of them. A completely different design than anything she had ever seen. Another picture below them was of soldiers. Human. In huge bulky suits of armor. Powerful and frightening.

"When I first realized what the Gravemind and Catalyst were capable of I could not believe it myself. These are pictures of a group once called the Imperium of Man. They fought alongside their respective galactic members and even with a parasite called the Tyranids. They fought the Flood and the Reapers. I watched a part of the battle as they fell. Their ships were so powerful. Their men so brave and strong and yet they fell. Their worlds burned, their armies and people consumed forever by the parasite. They even had entities. God like beings. They stood for years against the flood. Eventually the Gravemind himself faced these.. Chaos Gods. They fell within a matter of days." The Forerunner let her head fall in grief before clicking on a few more commands pulling up a few other pictures.

This one was of a planet, lush and green.

"This planet once was the home of a beautiful kingdom called Corona and many others. They were what you would call in their Mid-evil times. This planet didn't stand a chance against the invasion." The Forerunner clasped her hands together then turned the display off.

"So whats the catch?" Wrex stated shortly.

"The catch?"

"These things always tend to be more complicatedâ€¦ Especially when you've told us that in our universe we have the only galaxy that can sustain life how is it that these other places exist?" Garrus chipped in.

The Forerunner gave them a smile. She knew they would understand. "When my mother replicated the two portals she opened a portal into a new dimension. Since slipspace is the thread that holds reality together... She tore a hole in that thread and opened a hole to another side. She opened a portal that led to a place not in this Universe."

"What do you mean not in this Universe?" Chief asked crossing his arms.

"I mean exactly as I said." The Forerunner stated.

"That's impossible." Garrus stated in utter disbelief. Shepard stared with confused eyes. She knew exactly what the Keeper was suggesting, but she thought it was impossible.

"They lie in other universes, other realms." The Keeper said with another sad smile. She then turned towards Katherine.

"What we are fighting for Commander is not just the survival of your galaxy. But the survival of all Reality itself."

A few moments of silence reigned as the information sunk in, then all hell broke loose.

* * *

><p>Ashley rolled right behind the Commanders private terminal in the Galaxy room. A biotic blast ripped into the wall where she had just been.<p>

"Great." She hissed slapping in her last clip. She spun up to her feet and fired a short burst from her rifle.

Lithyia's barrier took the brunt of the attack. She slipped behind a computer console right after throwing a singularity at Ashley. The spectre dove to the ground just in time. Again she rolled to her feet prepared to fire only to get hit with a biotic blast.

The blast sent her flying back, through doors leading to the security checkpoint that then led to the war room. She hit the ground, gasping for as she laid on her back. She pulled herself up just in time to see a warp heading her way and barely managed to roll away in time.

She scrambled to her feet fortunate that the doors slid to a close automatically. She moved into the hall next to the conference room and saw the maintenance shaft. Quickly, she made her way to it and slid down the ladder to the engineering deck.

"Lieutenant Commander Williams. If I may ask, why are you coming down through there?" Engineer Adams asked giving her an amused look.

"You're alive?" Ashley asked shocked. Everyone on the upper two decks had been killed.

"Why wouldn't I be?" Adams asked confused.

"Lithyia she's changed. She killed the upper decks crew. Knocked out Joker, shut down EDI, disabled legion and Liara. She didn't remember I was aboard. I had gone to restroom for a second and the next thing I know everyone on deck three was dead as well. She must've forgotten I was aboard hence why she didn't look for me." Ashley explained drawing a side arm from her leg.

"Are you serious?" The engineer asked wild eyed.

"We need to get down to the shuttle bay. Find anyone who can fight. She's stronger than before." Ashley stated making sure her gun was loaded and set to fire.

"What?" The engineer asked.

"Come on." the Spectre stated walking out of the engine room and into the hall with the elevator.

She watched the doors slide open and pushed Engineer Adams back into the engine room.

"Ill distract her. Get to the shuttle bay." Ashley stated giving him a stern look before turning back to face Lithyia.

The Asari walked into the hall full of confidence. Her biotics glowing green and flowing around her. She turned to face Ashely and with a flick of her wrist pulled the pistol from the Spectres hand.

"How sad." Lithyia stated. Her voice was a mix of hers and anothers.

"Bring it." Ashley stated raising her fists.

Lithyia only grinned. With amazing speed she charged the human, her green biotics flaring in every direction.

She didn't notice a certain engineer run into the elevator behind her.

* * *

><p>It had taken at least five minutes to get everyone to calm down. People had thrown all sorts of accusations at the forerunner. The radicals, Wrex, and Javik mainly had called her a liar, servant to the Gravemind and a few other things Shepard didn't want to repeat. The kinder ones had been Garrus, the Arbiter and surprisingly the monitor. They had only asked quesiotns like how is that possible, that forerunners and reclaimers didn't even have that kind of technology, and why had she not told them this sooner.<p>

The Commander herself and the Chief had been the only two to remain silent, till Katherine was forced to get involved so the others would finally quiet down.

She sent a brief glance towards the Chief then looked up at the Forerunner.

"Other realms don't exist. Its a theory." Shepard stated softly.

"It is no theory. My mother and myself built probes to scout these other universe. To see wether or not they are indeed just other galaxies that we have yet to explore or wether they are indeed other universes. Of course at first only the Flood and Reapers had the capabilities of ripping through dimensions and entering them at their own will. So we had to follow wherever they went. When they rip through a dimensional barrier they cause a mass explosion of intangible energy that can be traced. So whenever they do, we would

send probes to follow their ships. Sometimes they would make it. sometimes they don't." The Forerunner brought up the two pictures from earlier. The one of the human soldiers and the planet.

"These two came from probes that survived long enough to record and send information back to us." She stated pulling up another hologram, this one of a small circular machine that Katherine figured was a probe.

"You still have yet to prove how these are other dimensions." Wrex stated with a growl.

"Commander and Chief. Look at this planet. Do you see any similarities between it and a planet you know?" The Forerunner stated gesturing to the hologram of the planet.

Shepard looked at it closely. It took a few seconds but she recognized its land and water patterns.

"It's Earth!" Katherine stated wide eyed. The Forerunner nodded. She waved her hand causing the three holograms to disappear and two others, of two galaxies, to replace them.

"And this is the galaxy it resides in." She stated.

"The Milky Way?" Chief asked in disbelief.

"This Earth resides in another Milky Way galaxy in another dimension. One where humanity is still in its middle ages. The young Turian race is also present in this universe but the others have evolved into other species entirely."

"The planets within the galaxy are diverse. Some are different, others the exact same as their counterparts within our own galaxy."

"Incredible." Reluctant Promise stated.

"Now Chief, Shepard, this planet has been overrun by flood. However I'd like to show you something on the planet. Something you two need to see and hear." She stated with a stern look.

The two soldiers exchanged a glance before looking back at her.

"How do we know you won't betray us?" Shepard asked.

"Because if I wanted you dead I would've left you all to the Flood back on that installation."

"Then when do we go." Chief stated. The Forerunner turned around, raising up her arm and pressing in a few commands on a holographic display on her arm.

Suddenly a slipspace portal opened in front of her, the black dimension in contrast with the metal. With another click on her display another portal opened within slipspace. This one showed a view of stone, the insides of a castle, covered in Flood biomass.

"This is what my mother and I replicated. This is how you open a

portal to another dimension. Not as complex as one might think. Now let me show you what the Flood will do to all these Realms unprepared for a war with them." The Forerunner stated sadly as she stepped through the portal.

"Well this is new..." Garrus stated.

Shepard and Chief exchanged another glance. Chief drew his assault rifle, walked over to the portal and stepped through it without hesitation.

Katherine looked over at Garrus.

"Try to contact the normandy and Thran'. Watch this portal. We don't want any Flood coming through it." She stated turning to the portal and wlaiking in after the others.

* * *

><p>"So this is what another dimension look likes?" Shepard stated looking around.<p>

"Yes."

"And why exactly did you bring us here?" Shepard asked looking over at the Forerunner. The Forerunner was off to the side staring up at a glass pane. It had a picture of a family. A man, a woman and a young girl. Each had a crown on their head.

The group itself was inside the main hall of the castle, chandeliers broken on the ground, a few skeletons laying aournd, flood vines crawling over the walls, ceiling and floor. A dark hallway at the end of the hall where Chief was.

The portal was open behind her. A hole about eight feet tall. One that showed a blurred image of the bridge on the forerunner ship.

Shepard kicked a vine nervously.

"Don't worry. The Flood biomass is in a coma like state. The Gravemind and all its soliders havent been here in over two months leaving the bimoass to grow like a plant, unthinking and unaware. They left this place to attack your galaxy when the time was right." the Forerunner ran a hand over the glass.

"This was the royal family." she stated. "I watched the father try and fail to protect his wife from the Flood. Swords and bows do nothing to them" She sighed and turned towards the two soldiers. Chief was looking around studying the stone walls and ceiling.

"I brought you two here because there is a survivor, One person left alive in this castle. She needs to be saved." The Forerunenr stated.

"Not that I'm against helping, but why is it that you could only tell us this now?" Shepard stated drawing her own rifle off her back.

The Forerunner pulled up another hologram off her display. It was a picture of genetic code.

"This is a strand of a normal humans DNA." She pulled up another DNA strand. "This is hers." The DNA flashed and showed the difference. The girls DNA looked like a neon white unlike the other strand with was dull.

"How did you collect a sample of her DNA?" Chief asked.

"The probes have more uses than just surveillance." The Keeper replied.

"So her DNA shines. Whats the big deal?" Katherine asked as Chief moved towards a hallway towards the entrance of the hall.

"Her DNA gives off a certain signal. One only capable of being found if you're looking for it. Its traceable if a probe is within the Universe the person relies. As far as I know most universes have none with the DNA strand, however some have one. Ours actually had two with this specific signal." She stated sending serious looks at both of them.

"Us." Chief stated shortly.

"Yes. Now onboard my ship is a video that'll explain everything else... My mother showed it to me when I was younger so I could make sense of everything. Its all very confusing I know, which is why I only wanted you two to hear this first. You're crew will believe you, not me." The Keeper stated with a heavy heart.

Shepard shook her head and looked around. "Nothings ever easy." She stated.

"What does this anomaly mean?" Chief stated.

"It short terms. That you two are very special and important." The Forerunner stated. "Trust me the video will explain much better than I can." she slowly sat down on the steps of one of the thrones in the hall.

"Special how?" Shepard asked moving towards a fallen painting.

"Have you ever wondered why none before you were capable of defeating the Catalyst? or the Gravemind?" The Keeper asked looking at the two.

"Wellâ€¦" Shepard stated wiping away dust from the painting. It was of two people. The young girl from the glass picture and a man. Young and handsome. She wondered if the two were related or married.

"As I said the... video... can explain better than I. Now we must find this girl before the Gravemind decides to return here." The Forerunner stated. Shepard turned to her asking where the last known location for the girl was. While the two discussed, the Master Chief, John, just watched on.

He heard the movement of rubble behind him, only the softest of movements, like something sneaking up on them. With lightning speed he spun around aiming his weapon at what stood before him.

Five feet in front of him was a girl. Her hair was short and brown.

Her faded pink clothing was covered in dirt, grime, and what he would call flood blood. She stood there staring at him wide eyed with curiosity instead of fear. Then again she had seen the flood overrun her home. Few sights could equal that.

Her eyes were green and in her hand was a sword. Old fashioned and rusting. On her back was what he figured was a rucksack, tied to her waist a dagger and a frying pan.

John lowered his weapon though kept his guard up. Anyone would could survive against the flood for at least a month had to be capable of something.

"Shepard. Keeper." He stated nodding towards the girl.

Katherine and the Forerunner both turned to look.

"Thats her." The Keeper smiled sadly.

"Whats her name?" Shepard asked.

"I don't know."

Slowly the Commander moved towards the girl, placing her pistol back onto its magnetic lock on her leg.

"Hey whats your name?" She said kneeling in front of the girl. Shepard could tell she had to be in her late teens, probably nineteen. She had a baby face as well as a small stature and height.

The girl just stared at the two wearily, not moving a single muscle other than her eyes.

"Hey come on. We're gonna get you out of here." Shepard stated. She knew this wasn't her home, or even her galaxy, but an innocent person was a person no matter where. She could tell this poor girl had a good heart. Her eyes gave it away.

"My name?" The girl stated softly, her eyes flickering to the ground. Katherine nodded.

"Its ummmâ€¦ R." She stated firmly gripping her sword and giving a defiant nod. A small beeping noise rang out and the two looked back at the Keeper.

The Keeped looked down at her holographic display. Her emotions changed from sad to confused. It beeped again as she tapped away at the display.

"What is it?" John asked gripping his assault rifle.

"Like I told you when a portal between dimensions opens a high energy signature can be detected. Well I just detected one. Right down that hall." She nodded towards the hall the girl named R had come from.

Shepard drew her rifle again, Chief raised his and the girl spun around.

Before any of them could react three black wolves leaped from the hall.

Shepard immediately recognized them. The hounds that had attacked the Arbiter and her on Thessia.

* * *

><p>Jacqueline, the blonde N7, wiped her rifle for the tenth time today. She let out a bored sigh as she sat on the floor, her back against the shuttle. Cortez was busy doing whatever he did at his station in the shuttle bay. It was only them two down here most of the time. She hadn't been picked to go on this mission with Sheaprd. She felt disappointed. She had only gone on a few missions with the Commander and wanted to prove her worth. She hated sitting around and doing nothing.<p>

She inspected her rifle again when the elevator doors opening caught her attention. She hadn't heard any updates on the mission and wondered if that was because Shepard was already onboard. She wouldn't be surprised. The Commander had a way of getting things done quickly.

However, it was Engineer Adams, the last person she expected, who walked out of the elevator.

"Jacqueline! Cortez! Its Lithyia she's gone crazy!"

* * *

><p>AN So yay secrets and now you know how large the threat really is! Whoo! So whats next?! Please Review! Thanks for reading and God Bless! **

24. Part I Chapter 23 (Un beata'd)

A/N: So a lot of reviews last Chapter. To answer many of your questions read the A/N at the ned of this chapter. Don't hate me for what Universe I bring in. A lot of odd ones will come in to play. Stay tuned and thanks for reading.

This chapter hasn't been betas yet for spelling and grammar. It was beta'd for plot by thehaloproject. Thanks!

* * *

><p>Part I**

The Voice and Face of all Evil.

Universe 23: New realms. Strange allies.

* * *

><p>Shepard yelped as her head smacked into the stone floor beneath her. The black wolf, with its demonic eyes, snarled at her. She raised her arm, blue biotics around it and slammed a fist into the beasts face. She remembered their last fight and knew she couldn't give it room to maneuver or let it trap her.<p>

Jumping up to her feet, she activated her cryo ammo and fired at the beast she had knocked off of her, only to have it split apart into smoke suddenly lunged towards her and before she could move away it wrapped around her.

Chief rolled off to his side as the wolf flew over him. He spun to his feet, facing the wolf, only to have it slam into him the moment he faced it. His rifle flew off to the side as he hit the floor.

The two rolled on the stone floor, Chief slamming his fist into the beast's face repeatedly. The beast yelped as the spartan punched it a fourth time. Finally the beast jumped off of him backing up as it shook its head, trying to regain its composure.

Chief stood up and drew his combat knife. He was surprised when the beast literally fell apart and turned into smoke. He was even more surprised when the smoke raced at him. However, it didn't at all stop him from reacting. He dove out of the way as the smoke formed into black tentacles and raced towards him. He smacked one away, dodged another and sliced a third with his knife only to watch the tentacle break into smoke, his knife pass through it harmlessly, then the tentacle reform once again.

Shepard grunted as the tentacles wrapped around her, slammed her into the ground before tossing her like a rag doll off to the side.

Katherine climbed to her feet. She fired a warp at the tentacles heading towards her. They turned into smoke and reformed right in front of her, completely avoiding her attack. A small grin formed on her face. She had expected that.

The tentacles flew back as a shockwave slammed into them the moment they reformed.

A scream filled the air and Shepard glanced over to where it had come from.

She watched as the third wolf dragged the girl named R away and into the dark hallway, her sword and dagger having fallen to the ground.

The Keeper got to her feet, the third wolf having immediately transformed into smoke, disappear into the floor, then reappearing behind her and thrashing her against a wall. The wolf had sprinted away after that, grabbed the young girl who was staring at the fighting in awe, and was now dragging her away.

"The girl!" Shepard yelled as the newly formed wolf slammed into her. She punched it in the face before it could bite down on her. Before she could do anything else two lances of light slammed into the two wolves fighting the soldiers.

The wolves fell to the floor with yelps of pain, allowing Shepard and the Chief to get to their feet.

"Go! I'll handle them." The Keeper stated as the two wolves slowly began to stand., their attention now focused on her rather than the soldiers.

Shepard nodded and before the wolves finished getting to their feet, the Commander and Spartan sprinted past them, and into the dark hallway.

The Keeper stared at the two beasts that stood before her. She let her arms out, and out of nowhere, armor materialized and placed itself on her. It was partly like the Didacts, a man her mother had once romanced. The sharp angles and menacing body type copied from him. However, the metal was smoother, everything was more connected, radiated with blue light rather than red, and her helmet was less intimidating with its two wing like fans on the side.

She moved into a crouch crossed her arms. Two elegant swords made of hard light formed in her hands.

"Lets play."

* * *

><p>"R!" Shepard yelled as her and John sprinted around a corner. They had been running for only a few seconds but the screams of the girl were enough to force them to rush. She sounded absolutely terrified. Then again who could blame her?<p>

From the sound of the screams the two could tell they were getting close.

Shepard noticed a skeleton in her path and leapt over it just in time, while Chief ducked underneath a partly caved in patch of roof. Light filled the hallways from multiple broken windows and several caved in portions of the roof. Shepard could only imagine how bad the battle went. The Flood would've torn these people apart.

They sprinted a couple feet before again being forced to turn down the hallway as it continued off to the right.

Finally they saw her. The girl was covered in the black tentacles, thrashing to get free of them. The tentacles were dragging her at an amazingly fast pace, almost out running the two soldiers. Chief could see fresh scrapes in the girls arms and Shepard could smell the fiber of her dress beginning to burn from the friction of being dragged at such speeds.

Chief sped up to his full potential. He rushed away from Shepard, leaping towards the girl and tentacles, angling his body to slam into the tentacles. However at the last second the tentacles reformed into smoke, causing the spartan to miss and hit the floor hard, before reforming into a wolf and lunging towards Shepard.

The Commander hadn't expected this, and was too slow to duck. The wolf collided into her, kicking her in the gut. It reversed its momentum, using the Commanders body to lunge itself back towards the girl while Shepard flew onto her back.

A armor plated fist hit the wolf dead on, sending it flying backwards towards Katherine. The Spectre drew her omni blade and spinning up to her feet, sliced the wolves head off. The black beast disintegrated in mid air, but the Commander ignored it. She ran towards the young girl instead.

"You alright?" She asked helping the girl to her feet. The girl just nodded at her and riffled her brown hair, dust falling out of her from the dragging. Shepard noticed the gashes from the wolf's teeth on the girl's shoulder. Before she could say anything the Chief spoke up.

"We need to leave." John stated staring down the part of the hallway they hadn't come from. Something felt off to him.

"What's wrong?" Shepard asked following his gaze, or more of the direction his visor faced.

She watched as an unnatural darkness began to fill the end of the hall. It looked like fog but pure black. The hallway's temperature rapidly began to drop and the young unarmored girl visibly shivered.

"What's going on?" She asked gripping the only weapon she had left, the frying pan. Normally Shepard may have questioned it but she knew if it came down to it, even she would use it as a last resort.

Shepard "You know me" _ A dark and heavy voice stated filling the air.

"Run." Shepard stated taking a step back. "Get her out of here."

John listened, spun around, grabbed the smaller girl, throwing over his shoulder then sprinting off towards the main hall.

Shepard fired off a few rounds from her pistol before turning and running after the Chief.

The fog raced after her, completely blacking out any light coming in from the windows or from the holes in the roof.

She looked back and noticed the darkness gaining on her. She quickly fired back a warp, before speeding up.

It didn't take her long to make it back to the main hall. She ran in and looked around, noticing how the Keeper and girl were gone. Chief was standing next to the portal firing at something behind her. The portal was open and Shepard tried to run for it.

"Shepard!" Chief yelled.

She wasn't fast enough as the black fog suddenly became solid and wrapped around her feet. She fell to the floor and felt a pain unlike anything she had ever felt, run through her body as the fog seeped into her skin. A scream pierced the air as darkness overtook her.

* * *

><p>Jacqueline didn't have more than thirty seconds to put a clip in her rifle, and raise her weapon as the elevator doors opened. Her breathing was even and her eyes sharp. Engineer Adams had hid behind the shuttle. He didn't have a side arm and Jacqueline didn't want him in the way.<p>

Lithyia stepped forward, an unconscious Ashley Williams floating nearby her.

"Well if it isn't Cortez and Jacqueline? What a pleasant surprise." She stated with a cruel grin. she twirled her hand, showing off her control over the Spectre's unconscious form.

"Put her down Lithyia." The N7 ordered fixing her grip on her rifle. She was slowly stepping towards the elevator trying to find the perfect shot to take the psychotic Asari down.

Cortez was facing the elevator, his own side arm drawn. He too took a step towards lithyia.

"Please you two are beneath us." The Asari hissed. With a wave of both her hands, a wave of pure biotic energy flew out from her.

The wave fried the computer consoles nearby, slammed into Cortez and threw him over the consoles and into the metal pillar nearby. Ashely Williams flew off to the side hitting the floor still unconscious. The wave hit Jacqueline but unlike Cortez she let the wave throw her back, using the momentum to slid back onto her feet as the wave dispersed.

She lifted her rifle, which by a miracle she managed to hold onto, and fired at the Asari.

Lithyia was quicker and managed to roll into cover before being hit by any of the N7's shots. She powered up a warp in one hand and a singularity in the other. the Asari leapt to her feet and fired both off towards the last place Jacqueline had been.

She stared in shock as her to biotic attacks flew through empty space. Her surprise was even greater when someone tackled her from the side. The two landed and Lithyia was shocked to see the N7 had managed to sneak up on her.

The blonde N7 raised her hands, forming one fist and brought it down on the Asari's head. with a loud crack her fists met the Asari's head, breaking her nose and causing the Asari to hit her head on the metal floor.

The N7 continuously began to pound the Asari, trying her best to subdue the biotic before she became more of the threat than she already was.

However her advantage was short lived. With a growl the Asari managed to grab both of the blondes hands, using her biotics to increase her strength. She pulled the blonde closer to her and slammed her forehead into her nose. The blow forced the N7 back, holding her nose as she fell off the Asari.

Lithyia took advantage of this, used her biotics to create a biotic field around her and thre woof to the side.

Jacqueline cried out in pain as she hit the floor. She grit her teeth, wiping off the fresh blood from her nose and got to her feet just as the Asari charged her. Of course she was too slow and flew back with a sickening crack from the impact.

Lithyia grinned and formed another warp in her hand, this one meant to rip the N7 apart instantly.

Before she could a pistol fired and hit her barriers. She spun around and fired the warp in the direction the bullets had come from.

Cortez managed to duck just in time. The warp ripped apart the pillar behind him and he scurried away before the biotic could through another biotic attack at him.

Lithyia stepped after him only to get kicked in the face by a blur of blue.

She stumbled backwards towards the elevator and managed to duck a punch from a now standing and pissed off Ashley William's.

The Asari growled and blasted the Spectre back with a shockwave but was hit by a series of assault rifle bullets the moment she pushed Ashley away.

The evil biotic formed a a biotic shield in front of her, deflecting anymore shots. She quickly pulled the shield down and threw a pure biotic blast at Jacqueline, who needed to reload. She didn't get to see if the blast hit since the moment she let it lose more bullets from Cortez flew her way forcing her into cover.

Before she got into cover Ashely, whom had been thrown over the broken consoles, leaped over and slammed into Lithyia.

She forced the Asari down and proceeded to slam her fist into the biotics face. She repeatedly did this till the Asaris nose shattered and blue blood began flow from it.

Jacqueline moved forwards towards the two watching as Ashley pummeled the Asari over and over again. She looked over to Cortez.

"Cortez go get EDI back online. Lets get out of here." She stated. The pilot nodded and ran to the elevator, keeping a distance away form the Asari and Ashely. The elevator closed and Cortez was on his way. Ashley punched the Asari one more time before letting her go and standing up. She looked over at the bonde N7 and gave her a soft smile.

Engineer Adams peaked out from behind the shuttle and gave a sigh of relief. He took a step towards them.

Suddenly a pale green light filled the room. The glow from Lithyias botics. Ashley spun around, Lithyia raised her rifle and Adams stared in confusion. Lithyia spun on her back, tripping Ashely. She jumped to her feet, the blue blood stains on her face giving her a darker look especially with the green lighting form her biotics.

Before Jacqueline even moved a wrap slammed into her chest, ripping her armor apart at the molecular level. A biotic blast hit her in the chest forcing her to the ground. She hit her head hard causing her vision ro blur and her head to spin.

Lithyia grinned and grabbed Ashley by the head, lifting her

up.

"Poor Williams. Useless until the end." The Asari said letting out few tsk's after her statement.

She raised her arm, forming a warp in her hand.

"Any last words?"

"Yeah. You talk to much." The Spectre spit out. Immediately a wrench from behind slammed into the Asaris blow was hard enough to get Lithyia to loosen her grip allowing the Spectre to break out of it and kick her in the chest.

Engineer Adams pulled up the wrench and raised it over his head. The display was to slow and Lithyia managed to push him back with a biotic push. The man tripped and fell over hard on his back.

Lithyia turned back to Ashley and roared. She focused her biotics to on her fists, then charged the human just as the elevator opened up with cortez inside.

"Hey EDI'sâ€| oh shit!" The pilot yelled as the two woman, or the woman and mono gender alien fell into the elevator. Lithyia punched Ashley in the gut, blasted Cortez into the wall and raised a newly powered biotic fist up, preparing to crush Ashleys skull with one final blow.

Ashley however, had taken advantage of Lithyia's brief distraction and managed to get her legs under the Asari. With the last of her strength she kicked the Asari off of her.

The ASari stumbled back out of the elevator, bullets hit her back, bouncing off the barriers. She spun around with a singularity in hand, ready to kill whoever had shot her in the back. She didn't expected to get kicked in the face by an N7.

the Asari fell backwards. Halfway in the elevator halfway out. Ashley saw the chance.

"EDI! Close the elevator! Now!" She yelled. The elevator shut close with the Asari in the middle, effectively splitting her in two with a terrible shriek.

Ashley stared at the blood pooling out of the the top half of the Asari in the elevator with her. Cortez looked ready to faint.

"Well shitâ€|"

* * *

><p>With a gasp Katherine awoke. She shot up where she was sitting, sweat covering her face and a constant ringing in her ears.<p>

She heard a voice. Someone talking to her. She looked around trying to clear her vision with a few blinks.

She could hear someone calling her name. It took a few seconds but finally her senses cleared and it hit her like a wall.

"Shepard by the spirits your awake." Garrus stated standing up from his chair next to her.

She looked around realizing she was on some sort of metal bed. She recognized the walls and blue lights.

"What happened?" She asked rubbing her head. She was in her fatigues. Her armor laying on the table

"Apparently you got knocked out. Whatever was chasing you guys got to you before you could make it to the portal." The Turian explained handing her what appeared to be a clear glass of water.

The Commander eyed him carefully and after he confirmed it was water, she greedily drank it. for some reason she was parched.

"I remember that part." Shepard stated after finishing the water and placing the glass on the metal table she was on.

"Figured. Well Chief had given the girl to the Keeper letting the two escape. Whatever attacked you knocked you out and he managed to get you both in the portal before it took him down too. Still the guy fainted not too soon after you. Tough guy that one. He was only out for a few seconds before regaining consciousness. Checked out fine on whatever examination that Keeper lady ran." Garrus explained.

"Greatâ€¦ Did we at least get the girl out?" Shepard asked. She didn't want to voice what she had seen. Maybe she was going crazy. Black fog that caused her pain? She had no idea what was going on.

"She's fine. Down in this ship's medical bay with the Arbiter." Garrus stated.

"You sent a girl from the medieval agesâ€¦ with an alienâ€¦ to a space ship's medical bay?" Shepard deadpanned.

"It sounded like a good idea at the time."

Shepard just shook her head.

"I'm not in the medical bay?"

"Nah. You checked out fine. Just needed to rest. We moved you here just a few minutes ago. You've only been out for about half an hour."

"Well then. Where are the others?"

"Up in the bridge. The Keeper was waiting for you to wake so she could show us some video. Really hope it not like the sex ed one they showed us in high school. Terrible memories from that class." Garrus shivered.

"Wow the great is Garrus afraid of female body parts." Shepard smirked getting to her feet.

"Oh I'm not scared of them. More of intrigued. It's mainly the so called 'miracle' of birth that left me scared."

"Wowâ€|" Katherine stated wlaiking out of her room.

It took a few minutes but the two made it to the bridge. They had passed a few of the Elite Captains team. They even passed

"Enough arguing you two." The Keeper stated right as Shepard and Garrus entered the bridge.

Wrex and Javik were both glaring at each other.

"Did we miss something?" Shepard asked taking her spot next to Chief who was standing at the holotable quietly as usual.

"These two are just arguing again." Reluctant Promise sighed form his spot near the Keeper.

Shepard gave both a glare before turning back to the Forerunner.

"There is something I need to show you all." The Keeper stated glancing at both the Spartan and Commander.

"What now?" Wrex huffed crossing his arms, preparing to complain more.

"This." The Keeper stated. Suddenly the screen turned on and a video started playing.

The bridge lighting dimmed and Shepard couldn't help but feel like they were going to watch a movie.

On the screen was a man, a goofy smile on his face and his hair unusually spiky.

"Hey is this thing on?" The man said with a puzzled look as he stared into whatever had recorded the video. He taped a finger on lens of whatever was recording. HE had an innocent look to him, yet his face was built and had a strong look to it.

"Stop messing with that! I swear you're more of a child than your son sometimesâ€|" Another voice stated off screen.

"Well one of my boys is still a kid. I've gotta be a kid with him sometimes right?" The man stated backing away from the recording device. He backed up enough to show his orange clothing and blue belt. He had a built figure but looked rather lean.

A woman with blue hair and a fairly decent figure stepped into the screen.

"Just go outside and find out what the others are doing." The woman stated with furrowed brows and closed eyes.

"Alright geez sorry." the man stated raising his hands and walking off screen. The woman only shook her head.

Finally she looked at the camera and gave a soft smile. She pulled up a chair and sat down. She grabbed something form the ground, a notebook and what looked like a touch screen device.

"My name is Bulma Briefs and if you're watching this right nowâ€¦!" She sighed. "Then things didn't work out so well."

* * *

><p>The blonde queen stared up into the night sky. Her hair flowed in the chilly winds, her blue dress highlighting her eyes, and all was well. Her big blue eyes scanned the sky and open widely when a new light appeared in the dark sky. A new star. She let a small smile cross her face. Things were finally peaceful.<p>

She heard the door to her room open and before even seeing the person, she knew who it was.

"Hey sis." The younger red head said elbowing her sister.

"Shouldn't you be asleep? Its pretty late." The queen stated with a smirk.

"Nah. I thought we could make some hot chocolate! Like old times! Or you could make some snow and we couldâ€¦!"

"MAYbe tomorrow." The blonde said with a sad smile. The red head crossed her arms and glared at her twenty year old sister.

"Alright maybe the hot chocolate, but hold up." The blonde said looking up at the sky again. The red head looked at her sister curiously and leaned forward on the balcony.

"Waht is it?" The yonder girl askd.

"A new star. You see that really bright one?" The elder sister said pointing up to a star in the center of the sky. It wa a tad larger and brighter than the rest of its fellow stars.

"Hmm its brighter than the rest." The red head smiled.

"Yup."

The two fell into a comfortable silence and enjoyed staring at the sky.

"Hey Elsa?"

"Yes Anna?"

"We should definitely make some hot chocolate."

The dark sky and the bright stars contrasted wonderfully in the night sky. The world was at peace. The Earth was beautiful. The stars were beautiful, but the brightest star in the night sky was not a star at all.

Fifty thousand feet above Earth, in the darkness of space, laid a metallic object. Squid like and as still as corpse. Bright moon light shining off it.

Suddenly a red light appeared on it. The arms of the ship flexed and the shine of light on it began to flicker and change as the ship

awoke.

"I am Harbinger." The Reaper Capital ship stated. Behind it, thousands of other red lights lit up, thousands of other ships. The Reapers had come. The World would fall.

* * *

><p>"KORRAAA!" Tenzin, the bald airbender, son of Aang yelled at the top of his lungs.<p>

"What?" The teenager said walking up to her old air bending master, her attitude evident as she rubbed her eyes. Her dark brown hair was a mess, her water tribe clothing wrinkled and obviously thrown on in a rush.

"Did you have anything to do with that giant rock falling from the sky last night?" Tenzin asked.

The avatar stared at him oddly before bothering to respond.

"What rock?"

"That one." The old airbender stated. The two walked over to the edge of the Air temple Island outside Republic City. The two stared in awe at the massive rock sitting in the bay of the city. It was dark and a dark ominous green mist was around it but for some reason was only staying around the rock rather than being blown away by the wind.

"I swear it wasn't me this time." Korra replied with a serious look on her face.

"Wellâ€¦ Befong and the police aren't letting anyone get near it. Something about it rubs them the wrong way."

"Something is off about it." Korra stated squinting at the rock.

"I agreeâ€¦ I agreeâ€¦"

* * *

><p>"Spock are you seeing this?" Captain James T. Kirk asked staring at the computer screen in front of him.<p>

"I do. That kind of energy pulse should be impossible unless a star went super nova, but there are no stars or planets in the area of space." The Vulcan stated staring at the screen.

The Captain had asked his first officer to meet him at the library within star fleet academy. He had been woken up in the middle of the night by a call from his friend and chief engineer on the Enterprise, Scotty, telling him about some unusual energy signature in deep space in Star Fleet territory.

Now here he was with possibly one of, if not the smartest man he knew, and neither knew what was causing the energy surge so far out into space.

"Well want to know what I'm thinking?" The Captain said with a smirk.

"Considering you have a mischievous grin and the fact we have an unknown anomaly on our hands, id suggest that you are thinking of taking the Enterprise and finding out what this anomaly is?"

"Thats exactly what were gonna do. Come on it'll be fun!"

"Our ideas of fun are two very different things captain."

* * *

><p>We have made our move. The Reapers are ready to destroy the one with the potential.

The Flood are prepared as well.

_Good. _

We are preparing our invasion as well. It won't be long now.

We need to bring down any allies they can gather. It will make our plans harder to accomplish if The Commander and Spartan gain allies.

Make sure they are killed. They cannot succeed. That fool of an Asari was a failure as it was... Make sure you don't fail again.

With pleasure.

* * *

><p>AN: Well here we go! So I have multiple things to sayâ€|
**

First order of business yes the Librarians and Didacts children all died in the Flood/Ancient human vs Forerunner war. Now the Librarian in this story was alive for about two hundred thousand years. Already in the halo books it was hinted that she was alive thanks to the actions of 343 guilty spark. So my story follows the hint at the fact the Librarians alive during the events of Halo 4. Now onto the fact all her children are dead. All her children with the Didact are dead. Its been over two billion years since then. She had some spare time on her hands to you knowâ€| reproduce. It'll be explained later on so no worries.

**Second order of businessâ€| Several of you guessed who this new character R wasâ€| You are correct. Now just cause she's in here doesn't mean this is a happy go lucky story. Its kind of to show how EVERY universe ever made or thought of is in danger. Not just the universe's like Mass Effect and Halo that can actually handle a war. Its going to be a rather messed up story. Lots of death and war. Oh but the whole glowing DNA thing isn't just a trait of hers. As explained by the Keeper, Chief and Shepard have it to. **

**Third order of businessâ€| I'd like to bring someone from Warhammer in however, their whole universe already fell. No ones left from it. Our heroes discovered it to late. MABYE i might bring someone in later but i doubt it. Don't worry plenty more sic fi and horror universe will make appearances. **

**Fourth order someone pointed out how the Reapers are relatively weak compared to other Sci Fi universes. Remember the Flood are fighting alongside them. Both together are pretty damn tough. **

**Ummm I dont remember what the fifth order of business was but hey if you guys want to suggest Universe that you want to see or be mentioned leave it in the comments and i'll do what i can. **

Oh yeah! So we are about halfway done with Part 1. The last three groups to make any appearances in Part 1 were the last three paragraphs in this chapter. They will each have their own story arch. The Frozen one is the shortest arc at about 2 chapters. The Legend of Korra will be about 4 or 5 chapters. And Star Trek will be the rest. About 10-15 chapter at my current rate. The Star Trek arch will be intense to say the least. Just to clear up things, every Universe that joins Chief and Shepard will have a major role to play in the story so they're not all just randomly in here.

After that Part 2 will come in and I've been hinting at who will come in for a while. At the end of either the Legend of Korra or Star Trek arches, I'll reveal who will come to play in Part 2. Also the next four parts will all be shorter. Probably only about 20-25 chapter each rather than this third to forty chapter part thats happening in Part 1. So yeah thats that. Thanks for reading! review and God bless!

25. Part I Chapter 24 (Un beata'd)

**A/N so the reviews have been great! Thanks to all those for any warning, I'm doing my best to make everything work together and so far thank God I haven't hit any Roadblocks. **

**I see a few people saying Bulma couldn't come up with multiverse travel and how the multiverse is very complex. I completely agree however I never said Bulma is the mastermind, now I could argue in her favor that she did build a time machine HOWEVER, she is not the master mind behind it. Its people FAR FAR smarter than she is. You'll see who so don't worry. **

For all the people wanting warhammer and the doctor, for war hammer I know almost nothing about it, just a few things. They were more of a plot filler to show what the Flood and Reapers are capable of. Now the flood are almost God like thanks to the Forerunner trilogy, you know precursor has magic so that kind of explains how they could triumph over the stronger universes. For the Doctor people, he may be mentioned by I don't think he'll be a major player in this Fic. I wish I could put a lot more in here but The main plot line is already set and as of now theres already nine or ten more universes that will be added later on that will make an impact on the story, plus the ones I've mentioned, and thats still not counting the other verses that will just be referenced and/or mentioned.

**And a little spoiler a DBZ character will make an appearance. Who is it? We will see. However they will not play a huge role. Just a chapter or twos role. **

**Alos thanks to thehaloproject for being a plot beta reader. My

other beta reader for grammar and spelling is on hold right now due to time constraints.**

* * *

<p>Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil

**Chapter 24: Evil beyond comprehension. **

* * *

><p>"My name is Bulma briefs and if you're watching this right nowâ€| she sighed "Then things didn't work out so well."<p>

"Now before you turn this off thinking its some hoax, I have left five very important data drives in capsule. I'll explain each one as it goes but I think its best I start from the beginning."

"Goku and my husband Vegeta are basically the two strongest warriors in our universe. Of course theirs Bills the God of destruction but I'm not counting him since he doesn't fight regularly. Anyway they're really strong as in they can destroy planets with a flick of their wrist strong. I n fact the first data drive in the capsule is a correlation of our history." Bulma stated leaning towards the recording device.

"Impossible." Javik grunted.

"Shut up." Wrex growled.

Shepards attention moved from them and back to the video.

"Anyway something happened. As you hopefully know by nowâ€| the multiverse does exist. If you don't know this and have no idea at all what im talking about sorry this is going to be confusingâ€|" The blue haired woman gave a soft smile before contining.

"So exactky a year, two months and twenty five dayas ago, a new enemy emerged. We didn't know who or what he was. It was like darkness started to just surrounded stars and swallow them whole. Being a scientist I normally would've ruled out anything supernatural but after all the things I've seen I wasn't writing anything off. So of course the Kais, the basic overseers of my universe, asked Goku and Vegeta to check it out. Something about the end of all time or whatever. So they went. And when they came back beaten and bloody, we got worried. What on earth could possibly be strong enough to beat these two? So of course all our fighters started training, trying to get as strong as they could. I wish I could say that we beat whatever it was on our own but that would be wrong. A few days before whatever this thing was made it here to earth, a portal opened up, and some heros calling themselves the what was itâ€| Ah Justice groupâ€| Justice League thats it! Ah I don't rememberâ€| To much on my mindâ€| Either way its not importantâ€|"

Shepard could tell something was on her mind. Her voice and eyes often drifted as if she was just going through the motions. A bad feeling crept over her as the blue haired lady continued.

"So they came through their portal trying to talk all high and mighty to our fighters. Needless to say there was a big fight and the man named Clark or Superman from what they called him proved to be Goku's better if only by a bit. Either way we eventually made up and long story short the man dressed as a bat explained how he and some other great minds from their universe tracked something from their universe that leapt into ours. Apparently it had destroyed several planets and one of their own. He then showed me the calculations but I'm still having trouble with about half of it. Trying to reality jump is hard to say the least. Not easy to get. Now the formula he and his friends used to do it is on the second data drive. Maybe whoever sees this can make more sense of it than myself." The blue haired woman pulled out cigarette and lit it up. Shepard could tell she was rather stressed.

"So all of our greatest minds started working together. We know that something is jumping from Universe to Universe but apparently stopped only in our two verse's for prolonged times. We don't know why but we figure it can't be good. The third data drive contains whatever theories we have about these enemies. So far we count five beings with this capability. Each of our respective universe has fought one. Each one being too strong for our respective teams. Don't worry I'll explain who all the other teams were." The woman smiled before laughing.

"Look at me talking about multiple universe's and supernatural beings that can reality jump without the help of technology. This is just to muchâ€¦ I can only imagine how you all fellâ€¦" She stated with a shake of her head.

"Well moving onâ€¦ Something happened. One of the other beings attacked Goku and that guy Clark when they were off on planet Namek. We have a lot of friends there. Anyway from what they tell us, despite Clarks hardest punches he was almost unable to hurt this being but when Goku fought it he managed to injure it.

"No already knowing the fact Clark had proven to be stronger than Goku, imagine how confused we were when that happened. So we ran tests on the two scouring through DNA, blood samples, molecular structures, nervous systems, stem cells, almost everything biologically possible but we couldn't find any difference. Then he came. He called himself the Doctor, or a time lord, stating how something attacked him in his universe, almost managing to kill him before he harmed it enough and forced it to flee. He told us how he tried time jumping to beat it but whatever was attacking him was always the same age, always dangerous. He couldn't beat it but when it jumped universe's he found a way to jump after it. He jumped into a reality with people who used something called a stargate, finding out they too were having trouble with a dark being of their own. Apparently they used these things called Stargates to travel across their universe. They heavily modified one and they managed to create a stable source of reality jumping, and when these Justice guys got wind of it they we're able to create a almost perfect reality jumping machine. Only one though. Took a good three years of constant work to make it. And a few more to perfect it. The fourth data drive has specs of this device, equations and all data we collected about it. Just in case you need to recreate this device and if you need proof on the fact the multiverse is real I've put specs of our universe and a few others. For reference sake."

"While we worked on this, Goku, Superman, and a few other searched our universe for these four beings. They had a lot of battles, most of the time losing and coming back to heal up then going back out again. I don't know how many times we patched them upâ€¦" Bulma threw her hands up in the air. "Seriously you think they'd get it but no they had to prove they could do it. Uh sayains and their damn pride." She grunted.

"Then we noticed a pattern. The first being who called himself a Cat somethingâ€¦ Could only be hurt by Clark. We don't know why. The dark being who had come from their universe, something called a spirit ofâ€¦ What was itâ€¦evil or chaos, but it could only be hurt by Goku. We started to see how only certain people were able to hurt these beings, some more than others. Goku could hurt the Cat guy but never severely, where as clark could get close killing it. So we started to learn. We used what we had learned and we were winning when suddenly a fifth being appeared. At this point it didn't even surprise me. I'd seen it all at this point. None the less no one could get close to killing it. Until they came." Her eyes lit up with a curiosity.

"They call themselves Shadow hunters, managing to reach us through some other worldly device. I didn't even bother trying to study it. We had enough on our hands. They were Demon hunters basically. Now out of everyone we met they were the most interesting. Ok aliens, gods, all that I've seen but most of the time theres always a scientific explantation. These guys, even though they were kids, they don't have an explanation. They just saw demons, killed them, used magic that was beyond anything we knew. It was just exciting. I could only imagine the potential they had. To fix things, to help out.

"So of course us scientists tried to study them. Nothing relevant came up but we were able to learn, that the girl named Clary, was able to hurt the fifth being, hence why it fled from them. So together we all tried to compile our resources and fight these things together."

"Of course there were disagreements, such as what should we do, attack,k defend, plan, rush into battle etcetera. It took a while but we managed to get along. Then our fifteenth year together Batman and myself had a breakthrough. In the genetic code of all those actually able to harm these beings we found a an anomaly. Their DNA had a unknown element. No tests could ID it but we knew it was there. Kind of like a black hole, you can't see it but you know its there. Their DNA even glowed when shown on a microscopic level. It was insane! We were ecstatic, talking about figuring out this whole puzzle, learning how to beat these beings once and for all. I mean they were terrible calling themselves the five parts of evil and that they were bent on destroying all reality. I can't tell you how many times I've heard threats like that. Oh! Thats also what the fifth data drive holds, about the DNA. The equations and everything we stockpiled about it. How to tat positive for it and our theories about what it could be."

"Imagine how we felt. After almost twenty five years, we were finally figuring things out. We had a chance at beating them. The fighters were pushing them back everyday, working together, winning." A smile crept onto her face before disappearing.

"Then something happenedâ€¦ They managed to trick us. The Batman and

I caught it to lateâ€¦ Our celebration over the DNA clouding all of our mindsâ€¦ The girl clary was killed firstâ€¦ Then it was one of the guys who helped us from the stargate universe. Well thats what I called them anyway. Now If you noticed all my past tense well theres a reason whyâ€¦"

"When they ambushed they managed to kill Dr. Nicholas Rush and his entire team, Clary, most of her friends, the amazonian and martian manhunter, and evenâ€¦" Bulma stopped finally. She ran a hand through her hair and bit her lip looking up into the sky.

"Even my son, trunks along with our friend Majin Buu."

"They were just deadâ€¦" a few tears fell from her eyes. It took a few seconds but she finally composed herself.

"Wellâ€¦ Now you know that." She took a deep breath, then continued. "They began to move in on us, on our friends and outposts we had established on far off planets. Now One of them had the abilities to create creates which could transform at will into almost anything. It allowed them to form armies and slowly we started to die off. Now its onlyâ€¦"

Suddenly an explosion ripped through the house where Bulma was at, dust filling the air. A scream ripped through the air as well as Air sirens. The recording device flipped and hit the gourd viewing the scene now from the side

More explosions could be heard in the distance.

Shepard and her group stared in silent shock as the dust slowly began to clear. Everything was still and whatever house had been there with Bulma was gone. They could see her. Her eyes closed and blood on her head, laying underneath a pile of debris.

A voice, crude but afraid called out.

"Woman! Where are you! Theres no time! They've attacked! Kakarrot and Clark are stalling them." A man flew into view. Blood covered his left arm, a few cuts on his head, rips in his clothing. His hair was spiky and sticking back up in the air. He looked around and when his eyes landed on the blue haired woman, he stopped in his tracks.

"Buâ€¦. Bulmaâ€¦" He stated taking a shaky step towards her. It took a fe seconds but he pulled the debris off of her. The man wrapped his arms around her body and placed an ear on her chest.

Shepard already knew what had happened.

The man's eyes widened and he stared at her in shock. Finally his body began to shake, he grit his teeth, his breathing becoming erratic and finally he screamed. It was a blood curtailing roar. The very earth began to shake around him. A golden glow formed around him and the device stopped recording.

Then, before anyone could do anything it started back up. This time it was the man form before. the one named Goku. One of his eyes were closed, blood dripping form his head, and a goofy smile plastered onto his beat up face. He was somewhere in the atmosphere of a

planet

"Well I know Bulma probably covered everything but I'm the last one of our group." His eyes grew sad, depressed beyond help.

"I have to send you guys away before they know we sent this out andâ€¦" His eyes widened and he shot around, holding the device to his side.

Billions of different space ships, creatures of all sorts and then five sets of eyes above them all, rays of different dark colors pouring out from their respective forms, however the device was too far from them to see what they looked like.

"Well they're here." The voice of Goku stated. He pulled the device to his face and pressed on a few buttons, a portal opening up behind him. He smiled.

"This device only had a one jump capabilityâ€¦ Well my name is Goku. I hope you guys have better luck than we didâ€¦." His voice and smile were sad. He turned and threw the device into the portal. Before the portal closed they viewers caught a glimpse of what happened.

Goku roared and a fantastic yellow, red light shined out from him as the ships, creatures and beings moved on him then the portal closed. The video finally ended.

Silence again was all the bridge heard till finally Shepard spoke.

"What the hell?" She stated in a whisper like voice.

"I can't.. Howâ€¦ Just wowâ€¦" Garrus replied.

"Veryâ€¦" Wrex deadpanned stated.

"So what did you do with the data drives?" Reluctant Promise finally asked. The AI was trying to be patient but with that much data he just had to know everything.

"My mother found this video capsule and the data drives, encased in the last intact Precursor artifactâ€¦ She found it in one of the outer galaxies of the old Reclaimer empire after their war with the flood. The Precursors had left their own records, but their video and text logs were damaged thanks to run in with a comet we had almost right after we found it but their own data drives were intact. Long story short, as far as I know they believed the story. They tweaked and manipulated the reality jumping equations to fit slip space capabilities. Took them a couple hundred years but they got it to the point it was easy for them to do. They even figured out how to communicate between dimensions. My mother and I had no idea how they did it. The math and science is beyond anything we have. We just replicated what they built and for some reason it works. I have one on my wrist, a reality jumper and communicator, and the ship has a larger one of both. Both require substantial amounts of power to create a jump. My device is limited to only three jumps, the ship had fifteen in it before having to shutdown and recharge itself near a star. My mother built a third device but before we could implement it she passed awayâ€¦"

She looked at the others with a small sad smile before continuing.

"Now as far as we know the precursor's had a run in with the Gravemind, who we believe was one of those five beings."

"What happened to the rest of those monsters?" Shepard asked concerned.

"My mother and I could never figure it out. We figured something must've happened to them to keep them from destroying everything. If not, I'd bet my life we wouldn't be here right now."

"Agreed." Garrus sighed.

"Either wayâ€¦ We know Shepard and Chief here can harm two of these beings, I don't know how or why. That the strange DNA shows who can harm them in any way. That's why we went after Râ€¦ For some reason that girl has the capability to harm themâ€¦"

"How do we know this isn't a trick?" Garrus stated.

"Testing has placed the capsule to be billions of years old. Before Forerunner, during the Precursor era. It'd be safe to presume they, those people from the video, launched it into our Universe hoping for someone to find it, and the Precursor did." The Keeper replied.

"Like the Prothean beacons." Javik said with a nod.

"Mam we are picking up a transmission inbound for Commander Shepards com link." A mechanized female voice stated over the external speakers on the bridge.

"Let it through." The Keeper said with a wave of her hand, and before Shepard could react a voice filled her ear.

"Commander finally!" Jokers voice stated through the com.

"Joker! You're alive?!"

"Commander we've had one hell of dayâ€¦" The pilot said with a sad chuckle. Shepard looked over at the people around her.

"You have no idea Jokerâ€¦" She laughed. Suddenly the bridge lights shut off and a red light washed over the bridge.

"I believe it Commanderâ€¦" Joker laughed on the other end. "Hey Shepard, Jacqueline and Ashley say you owe them a drink."

"Tell them I'll pay next time we get to a bar. I'll even buy them two."

"Haha with pleasure Commander."

Suddenly the bridge lights shut off and a red light washed over the bridge. The female synthetic voice then interrupted.

"Mam. Planet 845B.03, Universe 21.1A, is about to be invaded by Reapers. Probes have confirmed Reapers ships in orbit and powering

up. They will land within the hour." The synthetic voice stated. The Keeper's shoulder slouched.

"Commander give your ship our coordinates. Tell them to make sure their stealth drives are up in case anyone is trying to follow. They can also dock in the hangar bay."

The Keeper pressed a few icons on her wrist before looking back up at the Spectre.

"Commander we need to move now. One of the few with potential is on that planet. If they die we're that much further from beating the Gravemind and Catalyst." The Keeper stated. Shepard nodded and relayed the information to Joker before cutting off the comm.

"Get the girl." The Keeper stated opening a portal. The lights on her suit visibly began to dim. Garrus could tell the power in her suit was dying. He wondered if the Reality jumper drained her suits energy reserves.

"Why?" Wrex asked. "We don't need her."

"Maybe not. But if she can hurt them, then we'll need her just in case one of the those two show up." The Keeper didn't turn to face them.

"Great more babysitting." Wrex huffed.

"Lets move."

It didn't escape Shepards notice how quiet the Chief had been. He hadn't said a word the entire time.

* * *

><p>Shepard looked at the doors for the medical bay. Two sets of large doors. She ran hand through her hair, thinking about what was going on. Doubts plagued her mind. Gods, demons, supermen, geniusesâ€| Who was she to deal with forces like this?<p>

With a shake of her head she pushed the thoughts away. She needed to hurry. Garrus, Wrex, Chief and the Keeper had all gone through the portal and were waiting for her and R. She hoped she could convince this girl to come with them.

Finally she stepped through the automatic doors. What she found wasn't what she expected.

The small girl with her short brunette hair was staring at one of the holographic panels on one of the walls. She stared at it with wide eyes and a curiosity that matched a two year olds who just saw his first wild animal.

The Arbiter was to her right, leaning against the wall with his arms crossed watching the human with curiosity.

Shepard watched as the girl in her pink dress pressed on the display ever so lightly, visibly cringing as if the display would attack her.

"She'sâ€¦ Unique.." The Arbiter stated softly.

Katherine couldn't help the smile that crossed her face. The girl was young. Innocent. How did the Keeper, or any of them, expect this girl to fight? Running and evading was one thing. Fighting and having to take a life? They were two different things. Shepard didn't want to take her out on this mission, but she had to see. What if the Keeper and that Bulma lady were right? What if she could hurt them like she and the Chief could? They needed all the help they could get.

The display beeped, the screen turned red and a voice stated 'Access Denied.' The girl shrieked and jumped back, cringing again as if the screen would attack her. She let out a sigh before wiping fake sweat from her brow. She took another step towards the thing and was about to press it again before Katherine spoke up.

"Access Denied means you lack the clearance to get in the computers." She stated walking towards the girl.

R jumped with a yelp, staring at Shepard with a guilty look all over her face.

"Im sorry I won't touch it again I swearâ€¦. Butâ€¦ What exactly is a computer? Is that one?" R stated pointing towards the holodisplay. Shepard chuckled.

"That's a holodisplay." Shepard said pointing to the display. "It uses light to create a screen for the computer. A computer is a machine. A sort of device that works really fast and can do a lot of calculating for us." Shepard said with visible discomfort. She had never had to explain what a computer was. To her computers were a regular thing. Everyone knew what they were.

"So like a big brain?" R asked dumbfounded.

"Basically."

"Cool." She said staring at the display with a wide smile, and huge eyes. Shepard almost laughed. The girl was so curious. Then she remembered why she was there in the first place.

"Râ€¦ We need to go." Shepard stated.

"Go where?" R asked turning to her, an eyebrow raised and a calculating look on her face. Shepard was glad the girl wasn't brainless at least.

"Shepard." The Arbiter stated looking at her curiously.

"R. You're special. We need you to come with us. Another planet is in danger. And with your help maybe we can stop them here. Keep them from hurting anyone else." Shepard stated softly. The Arbiter caught on slightly and decided to keep quiet.

R studied the Commander, her big eyes staring straight into Katherine's.

"Will they be there? Those monsters?" R asked quietly, a visible shake running through her and her skin paling.

"No. Another enemy of ours called the Reapers. The Arbiter here will even watch out for you ok. you'll watch her right?" Shepard asked looking over at the elite. He nodded in response.

It took a few seconds for the young girl to compose herself. She nodded. If it meant helping other form suffering what she had to then she would help. No one should grow through what she had to.

"Good lets go." Shepard stated. The Arbiter moved past Shepard and out into the hallway, while the girl threw on her shoes near a bed in the medical bay. The girl motioned Shepard towards her and the Commander took a few steps towards her.

The girl leaned in, staring at the door intently before asking

"Is that guy a giant lizard or what?"

* * *

><p>Elsa's day had started off as normal as any other. Waking up, getting breakfast, going about her Queenly duties, eating lunch with Anna and Kristoff, Saying hi to Olaf, messing around with her powers. She hadn't expected, what she would describe as a magic portal, opening up right in the middle of the castle courtyard.<p>

Now here she and ten guards were, fifteen others along the top wall with crossbows ready, staring at some very odd looking creatures. One was a€¦ Things dressed in what looked like green armor, another was a toad looking monster with a frown, another had four eyesa€¦ she no idea what he looked like. The other was a figure dressed in smooth silver armor, with blue light coming from it. The last had what she would call glasses but only over one eye. He looked like a dinosaur to say the least. She wondered if what they were holding were muskets of some sort. They had the general design but otherwise were very odd looking.

The Ice Queen had ordered her guards to get Anna and Kristoff somewhere safe. Her sister had a fit but the Queen didn't even listen. She was Queen and she needed to deal with thesea€¦ Sorcerers.

She had just stared at them wide eyed for the past fifteen minutes, completely unsure of what to say.

That was when three more stepped through the portal. A woman with red hair, and dressed in similar armor to most of the others, then a young girl. She wore a pinkish dress, stained with all sorts of things, and with short borne hair and wide green eyes. finally a large reptile looking thing in silver armor came through after them.

She was at happy that at least two of them were human.

"I am Queen Elsa of Arendalle." The Queen started then continued.

"And who exactly might you all be?" Elsa asked studying each an every one. She was a master of keeping her face emotionless now. All the years of isolation helping her to perfect the look. She used when she needed to be intimidating though she doubted she was scaring the large fort and reptile ones.

"My name is Commander Shepard." The red head stated walking forward.
"And you need to get out of here."

The Queen gave a quizzical look at the red headed woman.

"And who are you to say that Commander?" The queen stated with a soft glare. The temperature began to drop and the few guards behind Elsa all took a step back.

"Look we're not your enemies but we need to get out of here. The Reapers are coming and this placeâ€¦" Shepard said motioning to the Castle around them. "Won't offer much protection. Swords and bows aren't going to cut it against these guys."

"Who are the Reapers?" Elsa asked with a raised eyebrow.

Katherine exchanged a look with Garrus and the others. She sighed and took a step forward raising her omni tool and creating a hologram of Sovereign.

Elsa took a step back as did the soldiers, a gasp escaping a few of their throats.

"What sorcery is this?" One of the guards stated in a whisper.

"What kind of magic is this?" Elsa demanded taking a step toward them though her eyes continued to flicker to the hologram.

"It's not magic. Maybe to you. Where we come from isâ€¦ A very different place. Another Universe." Shepard stated very lightly. How could she explain such things to people who didn't even know what the lightbulb was yet?

"Another Universe?" Elsa said with a grin and a patronizing look. She shook her head.

"I'm sorry Sorceress but I'm not a fool. What are your intentions here?" Elsa asked with the grin still on her face.

"Dang it we're not sorcerers. This is something called a hologram. Advanced machinery. It bends light to create a picture like this."

"Bends light?"

"Yes, but we're getting off track the Reapers are coming and we need to get you out of here." Shepard stated becoming slightly impatient.

Elsa sighed.

"Commander I appreciate your concern butâ€¦" She was cut off when a loud screeching could be heard all around. The guards cowered and Elsa herself lowered her body as if ready to dash away. Shepard cringed slightly as did the others, all drawing their own weapons.

Elsa's eyes went wide as she spotted it. A huge ball of flames headed straight for the Forj. It slammed into it causing waves of water to

fly into the air, the ground to shake beneath their feet for a few seconds before silence.

"What?" The Queen asked in shock.

"Arbiter, R, Javik and Garrus stay here and secure the Perimeter. Make sure the portal stays safe. everyone else with me." Shepard stated breaking off into a sprint.

"Commander R needs to be tested. See what she can do. I'll stay back and watch the portal." The Keeper stated. Shepard grit her teeth and let out a sigh. She looked over at R, who walked up to her with a fake smile.

Shepard looked over at Wrex. "I need you to watch R. I'll deal with the Queen." Shepard stated. Wrex nodded in response and stepped towards R whose eyes went wide and she seemed to shrink at the sight of him. Wrex only grinned as if waiting to chuckle.

"Let's go." Shepard stated taking off into a light sprint, headed towards where the ball of fire landed.

"Commander." Elsa called out, regaining her composure, her face cold like ice and her brow furrowed in frustration. "You're headed the wrong way. The fastest way to the Fjord is through here." The blonde ran over to a door on the side of the walls.

"Trust me."

Katherine nodded and they ran. It took a few minutes but they made it together. Elsa running alongside with her group. From what Shepard could see the woman was calm and collected. She had an air of loneliness around her though. Most of all, Shepard could tell, she was not a fighter.

Shepard and the others broke out into the air and on a shore next to the massive body of water. What greeted them was exactly what the Commander had expected.

Standing in the middle of the bay was a Reaper capital ship. It let out a boom, causing screams to rise up from the town outside the castle gates.

It slowly turned towards the group as if sensing their presence.

"Commander." A familiar voice stated.

"No?" Shepard said with wide eyes. She had heard this voice on the Collector base many years ago.

"Yes. I am Harbinger. Surrender the Queen and your death will be painless and swift." The Reaper stated, its massive legs beginning to walk it towards the small group.

Shepard looked back at the others. Chief gave her a shake of his head and she nodded.

"Get them out of here." Shepard stated, drawing her rifle and turning towards Harbinger. Her body glowed blue as her bionics activated.

"I beat you once. I'll do it again." She yelled.

John grabbed and rushed the rest back through where they came, Wrex taking R inside the castle for safety. When the Spartan looked for the Queen he saw her approaching the water, walking past Shepard.

Katherine glanced over and saw the Queen moving towards the water.

"I am sorry Commander but this is my fight." Elsa stated even colder than before. Shepard would've said something if it wasn't for the cold blast of wind that hit her full force. She shivered and her helmet activated to protect her from the cold.

She watched in awe at what happened next.

Elsa boldly walked out onto the water, her footsteps light and her head looking up at the Reaper. The water instantly froze under her feet as she approached the Reaper.

"What theâ€¦" Katherine muttered.

"Interestingâ€¦" Harbinger laughed.

"You will not harm my people." Elsa stated calm and collected. Then completely out of her calm and collected character, she slammed her hands onto the water.

Ice suddenly raced over the water, instantly freezing the water as swirls of blizzard winds roared around her. The Ice raced at phenomenal speeds towards Harbinger. The Reaper walked forwards, despite the massive amounts of ice racing towards it. It managed to shatter some of it, but Shepard noticed its pace beginning to slow.

"You believe an element is as strong as us? Foolish child." It stated taking a step forward and its front opening, its red beam powering up.

Suddenly the ice lunged forwards racing up and meeting the Reaper's leg, and at astonishing pace raced up its front legs. The strain of metal trying to move could be heard and Shepard stared in awe. The ice was thick enough to hold Harbinger in place.

"Impossible!"

"Nothings impossibleâ€¦" Elsa stated under her breath and with a final surge, sent the ice all over Harbinger. The Reaper roared, its weapon firing at the last second before it was completely incased in ice.

Shepard, seeing the attack coming, moments before, using her biotics, expended almost all the energy she could to save the blonde. She pulled Elsa towards her, creating a biotic shield around herself as the Queen landed next to her. The next moment the blast slammed into the ice where the Queen had just been.

The explosion sent the two flying, ripping apart the biotic field. The last thing either saw was the color red, ice, and water flying everywhere.

* * *

><p>Anna heard the crash. She raced towards the noise, hoping, praying her sister was ok. She didn't expect to meet anyone in the halls, or at least she didn't expect this.<p>

Standing in front of her was a toad like creature, big and ugly with a strange armor on him. With him was a young human girl. Short brunette hair, a faded pink dress and big green eyes.

"Whoaâ€|" Was all the red head could say. Then the world shook and an explosion rocked the castle.

"Elsa!"

"Shepard!"

* * *

><p>AN so the war for the Ice Queen starts. Only one more chapter for this small arch then we move onto Legend of Korra. Fun right? Yay. Now Im sorry the Doctor and Warhammer aren't in here. As you can see the doctor has already done his part, though he may appear again in later chapters. He contributed big time to our current heros. Now the reason Warhammer fell so early on will be explained later on. Maybe Warhammer will come into play later. I'll consider it. It will also be explained how our heros can defeat beings that even Goku and the others couldn't. Not till part three of four will everything be laid out completely in front of you guys so you'll have to wait.**

also remember the Gravemind and Catalyst are the true enemies here that only our heros can seemingly harm. The Flood and Reapers are more of a means to an end, though they will play a huge chunk in this story.

So reality jumping in short is Precursor magic and DC Universe comic book logic along with the Doctor and Stargate adding in some things. Of course I can't go into detail about it cause well that storyline is over and well the math is way to complicated for me. Like come on I can't even figure out slipspace how the heck would I figure out Reality jumping you know? anyway that what I got for expelling my reality jumping. DC and Marvel do it all the time so why not a civilization such as the Precursor who were as far we know almost god like beings.

anyway you never know who might show up in the you want any certain fights between Universes let me know. The big fight between two universe's is coming in the Legend of Korra Arch. The fight will god willing be amazing.

Also some may think Elsa is being overpowered by if you look at it, she froze over a huge portion of land in like two days almost causing what looked like another ice age. Imagine what she could do if she focused her magic?

****Anyway Thanks for reading God bless and please Review!****

26. Part I Chapter 25 (Beata'd)

****A/N** A quick thank you to all my followers, favoriters, and reviewers and just readers in general. Im glad you guys like this story and so long as you guys keep reading ill keep writing. I know a lot of characters are being underplayed but right now things are moving to fast for me to focus on everyone. After the Korra arc you'll get to see a lot more interaction between characters, and a lot more of every character. Godwilling at least. but for now thats the plan. This also contains the first completely OC character from my own imagination, though he will have some abilities stolen from other characters.**

****Also** the poll on my profile is up and I need more votes. Seriously any pairings will majorly effect the story and i need to know what you all want. Its up to you guys.**

****Thanks** to my two beta's thehaloproject and LethoztheDestroyer!**

****Anyway** hope you enjoy!**

* * *

<p>Part I

****The Voice and Face of all Evil****

****Chapter 25: The Spartan vs the Black Knight****

* * *

>p>Shepard groaned as she slowly got to her feet, the cracking of ice forcing her to look up. She couldn't believe it. The Queen, this young girl, had just frozen over an entire Reaper. It was impressive to say the least.<p>

She noticed the cracks beginning to form around the iced Reaper. It wasn't dead just immobilized and from the looks of the cracks it would be free within the hour. She noticed Chief standing next to her, and she grabbed the Spartans hand to help her to her feet when he offered it to her.

"Are you alright?" The normally quiet Spartan asked. She gave him a nod and he let her go as she stood up straight.

"We need to leave. That Reapers going to be free soon. No way we can fight it without help." She stated before turning to look for the Queen.

They didn't have much time. She found Elsa lying on the ground a few feet away slowly getting to her feet.

The Commander quickly got to her and helped the young woman to her feet. Her blonde hair was out of its formal braid, loose at the ends and covering her shoulders.

The Spartan stood off to the side keeping an eye on the Reaper.

"Elsa we need to go now." Shepard stated.

"Why? Its frozen over." The Queen replied.

"Not for long." Shepard said pointing to the cracks. The blonde gave a sigh and turned towards the Commander.

"Then what do we do huh?" She said crossing her arms.

"We get you out of here. More are going to come and we need you alive." Katherine stated making her back away from their spot against the wall, Towards the doorway leading back into the castle. They had been flung back into the stone wall when the Reaper attacked. Fortunately both had been out for only a few seconds.

"And why do you need me alive?" The Queen asked following the soldier.

"It's a long story." Shepard sighed as they made their way into the Castle, Chief following behind them.

Together and in silence, the three slowly made their way back into the Castle's courtyard where the rest of the group were.

A small red headed girl suddenly jumped onto the Queen, knocking both down and Shepard pointed her weapon at her out of reflex as did the Spartan.

"Relax its my sister Anna." Elsa stated with both a sigh and a smile.

"What happened Elsa and what on Earth is that thing in the Fjord? And who are these people? Why is there a walking toad in the Courtyard? And who are they?" Anna started off, looking at the warriors around the Courtyard, mainly Wrex and the other aliens.

"Anna!" Elsa started as the two got to their feet.

"And then and then I saw them! That toad guy and the girl and I was gonna ask who they were, you know manners and all, but then that earthquake knocked us all down and the big one screams Shepard and he runs this way so you know I followed!"

"Anna!"

"Then I see the rest of these guys and I'm like ok kind of freaky so I ask them who they are and you know the stars well apparently!"

"Anna!" Elsa finally says a little more forcefully grabbing her sister by the shoulders.

"Sorry!" Her sister says with a smile and raised shoulders. Elsa just sighs with a smile and hugs her sister again.

"At least you're ok." The elder sibling states releasing her little sister before looking over at the Commander and Spartan.

"Now will you please explain what exactly is going on?" She asked pushing her sister behind her in a protective manner. After what happened with freezing everything, Hans, and almost killing her sister, the blonde had become protective of her sister. She even yelled at Kristoff one time for not walking her sister all the way to the Castle one night. He had stopped twenty feet from the gate instead of next to it. Elsa knew she overreacted and had apologized of course. She was just being a big sister. She had to watch out for her only family left.

"Look its going to be really confusingâ€|" Shepard started. "Lets just say there are very evil creatures trying to destroy all of reality and there is someone here in your kingdom that can hurt them." Shepard stated trying her best to dumb down all the technological aspects. She saw how R had reacted with tech. She didn't want a repeat just yet.

Elsa glanced at the portal still open near the giant lizard and the reptilian guy.

"Whats that?" She asked.

"It'sâ€| A portal to another place. Where we came from. Its safe there." Shepard replied.

"Safeâ€|" The blonde stated softly, studying the swirling vortex.

"It's herâ€|" The Keeper stated randomly walking up to them. She waved her hand over the girl and something clicked on her wrist device.

"Wait me what?" Elsa asked curiously.

"You can hurt the enemies we're fighting." The Keeper replied.

"So what do you want me to do?"

"You need to come with us. We can protect you and maybe together we can stop these things."

"What about the people? We can't just leave them!" Anna stated from behind her sister.

"We? We do not have room for you as well. You're sister is the one we need." The Keeper stated.

Shepard shot her a questioning look as did the others.

"I'm not going anywhere without her." Elsa stated glaring at the Forerunner, ice beginning to form around her feet.

"Enough." Shepard stated stepping between the two. "We're not just leaving them to die. You've seen what the Flood and Reapers can do." She looked at the Keeper.

"We don't have time to save everyone Shepard. We have to defeat these beings. If we don't who will?" The Forerunner stated.

"We're not leaving them."

"Alrightâ€| Alright. Your sister can come too." The Keeper replied.

Before any more could be said another loud boom echoed out over the kingdom.

All of them looked towards the sky. Fire reigned down from it. Multiple balls of fire as far as they could see. Shepard had seen this before on Earth at the beginning of the Reaper war.

"Theyre invading." Shepard stated. A single fireball, closer than the rest, flew overhead and slammed into the town outside. They could hear the screams and the shrieks of husks. Bells began to ring and guards poured out from the castle, a few surrounding the gate with swords drawn, other climbing up to their places on the walls and readying their bows.

"We need to move now." Shepard stated raising her rifle towards the gate.

"What about the people?" Anna stated as more yells and scream filled the air. Just as they said that, a guard ran up to Elsa.

"Your majesty something is attacking the town! We need to get you to safe area as soon as possible!" The guard stated with obvious fear.

Suddenly a yell filled the air as a guard toppled over from his post on the wall, a hole in his armor.

"Shit!" was all Garrus could say as a Harvester flew past over head.

"Your majesty now!" The guard replied keeping his eyes on the sky just in case the Harvester came back.

The gates burst open and the guards surrounding it were gunned down by thermal clips, several cannibals and Marauders marching through the gates remains, and firing at anyone that was alive.

Shepard tackled the Queen to the ground as bullets flew over the two.

Garrus and Javik both opened fire on the attackers, managing to cut down two cannibals before the enemy returned fire.

Chief charged the group of attackers, while the Arbiter fired at them from a range.

Wrex pushed R behind him and fired away with his shotgun, roaring a variety of things at the Reaper forces.

John spun under a Marauders swipe at him. He thrust a fist into the monsters gut and sent it flying back into one of its friends. He spun onto his feet and filled a Cannibal with Titanium from his Assault Rifle.

Bullets pinged off his shields from behind. He spun around, and

kicked another Marauder in the chest, breaking the metal armor and knocking it over.

Shrieks filled the air and as John and the others gunned down the last two Cannibals, he saw the husks climbing over the walls, attacking the guards on the wall.

He aimed his rifle at the nearest husk when another scream filled the air.

A few moments earlier, Shepard pulled Elsa to her feet, creating a biotic field around the Queen to protect her from the bullets.

"Look out!" The Queen yelled trying to get past Shepard. The Spectre spun around and was met with metal fist.

She flew back into Elsa, sending the two sprawling on the ground.

She looked up and saw a being in pure silver armor grabbing the Queen's sister and turning to flee. Its armor was sleek and smooth, a black torn cape flying on its back, the silver reflecting the light from the sun.

The young red headed sister screamed as the being pulled her over its shoulder.

Katherine sprung to her feet and drew her pistol firing several shots at the being's lower torso.

The bullets bounced off shields and the being turned towards Shepard. It fired a biotic blast at her and the Commander was forced to dive out of the way. She watched as the silver entity turned to face the Spartan charging him.

Expertly, the being sidestepped the Spartan, who rushed past and was forced to spin on his heel to correct his course. Even he wasn't fast enough to catch the kick in his chest that sent him to the ground.

Husks fell to the ground from the walls and the entity used this distraction to cover his escape out the front gates. Anna screamed and yelled to be let free as the silver entity fled the battle.

Garrus fired off a few shots after him, but they were useless.

"Anna!" Elsa yelled pushing past Shepard and John whom had gotten to their feet at the same time.

"Wait!" Shepard yelled gunning down a husk that had gotten too close. Chief knocked another husk to the ground and filled its face with a stream of bullets.

The Queen raced through the chaos of bullets and husks after her sister.

The Keeper ripped two husks in half and saw the Queen fleeing.

"You majesty!" The Forerunner called rushing towards her, but she wasn't fast enough.

A husk swiped at the Queen managing to rip a large gash in her arm. Elsa screamed in pain but instead of cowering or fleeing, she glared at the husk and grit her teeth. Giant ice shards suddenly blasted up from the ground, impaling any husks near her, the ground froze over and the husks in the courtyard instantly froze, the walls froze over as well, freezing all the husks climbing over.

The bullets died down as the fighters instead smashed the frozen husks into pieces. The surviving guards rushed around helping any wounded. Another ran over to Elsa holding his bleeding arm.

"Orders my Queen?" He asked shaking in fear. Elsa didn't even respond she just stared out the broken gates.

"Anna!" She yelled, frantically taking off after her sister. she didn't get more than three steps when a large green hand grabbed her arm and pulled her back.

"I'll get her." John stated walking past the Queen.

"No I will." The Queen stated grabbing the Spartans arm. He shrugged it off like it was nothing and the blonde took another step after him when Shepard intervened.

"Elsa we need you alive. He's more than capable of getting your sister back. Trust me." The Spectre stated looking at the blonde. Elsa didn't return her look and just nodded solemnly. Together the two watched the Spartan jog after the red head and whatever had taken her.

Elsa, composing herself, turned back to the other, her gaze once again calm and collected.

"How do you plan to keep us safe?" She asked looking at the Forerunner.

"We will take you to a different place. One where they can't find you or your sister." The Keeper stated.

"And what about the people? They'll be slaughtered." Elsa stated crossing her arms and glaring at the elder alien.

Shepard had to give it to her. The Queen sure had guts.

"We cannot. We simply do not have the resources to care for everyone." The Keeper started.

"You help my people and I'll come along. Otherwise find yourself another Queen." Elsa stated turning away from the forerunner and back to her guards.

"Fortify the walls. Send out some men and try to gather people in the castle. If we have to pour oil on the bridge to keep any of those things from entering." The Queen stated. Her soldiers complied and began scurrying about to fulfill their Queens orders.

Shepard glared at the Keeper who returned the look. Finally though,

after a few seconds, the Keeper sighed and gave a nod, pressing commands onto her wrist. The Commander gave a nod of thanks and turned towards Elsa, who was now standing where the gates had once been, staring out towards the town.

"Queen Elsa."

"Yes?" She replied not looking back.

"We'll do our best to get your people out." Shepard stated loading her weapon.

"Thank you." The Blonde replied looking down. The town was burning. Screams filled the air and the sky was turning dark as storm clouds floated over, lighting igniting the sky.

"Alright. Arbiter, Garrus and Javik cover the walls, do your best to slow them down. Elsa stay here and guide your people through that portal. Wrex take R back and help the refugees into the hangar bay. Do what you can to treat any wounded." Shepard stated walking towards the gates, Garrus following after her.

"Commander take one of them with you." The Keeper said pressing commands into her wrist. "We can help protect the Castle."

Out of the portal came over a dozen Promethean Knights, each roaring and igniting their hard light swords. Sentinels poured out of the portal, rushing over to castle walls and into the battle outside.

Shepard nodded to her.

"Garrus with me." She stated, and together her and Garrus sped off towards the town.

Elsa stared in awe at the Knights and Sentinels. She had never seen anything like it.

"We are Forerunner!" The Keeper yelled lifting her arms, the Knights roaring in kind and leaping to the walls and gates, their challenge to the Reapers forces obvious.

John sprinted past several dead husks. He had taken down he didn't know how many enemies in just the few minutes he had been gone. Shepard had contacted him through his com and informed him about what was happening.

The towns folk were fighting back, but against technologically superior foes they hardly stood any chance.

All around him, screams filled the air. Men fought against the Reapers with everything they had. Swords cutting through flesh, arrows soaring through the air, muskets firing at the enemy, torches lighting the area, as fires burned through homes and buildings.

He watched a man get gunned down by Marauder. A little girl backed away from the alien.

The Marauder pointed its weapon straight at her head, but a second before it fired, John was there. He grabbed the alien weapon,

pointing it up and allowing the shot to sail over the little kid. He grabbed at the aliens throat, forcing it to fall back and filled its body with hot Titanium, the rifle clicking empty as his bullets ran out.

He tossed the rifle aside and turned to the kid.

"Are you alright?" He asked, making sure to keep some attention on his motion sensor.

The kid only nodded at him in fear despite the fact he had saved her life.

"Get ot the castle. It's safe there." John stated walking over to the marauder and picking up its weapon. The girl quickly complied and ran off towards the castle.

He hoped the girl would make it uninjured.

The Spartan took off again in a jog, gunning down whatever came his way.

He twisted and turned, ducked and punched, ripping apart whatever Reapers forces stood in his way. He had broken his word before and he would not let it happen again, even if it killed him.

The Spartan sprinted around a corner, digging his feet into the ground, sliding and then taking off again.

A Brute roared as it pummeled a poor woman into the ground, her screams cutting off as she died a horrid death.

John didn't hesitate to attack the monstrosity. His armored body rammed into the brute at full force sending the behemoth stumbling back as the Spartan pulled back.

He fired away, filling the creature with bullets.

However, it didn't stop the brute form charging him.

The monster slammed into him, sending his rifle to the floor, but the Spartan held his ground. He held the brutes arms away from him, holding the beast back as best he could. The two struggled in a match of sheer strength. Before the Brute could overwhelm him, John twisted the beasts arms outward and placed a hard kick to its chest.

It was enough to force the creature back but not nearly enough to kill it.

Again the Brute charged him. This time he was quick enough to avoid it by rolling off to the side.

Reversing his momentum, he lunged back at the beasts side. His weight knocked the beast out of balance sending it tumbling into a building. The wooden walls snapped, allowing the beast to fall through them.

John grabbed his rifle again and aimed at the house. The Brute, having stood back up, charged him again, wood flying everywhere as it charged through the hole in the house and at him.

* * *

><p>Shepard blasted several husks away with a shockwave.<p>

"Go! Get to the castle!" She yelled at the few towns people she had just saved. The nodded in response and sped off. People were scurrying about. most trying to head to the Castle, other trying to put out the fires, and a few trying to fight the Reaper forces.

A man with blonde hair riding a reindeer, and carrying a snowman caught her attention for a few seconds before bullets splashing her amor, forced her to turn back to the battle.

Garrus pulled off several head shots before being forced to slam the butt of his rifle into a husks face.

"Just like old times isn't it Shepard!" He yelled with a laugh, firing away at several cannibals.

"No kidding!" Katherine responded firing away at the Reapers. A sudden ear splitting crack filled her ears and she spun to face the Fjord just as a large chunk of ice fell off the Reaper.

"Hurry up! We're running out of time! GO!" She yelled at more of the towns folk.

She fired away as more Reaper forces began to converge on them.

* * *

><p>John reloaded his weapon, stepping over the Brutes lifeless body. He flexed his right hand, feeling a slight pain from literally punching the things head in over and over.<p>

The fires and dark, cloudy sky, gave the town an eerie look. He stopped in his tracks when he spotted the reflection of flames on silver armor at the end of the row of homes he was at.

He raised his rifle and slowly stepped towards the being in silver amor.

Whatever the being was its armor looked similar to the Didacts, except connected like The Keepers, yet it wasn't of Forerunner design at all. A black torn up cape fluttering in the winds, two red eyes on its helmet, three spike sticking out to the back of its helmet and it stood at seven feet tall like John. It tilted its head as Chief got closer, and from behind it pulled up Anna.

It held her out by the hair, the girl weakly struggling to get free. Blood openly flowed from a wound on the girls arm, and dried up blood stained her lips from behind punched hard in the head.

John stopped about ten feet form the two and kept his aim true, waiting for the perfect moment to fire.

"The Queen for the girl." The being stated, his voice deep and monotone, brokering no argument.

"Why?" John shortly stated.

"You know why." The being replied.

"And who are you to give me orders?" The Spartan stated, flexing his finger on the trigger, he just needed the thing to get distracted.

"I am a knight of evil. I am the Black Knight. More powerful than you can ever be. You know not of the forces you trifle with human. They, We, are beyond your comprehension." The silver entity stated, his armor turning black as he spoke. He flexed his hand and out of nowhere, a sword forming in his hand, red energy swirling around it.

"Now human look upon your doom. I am a god! I cannot die! As destined by those who created me!" The Black Knight roared in triumph raising his sword to the thundering sky. It was the opening John needed.

With perfect accuracy, the Spartan fired, hitting the knights dead on it the helmet.

The result was expected. The bullets did nothing to the shields but thats not what John had been aiming for.

The black knight on reflex released Anna's hair and rolled to the side trying to avoid more bullets, then throwing what looked like a red biotic blast at the Spartan, who in turn expertly dodged the attack.

He didn't give the knight time to recover and charged straight at it. Using his weight, John crashed into the knight, pinning him to the ground, using his rifle to press down on the knights throat to hold him down.

"Run!" the Chief yelled to the girl, briefly looking at her. The red head, having got to her feet, nodded quickly, her scared body shaking like a rabbit, then taking off towards the castle.

The rain then started to pour.

John turned back to the knight and was met with a headbutt. The Black Knight then used this to overpower the Spartan, and toss away his gun, flip him off of hisself, and pin him to the ground with knee on his throat. The knight socked the Spartan in the gut, John flinching hard from the hit that was easily stronger than any brutes punch.

The knight grabbed his helmet, and in one fluid motion managed to stand, yank Joh into the air, and send him flying down the street.

The Master Chief slammed into the ground, causing tears in the ground where he hit then rolled and finally came to a stop.

He slowly climbed to his feet, and looked up to see the Black Knight next to him.

This time he was fast enough to dodge the knights sword swipe, allowing the knights momentum to carry him forward and then elbowing

him in the face.

He proceeded to kick the knight in the chest, then drew his combat knife.

The Black knight stumbled to a halt and roared something unintelligible. He raised his arm and formed a second sword in his hand. He took a second to study Chief then lunged at him.

Chief met the lung with a dodge to the side, a punch to the gut and then spun around to drive the knife into the Knights back.

However, at the last second the Knight spun around and managed to slam his sword into Chiefs chest.

The Spartan stumbled back a few feet, before regaining his footing. an alarm was going off in his helmet alerting him of the fact his shields had been completely drained. His armor its self had a small slash in it, indicating that the swords were lethal.

John charged and the knight met his charge. The two slammed into each other and ended up in a grapple, the knights swords disappearing as he met Chiefs grapple.

Before the Black Knight could react, Chief drove his knee into the knights gut, slipped around him and elbowed him hard in the back.

The Knight lurched forward and received a hard kick to the back. He spun around almost instantly, using his momentum to his advantage, and threw a punch at the Spartan.

John stepped back to avoid the punch.

without warning, a red wave of energy shot out from the Knights body with a roar. It slammed into the Spartan and against his resistance managed to flip him backwards and into a house with a crash.

The walls cracked beneath his weight, and he fell to his knees, breathing heavily from whatever the being had done.

He recognized what the Knight had done. It was similar to the blue biotic attacks he had seen Shepard do.

John got to his feet and the two stared each other down, the rain pounding away at their respective armors.

Finally the knight moved. A red warp formed in his hand, with a twirl and thrust of his armored hand, the warp flew towards Chief.

The Spartan prepared to move out of the way when a blue warp intercepted the red on, causing both to explode on impact and a shockwave to explode out form the collision.

John watched as Shepard raced up to him, her weapon facing the Knight.

"Both warriors against oneâ€|" The Black Knight stated forming one of his swords back in his hand.

"Anna says thanks." Shepard stated, glowing blue.

John didn't reply and only took the pistol Shepard handed him.

The two fired as one, bullets and a warp flying towards the Knight.

Amazingly fast, the knight dodged the warp and managed to avoid their bullets, by rolling under their line of fire and throwing a shockwave at them. The attack was larger than any either had ever seen, and only the Spartan was fast enough to escape it.

Shepard felt the shockwave ram into her, and flew back into the house the Spartan had been flown into. this time the impact was strong enough to send her through the wall and cause the house to crash down on her.

John felt the shockwave trip him, despite his evasion and tumbled forward landing on one knee.

He barely had time to react as the Black Knight charged him, and he was forced to block the knights kick with his hand, dropping his weapon in turn. He pushed off the knights foot and rolled back.

He rose to his feet just in time when the knight slashed at him. As fast as lightning the Spartan avoided the sword, spun around the attacker and punched him in the back again. The attacker was unfazed and spun at the super soldier again, his sword missing John by mere centimeters.

The slash was reenforced by a harsh kick to John's chest and the Spartan stumbled back as the Knight twirled around, readying his swords for a stab through the chest. The Spartan prepared to dodge this attack despite his disorientation.

A large rock hitting the knight in the head, stopped him in his tracks, and John quickly took advantage of the distraction.

With amazing speed, the Spartan lunged forward, knocking the sword away, uppercutting the Knight then spinning around and kicking the knight in the chest.

A blue biotic blast slammed into the knights side, sending him stumbling, and with a final punch in the back, the Spartan knocked him down.

John without hesitation pulled the knight up and grabbed him in a head lock with both arms, the Spartans actions threatening to break the knights neck.

He watched as Shepard walked over to them her weapon drawn, a few cuts on her face and the red headed Anna walked up holding another rock in hand.

The Knight struggled to break free, but despite the rain and wind, John held him in place, only tightening his grip every time the knight sturggled.

"You have no idea the power you challenge." The Black Kinght spat form his spot.

"Yeah well they do't seem so tough!" Anna snapped throwing another rock at the knight. Shepard raised an eyebrow in response, and Chief only tightened his grip.

"Who do you work for?" The Spartan asked.

"They could do far worse then you ever could Spartan." The Knight stated.

"We'll only ask this once again. Who." Shepard stated pointing her weapon at the Knights head, John tightening his grip, ready to break the beings neck.

A loud crack and sound of water splashing filled the air with a loud boom following it.

"Till next time." The Black Knight stated with what sounded like a smile. He sent out a biotic shockwave around him, knocking down the three, then activated something on his wrist and suddenly vanished in a bright white light.

Befroe the others could react to his disappearance the two soldiers coms went off.

"Shepard! The Reapers breaking free! We need to go now!" Garrus yelled.

The two only looked at each other before breaking off into a print, Anna following behind.

* * *

><p>The two soldiers ran as fast as their legs could carry them, a red blast flying past them signaling the Reapers freedom as they turned the corner and finally laid eyes on the bridge of the castle.<p>

"We are immortal Shepard. Our power is limitless." Harbinger roared as he fired again at the Castle, completely obliterating the top half of it.

Anna held on for dear life, as the Spartan carried her. She wasn't fast enough to keep up with the two and Chief had scooped her up with hesitation, knowing they had no time to waste.

They ran on the bridge, their boots crashing against the wet stone, as Harbinger finally stepped towards them, his massive size looming over the castle.

Shepard could see the few Promethean Knights, the Arbiter Garrus, Javik, Wrex, and the Keeper standing near the portal in the middle of the courtyard. Elsa stood with them forming ice pillars to keep the walls from collapsing. The biotics of the group were keeping any falling debris off them as best they could.

A red light lit up the dark sky, the Reapers main weapon powering up as it targeted at close range, the two soldiers.

John noticed it and knew there was only one shot. He grabbed, Anna

and with a mighty swing sent her flying towards the entrance to the courtyard. Before Shepard could even react, he grabbed her, spun around and sent her flying to.

She landed with hard thump on the ground and rolled onto her side.

Katherine cursed under her breath and looked up.

The green armored man continued his run towards them, only a few feet from them, when the red beam washed over the bridge. And in a flash the bridge went up in a huge explosion.

* * *

><p>AN so John got to showcase some of his fighting skills against a being that was about his equal yet had biotics. Now Shepard didn't save him and neither did Anna, they only helped to distract the Black Knight. John would've won either way but I needed him uninjured for the bridge scene. Also before anyone says that how can John be caught by the Reapers attack when Shepard escaped it last chapter, well to be fair The Reaper targeted Elsa, and Shepard was a good ways away, where as here John was caught right in the beams area of effect, hence why he tossed the others towards the courtyard. Now a Cliffhanger! Whoo! Will John live? Find out next time!**

I'm going to receive hate for thisâ€¦ just wait till next time! Review! Thanks for reading and God bless!

27. Part I Chapter 26 (Un beata'd)

A/N So heres the next Chapter! Not any real action.

So enjoy!

Oh also I wanted to start writing little 'Interludes' of a 1000 words. They wouldn't be action of main plot at all but they would be like little side stroys or interactions between all the characters which would build on the relationships in the story and hence effect the over plot. Im thinking about this so let me know what you want. Also maybe thinking about starting a new twitter account for my FanFic profile so I can update on the story and what not, what do you guys think?

Thanks to my beta readers again, thehaloproject and LethoztheDestroyer!

Anyway hope you enjoy!

* * *

><p>Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil

Chapter 26: 12 hours.

* * *

><p>It was dark. No light, no sound, no anything. Blackness, pure blackness like the space between galaxies, where things unknown lie.<p>

John stepped forward. There was ground underneath his feet but he couldn't see it. He could barely see his armor on him.

"Shepard?" He stated looking around the pitch black. A voice fluttered in the dark, barely audible and whatever they said completely unintelligible.

"Who's there?" The Spartan asked when the voice stated something but again he couldn't understand it.

Finally he turned around and a blue light shined on him.

Don't make a girl a promise you know you can't keepâ€|

* * *

><p>Katherine stood in the medical bay watching a sleeping Spartan, having helped Elsa and the others all move into their rooms. They and been forced to remove his armor, and stitch him up in a few places. His armor was up for repair. Overall he would make it.<p>

After setting John in the medical bay they had showed and explained what they could to their new allies, albeit a little dumbed down. After all they couldn't really explain slipspace and reality jumping in detail to people who hadn't even invented the car or plane.

For all of the refugees, one hundred and twenty in total, that made it out of Arendalle, now housed in the bay with the elite captain and his team, they gave as much an explanation as they could. Of course that where a few people had lost it, so they left the Queen to talk to them and calm them down. According to her sister, the red head named Anna, even that didn't help much. Shepard could've swore the girl could have kept talking for ages if that blonde haired man hadn't given Anna someone else to talk to.

Despite all that, they had to slipspace jump to the Normandy's location. The ship had no way of getting to them without a mass relay, and dark space is void of them. Thanks to their little adventure with the Queen, they didn't realize this till they had gotten back and Chief was out in the medical bay.

So now here Shepard was just as the ship dropped out of slip space out and headed over to rescue the Normandy. She had become quite accustomed to the ship already, thanks to the map the Keeper had placed in her omni tool.

She had been studying him without his armor. Pale skin, brown hairs, large and built. His arms covered in scars and a few in his face. He was dressed in UNSC military fatigues.

Suddenly Shepard jumped back as the Spartan shot up in the bed he was laying in.

The Arbiter was there as well, standing off to the side with his arms crossed, his eyes watching the Spartans movements.

The other were all busy, Garrus and The Keeper helping Joker navigate the Normandy over to the Forerunner ships bay, Wrex and Javik watching R and Elsa's room, Reluctant Promise doing whatever he did on his free time, and then the Arbiter and her waiting to see when the Chief would wake up.

And now he had.

The Spartan looked around the room, his actions a little more agitated than usual as he noticed his armor was missing.

"You alright?" Katherine asked taking a cautious step towards him.

The Spartan looked over in her direction, and finally his shoulders relaxed, if only the slightest.

"Fine." He replied shortly. The Spartan got to his feet and rolled his shoulders and neck, trying to loosen up the tense muscles. His body had been banged up but thanks to Forerunner medical technology he was in pretty good shape.

"What happened?" He asked looking at Shepard once more.

"The blast missed by a few inches. Knocked you out cold and left you hanging off the remaining part of the bridge, ready to fall into the water below. Arbiter here saved your life. He ran and grabbed you before the Reaper could fire or the rest of us even had time to really react. We almost got blasted to pieces, but we all made it out ok. You were pretty banged up. Forced us to get you out of that armor and stitch you up. Your armor is being repaired right now. Either way, , we didn't get as many of the civilians as we hoped we would out in time but at least you're alright." Shepard stated with a smile. She then sighed and rubbed the back of her neck. She was sore from everything that had happened recently.

She hadn't had a good nights rest in days. She wondered if maybe tonight she could get one.

"What about the planet?" Chief asked her, standing tall.

"Almost gone. Reapers moved quick. They didn't stand a chance." Shepard said with a shake of her head.

The Spartan didn't reply. When he didn't Shepard decided to speak up.

"Arbiter, see if you can contact Thran' we should let him know about the situation. Guys gotta have one hell of a fight on his hands." Shepard stated, the elite didn't respond but turned and left the room, only after sending a nod towards Chief who returned one.

"So whats our next move?" John asked looking down at the red headed Commander.

"While we were gone the AI on the ship detected a energy spike. Apparently another portal opened. The Keepers setting up her portal to jump us into new reality when we're ready but first we're to get Joker, my pilot, and my ship, then we need to establish contact with Thran' and Hackett. Figure out what their take on things are. After

that we have to figure out what to do with all the civilians in the bay." Shepard stated. The Spartan only nodded slightly.

"Any ideas?" She asked. His silence was enough of a reply for her.

"We're to meet up at the bridge in twenty." Shepard stated. She raised her omni tool and showed him a brief picture of the ships layout and how to get their.

"Take it easy big guy. We're gonna need you in one piece." She then patted his arm and turned away.

The Spartan didn't reply and followed her out, though once there hit the hallway the two split, the Commander heading deeper into the forerunner ship, while John moved off in the opposite direction.

* * *

><p>Elsa stared at the wall, the dark room not bothering her at all. The room was strange to her. Metal walls, shining with dim blue lines of light, a single bed for her, a metal nightstand with a holographic lamp and a metal dresser.<p>

When her, Anna and Kristoff were escorted to their rooms she had insisted she was going to sleep, but hadn't been able to, despite the fact her guards were outside and ready to die for her protection.

She kept seeing it, what the Commander had called a Reaper in her dreams, destroying her home, killing her, her people, her sister. She had woke up in sweat and with a scream several times. Apparently the walls were keeping her scream to herself, hence why no guards had barged in yet, but the voice in the wall had asked if she was ok. She had responded that she was fine and asked for the lights to be turned off again. Either way the Queen didn't want to alert the guards. They needed her to be strong. She was their leader. Their Queen. Their homes had just been obliterated and here they were sailing across the stars. She needed to be strong, but only in front of them. So by herself she let herself, her fear, show and it kept her from sleeping.

Now she was just sitting and staring at the wall, the walls covered in ice. She wondered why the voice in the wall wasn't asking her about it. She was happier that it didn't.

'_What would you doâ€¦|._' A voice whispered in her ear.

"What?" She stated standing up, the ice growing and the temperature dropping rapidly.

Whatâ€¦|

"Anna is that you?" She asked even though she knew Anna couldn't have been in the room with her. The door was shut and it hadn't opened since she had come in.

'_Annaâ€¦| What would you do to save her?_' The voice was louder this time, darker and a unnatural chill fell over the room.

"What?" Elsa asked again this time getting to her feet, her stance alert and rigid.

'_What would you do for your family?_'

"Who are you?" She asked frantically.

'We are the monuments to all your sinsâ€¦ Tell us do you believe these people can protect you and your sister?' When they can't even save themselves?'_

"What do you mean?" The Queen asked unsettled by their words.

'A man out of time, The Spartan who lets his own best friend dieâ€¦.' 'A woman whose choices almost condemned a whole galaxyâ€¦' 'A little girl who is so afraid to even tell her so called protectors her own nameâ€¦' 'How can they protect you or Anna?'_

"How can you?"

'Give us the Spartan and the Commander. Let us deal with them and we will bring no harm to you and your sister. You saw what we are capable of.''_

Elsa looked around, blinking and breathing heavily. These people had just saved her life, heck the green man had almost died trying to save her. Would she really betray them for her only family left?

She would. But she couldn't. It wasn't in her heart. It wasn't who she was.

So with great strength of heart, Elsa straightened her back and ice shot out from her, seemingly pushing the darkness of the room back from her.

"No. I'm not going to betray anyone. Not for whoever you are. Especially if you're the ones who caused Aranedelle's destruction."

'You betray your parentsâ€¦' 'They would have trusted you and now your sister will die because of youâ€¦''_

"Annaâ€¦" Elsa gasped in fear. She knew a threat when she heard one. The blonde turned and stormed out of the room, the lights turning on and the door automatically sliding open for her.

The moment she stepped out she ran into a certain red headed Commander at full force. The two slammed into each other and fell to the ground in a clump, her guards surrounding the two with hands on their weapons.

"You majesty are you alright?" One of the guards asked kneeling down next to her.

"Fine." Elsa groaned and rubbed her head, slowly sitting up on her side. She looked up to see the Commander already getting to her feet then looking down at her.

Shepard offered the younger woman a hand, and helped her to her feet.

"Sorry." Elsa muttered embarrassed.

"Its fine. Where were you off to in such a hurry?" Shepard asked with much curiosity.

"No whereâ€¦ Just to see Anna." Elsa quickly stated, ice already forming in her hands as she thought of the conversation withâ€¦ whatever it was.

"Anna and that blonde haired man are up in the bridge of the ship already. I came down here to get you." Shepard stated.

"Why?" Elsa asked cautiously.

"Theres some information we need you three to here. Its important and we'll only be able to help you if you know whats really at stake."

"Wellâ€¦ ok." The Queen said reluctantly, she told her guards to follow then she followed the red haired soldier. The two made their way to the bridge of the ship, the guards following.

* * *

><p>Jacqueline stepped out of the Normandy and stretched her neck, her riffle in hand. They had been surprised when they were picked up by this unknown ship but Shepard said they were on it. None the less, she had a weapon ready. What if it was a trap? Still It was nice to finally be able to step out of that ship. The blood and death on it made her sick.<p>

She stopped when she heard voices and looked around, only to see people who looked like they belonged in a renaissance fair, along with a few aliens like the Arbiter standing around.

"Great more aliens." Ashley William's stated walking up next to the blonde.

"Come on its not all that bad!" Joker stated as he limped down the ramp of the Normandy's bay. Even he wanted off the ship at this moment.

"Joker you're going to hurt yourself." Ashely stated as the two solider looked back at him.

"Hey all the blood in there kind of makes me sick. I had to get out for a little bit." The pilot stated as he stopped next to the two women.

"Any idea why these people are all dressed up like medieval times?" Jacqueline asked nodding towards the people behind her.

"No idea but with everything we've seen I bet theres nothing that can surprise us now." Joker replied, studying the strangely dressed people spread throughout the bay.

"I'll take that bet." A voice stated from behind.

"Well if it isn't Garrus." Ashley smiled slightly and the group

turned to face the Turian walking up to them.

"Nice to see you all alive." Garrus stated with a hint of humor. Shepard had sent him down here to greet the crew and to help make sure someone explained to them everything that had happened in the past day.

"You too big guy. Well technically thats Wrex but you get the idea." Joker stated.

"So hows the ship?" Garrus asked crossing his arms.

"Fine. A little bloody and messy thanks to Lithyia but with a good cleaning she'll be fine." Joker replied.

"So she really was working for them. Damn."

"Yeah we didn't expect it." Ashely replied with sigh.

"Neither did we. Left us stranded on that damn planet. Nearly died." Garrus stated.

"Speaking of that how did you get off that planet?" Joker asked as a few other from the Normandy, including Liara and Legion began to make their way down the ramp.

"Liara! Good to see you all in one piece!" Garrus stated with a wave

"Likewise Garrus. Wheres Shepard?" Liara asked slightly confused. She figured the Commander would've been there to greet them. In fact most of them had thought that.

"To answer both of your questionsâ€¦ Well this is where things get complicatedâ€¦"

* * *

><p>"What?" Anna asked completely dumb founded. Her eyes were wide and her head hurt.<p>

"What?" She asked a second time louder and more forceful than before.

"Annaâ€¦" Shepard stated taking a step towards the red head.

"No!" The younger girl stated jumping back.

"Please try to calm downâ€¦" The Keeper stated with her hands raised in a calming manner.

"Calm down?! you just told us about other Universe's, Realities whatever that is, About who these beings want to kill us and were trying to kill us so thats why you came to our home and saved us? And that theres these special people who can beat them? And that half of you are all aliens?! And whatever he is!" The red head stated quicker than the other s though possible though she pointed at Reluctant Promise for her last four words.

Kristoff placed a hand on the girls shoulder hoping to at least show

her his support and comfort. His head was spinning from everything as well but at least he wasn't having an outburst like Anna.

"They weren't looking for you Anna." The Keeper replied glancing towards Elsa. The Queen was pale and wide eyed staring at the hologram completely dumbfounded, though her shock was covered by her silence. Pure silence.

She couldn't believe what they had told her and Anna. Alternate Reality's? Multiple Universe? An unspeakable evil hunting them, and these special people from every Universe. The biggest shocker of it all, she was one of those being hunted. She was the reason the Reaper attacked her home. The reason her home was now in ruins and so many were dead.

"What do you mean her? Elsa never did anything to them!" Anna started her voice rising despite the large soldiers around her. She briefly wondered if the guards would hear her and come in, Elsa having left them outside.

"Anna." Elsa stated softly not even looking over at her, her voice cold.

"Elsa hold on. You seriously think they wanted her? What if they just wanted you? My sister has done nothing but help people! She's a good person! What could they possibly want with her?"

"Anna please." Elsa stated again. Her fists were clenched and her brow furrowed as she stared at the hologram of her planet burning. She blinked away any tears and felt her anger rising. Her old attitude was coming back, she felt terrible. Visions of Anna, frozen and lifeless after the great freeze, when she had accidentally frozen her own sister's heart.

"Who are they? I mean who do they think they are to attack us? To attack our homes?"

"Anna enough!" Elsa finally snaps, staring at her sister with panic filled eyes. The whole bridge stares at the Ice Queen uneasily. No one noticed the Spartan lowering his hand to a side arm strapped to his leg. No one had given special attention to the out of armor Spartan, except the Arbiter. Only the elite knew how rare it was for the Chief to be seen without his armor.

"Elsa?" Anna stated looking at her sister worriedly. Her eyes weren't filled with fear or anger, but with concern.

"Justâ€¦ Pleaseâ€¦" The elder sister said with closed eyes and a pleading voice.

"Sorryâ€¦" Anna stated softly, her eyes never leaving her sister. The Ice Queen sighed and took in a deep breath, then turning to look at the Forerunner.

"So it's because of me all of those people, back in my, home planet," The Queen's voice was awkward when she stated planet, the concept of reality traveling and interstellar travel a very hard concept for her to grasp. "All of them are dead because of me?" Elsa stated her voice completely void of any emotion.

The Keeper pressed a few commands onto her wrist device and waved her hand over the Queens general direction.

"Yes. You are an Alpha like the Commander and Spartan here."

"An Alpha?" Shepard asked with a raised eyebrow, the Spartan gazing at her as well.

"Yes."

"And when did you decide to call us that?"

"About three seconds ago."

Shepard shook her head and looked back at the Queen, whose eyes were closed, her posture rigid and her hands clasped tightly together.

Finally the Queen sighed and opened her eyes, a cold and hard look in them. One that John had seen before. One that he used all the time.

Without a word the Queen turned away from them and walked towards the door.

"Elsa!" Anna called out grabbing her sisters arm. The Queen shrugged off her sisters hand and turned to her, the slightest hint of sadness in her eyes.

"Please. Not now." Elsa stated softly. Anna nodded in understanding and took a step back.

"We need you to stay here Elsa. You're needed right now." The Keeper stated.

"Just let me be alone for a while." Elsa replied backing through the door and turning away from them.

"Elsa." The Keeper stated following after her into the hallway, the Chief, Javik, Kristoff and Anna right behind her.

Shepard shared a concerned glance with the Arbiter, before the two followed after the group.

"Just leave me alone." Elsa stated, with her back to the Forerunner, her guards in the hall creating a protective line between the hall and the Forerunner. The Keeper meant no harm but they needed to plan, to figure out their next true move. She didn't want the Gravemind getting ahead of them, not again.

"Elsa we will let you rest soon but first we need you to help us. The Gravemind isâ€¦"

"Just let her be." Anna stated moving in front of the Forerunner with her arms crossed and a disapproving frown on her face.

"Yeah. She's been through enough." Kristoff stated taking a place next to Anna.

"Stand aside." The Keeper stated softly, the pride of her people

beginning to show.

"No." Anna replied, glaring at the stronger alien. The Keeper glared back, and with little effort pushed past the those standing in her way.

"Hey!" Anna yelled, the guards drawing their weapons.

"Enough!" Elsa finally screamed from her position at the end of the hall. Ice swarmed over the hall floors and ceiling, gust of cold air flying at the group. The Queen stared at them wild eyes, and Johns weapon was already raised at her.

"Just enough!" Elsa stated her eyes suddenly fearful. Without out much grace, the blonde haired woman quickly made her way from the hall, the ice disappearing as she left.

"She needs to be contained." John stated as he slowly lowered his weapon.

"Contained?!" Anna yelled staring at the Spartan who had saved her life, the guards still on edge.

"We're not going to contain her." Shepard replied looking over at the Chief, who then turned to look at her.

"She's uncontrollable. We can't trust her." John stated staring down at the red head biotic.

"She's afraid. She just learned about other universes, that this unspeakable evil wants her and that so many people died because of her. Thats a lot for anyone to handle." Shepard stated. The Arbiter grunted in agreement and Javik only frowned at the whole scene.

"She may be primitive but she has power." the Prothean stated. The Keeper rubbed her head. Here they were suppose to be the next hope for stopping the Gravemind and they were all fighting. The Commander and Spartan only stared at each other, neither willing to back down from their stance, the two intense gazes locked in a battle of determination.

The Abiter and Javik both began to tense up, their fingers twitchy as the air grew tense.

Anna stared at the Spartan disapprovingly while Kristoff clenched his own fists in case things came down to fight, though he had a feeling he wouldn't be much against these people.

"Enough." The Keeper stated drawing all their attention to her. "Everyone go and rest. Unwind. We'll move in twelve hours."

"What about the new portal?" Shepard asked.

"I have probes in the new universe. They're scanning for the alpha there. It'll take about twelve hours for them to complete the scan. So we should use that time to rest and prepare, not tear each other a part." The Keeper stated turning and making her way back into the bridge of the ship.

The two soldiers backed down from each other, the Spartan leaving the

hall and going into the same hall Elsa head, though he went the opposite way. The Arbiter following after him. Shepard and Javik both shared a glance and moved back into the brigde leaving Anna and Kristoff alone with the guards.

"I'll go find Elsa." Kristoff stated with a soft smile.

"No. I'll go." Anna stated turning and following after her sister, leaving Kristoff with a few baffled guards in the hallway.

The blonde man sighed and ran a hand through his hair.

"What did we get ourselves into?"

* * *

><p>Elsa paced back and forth in the room she was in. It was dim, hologram consoles lining the room, a few sentinels flying about doing their business while the Ice Queen paced.<p>

She couldn't help the thoughts fluttering around in her head. Doubts, fearful thoughts, ideas. She wondered if these people cared about her at all. The Commander seemed kind enough but she was still firm in her decisions, how did she know Shepard wasn't just being kind to get on her good side not because she genuinely cared? What about the Spartan who so willingly saved her sister yet was so willing to lock her up? What about the lady named the Keeper? She seemed so focused, too focused on her cause.

Elsa shook her head and let ice form around her, a few sentinels noticed the drop in temperate and turned to her.

She waved the ice away, the sentinels then returned to their duties, and finally made her way out of the dim room and into the brighter hallways.

Her steps echoed throughout the hall as she walked, not even knowing where she was going. She just wanted to be alone. Her old persona from the days before the freeze slowly coming back.

The blonde wasn't a fan of her old self but at times she didn't know what else to do.

She turned the corner and continued down another hall. The design was the same, so her focus dwindled and her mind began to wander.

She looked up as she heard someone behind her. She spun around, ice forming at her feet.

"Well you look a little lost." Garrus stated, rubbing a towel over his face. He had regular clothing on rather than his usual armor. The glint of water was obvious on his scales. He had taken a shower after meeting with the Normandy crew. He had needed it to ease all the tension in his body.

"Im fine." Elsa replied coldly and turning away from the Turian.

"Sure and I'm a krogan." Garrus replied continuing to wherever he was going, which happened to be in the same direction.

Elsa didn't bother to reply to him and continued on in silence.

"So your names Elsa right?" Garrus asked catching up to her and looking down at her.

"Yes."

"Nice name. A lot better than most of the names here. Who wants to be named Javik or Wrex?" He chuckled to himself. Elsa stared up oddly at him.

"What? Never heard of a joke?" Garrus replied.

"That was a joke?" The Queen asked.

"Well yeah. I wouldn't say it in front of Wrex or Javik though. The may not be to appreciative of it." The Turian replied.

"And which ones are they?" Elsa asked with a raised eyebrow.

"Oh yeah you don't know them as well. Sorry we've been friends for so long I'm used to everyone knowing each other. Wrex is the big ugly one. He kind of looks like a frog. Javik is the four eyed guy." Garrus explained.

"Ah." Elsa said with an unpleasant smile. She wasn't used to the sight of aliens.

"Yeah even by my standards they're pretty ugly and im not one to talk." Garrus laughed and pointed to his scared face.

"What happened?" Elsa asked.

"Its a long storyâ€|"

* * *

><p>John stared out the only window on the forerunner ship. It was completely different from the rest ship, and the room he was in, the plants, the couches, the table, the holographic panel with music, and even what looked like a drink dispenser, all pointed to this room as purely being a relaxation room.<p>

His eyes wandered over the stars and the blackness of space.

His mind wandered as well. He wasn't against Elsa, he just knew a threat when he saw one. She had frozen over a Reaper. How did they know she wouldn't do the same to them? He was cautious, calculating. He wouldn't be caught off guard.

The Spartan crossed his arms.

He was a soldier. He always would be. His mission came first. Protecting humanity. He would do that.

What else did he have to live for?

* * *

><p>Shepard sighed as she laid down on her bed in the Normandy, still wondering how on earth a snowman could possibly talk, then again how was it they jumped realities?<p>

She pushed the thoughts from her mind, ran a hand through her hair, and smiled at the comfort of the sheets and the moving water of her aquarium.

It had been to long.

It had taken them a few hours to clean up the Normandy, and then for them to burn Lithyia's body, then for them to all adjust themselves and for Shepard to explain what had happened since they had left the Normandy.

She activated her omni tool and checked the time. She had six hours till the Keeper said her probes would be done scanning the new reality. She would sleep for a few hours then contact Admiral Hackett. The idea of new realities and universes still mind boggling to her.

The Arbiter had contacted Thran', whom to say the least had been happy to hear of their survival, and had explained everything that had happened. The elite had agreed to relay the information to Admiral Hackett and the other leaders of the galaxy, which she had been grateful for.

She hadn't wanted to sleep, saying she needed to get a lot more done. But after conversations with everyone except Elsa, the Chief, Anna and the man named Kristoff, she had been convinced to rest a few hours at least.

Either way there was nothing more for her to do but wait. They couldn't truly help in the war against the Reapers and Flood without a weapon to stop them, since the Titan weapon was lost to them according to the Arbiter, and the fact Chief was the only one capable of activating it.

Hence their current mission of saving these Alphas and beating the Catalyst and Gravemind, the leaders of the Flood and Reapers. As of now it was there only shot. The Crucible was gone. What else did they have?

Then it hit her. What did the Chief use the first time to beat the Gravemind? What weapon?

She shot out of her bed and slipped on her fatigues. Sleeping would have to wait.

* * *

><p>Theres is doubt in her heartâ€|

Use it.

Control her.

Take her.

Use her power.

She can kill them.

If caught off guard.

Then use your power.

I will not make the same mistake as last time.

* * *

><p>AN so yay here we are! Now its only been a few months since Elsa force over her whole kingdom so she's still has her colder personality. She's not gonna lose that it in a few months hence why she has trouble with emotions and what not. John is lonely to say the least. The loss of Cortana is still rather recent in his mind. Still painful. And come on I wouldn't kill the Chief like that! Hes the Chief!**

Also someone recommended the show RWBY and I am considering it. For those of you who don't know check it out on youtube. I may add it in here, but idk.

So yeah pretty sure you guys know what weapons im referring too. Anyway thanks for reading, review, and God Bless.

28. Part I Interlude 1 (Beata'd)

**A/N so here's the first interlude! Hope you enjoy! Each interlude takes place between their respective chapters. Such as this one takes place between chapters 26 and 27. **

* * *

><p>Interlude 1: R meets Wrex.</p>

* * *

><p>Wrex walked to the Normandys kitchen. His footsteps echoed through the dark rooms, only two lights on in the whole level. He wondered if Garrus would be awake and was up for a spar.</p>

The Krogan was bored out of his mind. He wanted to fight, but there was no one to fight right now. He would've liked to spar with the Commander, but she was in her room probably trying to sleep. If there was anything he knew, you didn't bug the commander when she was tired.

So now here he was getting a midnight snack to compensate for his boredom. Guarding that girl R and the other was a truly boring job.

He walked towards the kitchen, his head to the ground and mumbling to himself, when a crash in kitchen forced him to look up. He let a small grin form on his face.

The girl named R popped up from behind the counter, a protein bar halfway in her mouth, a pile of other foods in her small arms, and a bag on her back filled with what the Krogan figured was more

food.

She turned and saw the giant alien, the protein bar falling out of her mouth and her green eyes growing wide.

"Ummm..." She started her mouth full, before swallowing the food in her mouth with a huge gulp. She then smiled awkwardly and spoke up.

"So hi... Just you know getting some food." She said awkwardly shrugging and stepping out of the kitchen area with all the food in her hands.

"That's a lot of food for a human." Wrex grunted crossing his arms. He felt disgusted by the innocent look she tried to portray. No one he had met was truly that innocent.

"Hey I'm hungry!" The girl snapped back with a small glare. Wrex couldn't help but chuckle at this.

"Ha ha you have some fight kid." Wrex laughed walking over to the kitchen and opening up one

of the cabinets looking for food.

"I have to askâ€¦ Why so late?" Wrex asked not even bothering to look at her.

"Well I don't really know anyone so it seemed the best time to avoid people." R stated with a shrug and embarrassed smile.

Wrex glanced over at her with a squint.

"Hmph." He stated looking back towards the cabinets. He didn't care too much about her getting past him. He had heard her, hence why he had followed her to the kitchen. He wanted to see what she was up to, only to his surprise find out the girl was getting food.

He turned to her.

"You've got a lot of food." The Krogan stated crossing his arms and giving her a glare.

"Do you want some?" She asked sheepishly. A few protein bars and packets of soup fell from her pile and to the floor, forcing her to readjust her arms holding all the food.

"What you got?" The Krogan asked.

"Ummmâ€¦" R stretched her neck trying to look at all the food in her arms, raising her eyebrows as she did.

Wrex eyed her carefully. He wondered how on earth this girl managed to survive the Flood for almost a month. He would've even had a hard time with it.

"Let me seeâ€¦" He sighed walking over to her. He noticed her tense up and stare up at him cautiously.

"Relax. I'm not going to eat you." Wrex laughed grabbing a protein

bar from her stack of food. He sniffed it, then tore it open and ate it with one bite.

"Yup still as crappy as before."

Wrex grabbed a handful more of bars and walked over to the table. He sat down and rested his legs on the table, tearing open the wrapper of another bar.

R watched with a raised eyebrow before heaving her stack and turning away from him. She took a few steps then looked back at the Krogan. He was just sitting there. Alone. She looked around hoping for someone else to be there. No one was.

She wasn't too scared of him, just nervous. He was huge and she was small. She didn't want him to try and kill her or anything. Not that she thought he would, she was just being careful ever since her home was attacked.

She bit on her lip and forced away the tears forcing to spill over.

With a sigh, R spun around and walked over to the table, dumping all the food she had onto the table.

"What are you doing?" Wrex asked curiously as the girl sat down.

"Well I can't eat all of this by myself." She stated with a smile.

"And you want me to eat it all?" Wrex deadpanned.

"No! I want some for myself thank you." She stated with a joking frown.

"And what if I say too bad?" The Krogan stated leaning forward on the table.

R only replied by reaching into the mounds of food and pulled out a frying pan, placing it on the table. Wrex only looked at her through squinted eyes.

The two stared at each other for a second then Wrex started laughing. R laughed along awkwardly and then raised an eyebrow at the Krogan.

"You've got guts kid. Real guts." He stated with a nod and leaning back in his chair.

"Thanks?" R stated unsure of what to say.

"So what's your name?" The brunette asked looking over at the large alien, then peeling open the wrapper on one of the protein bars she had gotten.

"Name's Wrex." Wrex stated chowing down on a bag of chips from the food pile.

"That's a nice name. Mine's R." The girl started before Wrex cut her

off.

"Your names R I already know." He stated still not looking at her.

"Thats not my full name." The girl replied with a sigh. This peaked the Krogans interest and he looked up at her.

"The names Rapunzel. I just didn't want everyone knowing that." She stated looking at the table and tapping it lightly. Wrex just stared at her. Wondering why she would hide her name from them.

"It brings back memories." She stated looking up at him. He noticed the fresh tears and decided asking her about it was not the best course of action. He grunted and looked back at the food. He couldn't hold her gaze.

The battle hardened Krogan couldn't hold this kids gaze. Why? He berated himself for it internally. By the spirits he was Krogan! And Krogan were the toughest and meanest alive.

In her eyes he saw pain. Pain unlike almost any other he had ever known. He had never seen a human child, so hurt and so devastated. However, thats not what got to him. What got to him, is despite all the pain, despite all the internal torment and suffering, he saw the spark of true innocence, the innocence of a child in her eyes.

The belief that one day it would all be ok.

He hadn't seen that in a long time, or he had never seen it. He couldn't remember.

He looked back up at her, his own face emotionless and still frowning, the face of a true Krogan.

"So kid you have guts. Wanna face a real challenge?" The Krogan smirked.

Ashley walked into the mess hall an hour later wanting a glass of water, her throat parched.

She stopped dead in her tracks when she entreated the dinning/kitchen area.

Food and wrappers laid everywhere, the girl R sound asleep on the table, Wrex walking around grumbling and picking up only bits and pieces of the mess.

"What the hell happened here?" She asked.

"Girl can eat. Almost beat me in an eating contest. Then she just crashed. Never seen a human fall asleep so fast." The Krogan laughed.

Ashley smiled and raised an eyebrow at the mess.

"Guess you should hurry up with the cleaning before Shepard gets up."

"Keep talking Williams."

* * *

><p>AN so yay. Interlude one! Did my best to see how this would work out. Of course Wrex wouldn't show any softness on the outside but what about on the inside?*

* * *

><p>AN so yay. Interlude one! Did my best to see how this would work out. Of course Wrex wouldn't show any softness on the outside but what about on the inside?

29. Part I Chapter 27 (Beata'd)

****Part I****

****The Voice and Face of All Evil.****

****Chapter 27: A new plan.****

* * *

><p>"So naturally I was happy we had won. We managed to hold off the three top gangs in Omega. Man it was one heck of a fight, but we didn't expect the gunship to show up and ruin the party."<p>

"Gunship?" The blonde queen asked slightly confused by the term. She imagined a big musket mixed with a ship. She wondered how that would even work. Maybe one of her guards could give her a better idea. She have to ask them later, having told them to leave her a while ago. Reluctantly they had agreed, but said they would be back soon if she took to long.

"Ahh thats right you have no idea what a gunship is," Garrus started. " Well a gunship is basicallyâ€|aâ€| big metalâ€| flying thing with lots of guns on it. It's pretty deadly." The Turian stated awkwardly. He never had had to explain what a gunship was before.

"Ohâ€| soundsâ€| intimidatingâ€|" Elsa said trying to picture what he had described, failing horribly.

For the most part the twos conversation had gone smoothly, Garrus doing his best to use words that the woman would understand. It wasn't to hard for her to understand until he reached something like gunships or biotics, though for biotics he at least had Shepard and the others to reference for that.

"Anyway," The Turian continued,"That damn gunship surprised us. I tried taking it down, but well I couldn't. I got hit pretty bad," He said pointing at his scared face, which the Queen had thought was just the way it was, never having guessed it to be an injury.

"Next thing I know, I'm waking up on our ship getting my face patched up and hearing how Shepard saved my ass. Ha it was one heck of a fight," The Turian laughed taking drink form the glass of water in front of him. They were seated in the Forerunner ship's 'cafeteria'. Garrus had planned to go back to the Normandy but when he saw how

distraught the Queen had been, he decided to stick around and try to calm her down. He was glad it seemed to be working, her mind now occupied with thoughts of his adventures.

Elsa laughed lightly at his humor. She could tell the alien was a hot head but he seemed nice enough to her, though she internally cringed every time he swore. Her parents had raised her differently.

"Soâ€|" Garrus started after finishing his second glass of water. "What do you think of this ship? Pretty massive huh?" The Turian asked looking around the 'cafeteria'.

"It is," Elsa agreed poking around. "Strange too," She added.

"Ahh you get used to it. The Normandy's a lot smaller than this, but she's still one hell of a ship."

"Normandy?"

"It's the Commander's and mine actual ship. We're more of just guests on this one," The Turian explained.

Elsa just nodded, her hands in her lap and her posture still rigid, elegant, and Queen like. The conversation died down with her looking around awkwardly. She wasn't good in social situations.

Garrus noticed the poor woman's shyness. She seemed sort of like Tali when they first met her in that respect. She was a nervous wreck.

"Theres was this one time when Shepard and I went to a bar called the Purgatoryâ€| This guy was being a real ass, wolf whistling at her and all thatâ€|" Garrus started with another story.

Elsa smiled sadly. She wasn't really good at interacting with others.

* * *

><p>John stared out the viewport, more than slightly uncomfortable out of his armor. He had spent most of his life in that armor and had grown accustom to it. His eyes were studying the stars from behind the glass. His mind was reeling, memories flying by like gusts of wind, and he recalled everything he had endured in his life.<p>

Reach. The burning of Earths last defense, the resting place of so many of his brother and sisters. The place the Covenant burned into nothing but glass and left it a barren rock for so many years. Now it was a new planet with a new name. He wondered what it was called now.

Earth. It was still Earth. He wondered if it was Forerunner geas that programmed humans to just refer to their home as Earth, or if it was something else. Maybe the Librarian had a bigger hand in their evolution than he originally though. She surely knew a lot more than he originally thought.

Then he though of his first alien friend. His only true companion, minus the other Spartans, Johnson and the Arbiter. Ironic, how one of

the aliens he had been killing for so long was his closest friend in this new age.

Still his thoughts went back to that AI. The AI, his friend, that stuck by his side through everything, that watched his back, and he watched hers. That made them an unstoppable duo. His better half. He never found her. Never found a way to bring her back. He broke his promise in the end, he wasn't able to save her. He had failed, and it haunted him.

A billion years later and he still had it crushing guilt.

He reached his hand in the pocket of his fatigues, still the same ones from his days as a Rogue, his last fight with the UNSC against the Didact, and pulled out the processing chip. Old, but looked like it did all those years ago. The cryo tube saved it from age as well.

He wondered how he had gotten there. He had asked the Arbiter, but like the Sangheili had told Shepard, he couldn't remember how the Spartan got there. He remembered their last fight against the Didact, then he was unconscious and the Spartan was gone.

John would've thought he was lying, but the Arbiter had been angry when he told the Spartan. Truly angered that something had tampered with his mind and they had no idea what or who it was. So John let it slide. He wondered if the Keeper knew. He would find time to ask her. Her and her mother were certainly capable of it.

Then his mind wandered to their mission. He didn't doubt himself, he would complete the mission and protect humanity as he was built to. None the less, his mind wandered to everything that had happened over the last hours and days. He was used to the unknown and the fast paced running the group was doing. He had done it on Halo, fighting creatures never seen before, destroying a super weapon capable of cleansing the whole galaxy of life, defeating the Gravemind on the Ark, and then waking up five years later to fight the Didact. Here he was again, a billion or so years later, woken up to fight again. Was that all he was destined for? To fight?

The Spartan shook the thoughts away and let his mind go back to the mission.

Shepard entered his mind. He wasn't sure if he could trust her just yet. Someone so true. It seemed to good to be real. He wondered if she had an alternate agenda, and when the time came what call she would make when it was a tough one.

Of course she had made the call to abandon the Queen's kingdom, but so had the Keeper. Shepard had even fought for them to try and save the civilians. She had tried, and to him, that proved she at least had a conscience. So for now she was an ally, not a friend. Not anything more than an ally who he, for now, trusted to make the right calls in a battle. Maybe in a different age, he would try to take charge and help her out but he hadn't lead a team in years. He was a lone wolf for so long. Just him and Cortana, fighting the most dangerous enemies they had ever seen.

The red headed girl popped up in his head. He had her figured out already. Pure of heart, kind, a tad bit too naive, and overall very

loyal to her sister. Other than that she was just a girl, young and foolhardy. However he still had to give her credit, not many people would stand up to a Spartan. Either way, she wasn't a threat.

Then there was the blonde, the woman who was apparently a Queen. If he hadn't known better he would say she seemed like a fit ruler, calculative, smart and firm in her decisions. However, he was smarter than that and had seen her unhinged. She was frightened and afraid, yet she tried to bottle it up. He wondered how that would go. He believed she was a threat, a serious one, despite the fact he let Shepard win their little engagement. He wasn't in command here, he knew that so for now he would let it slid. If she got out of hand though, he would stop her. It was his job to protect humanity, from threats both foreign and domestic.

The doors opening drew him out of his thoughts. He didn't turn to face whoever it was, but he figured whoever it was when they would walk up next to him. He glanced over and noticed it was the Commander standing next to him.

"Chief," She started, her too looking out the viewport and into the sea of stars.

"Commander," He replied in his monotone voice.

"I have a question," She asked turning towards him slightly. As usual his silence was reply enough.

"You beat the Flood and Gravemind once right?" She asked, her eyes curious though he could tell there was another reason she was asking this. He nodded in response to her.

"How?" She asked turning to him fully, and crossing her arms. She was at least a foot shorter than him but that didn't seem to faze her.

The Spartan looked down at her, their eyes studying one another. He finally looked back at the stars and spoke.

"The Halos," He replied.

"Halo? And what is that?" She asked even more intrigued then before.

"A weapon that caused the sins of my kind. That caused us to murder innocents and slaughter hundreds. It is a debt we can never repay," A deep voice stated from the sliding doors.

Shepard turned to face whoever it was and John stayed where he was. He knew that voice well and had heard the elite coming. The Arbiter walked over to them and greeted the Commander with a curt nod.

"The Titan weapon I told you about was based on the Halos, Commander. Capable of wiping an entire galaxy clean of life in the blink of an eye," He stated staring out into the void as he stood next to the Commander.

"Do you know where they are?" Katherine asked looking at both at them.

"Why?" Chief asked turning to look at her.

"I have an idea of how we can beat the Gravemindâ€|"

* * *

><p>"Commander we cannot simply refocus the Halos to fire at a pinpoint target!" The Keeper stated with slight frustration. Humansâ€|<p>

"Why not?" Katherine asked confused.

"The Halos are an area effect weapon. It didn't kill the Gravemind then and it wont now," Reluctant Promise replied.

"That's why we redesign it. Focus the blast into a single beam and hit the Gravemind with it," She sighed and looked over at the Keeper. "All I'm asking is can it be done?"

The Keeper sighed and ran a ran through her own hair, leaning on the holotable.

"It is possibleâ€| but how would we get the Gravemind to stand still? Not to mention all the time we would need and all the resources we would need to pull of an attack like that. We would need to build a device to funnel the Halo's firepower into one blast. I would need thousands of workers, tens of thousands, worlds of resources and at least a few weeks. If I had a Forerunner foundry maybe I do it within a week and with less workers, but the last installation is in the hands of the Flood now," The Forerunner sighed again and shook her head.

"What if I get you what you need?" Shepard asked.

"How?"

"We have a whole galaxy at war. I'm sure the governments would be willing to lend a hand to anything that can save them."

"Shepard," Garrus started. "What about planning to wipe out the Flood from the Galaxy? Why not use the Halos to destroy them?"

"I thought about that. If what the Keeper says is true then the Flood and Reapers are in control of the whole universe. They would have almost unlimited reinforcements. If we take the Gravemind downâ€|" Shepard started and John picked up after her.

"We cut the head off the beast," The Spartan said with a nod of approval.

"So basically like the what happened with the Crucible? How it used the Relays to spread its kill code across the Galaxy? Except this time we're reversing the effect," Garrus asked. Shepard nodded. "Well just like old times." The Turian grinned, but his grin was short lived thanks to a certain monitor.

"The Flood can create a Gravemind if they have sufficient bio mass. How will killing one stop them form creating another?" Reluctant Pormise asked.

"As explained earlier, the Gravemind is not entirely apart of the Flood, rather a entity using them as a means to an end. If we kill the original gravemind. The one you stumbled across Spartan, the subsequent smaller 'Graveminds' spread throughout reality will wilted and die, like a plant losing its Flood itself will be that much weaker without a leader," The Keeper agreed. "But the Galaxy still wont last long without reinforcements. With or without a leader the Flood will eventually overwhelm your people even without a Gravemind."

"We need more men," Katherine stated heavily.

"I can talk to Thran. We can gather our brethren," The Arbiter offered. "Though I doubt that will be enough."

"Who else is there?" Wrex asked.

"No one," Garrus sighed. Both Shepard and Ashley nodded in agreement.

"Not true." The Keeper smiled, her eyes lit with an idea. She placed her hand over the holotable and brought up a picture of the Milky Way.

"Alternate Realities. Different Universesâ€¦" She started. "What if we gathered help from another Universe? Someone with strong enough warships that can help the Galaxy fend for itself and go toe to toe with Flood controlled Forerunner and Reclaimer ships."

"What if the Flood and Reapers hit their homes? What then? They'll have to defend themselves somehow," Shepard replied.

"And then there the chance they don't believe us," Garrus added in.

"Do we have a choice?" The Keeper asked. "If they can spare a few ships, with the Sangheili and my own forces fighting with you, we may be able to hold the Galaxy," The Keeper stated. "Also if we can keep the Flood from gaining a foothold in another universe, they may even be more inclined to help us."

"Not even the Reclaimer's and us could hold them off forever," The Arbiter informed the group.

"Yes but with the time you buy, I may be able to find a new way to defeat the Flood as well as the Reapers. A new Titan like weapon, or I could expand the Halo's power output and range. If we can kill off both leaders they will be that much less coordinated and weakened. They weren't that weak when you fought them all those years ago."

The Arbiter nodded in agreement. It was a long shot but they didn't have a chance. Before anyone could continue however the AI of the ship spoke up in a frantic voice.

"Ma'am the probe has located the Alpha within Universe 12.5H. The Flood are present on the planet," The AI said.

"Crap," Shepard stated.

"Thank you Claire," The Keeper stated with a nod and pulled up a hologram of an Earth-like planet from the new universe. She zoomed in on the coastline of the largest continent, set right in the middle of the planet.

A large black meteor was sitting right off shore in the Ocean. They could see ships, old World War II like battleships, circling the meteor and a large greenish statue off to the side.

"Let me guess the Flood are in that thingâ€|" Wrex sighed.

"Yes. Scans confirm it," The Keeper stated after typing in a few commands to her wrist device.

"Why haven't they attacked yet?" Shepard asked.

"Surprise attack. It the Floods greatest weapon," Chief replied. The Commander nodded in agreement but wasn't wholly convinced.

"Lets go get them then," Shepard stated turning to walk out, but the Keeper continued talking.

"We will take the ship and slipspace jump directly into their atmosphere," She stated pressing in commands on the holotable, her eyes glued to what she was doing.

"What? Why?" Shepard asked.

"The others, the Queen and her sister, had the Reaper ships as proof of monsters and enemies trying to wipe them out. The Flood haven't attacked them yet, so why believe us? We take the ship in and they'll have to. What else to say that we're from a different universe than a massive space ship," The Keeper grinned. Shepard exchanged a look with Garrus.

"Well can't argue with that," Katherine agreed. They began making plans. The Arbiter and Jacqueline would contact their respective parties and inform them of the current situation. Shepard would relay a private message to Hackett and inform him of their plan to use the Halos, the Keeper knowing where they were, her mother having hid them after the Reclaimers' wiped the Universe clean of life.

No one noticed the Spartan looking at the doorway, his highly sensitive hearing what no one else did as they talked.

* * *

><p>"Will you be quiet!" Anna hissed at R as the two eavesdropped in on the soldiers planning. She immediately felt bad for scolding her new 'friend' but decided to apologize later.<p>

"Sorry!" R whispered raising her hands in her defense. "I get nervous when eavesdropping!" The small brunette explained as the two leaned closer to the door.

The girls were curious as to what the soldiers were planning. Anna had been afraid they would try to do something to their sister, the last meeting still fresh in her head, but they hadn't even mentioned any of them. Instead they were talking about another Universe and all sorts of military things that made no sense to her.

"Anna?"

The two shot around with yelps at being discovered, only to find Elsa and her guards staring at the two like they were crazy. She was at the end of the hallway having been on her way up here to meet with the others, her guards trailing behind her. Garrus had been called off to the little meeting which left her alone. She had gathered her guards and finally decided she should join them in the meeting if they would have her. They said she was one of those Alpha's. She may have been needed. As Queen, it was her duty to represent her people none the less.

Yet, here she was and what she found didn't surprise her. Her sister was always curious and troublesome.

Before any of them could say anything, the bridge doors opened, Chief appearing between them, grabbing both of the younger girls by the back of their shirts, lifting them up like nothing and then turning back towards the bridge, not even acknowledging Elsa.

Elsa's mouth dropped open. The man had picked them up like nothing and pulled them away in the blink of an eye. She managed to break free of her shock, ice suddenly forming at her feet, and sprinted after him. Her guards rushed after her.

The Queen could only imagine what Kristoff would do if he saw the Spartan picking up Anna.

"These two have been eavesdropping for a while," John stated placing both girls down in front of the whole group.

Anna stood tall and still, her hands clasped together in front of her and a nervous smile on her face. R smiled sheepishly, slouching slightly as if to get away from the stares.

"Hi..." R mumbled with a wave and another sheepish smile.

Shepard shook her head, both impressed by their antics and slightly annoyed.

"Well now that they're here—" The Keeper started when the blonde Queen burst into the room, a blast of ice cold wind slamming into the occupants.

"What the hell?" Garrus asked, rubbing his arms.

Katherine herself was shocked by the sudden drop in temperature. She watched the Queen storm over to the Spartan, pushing her sister and R behind her as she went. Her guards raced in front of the princess and drew their arms.

"Don't you ever touch my sister again," Elsa growled, pressing her finger to the Spartan's chest, ice growing on his shirt where her finger met the cloth. Elsa's guards all had their swords pointed at the Spartan, but were standing a few feet behind. A few even watched her nervously. They knew what she was capable of.

No one other than Shepard noticed his fists clenching.

"Got it?" Elsa asked, her brows furrowed and pure anger filling her eyes. She may not have been very open with her sister over the years, but she was over protective of her. Anna was her last family. No one was going to hurt her on her watch.

Chief didn't even respond and let his silence do the talking, his eyes meeting hers and the two engaging in a death stare. His eyes filled with cold silence, but to his surprise so were hers.

"Elsa," Shepard said taking a few steps towards them.

"What?" The Queen snapped a gust of icy air flying towards the Commander. Katherine on instinct began to glow blue with biotics.

"Relax," Shepard stated calmly despite the nervous feeling that was overwhelming her. The last thing they needed were all these people fighting and killing each other.

"Elsaâ€¦" Anna stated placing a hand on her sisters shoulder. Elsa visibly flinched and looked back at her sister. Immediately the room began to warm up and Elsa backed away from the Chief, both visibly relaxing when she did.

"I'mâ€¦ sorry. Iâ€¦ That was wrong" Elsa said, her Queen persona suddenly coming over her. Anna gave her sister a small smile. R just stared at the two sadly. Garrus eyed Elsa with both sadness and confusion. Chief was still. The Arbiter glaring at the young girls. Shepard sighing and rubbing the back of her neck. The Keeper exchanging a glance with the Commander. Wrex grunting something rather rude under his breath. Ashely glaring at the younger woman. Javik and Legion both looking rather unimpressed. Reluctant Promise switching back and forth between looking at everyone.

"Now that thats settledâ€¦" The Keeper started, looking at everyone on the bridge. "Let us move. This new universe still had time before the Flood outbreak."

"Do it," Shepard nodded.

Outside, a slipspace portal opened up in front of the ship. A surge of power shot through the ship and a beam of light shot into the slipspace portal ripping open a portal to another universe inside slipspace.

The ship moved inside the portal, and the portal closed behind it.

* * *

><p>Korra walked over to the railing on the edge of the water. She leaned on it and looked out over the beach and to the giant black meteor sitting in the bay near Aang's statue.<p>

"So what do you think of Future Industries trying to sell the space rock?" A voice asked from behind her.

"Terrible idea," Korra replied as her friend Mako walked up next to her, leaning on the railing a foot away from her. He sighed.

"Not gonna lie I agree," The fire bender stated.

"Really? Your girlfriend's going to make a fortune and you don't agree?" Korra asked with a raised eyebrow and grin.

"Ahhâ€¦ Something just feels wrong about that rock. Bolin agrees to. He says something about it is just off. He said the rock feelsâ€¦ darkâ€¦ Whatever that means," Mako chuckled at the end of his sentence.

"Guess we're all in agreement," Korra replied with a sad chuckle of her own.

"What about Tenzin? What does he think?" Mako asked.

"He's not sure but it was enough for him to move his family to one of the other Air temples."

"He's not in town?"

"Nope, but he should be back by tomorrow. He just wanted to make sure his family was safe and secure."

"Didn't Befong send like ten metal benders with them?"

"You know Tenzin," Korra sighed. Mako laughed and nodded in agreement.

The two stared out over the bay, both trying to place the dark feeling it placed in them. That, and try to avoid any awkward conversations. They were still newly broken up and their friendship hung on a thread. They didn't need anything else setting them off.

Suddenly, a flash of light caught both their attention and the two looked up towards the sky. A black hole had appeared in the middle of the sky, right over Air temple island.

It was massive, far bigger than any airship they had. It was made entirely of metal from what they could tell. It was shaped oddly, had blue light running across it, massive engines at the back and a overall serene feeling about it.

"What on Earthâ€¦" Korra asked taking a step back.

"I have no ideaâ€¦" Mako replied as he too took a step back. "I swear things are never normal for us are they?"

"You hang out with the Avatar and nothing will ever be normal."

* * *

><p>AN and so begins the Korra arc. Now I want to knowâ€¦ Would you rather spend more time in the Korra Arc or the Star Trek one? I have a few subplots that could take place in either arc but which one would you all prefer?

More tension between our heroes! And now they're thrown into another universe in danger of the Flood! Whoo! Tune in next time to find out what happens!

Also the poll is still up and three pairings are tied/very close so more votes would be great.

Another thing, I know Chief cannonly has never gone rogue, but, theres was a Halo 5 theory I took a liking to. It basically said how Halo5 might be Chief finally going rogue to find a way and bring back Cortana after the UNSC just tries to put him back to work and doesn't give a crap about her at all. It would make sense seeing as how many other Spartans are seemingly 'breaking' out o their 'indoctrination'. Fred and Naomi from the Kilo Five Trilogy are perfect examples of that.

Of course, Big Thanks to my usual two beta's and a third new one zekebomb!

Thank for reading! Please Review and God bless you all!

30. Part I Chapter 28 (Mostly Beta'd)

****A/N This chapter is still waiting for a third beta reader but has been mostly beta'd, so i decided to put it up.****

* * *

><p>Part I

****The Voice and Face of all Evil****

****Chapter 28: Day 1****

* * *

><p>Shepard checked her weapon, making sure everything was in order for their landing. The shuttle jerked upwards slightly as they hit a batch of turbulence. It balanced out a second later and continued down on flight towards the small island in the bay outside one of this worlds city.<p>

The Transcendence, the name of the Keepers ship was kept above the meteor in the bay, the Keeper and the AI both stating how Flood spores were trapped inside it. She had suggested they destroy it, but the Commander had made a good point when stating how opening fire on a unsuspecting planet was a bad idea for any future relations with them. They knew the Flood would return one way or another so they figured getting on good terms with the natives before trying to eradicate the meteor was a better idea. However if the Flood began to escape the meteor then the Transcendence would fire with or without the natives consent. They'd stop the Flood one way or another.

After agreeing on a course of action, they had moved the shuttle out of the Normandy and into the bay of the Transcendence, and were now using it to fly down to meet the natives of this world.

The Commander sat back and held her weapon firmly. The group headed down with her was sitting around the shuttle in various positions.

Garrus and Ashley sat on either side of her. Wrex standing up and holding onto the roof railing, just as the Chief was doing. The

Keeper sat towards the front with Elsa, the blonde nervously messing with her hands and the hem of her dress, obviously uncomfortable with all the stranger and aliens despite her emotionless face. The Arbiter sat next to the Queen in his own seat.

Katherine shook her head slightly and turned away. Garrus and Ashely both noticed the Commander's motion but knew it wasn't the time to ask. They exchanged glances and it was all the three needed to know to confirm what they were thinking.

The Queen shouldn't have come with them. All of them knew she wasn't a warrior, not a soldier like them. Garrus could especially vouch for it even after just one conversation. Yet, despite their concerns with someone not combat ready coming along, the Keeper had insisted on the Queen's joining them on the surface. Normally Shepard wouldn't have agreed but since when are things ever normal? Besides that they needed the Keepers help, so the Commander indulged her for now. All she hoped was that the Flood filled meteor would stay dormant, and they'd be spared a bloody firefight.

Another bump of turbulence sent them up and down slightly, before the ship balanced out again.

"Why don't we just use that portal like last time?" Garrus asked slightly annoyed by the turbulence.

"Like the Keeper said, it only has a limited amount of uses before needing a recharge. I'd prefer we have it as a quick means of escape," Shepard replied.

"Good idea."

"Commander what are we going to tell them, the natives?" Ashely inquired. Shepard bit her lip and took a few seconds to answer.

"We'll tell them the truth. Not like we have anything to lie about. Besides we'll need whoever the Alpha in this Universe is to trust us."

"Alpha's, different Universe's, what's next?" Ashley mumbled more to herself than to the others.

"Since when has it ever been simple," Shepard replied with a tired chuckle.

"There was that one time at the Citadel on Chora's Den? We had to fight a bunch of thugs. It was pretty simple then. Survive and get out in one piece. Things were fairly simple then," Garrus interrupted.

"Good point but what about the Prothean Vision and the Reapers?" Shepard counter asked.

Garrus just shrugged, "Things got more complicated."

Ashely only nodded in response. Cortez finally spoke over the comms.

"Almost there Commander. Looks like you have a welcome party. A bunch

of monks by the look of it," The man said.

"At least they're human," Ashely stated, as the three stood up from their seats. The rest of their ground team had also heard the pilot and most faced towards either of the side doors on the shuttle.

Shepard rolled her neck, relieving a small amount of tension in it. She gripped her rifle tightly just in case. For all she knew the monks could be hostile. They might attack on sight.

She glanced over at Chief who was standing next to her now, and noticed how seemed to be thinking the same thing. His trigger finger was hovering right next to the firing stud on the strange sleek weapon he was carrying. Something called a Light Rifle.

* * *

><p>John watched carefully as the shuttle doors opened and allowed the landing party to get out. He stepped out and onto the stone ground of the temple they were on.<p>

He watched the approaching monks, notching the bright yellow and red coloring their clothing had. He tightened his grip on his Light Rifle just in case.

Before they had boarded the shuttle, the Spartan had required his armor. The ships AI, Claire, had informed him of the damage it had received. The back of his armor had been scorched harshly, his shield systems had been short circuited, the gel layer of his armor had been damaged, in fact most of his armors systems had been damaged to some extent. The AI said it was miracle he was alive, that he was lucky. He remembered Cortana telling him he was the luckiest.

Either way his armor had been repaired to full functionality. A new shielding system made his shields three times stronger than his old armor, a hard light shield projector had been installed in his armor, and a new nervous system interface made him even faster than before. Other than that the armor was exactly the same as before. He didn't complain about the upgrades but wondered why the Keeper had had them installed.

She had told him his armor, unlike Shepard's, was compatible with Forerunner technology, so she had decided to give him an advantage on the battle field with a few upgrades.

The Spartan stepped towards the monks, a few steps behind the group. He was still willing to let the Commander deal with any politics or negotiations. She was the leader of most of the group. Either way he wanted to keep an eye on the Queen. From where he was standing he could keep an eye on her, and if she got out of control, put her down before she could harm anyone.

John kept his senses alert for more dangerous threats however. The Flood may have been contained in the meteor, but her remembered that Black Knight. Something told him that wouldn't be the last time he saw that knight.

He glanced over towards the bay where the meteor lay. He wondered what the Gravemind was planning. They could've attacked anytime and

likely would've been able to overwhelm this place in just a few days. A sixth sense told him to stay on his toes.

The Spartan turned back towards the monks just as they reached Shepard and the others. He would watch from afar. The monks were human like him, Elsa and Shepard. He wondered what they would do once Shepard told them everything.

* * *

><p>Elsa kept her face as emotionless as possible, but needless to say she was surprised the monks in front of them were actually human. In all honesty she had expected more aliens like Garrus and the big one called Wrex.<p>

"You all aren't from around here are you?" The lead monk, a taller man with a beard and bald head, stated softly looking them over.

"No. We're from pretty far awayâ€|" Shepard started, leaving the hint in her voice that there was more to it. The monk caught it but choose not to pry further in that direction instead turning to polite introductions.

"Well then whom do I have the pleasure of greeting?" He asked looking at the Keeper specifically.

Elsa took this as her time to speak up. She was a Queen after all.

"Elsa Queenâ€|"

"Commander Katherineâ€|"

"The Keeper, daughter ofâ€|."

The three had spoken at exactly the same time and looked at each other each slightly confused. Elsa had figured she would introduce herself at least first, she didn't have a big head but she was a Queen wasn't she? Maybe she had the way the Commander ran things wrong. She would apologize later for the misunderstanding.

The Keeper looked at the two with curiosity. She had let the Commander introduce them to Elsa mainly for the fact Elsa had addressed her first and she thought the monk had been addressing her not Shepard.

Shepard looked at the other two curiously. She wasn't mad, just confused. The Commander had been used to always handling introductions it was just a natural thing. Either way, she hoped neither took it the wrong way. The last thing the group needed was more tension between them.

"Commander," The Keeper stated with a nod. Shepard took that as her cue and turned back towards the monk.

"I'm Commander Shepard of the Systems Alliance. We need to talk to whoever's in charge."

"Well that'd be President Raiko of the United Republic." The monk

stated.

"And where exactly is he?" Shepard asked.

"What business do you have with him?" The monk relied squinting slightly at the newcomers.

"We're here to help."

* * *

><p>Tenzin stared at them with a mix of curiosity and speculation. He had arrived a day early from taking his family away, and had been getting ready to go into the city and find Korra and Beifong but, for obvious reasons, his plans had to be put on hold. He was actually glad he had arrived early. Korra was good girl but he wasn't sure she had the ability to keep a level head in such an odd situation with such odd creatures. Especially ones that looked as threatening as these.<p>

The group in front of him was strange, sprint strange. Creatures he would've considered at one point monsters or wild spirits were standing with the humans like they were common allies though he could see the uneasiness of the younger blonde woman in the blue dress.

The thing that really caught his attention was the sleek armor most of them wore, the size of several of their companions, the giant airship they had, the smaller one they had flown down in, and the metal things in their hands. From the way the group held the metal devices in their hands, they were obviously weapons. He wondered if they were non benders and it was some sort of new technology that had escaped his notice.

Either way, he had to find out what they wanted with the President. With weapons, and obvious soldiers, he hoped they were here for peaceful reasons. Otherwise He'd be forced to fight. It had only been two months after Vatu's fall, and the Airbender didn't want to fight if he didn't have to.

"And how exactly are you here to help?" Tenzin asked keeping himself calm and staring at the red headed Commander in the eyes.

"That rock," She started turning towards the bay. "It carries a monster inside it."

"A plague that even your worst enemies would never wish upon you," The Keeper added softly.

"And how exactly do you know this?"

"Its complicated. It'll be best if we explain it to your President." Shepard stated.

"And you expect me to take a group of strangers to the Republics leader?" Tenzin asked crossing his arms.

"If you want your planet to live then yes." The Keeper interjected.

Tenzin let his eyes widen slightly. He was not lost of the Keeper's choice of words.

"My planet?" He asked slightly baffled.

"If whats in that meteor break outâ€¦ This whole planet is dead," Shepard said firmly.

Tenzin closed his mouth and studied the group. Questions plagued his mind. Were they telling the truth? Where were they from? Could they be trusted?

If they were telling the truth, who was he to keep them from the President. He couldn't condemn the world to death because of any speculations.

Then an idea popped in his head. He would take them to meet Raiko, but he wouldn't be alone. He would find Korra, and Beifong. With the Avatar, Chief of Police, several other metal benders, probably Korra's detective Mako, and the personal security of the President, he was sure they could handle the newcomers if things turned to a fight.

Tenzin sighed and rubbed his bald head in contemplation.

"Alrightâ€¦ Let me find Oogi and we'll fly over to the President Raikos place," Tenzin sighed defeated.

"Oogi?"

"My sky bison."

"Whats a sky bison?" Elsa asked.

"You really aren't from around here are you?"

* * *

><p>Korra and Mako walked up the stairs to Raikos office. A metal bender offer had contacted the two letting them know about the strange group meeting with the President and Beifong. They had no idea who they were or where they were from but Tenzin had insisted the two on being there.<p>

Downstairs several of this new groups part were waiting down in the lobby, apparently only the leaders of the group went up to Raikos office.

"What do you think these guys want?" Korra asked as they continued up.

"No idea. According to Beifong, we have no idea who they are or where their form. Only that they apparently knew of some doomsday device."

"Doomsday? Like another Vatu trying to plunge the world in eternal darkness?"

"Something like that," Mako replied.

"Great," Korra sighed. She really didn't feel like fighting another Vatu. Last time was hard enough, and she almost lost that fight.

The two made it to the President's office and pushed the doors open.

The office was packed. Metal bender officers were stationed around the room, Beifong and Tenzin both by the President's side behind his desk. In front of the desk was a group of probably some of the strangest people Korra had ever seen. Of course a few were human, but a lot of them looked like they could be spirits. She even wondered if they were spirits, but from the looks of the armor they wore, and from the metal weapons in their hands, she figured they weren't. Spirits didn't truly need weapons to fight.

"Ah Avatar Korra. A pleasure you could join us." Raiko greeted warmly motioning for her to join the others and himself behind his desk.

"President Raiko." She greeted back with a nod. She was still a bit sour towards him for leaving the Southern water tribe alone in its time of need.

The President greeted Mako as well and Mako returned the pleasantries but the Avatar was oblivious to it all. As she made her way to a spot next to Tenzin, her eyes lingered on the group in front of them.

Creatures that looked like spirits, two human women, and a large robot looking green armored figure. She wondered where they had all come from, especially with items they wore and carried.

Something about the blonde woman, young and wearing what looked like a light blue dress, told Korra she was not a true part of this group. That and the fact she stood off a little further from the group than the rest stood next to each other.

She took her place next to Tenzin and looked up at her former master.

"Thought you weren't coming back till tomorrow?" She asked with a smirk and raised eyebrow.

"Got done early setting Pema and the kids up. Though I can say I'm glad I came back when I did," Tenzin replied looking from her and to the group of strangers.

"So who are they?" Korra asked looking at both Tenzin and Beifong. Raiko instead spoke up for them.

"A group of fighters. Very advanced technology such as machines that can bend light to form something called a hologram?" The President looked towards the red headed woman in armor who gave him a nod of approval.

"Bend light?" Mako asked confused.

"Basically yes." Beifong replied never looking away from the group, her stern eyes scanning everything about them she possibly

could.

"Uh huhâ€|" Korra stated with slight disbelief.

"Thats not all. Commander if you would," Raiko said giving Shepard the floor with a quick hand gesture.

"Commander Shepard," The woman stated towards Korra with a nod.

"Avatar Korra," Korra replied with a nod of her own.

"Avatar, This is what the Flood can due. I already showed it to the others. Its a video. Moving pictures."

Korra remembered how Varik had a similar inventions with his movers but hers was obviously much more high tech than anything even Varik had. Her and Mako both leaned closer to watch.

The video was horrific. Monsters, unlike any she had ever seen, slaughtering soldiers on the streets using weapons like the ones the group carried, fast projectiles shooting out of them, others using a form of what she could consider magic, and they all fought to the death against the monsters. She watched as soldier after soldier fell, explosions rocking the streets and airships rained down fire on the enemy. Screams filled the air. The last thing the video played, the holder dying by the hand of one of the monsters, was the camera on the ground, facing a building where two children stood. They were crying. Finally it ended.

Korra just stared in shock, her eyes wide and filled with terror.

"Whatâ€|." Korra asked looking up at the Commander. Mako just rubbed his face with his hand and sigh escaping him. Tenzin was just looking away, Beifong stared out the window and Raiko had his head down. They all hated that video and Shepard hated having to show them it. She didn't have much choice however. She needed them to believe them.

"That was Earth. A home to most of my crew," Shepard stated closing the hologram and lowering her omni tool.

"Her home is probably in the same state right now," Katherine nodded towards the blonde woman. The Blonde didn't meet Korras gaze so she looked back towards Katherine.

"And that'll happen here if those Flood get loose?" Korra stated with a hard look, her nails digging into the Presidents desk. She had just saved the world and now here was something else trying to destroy it. She wasn't going to let that happen.

"Yes."

"What can we do to stop it?" Tenzin asked stepping forward and placing a hand on Korras shoulder. The Avatar was still young and he knew she would need someone's help to take it all in.

"Nothing," Another one of the group stated. The being looked human, but Korra could tell it wasn't. It wore silver armor, sleek and

deadly, and from the looks and sound of the voice, Korra deemed it was a woman.

"This is he Keeper, Last of her race." Tenzin introduced. He had already been introduced to most of them.

"Even if we destroy the meteor, the Flood will still return, this time with ships and warriors. You really won't stand a chance then," The Keeper stated after the Airbenders introduction.

"So they're unstoppable?" Korra asked with scrunched eyebrows and a scrutinizing look.

"Not entirely," The Keeper pressed on her own device and pulled out a picture. A monster is all the benders would describe it as. A dark pale green beast, tentacles, and a massive body, a head that looked like a plants.

"This is the Gravemind. Leader of the Flood. Without him we have a better chance of stopping the Flood entirely. Without him they lose their intelligence, their strategy. An enemy that can't plan is that much easier to beat."

"And you want me to kill it?" Korra asked already knowing where this was going. When someone had a big problem like this, they normally came to the Avatar to fix it. Being the most powerful bender alive had its disadvantages.

"No," Shepard walked forward. "There is a person on this planet. Someone who isâ€¦ Special. In the fact they can actually harm this creature," She looked over at the Forerunner who pressed something on her wrist. The alien looked up right at Korra and nodded.

"She is the Alpha."

"Wait I'm the what?" Korra asked confused.

"You're the only in this Universe capable of helping us out." The Keeper answered.

"So you do want me to kill this thing?"

"We need you to help us out. We can provide protection to the planet. If you want we can even station troops here in case of a Flood outbreak," Shepard stated before the Avatar freaked out. It didn't work.

"Wait waitâ€¦ What? You said planet? Station troops on our planet? What does that even mean?" Korra asked waving her hands around, clearly expressing the confused opinions of all the benders in the room.

"Look this is going to get confusingâ€¦." Shepard warned.

"Try me. I doubt there's anything you can that would surprise me," Korra said with a challenging grin.

* * *

><p>John stood against the wall, his arms crossed, and his body

looking relaxed. However his eyes and the rest of his body was alert. Ready to fight in a moments noticed. The rest of their group was now in the lobby area of the Presidents building. They had been asked to leave after explaining everything they knew, even showing the Keepers video, so the native leaders could discuss what they wanted to do.<p>

Apparently the young, dark skinned girl was of importance to them. He wondered why she was so important.

He glanced over at Elsa, whom was sitting on a couch with regal. Of course he had initially thought the same of her but she proved useful after all. She was no close combat fighter like himself, but at a range he saw how deadly she could be.

The Spartan turned his gaze towards the Arbiter, whom was talking to the Commander about something rather serious.

He could overhear them talking about ideas and strategies of how to beat the Gravemind. She was still with the plan of redesigning the Halo weapons. How ironic was it, that where it all began with the Flood, is where it would end. Except this time an important part was missing.

John ignored his own feelings and continued surveying the area. Plants, vases, couches, and the second floor was visible to the ground floor due to the balcony like appearance it held. A water fall with some sort of symbol behind it stood off towards the back, a flaming fire pit before it, plants draped around it. It was meant to symbolize the four elements, as he had overheard a man in metal telling Garrus. He wondered why the worshipped water, fire, air and earth. They weren't elements at all, just larger bodies of mater created by real elements like hydrogen and oxygen.

Either way he still wondered why they basally worshipped these things.

He also noticed the ten guards all around the area. They looked like old police officers from Earth yet their attire looks to be completely made of metal. Of course not a bad idea as opposed to just cloth like some police forces, but he wondered why. Maybe they were more militaristic than he initially thought.

The light footsteps approaching him off to his side caught his attention and he turned to face whoever it was. He had been expecting Shepard or maybe someone else, but not the hard headed Ice Queen.

The blonde looked up at him, her stance tall and her head held high. Of course she still had to look up at the larger spartan. Her eyes were still, and John was surprised they didn't betray any emotion.

"I wanted to apologize for my behavior earlier," She stated softly, her eye flickering with a twinge of guilt.

The Spartan stared at her for a few moments then simply gave her a small nod before turning away, his gaze going back to the odd waterfall. He wasn't one to hold grudges, and its not like he was actually angry with her. She had threatened to become a threat and

all he was ready to do was stop her, if it came to that. Otherwise he had no quarrel with her.

Elsa stared at him as if waiting for more than just a nod. "Wellâ€¦ I'm glad we got that settled then," The Queen nodded towards him, her face still emotionless and calm. She turned away from him and walked away.

John wouldn't have looked after her if he hadn't heard the silent footsteps on the floors above. He looked up towards the open balcony of the second floor.

He saw a metal cop fall to floor on the second floor, and that's when he knew something was wrong.

The Spartan immediately lunged towards the Queen. Shepard noticed his movement and drew her own weapon, knowing instinctively that something was wrong.

He hit the Queen, protectively wrapping his arms around her and rocketing towards the ground. They landed hard but Chief managed to keep her unharmed from both the fall and his own weight.

Only a second after he grabbed her, a man in a black robe, a red hand painted over the chest, landed with one foot on the floor from a flip. Fire blazed out from where his foot hit the ground and the man fell into a crouch to compensate for the fall.

"What the hell?" Wrex roared, the fire having drawn everyone's attention.

"Arrest him!" One of the metal clad cops yelled.

The man didn't even hesitate to continue his attack. He spun around, leaping to his feet and with a kick sent a jet of flame towards Shepard.

Her eyes widened and the Commander dove away to her left, barely managing to dodge the flames. Wrex threw a warp at the attacker.

The man looked at the attack Wrex sent wide eyed. A wall of earth suddenly ripped out of the ground in front of him, taking the warp for him.

The Arbiter drew his own weapon, a Light rifle of his own since his Carbine had run out of ammo like the Chief's rifle. He aimed and prepared to fire when suddenly something wet hit his back. He watched helpless as water washed over him, he stumbled forwards and the water suddenly froze over him. He couldn't move, completely frozen in place by the ice over him.

Shepard got to her feet spinning to her feet just as Wrex and Garrus did, Ashley opening fire on the fire bender.

Garrus fired his weapon, the bullets blocked by a wall of earth when a blast of fire hit him in the back and sent the Turian sprawling to the ground.

"Garrus!" Shepard yelled.

Several more figures in black leaped off the second floor and landed on the ground floor. They immediately attacked the cops and the surprised group with fire, water and earth flying everywhere.

* * *

><p>Elsa groaned and began to sit up when a metal hand yanked her to her feet before pushing her back, sending her once again to the ground. She barely saw the lightning fly between her and the Chief a second later after he pushed her. She would've been hit with lightning had he not moved her.<p>

"Get down!" Chief yelled at her, aiming his rifle downwind and towards the seven benders attacking the cops and his allies.

"Behind you!" Elsa yelled noticing movement to the other side of him.

The Spartan had noticed the movement as well, spinning around just as a beast form the shadows leaped towards him. He managed to raise his weapon, which the beast slammed into, its teeth sinking into the metal rifle.

He held his ground as the skeleton face, black mobster with red eyes tried to overpower him.

Chief surged his weight forward, unbalancing the beast, pulled back and smashed its head with the butt of his rifle.

Another beast laid in wait, and as its comrade fell, it charged. The beast slammed into him, sending the two to the ground.

Elsa stumbled to her feet, her arms wide and ready to cast ice the moment she needed to. That moment came only a second later as a eighth man in black, charged towards her from where he had landed and launched a barrage of fire punches at her.

The Queen threw her hands up in self defense, a wall of pure ice forming between her and the fire.

The fire blasts incinerated the ice wall but were themselves put out by the ice. The bender stared at her in a brief moment in shock. He had expected his target to be easy, instead she had actually blocked his attacks.

Elsa stared at him with wide eyes unsure what to do. The man spun around and let out a torrent of flame.

Elsa, suddenly changed, her face grew cold and her eyes hard. Her stance grew harsh and her mind hardened for a fight. She threw out her arms, knowing what it looked like when a person wanted to kill her, and this man wanted her dead. It had happened before with Hans and the dukes men.

Ice shot forth from her hands and the two jets of opposing elements met in mid air. A massive blast of steam rocketed out from the two opposing blasts, but neither gave way.

* * *

><p>Shepard slapped a fresh thermal clip into her rifle before firing away at another bender, who again used a lightning bolt to force her into cover behind a rock pillar, though her bullets managed to hit the attackers leg. He cried out in pain allowing Shepard to pop up out of cover and finish him off with a headshot.<p>

The metal bender cops and their group fought against several other black robed men, as several creatures suddenly rushed out of the shadows at her group and the metal benders.

Wrex roared as he turned to fight a larger boar like creature head on. Garrus was knocked out by a fire blast, the Arbiter frozen solid, the Keeper fighting off another large creature, Ashley on the floor unconscious after being hit with a massive boulder. Chief fighting a large creature behind her, his speed and strength allowing him to pummel the beast like nothing. Elsa engaged in an ice and fire battle with a black hooded man. The metal bender cops were fighting most of the other black robbed men.

The Commander retook aim and dropped another black robbed man with a precise shot to the head. She heard someone approaching her and spun around only to get hit with a red biotic blast. Katherine hit the floor hard and grunted harshly. She looked up and saw a figure in silver armor.

"You againâ€|" She growled.

"Of course." The Black Knight laughed, his sword materializing in his hand. He lunged forward and thrust his sword right at Shepard.

The Commander managed to roll out of the way as the sword impaled the ground. She fired a biotic blast at her attacker and managed to get to her feet only to be hit in the back with a fire blast, sending her forward towards the knight, who in turn kicked her in the gut and sent her flying back into the middle of the lobby. She rolled to a halt and looked up.

The metal bender cops were all out of commission. Six black robbed men around the room, five monsters, excluding the two the Keeper and the Chief were fighting. Elsa was still engaged in a fire and ice duel with the seventh black robbed men.

Despite at least six dead black robbed men, apparently more had arrived and out flanked the cops and her team, Ashley now unconscious herself, and Wrex buried under a pile of earth.

She climbed to her feet, her biotics swirling around her.

"You're outnumbered and outgunned Commander. You've lost," The Black Knight stated raising his sword towards her.

"No you haven't!" Another voice called out from above.

The two looked up to see, a young dark skinned girl dressed in water tribe clothes leaping off the second floor and slamming her fist in the gourd floors floor. Earth ripped apart and rushed towards all of Shepard's attackers.

The Black Knight managed to jump onto one of the rocks jutting out towards him and flipped backwards onto the second floor. He landed

with grace and stood back up, looking down at Shepard and Korra.

"Stay behind me," Korra told Shepard before charging three of the six benders.

Two twirled around and launched two streams of fire at her. The third kicked a rock up and launched it at her. Korra spun around the two blasts of fire, spinning and firing her own blasts back at them, smashing the rock with her fist in mid air and sending a gust of air towards the earth bender with a kick of her leg.

The three blasts all connected and sent the black robed attackers stumbling back. Shepard took the opportunity and put down the two fire benders with a barrage of bullets.

Korra ignored the now downed fire benders, not knowing they were actually dead but thinking they were unconscious, and attacked the earth bender easily overwhelming him with a barrage of mixed attacks. He hit the wall and fell to the floor out cold.

The other three benders had tried to attack them while the two were busy but a certain Airbender, fire bender, and chief of police had already subdued them.

The Black Knight turned away from the fight, retreating into the shadows of the second floor, his sword dematerializing as he turned.

Mako shot lightning at one of the beasts charging him and the elder benders. The lightning struck and obliterated one of the beast though two more still came at them. The other two were already headed for Shepard and Korra.

John slammed his armored fist through the monsters head and let the beast fall to the floor dead. He turned to the battle happening behind him and saw the four natives along with Shepard all fighting several beasts.

He ran towards the nearest one fighting Beifong, and grabbed it from behind, lifting it up and then slamming it into the ground. He wasted no time and grabbed its neck, snapping it with ease.

"Thanks," Beifong nodded then charged off to help Tenzin.

John turned back to Elsa who was still in a lock with the firebender.

Elsa grit her teeth and sent a new surge of ice through her own stream, which managed to break the fire benders own stream, her ice slammed into him and he went sprawling to the ground.

She watched as the ice grew over his hands and he roared, fire blazing from his hands and he spun on the ground, fire racing out towards her.

She raised another wall of ice but too slowly. The ice wall blasted apart and she flew back into the wall.

The fire bender, having gotten to his feet charged her, lightning

flying towards her. The Queen barely managed to avoid the bolt, though her shoulder was scorched by it. She cried out in pain and thrust her arms forward once more.

An ice barricade shot out and stopped the man in his tracks. Icicles shot out from the floor, large and sharp, and shot out towards the attacker. He yelled in fear as the icicles barely missed him but one grazed his neck, threatening to impale him.

Elsa got to her feet and saw the scene before her. She gasped and realized how close she was to killing the man. Her hard eyes suddenly filled with regret and fear.

The icicles turned red and a gust of wind began to pick up. Chief, grabbed his weapon of the floor and raised it.

Korra spun around having finished of the last beast with a fire blast, and was confused by what was happening. Mako and the other two benders stared in confusion as well. None of them had expected one of these people to be a bender.

Shepard readied a stasis just in case. Elsa grabbed her head and backed up against the wall.

"No! No not again! no no no no!" She repeated gritting her teeth and looking down. Her icicles fell apart and the fire bender tried to take his chance, spinning around to deliver a killing blow to the Ice Queen but a hard light round to the head stopped him.

Elsa looked up to see the man dead, and the swirling snow and air slowly died away as she realized she hadn't killed him, yet fear plagued her heart. She would not become a monster. She couldn't. Not again.

The Queen stared with shaky breaths at all the destruction, the light from her ice returning to its natural color.

"So would someone like to explain what the hell just happened?" Shepard asked.

* * *

><p>AN so I might as well say it, I am introducing a new faction called the Black Hand. I may have taken the name from somewhere so don't hate. Anyway, I a sheer firefight, of course Shepard and her team would've probably won, but they were ambushed and outnumbered. The metal bender cops haven't ever shown truly exceptional bending so I didn't factor them in too much as our heros are all probably better fighters than them, excluding Elsa, though the Queen is able to match the fire bender only because he uses attacked of sheer strength not skill, hence she could match him.**

**Also there will be around 18 chapters in the Korra Arc. I actually I think after that I will end part one and continue with the Star Trek arc in Part II. Mainly cause part one is freaking long after 18 more chapters including all the interludes. For clarity interludes will only happen at appropriate times, such as when the team actually has time off. For those who haven't, I would recommend reading the

interludes as it will give a lot more character development than just the story alone. Not to mention I'll try to make them as lighthearted as possible to contrast with the dark nature of the story.**

The poll is also still live.

Review, and God bless you all. Thanks for reading!

31. Part I Chapter 29 (Mostly Beta'd)

A/N New Chapter. Things may move fast.

* * *

><p>Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil

Chapter 29: Day 2

* * *

><p>Elsa tossed and turned in her bed, sweat beaded on her forehead and a grimace of pain on her face. Nightmares had often plagued her since she had almost killed her sister, but now they were getting worse.

She saw pain, fire. Heard a voice and laughter, but no matter how hard she tried she could never remember the dreams. Only glimpses.

The Arbiter, the alien, dead on his back, an icicle straight through him.

The ship she had been on in space, obliterated and falling to the ocean.

Garrus, the only alien she had even talked to, dead and surrounded by the bodes of hundreds.

The Spartan. Crawling to a weapon, looking up, his visor shattered, blood, scorch marks and puncture wounds all over his armor.

Anna. Sitting against a stone, a fresh cut on her face, tears pouring down her checks, and holding her side with one hand, the red stain of blood obvious.

Around her were figures. One dressed in red and black hair. Another with a scythe and red hood and cloak. Finally a third with dark skin and glowing red eyes.

She opened her eyes and sighed. She frowned at the ice covering the entire room and willed it away. The room was warm and friendly, sun shining in through one of the windows. She didn't know how she had gotten there but she didn't care. For some reason things were blurry as well, and unless she focused on them, she couldn't see them. It didn't bother her either way.

_A knock on her door forced the Queen to get up an answer it. She

composed herself quickly, her magic forming her gown and making her hair into its usual style._

The door opened.

"Good morning!" Anna chirped engulfing her sister into a hug. Elsa jumped slightly from the suddenness of the hug. She wasn't used to physical affection still, so she lightly patted her sisters arm. Her sister released her and stood back with a smile. At least she got a hug.

"Good morning," Elsa said in a singsong voice with a big smile.

"So anywayâ€¦ I was thinking that since today, you know, you have the meeting and all with all those big guys and aliens, that me and Kristoff could go out into town and explore. Then afterwards you could come join. And oh alsoâ€¦." Anna started off again obviously excited about the new world they were in. She had taken the whole transition obviously well, but not being much into science she didn't know how relatively impossible it should've been to transcend another reality. Ignorance is bliss.

"Anna calm down," Elsa stated with an amused smile. "Yes you can go and have fun, but only if you take some of the guards with you."

"Uhhh," The red head groaned. "But they're so boring!"

Elsa prepared to reply when suddenly someone walked up behind Anna.

"What theâ€¦!" Anna muttered as a sword slid over her throat.

Elsa suddenly couldn't move, not even breath or blink. She looked up at whoever was behind Anna and saw the Black Knight.

"Save your family Queenâ€¦ Save themâ€¦!"

Ice spread over everything, engulfing her as well as her sister cried out for her to help her.

The last thing she ever heard was Anna's screams.

* * *

><p>Elsa screamed, shooting out of her own bed. She looked around praying to God this wasn't another dream. The light blue lights in the room, and the darkness around eased her mind, and reminded her she was aboard the big space ship called the Transcendence. She sighed again rubbing her forehead.<p>

She hadn't seen almost any of her people in the past few days. Her guards being the only exception, bar Anna and Kristoff. She was a Queen, and yet she had been up and about with these strangers rather than caring for her people. Of course, she needed to do it for their safety. She needed to find a place for her people. They were homeless and she figured working with these soldiers for the time being was the best option she had. Like she had many others.

Images came back to her. Fires, screaming, monsters climbing over the wall and attacking her people. The Reapers burning her home. Then came back the nightmares. Ice, death and fire.

The Queen shuddered and bit her lip trying to root herself in the present. The nightmares she felt were too real. The part that bugged her the most was the presence of ice in every one. She would never harm the others let alone kill them. So she wondered what it was. Despite all her reassuring of herself, fear was always there. She feared she was the one who caused them harm in her dreams, that she was the monster she always believed she was.

She did her best to push them away and instead only beckoned forth a headache. Gripping at her head did nothing to ease the pain. She got it every time she tried to actually think about realities and other universes, about everything that was happening. It pained her to think about it only because she had no idea what any of it meant. It was too complex for her to handle. Circumstance had forced her to ally with the Commander and others, but now she didn't know what she was doing. Mostly just going with the motions. All the Queen knew, was that she needed to protect her sister and her people.

Minutes went by in a dead silence.

Finally she was able to steady her thoughts and her emotions, placing herself in the now, and remembering she was awake. That she had a job to do. A knock on the door helped her do this, though she prayed it wasn't Anna.

She couldn't face her sister after such dreams.

Slowly she rose from her bed, her mind and body screaming for her to get some rest. She had been restless for a while. Even back at home, things were always tough. The almost killing your sister thing tends to do that.

She was able to slow her breathing enough to seem like she had just woken up. By the time she reached the door she looked like her normal self and plastered a smile on her face, her blue dress, and her hair in a nice braid. She had an image of a Queen to uphold after all.

Another knock and she finally answered the door.

The metal door slid open and the lights turned on to a very dim setting, doing their best not to affect her vision with a sudden light change.

"Elsa," Shepard stated with a raised eyebrow. The Queen would've normally thought something about the lack of respect, but she didn't know these people. Why should they respect her? Cause she said she was Queen? She had her arms crossed and was wearing her fatigues. She had stayed in the Normandy over night, finally getting a few hours of sleep. Most of her crew stayed in the Normandy as well. The Spartan and the Queen, her family and her people, all stayed in the Transcendence. The Normandy simply didn't have the space for all of them.

Shepard had been up for an hour or so.

She had her arms crossed and was wearing her fatigues. She had stayed in the Normandy over night, finally getting a few hours of sleep. Most of her crew stayed in the Normandy as well. The Spartan and the Queen, her family and her people, all stayed in the Transcendence. The Normandy simply didn't have the space for all of them.

She had then spoken with the Arbiter over breakfast, mostly nonsense and story swapping again. Then had gone and made sure everyone needed for the negotiations with the natives was up. Elsa was her last stop before she could go get her armor on.

"Yes Commander?" The Queen asked with a fake smile, face as emotionless as she knew how to make it. She didn't bother to look at her guards who stood around the entrance. They weren't allowed to go down to the planet with her, so while they could, they were doing their absolute best watching out for their Queen.

"We leave in half an hour. Just wanted to make sure you were up," Katherine said, beginning to turn away.

"Thank you Commander. I will meet you all in half an hour," The blonde stated with a polite nod. Shepard replied in kind but when Elsa's eyes flicked off behind her, a more than the unusual emotion in them, she felt something was wrong.

"Are you alright?" The Commander asked eyeing the blonde carefully. The Queens eyes widened a little bit before they turned back into a squint.

"Im fine. Thank you for your concern," Elsa nodded politely though her voice was colder than before.

"Alright," Shepard replied slowly taking her leave.

Elsa nodded towards her guards with a fake smile and retreated back into her room.

She sat on her bed with her head in her hands.

What had she gotten into?

* * *

><p>Korra ran her hands through her hair and yawned. She lazily leaned back in the chair she was sitting in, placing her feet up on the table.<p>

"Korra put your feet down." Tenzin scolded from his seat next to her.

"Oh come on Tenzin its not like they're here yet." Korra stated with a smirk and wave of her hand.

Tenzin grumbled something under his breath but let the young avatar be. She did have a point, their guests weren't there yet, and he had learned a while ago that humoring her was sometimes the better option, rather than trying to control the young rebellious girl.

The doors to the meeting room, the main room where the Republic Council had once sat, suddenly opened and in came Lin, President

Raiko and Mako.

"So about their bender?" Raiko asked his voice dark and his eyes serious.

"We act like we don't know," Tenzin replied. "They didn't seemed to care about it, but either way we should be careful. They have a water bender and yet after what they told us yesterday, they say they're from another Universe entirely."

"Don't remind meâ€|" Korra sighed rubbing her head. She had gotten a headache after the Commander had explained what she could to them. It was definitely a lot to take in. The Avatar hated to admit it, but the Commander had actually told her something she hadn't expected.

The three others had made their way to the Airbending Master and the Avatar, taking their own seats next to them. Mako however stood off to the side, being more of a guard than anything else.

"So we do nothing about this 'Queen Elsa'?" Raiko asked.

"Not right away," Beifong stated. "We need to hear them out. From what it looks like they're her allies so I doubt they kidnapped her. What we need to do is figure out how she can bend if she's not from our world. Unless she actually is and they're just really good at hiding their intentions," Beifong said sighing and crossing her arms. Tenzin nodded in response letting a comfortable silence fall over them.

"So when is this meeting supposed to start?" Korra asked looking over at the Chief of police after a few minutes of silence.

The doors opened, as if on cue, and in strode the party of what Korra simply called aliens at this point.

"Ohâ€|" The Avatar stated pulling her feet off the table in front of them.

In the past day, she, Tenzin and the others had discussed what to do. They figured if these people were telling the truth then they needed their help. If they were lying, and just trying to get on their good side like Unalq had done, they needed to make sure they knew what to do.

They had seen the moving pictures the Commander had showed them, and had seen what their weapons were capable of in a brief display after the surprise attack the day before.

What had unnerved the Avatar the most however, was that the attack had been meant for the group. It was as if those benders had known they had been coming. Apparently someone named the Black Knight had led them into battle, and if she were to believe the Commander, then this knight was from another reality entirely. It wasn't a hard concept to grasp with the spirit world being a basic alternate reality to their world, what got her though was their use of technology to do it.

Still she wasn't sure about these people. Some of them were too quiet, like the green robot and the woman dressed in blue, whom she

had learned was actually a Queen where she came from. Some of the others seemed unpleasant entirely, but a few, such as the Commander and a few of the strange looking ones, had seemed alright. She knew one named Garrus, a thing with scales as his skin, was at least a good jokester. Better than Bolin anyhow.

The group, composed of fewer than the day before, the green robot, the Commander, the Queen and the one introduced as the Keeper, all made their way down the aisle and to the table the others were seated at.

Korra figured the others of the group were probably keeping watch outside. She couldn't blame them after the ambush the other day. Her thoughts grew dark at the thought. They had learned the group called themselves the Black Hand. She wanted to know why they attacked and who they were, but for now she had to deal with a boring meeting. Boy how she hated meetings.

"Commander Shepard," Raiko said with a polite smile and nod. He had seen that she was more or less the leader of the small group, however he did notice the small power struggle between the groups people. He briefly wondered if it would be a problem.

"President Raiko," The red headed woman replied taking a seat at the long table across from him. Elsa and the Keeper took their own seats but John stayed standing.

"Chief?" Shepard asked confused as to why the Spartan wasn't sitting.

"The chairs won't support my armor's weight," Korra noticed how the man said armor. It was actually the first they had heard him talk. she wondered if he was human or an alien like some of the others.

"How much does it weigh?" Shepard asked actually astonished at the fact.

"Around half a ton," The Spartan replied shortly, his visor indicating he was looking at her. She looked at him a few more seconds with a raised eyebrow then turned back to the others.

"Commander Shepard, as you are aware we have no knowledge about the attacks on you and your team. Chief Beifong's men are looking into the case with the utmost urgency, however, we need to know more about this Flood you speak of especially if they are as big a threat as you make them out to be," Tenzin stated. The group had agreed, mostly, that they would need the Commander and her teams help, but they weren't entirely convinced yet.

"The Flood are a parasite. They will do whatever it takes to wipe out your people," The Keeper responded before the others. "They can't be negotiated with, and only the people called the Alphas can stop their leader."

"And I'm one of these 'Alphas' right?" Korra asked with a mixed look of suspicion and doubt.

"Yes," The keeper stated simply with a nod.

"And how exactly do we know your not lying to us about her being this Alpha person?" Beifong interjected.

"Or that its even true?" Raiko asked raising his eyebrows.

"Because I'm oneâ€¦." Elsa stated surprising both groups. She had hardly spoke at any of their little gatherings. For her to be doing it now, was a shock.

"Really?" Tenzin asked leaning forward interested.

"Yes," The regal Queen stated then taking in a deep breath continued. "Theyâ€¦ saved me and my people from a dying worldâ€¦ Another enemy attacked us only to get to meâ€¦ Because I am one of these people." The Queen said. "My people are almost extinct because of me. Don't make the same mistake," Her eyes grew sad and her face slightly somber. Elsa may not entirely believe everything she had been told, but if Shepard and the others were right, who was she to condemn another civilization to doom when she could help to save it.

Shepard was impressed by the Queens statement. She knew it was unfair for the Queen to blame herself for the Reaper invasion of her world but now was not the time for her to comfort someone. She could do that later.

"What is your plan Commander? How are we going to deal with the Flood?" Raiko asked leaning forward on the table.

"Quarantine the area around the meteor," Chief stated before Shepard could respond.

"Agreed," Shepard stated somewhat sourly. The others were just trying to help but she didn't know how well they handled such delicate situations. She trusted herself to handle them well but she wasn't so sure about them. Especially after the Queen and Spartan having almost killed each other multiple times.

"Quarantine? How?" Tenzin asked rubbing his beard.

"Set up defensive perimeters around it. Our ship will hover over it and in the mean time we can set up defenses with our own weapons over the city. Just in case," Shepard informed.

"But the Flood will return. One way or another," The Keeper added.

"Which is why we need her. If we can bring down their leaders. Then the Flood will that much less of a threat," Shepard said.

"Without the Gravemind, the Flood is only so dangerous. They would probably forget about your world and leave it be. Most likely being to preoccupied with our universe and destroying it," John then replied.

The group of benders and the one non bender exchanged looks, each of them wracking their brains for solutions.

"Korraâ€¦ How do you feel about all this? You are the one they're asking help from," Tenzin stated solemnly.

Korra stared between the group and her friends. Well her friends except Raiko. Either way she didn't know what was the right thing to do in such circumstances. She could believe these people and if they were right, then great, she would help stop this evil Gravemind dude from destroying her and their worlds.

But if they were lying, tricking them to following them, who knows what could happen. Last time someone tricked them he almost destroyed the world. She was not going to let that happen again.

The Avatar studied everyone faces. From the looks of it, Tenzin was doubtful but still trusting of these newcomers, Beifong seemed skeptical, Mako just looked thoughtful, and the President was giving her the look to make the right decision.

"Ok well, if what you guys say is true and you're not just trying to trick usâ€¦ Then I'm with you, but if you trick me..." She let the threat hang in the air then continued. "What do we need to do to stop this guy?"

"Well we've laid out a planâ€¦" Shepard started clicking on her omnitool when a sudden rumbling shook the earth. The table shook slightly and pieces of rubble and dust fell from the ceiling.

"Now what?" Beifong shouted annoyed. The Keepers personal device began to beep and she quickly accepted the incoming transmission from her ship.

"Ma'am. The Meteor is breaking apart. Flood spores are beginning to break out. Shall I fire the main cannons?" Claire the AI asked.

"Do it." The keeper responded without hesitation.

"Wait do what?" Korra asked standing up. Yet before anyone else could respond a massive boom could be heard in the distance, the earth shook again, albeit more violently, and a massive sonic boom could be heard only a split second later.

"My ship has just obliterated the Flood on the planet. Make no doubt they will return, but for now, we are safe," The Keeper said with a sigh of relief. Despite her ships firepower she was afraid they could escape her notice. One flood spore, could destroy a species.

"Wow that was easyâ€¦" Korra said actually sounding disappointed. She had been looking forward to another adventure despite knowing the consequences that could occur. She had spoken too soon.

"Not easyâ€¦" One of them started before being.

"Ma'am slipspace rupture detected above the planet. Three of them. All CCS class Destroyers. All three bound for the city. None slowing to a safe landing speed. Flood spores detected on board." Claire stated.

"Destroy those ships at once!" The Keeper ordered her voice rising in volume. Shepard hearing what was happening contacted Joker, getting out of her seat at the same time.

"Joker we have enemy ships inbound to the planet. Do what you can to

stall them," She was looking at the Keeper who nodded at her, acknowledging that Claire would let the Normandy out of the Transcendence bay to fight.

"Got it Commander. Stay safe down there," Joker replied.

"You too Joker," Shepard replied cutting off the comm. Chief had already drawn his weapon and was keeping a trained eye on the door.

The Queen and the others sat at the table listening to the Keeper relay instructions to her AI.

"Ma'am vessels one and two destroyed. Debris falling into the atmosphere and being destroyed by point defense lasers. Ship three has sustained significant damage butâ€¦."

The sound of screeching wind, and tearing metal filled the air. A loud crash echoed out and the roof to the City Hall, where they were in, was suddenly ripped off by a burning hunk of purple metal. Rock, glass, metal and shards of all sorts fell from the ceiling, screams from the outside could be heard as well as the sound of a speeding ship on a crash landing course.

Shepard reacted just in time, throwing up shimmering barrier over her head, the Chief doing the same with a blue hard light shield. The Keeper powered up a dome of energy around her, the debris and stone breaking on the shield harmlessly no matter the size.

Korra and Beifong quickly used their own earth bending to launch any stones falling on them away from them and the others. Tenzin used a gust of air to push Elsa out of the way of a falling chunk of rock while Mako obliterated a large stone trying to crush him with a lightning fire bender took a few smaller rocks but was spared immediate death thanks to his lightning.

Elsa overreacted out of instinct, her conscious mind too preoccupied to think right in such a situation, and created a seemingly impenetrable dome of ice over her.

The debris only fell for a few seconds but the damage to the building was clear. The inside of the building was in ruins, large pieces of stone and metal having crushed or torn apart the ground, chairs, and anything else. Jagged stones and metal laid about everywhere, showing how if the group hadn't acted quick enough, they probably all would've died painful deaths. The roof itself was entirely missing allowing the light of day to shine directly upon them.

Shepard dissipated her barrier and drew her weapon. The doors, somehow having managed to escape the falling debris, burst open and the rest of Shepards ground team charged in, weapons at the ready.

"Shepard what the hell is going on?" Wrex asked, his gruff voice helping to portray his obvious annoyance.

"Claire what is happening?" The Keeper asked, her dome of hard light energy powering down.

"Ma'am ship three has crashed into the city only three blocks down

from your position. Flood spores have already begun to make their way into the atmosphere and Flood infectors forms have already begun assimilation of the local population. I have deployed Promethean knights to help but there are not enough to spare."

"Stay in orbit. I will notify you with any updates. No one is to leave or board the ship without my approval. Send in the sentinels as well," The Keeper ordered cutting off the communication.

"Garrus contact Joker tell him to stay away from the city. We don't need any Flood getting aboard the Normandy," Shepard stated.

"Commander we need to evacuate the city!" Tenzin stated rushing over to her. "If you are here to help us we need to save the citizens."

Shepard looked at him, her eyes looking at him with concern. She glanced back at the Keeper who shook her head in the negative.

"We'll do what we can. We need to set up points of evac on the outskirts of the city. Do you have gunships?" Shepard asked loading her gun. She ignored whatever look the Keeper gave her.

"We have airships if thats what you mean. I'll get my men to move them to the outskirts of the city," Beifong replied.

"Good. Sound an alarm. Tell the city we need to evacuate now. You," Shepard said pointing to Mako.

"Me?"

"You can use fire right?"

"Yes" He replied

"Good. Gather anymore fire wielders and use them to stop the advance of the Flood. Fire's the most effective against them."

"Long bursts. No close range combat." Chief added.

"Got it." Mako said preparing to leave.

"Alright the rest of us we're going to help evac anyone we can. Its best we split up. Each of us to different sectors."

"I'll take the Dragon flats borough. There are a lot of triads there especially fire benders. They'll be more than willing to help," Mako stated from the doorway, having heard the Commander. The Chief of Police and Shepard both nodded in agreement. The fire bender said a brief farewell and left.

"I'll get going. I'll do what I can to keep some order and coordinate this evacuation," Beifong stated looking at Shepard.

"Take Wrex and Garrus. Make sure she stays alive and help her coordinate the evac," Shepard nodded. Beifong returned the nod and took off herself, Garrus and Wrex following without hesitation. They had learned to trust the Commanders judgment.

"I'll head to the ports. Get people out through the ships docked there." Tenzin stated turning away from the group and looking towards the doors.

"Good idea. Arbiter help him out," Shepard ordered opening her omnitool.

"Korraâ€¦ Stay safe alright?" Tenzin stated looking at her.

"I'll be fine. Come on what's the worst that could happen?" Korra smiled.

* * *

><p>Korra landed behind a boulder deciding to use it for temporary cover. Plasma rounds flew past her. She grit her teeth together, bended water from a nearby fire hydrant, and began healing her burnt arm. Several scorch marks and burns littered her body. She had avoided any direct hits but the near misses still did some damage.<p>

"What's the worst that could happen huh Korraâ€¦" Korra berated herself as the shrieks of Flood filled the air.

Shepard rolled, leaped over the boulder, and into cover next to Korra.

"Now what?" Korra asked, standing up and using the water from her arm to rip apart an oncoming Flood form. At first she had been objective to killing them so violently but after a few minutes of seeing their nature her initial restraint had been washed away.

"Keep falling back. Most of those other benders are dead. Chief and Elsa got separated. I suspect they'll be heading towards the police headquarters to find Beifong," Shepard said standing up next to Korra and together the two used a deadly duet of fire and bullets to tear apart the approaching five Flood forms.

"We need to move!" Shepard yelled as a weak plasma bolt hit her dead on and drained her shields significantly. The heat already melting some of her armor and burning her slightly underneath.

Korra didn't hesitate and flipped out of the cover using a few fire blasts to put the Flood attacking them down and give the Commander and her a chance to run.

The two sprinted off, Korra using her air bending to dodge and deflect any plasma rounds headed towards them as they fell back. They rushed past destroyed cars, burn out and abandoned building and shops, a few dead bodies, and debris of all sorts. A white hot conflagration blazed everywhere. The initial outbreak had caused surprise and it hadn't taken the benders long to realize fire was their best defense.

Needless to say the fire benders had gone wild.

The two turned around a corner, Korra throwing up a wall of rock behind them to try and slow any pursuers. She looked up and saw the airships nearby, the ones floating over the docks where Tenzin

was.

"Almost there!" Shepard yelled gunning down a Flood form that had popped out in front of her. She opened up a comm channel.

"Joker how's it going at the docks?"

"Not good. They're getting hammered. Better hurry Commander," Joker replied. Shepard shut off the comms. They needed to find Tenzin and get off on a ship or an airship. Just anything that could get them out of the city alive.

A few people were running about here and there, dozens more running through the streets and towards the ports the same way they were going.

Several shrieks filled the air and suddenly dozens of Flood combat forms dropped from the roofs of the surrounding buildings and into the midst of people running away. Shepard drew her omni blade and cut a form in half with a swooping arc while firing a biotic blast and saving some kid from their own near death encounter.

Korra blasted away another flood form with an air kick, spun around and brought down a fist of fire on another saving a bender who had been struggling to fight off three at once.

Other benders were around fighting off the Flood forms, water, earth and fire, tearing them apart limb from limb, but their success was short lived as more Flood leapt from the roofs of building, others charging and leaping in from intersecting streets.

A large Flood form was at the end of the street furthest from the docks, using its massive arms to swat away four people at a time. Korra charged it.

Shepard blasted apart another Flood form with her shotgun only to get hit from behind by another. She stumbled forward. She spun and hit the flood with a biotic punch ripping a ragged hole clean through it.

The cries of agony were heard and Shepard knew that the Flood forms with the plasma weapons had arrived. The benders could hold their own for a while against unarmed Flood forms but against the ones with plasma weaponry it was almost hopeless.

People began to drop left and right, a few even succumbing to several infection forms.

Korra hit the large Flood with a blast of fire, surprised to see the creature heal almost immediately after.

She didn't stop her attack and spun around letting a precise stream of jagged water slice into the beast before hitting it in the chest with a large rock. The beast roared and charged at her again, healing almost instantly from that attack as well.

Korra flipped over its arm as it swung and barely dodged a second swing from its other arm. She used an air blast to rebalance herself and managed to dodge another swipe from the beast. She kicked at it, unleashing a torrent of fire at point black range.

The beats roared and stumbled away from her, charred black. However, its skin began to slough off the burnt skin and replaced it with new freshly healed skin.

Korra growled and her eyes suddenly turned pure white.

She lunged forwards faster than before, ducking another of the beast attacks and at point blank using both her fists, she blasted the thing with as much fire as she could muster in the Avatar state.

The creature roared while trying to take a swing at her. Its arm melted before it could and under the relentless fire of the Avatar, the beast simply burnt away to ashes.

Korra smiled in victory but leaned over breathing heavily as her eyes returned to their normal color. Using so much fire at once was tiring. She really hoped another one of those things didn't show up.

* * *

><p>John fired and took down three Flood forms with precise and mechanical aim. People were fleeing into the police headquarters behind him, the few metal bending cops and other benders doing what they could to hold off the advancing hordes.<p>

"To the right!" John yelled as another large behemoth of a Flood came charging towards them. The combined might of a few fire benders and an Earth bender sent it flying back, having to heal from its very serious wounds.

He reloaded his gun and gazed around the battlefield. He could tell the fight wasn't going well. The benders were capable warriors but they weren't invincible. He was just glad none of the Flood with plasma weapons had showed up yet. If they did the playing field would definitely change in the Floods favor.

Elsa herself was standing at the door to the police headquarters ushering people in. She had stayed down to help, having argued with her sister through Garrus's Com channel. Her sister wasn't happy about it but understood. She needed to help.

The daylight was clouded by acrid black smoke and green fog in the air, fires reigned over the horizon, wailing and screams could be heard from every direction. It was far worse than Arendelle had suffered.

Garrus and Wrex were both standing down a few steps covering the people running in.

She thought about the Commanders and the others' homes. What if they were burning like this place? What chance did they really have?

A shriek in the air broke her from her thoughts and the Queen watched as another horde of Flood charged the police headquarters.

She stared in shock. How could they win against such odds. How could she protect her sister?

She watched as the Spartan fought in hand to hand combat with the monsters, many having breached the barricade and were now advancing towards them.

He was like the wind, moving and striking, unable to be touched by the beasts, a warrior forged by the heavens themselves.

Screaming and yells, fire everywhere, the Flood advancing. The Queen fired and created a few icicles here and there, stopping a few Flood forms in their tracks but she didn't now how to coordinate her power in such a mad house. What if she hit someone on her side? Killed one of them by accident.

She fired off another burst of ice, engulfing a few Flood forms that had a fire bender trapped on the ground.

"Get inside!" She yelled trying to usher more people in and firing off another blast of ice. It warped over another Flood form. She looked around with a frightened look. She wasn't used to being in such battles.

Suddenly there was pain. The Queen gasped and looked down. A large translucent needle like projectile was lodged in her gut. She could see the blood flow and heard the bellow of a monster.

Looking up and falling to her knees, a large Flood form fell to the floor, having climbed up on the backside of the building to flank them, and now even more were leaping off the roof, attacking what few defenders remained from behind.

It smacked Garrus and Wrex away before either could react.

The pure form, a normal hunter like one, stood before her and raised its arm ready to crush her in an instant. Screams echoed around her as people fled either inside or away from the monsters and into the fighting in front of the building as they tried to flee. It was sheer chaos.

Suddenly a massive rock slammed into it and sent it hurtling backwards, bits of rock flying everywhere from the impact. Beifong charged out from the doors, smashing her fists in the ground, and causing jagged pieces of rock to split the earth. All around they killing dozens upon dozens of nearby Flood.

She turned without a word and grabbed the Queen.

"Everyone inside!" She yelled realizing the battle was lost. It had only even been an hour and already the battle was lost.

The Queen's vision began to turn black but she had an ounce of will left for one thing. She raised her hand and the magic flowed out. Across the barricades where fighters were still struggling, a certain Spartan fighting to make it back to the building, among them giant pills of snow began to form, and out of them grew monsters.

Monsters with razor sharp claws, spikes, and that stood at least fifteen feet high.

The ice monsters roared, ten in all, and immediately began a rampage of their own against the Flood. They wouldn't last long but the

Spartan knew a respite when he saw one.

John ducked just as one of the monsters swiped over him clearing the immediate area around him of the smaller Flood forms. He didn't hesitate to sprint to a downed earth bender, bleeding from his side and gasping for breath.

The Spartan lifted the man with ease and sprinted over to the doors where a few more benders were making a final stand against the Flood. Beifong was among them, having handed off Elsa to another metal bender to be treated for her wounds. Garrus and Wrex standing right next to her firing away at the Flood forms.

"Hold the line!" She yelled as another bender fell to the spikes of a longed ranged Flood attacker. John had seen these types before aboard High Charity and on New Mombassa.

He handed off the hurt bender he was carrying to another and immediately turned to gun down several more Flood forms with his light rifle.

Another fire bender made it to the barricade and limped inside. Slowly Beifong, the few other benders, Garrus, Wrex, and the Spartan retreated till they were right next to the door.

"Inside!" John yelled pushing Beifong inside and kicking a combat Flood form in the chest in mid leap towards them. The other lunged inside.

He dove inside seconds later, and the metal benders sealed the front doors.

* * *

><p>Shepard limped along, a needle like projectile stuck in her leg. Korra turned again and let loose another stream of fire at the chasing Flood forms.<p>

The two had barely made it off the streets in time and were taking a back alley. The Flood had completely overwhelmed the crowd, almost killing both of them in the process. Korra herself was worse for wear as well. Sweat poured down her face, her hair was managed yet still in its ponytail, fresh cuts all over and her clothing ripped in several places.

She had never seen fighting like this. She was used to people. Planning, calculating, fighting like actual warriors. The Flood didn't fight like that. They were monsters, attacking, never tiring, always trying to kill, never hesitating. It was a different style entirely.

Together the two continued running, the shrieks of the Flood causing them to be alert as the clearest of days. Sirens still wailed over the city, smoke rising in the air, the whole sky looking black thanks to all the smoke and green fog in the air. Screams accompanied the sirens and the world seemed like it was ending.

Korra thoughts started to wander but she forced them back to bay. She still didn't have time to process everything. She would later. Right now she needed to focus on getting out of the city alive.

The Flood infection had spread quicker than they were ready for. The police and residents had been overwhelmed. As far as she knew only the Police Headquarters, the ports and the residential district Mako had gone to had been able to create barricades and safe zones. The only place people trapped inside the city could be evacuated. Others had fled the cities through the land but she only wondered how well that went. The United Forces had been called in to create a quarantine zone around the city and from what she knew they had, meaning anyone trying to evacuate through the ground was either going to be trapped inside or killed by the Flood. However, she knew General Iroh wasn't that cold, and hoped he would try to help any evacuees out of the city while keeping the quarantine borders. The United Forces were even sending air support, fighters flying by and raining fire down or dropping bombs on the Flood forces.

Even then it wasn't enough. The Flood were taking the city in only a matter of a few hours. She was at least glad they didn't all have those purple and blue shooting weapons. If they had then it would've been a lot shorter of a fight.

"Korra!" Shepard knocked the girl down just in time. A Flood form had leapt from one of the building and instead slammed into the Commander.

Katherine and it, both hit the ground, her on top. She used her leverage over it to keep it pinned and drove her omni blade into its chest then ripping upwards and bisecting its torso in half. She manage to get back on her feet, just as another Flood form leapt down from the building above.

Korra saw it and managed to blast it in mid air with a quick rush of air. She didn't stop there and leapt over the Commander and setting the squirming parasite ablaze. Shepard ended the beast's existence with a few mass driver slugs. Korra sighed and leaned back on the walls to one of the buildings.

"We need to move," Shepard stated watching the upper windows on the buildings.

"Yeah yeahâ€|" Korra replied standing up straight and the two were off again.

A few more run ins with the Flood ate up a few precious minutes but it wasn't anything they couldn't handle. Fire and bullets proved good allies as they tore down the parasitic forces in their way.

After at least twenty more minuets of treacherous walking, Flood encounters, and not seeing a single soul alive besides themselves, the two finally made it to the docks. They walked onto the loading areas in front of the actual docking bays

"What happenedâ€|" Korra asked completely wide eyed.

The docks were up in flame. Not a single soul moved. Bodies laid everywhere, both Flood and human. The ships were up in flames and torn to burning shreds, debris lying in the surrounding water and all over the docks. Flames covered a large portion of the entire area, plumes of smoke floating into the sky. A few airships could be seen in the distance flying away. The two slowly walked out onto one of

the piers, being sure to stay clear of any debris or fire.

"They left!" Korra stated disheartened. Tenzin had gone. They had all left her.

"Korra!" Shepard yelled.

The Avatar turned around. Hundreds of Flood forms were leaping off the buildings and landing on the ground, then dashing towards them in a suicidal rage.

The Commander opened fire, even sending out a shockwave towards the oncoming horde. Korra spun and fired away multiple blasts of fire, before twirling her arms and pulling water from the bay. She raised it into the air and sent it down on the horde, at the last moment crossing her arms, and the water turning into ice shards.

The combined attacks tore down the front of the horde, but a few plasma bolts zipping at them forced the two into cover. They both saw the Flood reinforcements leaping off the buildings as the horde charged them.

"Korra!"

The two looked out towards the end of the pier, where a sky bison and a certain Airbender who were flying over the bay right towards them.

"Move!" Shepard yelled nodding towards the end of the pier.

Korra fired off another fire blast.

"You first!" She replied.

"Just go!" Katherine replied firing off a large burst of automatic rifle fire.

"I'm not going anywhere! You're hurt worse than I am you should go first," Korra replied. Shepard internally groaned. Her leg was injured but she wasn't out for the count. The girl had a good sense of loyalty, but she was hard headed, like how she had been when she was younger.

"On three then!" Shepard started firing a warp at another Flood form. They were advancing, only around two dozen feet from them.

"Three!" Katherine yelled.

The two each let loose a different attack then ran. Each fired off respective strikes as they made a run for the edge of the pier. Tenzin slowed the bison down right at the end of the pier.

Korra looked back just as the Flood leapt towards them. She stopped and kicked a few times in the air, sending a couple of air waves towards the flood in mid air. Her attacks knocked them back out of the sky and she continued towards Tenzin.

The master Airbender stood up and from his position fired off a few blasts of air, covering the Commander and Avatar.

Shepard had no idea how to get on the sky bison's back but didn't hesitate to jump up, grabbing the bison's fur and pull herself up. She quickly got on the saddle and gunned down a few Flood forms that got too close to Korra.

"Tenzin go!" Korra yelled turning and kicking away another Flood form right on her tail.

"Oogi Yip yip!" The Airbender yelled. The bison groaned and quickly propelled itself into the air.

"Wait we can't leave her!" Shepard yelled.

Korra leapt into the air forming a tornado beneath her just as the Flood reached her. It sent the parasites flying in every direction and she used the air current to launch herself up into the air and right onto Oogi's back.

Tenzin didn't hesitate to fly the bison away just as Korra landed, avoiding the entire Flood horde right on their tails.

"That was too close!" Tenzin sighed as he gained altitude.

"No kidding!" Korra sighed looking over the side of the saddle and at the city.

"What about the city?"

"Korra, Republic City is lost!"

The Avatar watched with a hurt look as they flew out over the bay towards the nearest airship, the Normandy flying by overhead and towards the Transcendent which had pulled out further over the ocean and away from the city.

Fire and death loomed over the city. Korra turned away.

* * *

><p>Chief and Beifong walked down the steps to the basement of the police headquarters. The station was impressive and the amount of metallic barricades, along with the benders, were allowing them to hold the building but John knew it was only a matter of time till the Flood broke through and massacred everyone inside. They needed a way out and from what he had just learned from the Commander the entire city was overrun.<p>

She had offered to send the Normandy in but the Chief of Police refused saying she didn't want them getting hurt trying to save them, and that she had another way of escape. One a lot safer than trying to land the ship or trying to evacuate them from the roof.

The earth bender turned the lights on to the basement and smiled as the room lit up, full of useless crates and machinery.

"So how do we get out?" John asked glancing around the room.

Beifong ignored his question and instead answered with placing her foot on the ground and moving her arms wide apart. The earth floor in

front of her suddenly split apart, the crates above it falling into the large tunnel below.

"My mother put this here just in case we ever needed to evac from invaders. Never thought I'd actually have to use it."

"Where does it lead out to?"

"Outskirts of the city. A few miles from it actually. We should be safe from the Flood there, or at least a good enough distance from them for someone to come get us," Beifong crossed her arms and looked over at the Spartan.

"We'll need to hurry though. That Elsa girl isn't going to last long. She needs a real healer. Those water benders up there are only keeping the pain at bay. We'll need a more advanced healer."

"Then lets move," Chief said turning away and heading towards the stairs.

Beifong sighed and followed after him.

* * *

><p>AN More fighting. Don't worry the upcoming battles should be a lot more elaborate then just these few.**

Still looking to see if anyone's willing to design a cover for the story.

Thanks again! Review please and God bless you guys!

32. Part I Chapter 30 (mostly beata'd)

A/N Good music to listen to while reading the story is Audiomachines Existence album , the Halo, or ME soundtracks. However I will state later on when specific tracks can be used to set a mood for a chapter.

Thoughts in *Italics*.

* * *

><p>Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil.

Chapter 30: Day 3

* * *

><p>"Let me see my sister!" Anna yelled out, her brow furrowed as she stared up at the taller human with a death glare. She was frustrated beyond belief. Her sister was seriously injured and this guy wouldn't even let her see her.<p>

John stayed put, his golden visor staring straight ahead over the small girl. Sure she was annoying, but he just ignored her. It wasn't that hard.

Either way his mind was going back to what had happened on the planet. The Flood were getting worse. The advanced plasma weaponry from the Reclaimer War gave them a huge advantage, and their ferocity was beginning to increase, if that was even possible. Not to mention the new flood forms that had appeared.

If it wasn't proof enough, The Arbiter, Ashely Williams, Garrus, the Queen, and even Javik had all been injured in some way shape or form. The Queen however, was injured the worst out of all of them, which in some ironic way was lucky considering the fact she had barely made it.

Her injury had been worse than they had originally thought. The organic projectile had ruptured one of her kidneys, had traveled up at an angle and broken the back of her rib cage.

The biofoam he had used had barely kept held her alive.

Now she was inside the medical ward of the Transcendence. The Keeper and Shepard had both asked him to keep watch for precisely this reason. To keep Anna out of the room, and just in case any unwanted visitors showed up. They weren't about to let another Lithyia incident happen.

"Uh!" Anna growled. She put her hands on the Spartan and tried her hardest to push the Spartan out of the way.

If it hadn't been so pathetic of an attempt the Spartan would have pushed her away, but seeing as she posed no threat and couldn't even budge him, the gentle giant let her be.

The Princess growled and continued to push, trying her best to move John from the door.

Kristoff was a few feet behind behind her, watching with an amused expression. Of course he was worried about Elsa, and so was Anna. Still, the sight of the small Anna trying to push the giant soldier out of the way was laughable. Especially since he was about a foot and a half taller than her. Maybe even a bit taller than that, and had at least two hundred pounds on her.

"I'll make you move one way or another!" Anna steamed, stepping away from the Spartan. She turned away from him with a huff and walked down the hallway. This Spartan may be a warrior, but he had never dealt with her before. If it was about anything less, she wouldn't have cared as much, but it was Elsa.

It was her family, someone she loved. She was not just about to step aside and be bossed around. She had let people do that to her all of her life especially before the Freeze.

Things had gotten better though, after the Great Thaw. She and her family, which was now Elsa, Kristoff, Olaf and even Sevn, had all been happy. They had been content, though her and Elsa still fought sometimes. Then these people had ruined it all, with their Reapers and Flood. She didn't blame them, but it sure didn't make it any easier.

None the less, with her home gone, all she had left was her family.

So with Elsa injured it was no small thing in her eyes. If it had been Kristoff she would've been the same. If it had been any of them, she would've been devastated.

The girl glanced back at the Spartan, giving him a glare, before turning around the corner and leaving the area.

The Spartan looked down at Kristoff, as if telling him to go. His gold visor and pure silence was more than intimidating.

The blonde man raised his hands up.

"I'll just leave."

And with that he was gone.

The Spartan leveled his gaze, satisfied that the two were gone.

They talked too much.

* * *

><p>Shepard stepped into the Normandy's galaxy room. It was relatively empty since most of the crew had been murdered by Lithyia.<p>

Lithyia...

The name burned in her mind. The Councilor had fooled them all. She had trusted the Asari, the woman's polite and kind demeanor had been the perfect disguise. She had managed to fool all of them, and her crew had paid the price.

Now, the few people aboard were only a handful left from the original crew, most of them being the group that had been with her on the ground. They were all recovering from the battle, sleeping or doing something to help them relax though she knew Wrex was off watching R somewhere.

The two were becoming close. She found it rather funny. A Krogan watching over a young woman. It was like Wrex was being a surrogate father of sorts to the young girl. Not that Shepard minded. It was a kind thing to do, and for a Krogan that was rare.

As she stepped over to the Galaxy map, pulling up a picture of her own galaxy at the same time, Shepard couldn't help but wonder how the girl was taking everything.

She had seen the depressive looks on her face when R thought no one was looking, or when the girl thought no one would here, she let out depressed sighs, sighs warning of an immeasurable amount of mental exhaustion.

Katherine had been there before. It was what happened when things became too much. It was another reason Katherine was glad Wrex was looking out for the girl. The last thing any of them needed was the girl taking her own life. It would wash morale even further down the drain than they already were.

The redhead sighed and ran a hand through her hair.

It was painfully obvious to her how down moral was.

Peoples faces, no matter how good at hiding it, were easy for her to read. Only the Spartan was hard to read thanks to his visor. He never took that armor off.

None the less, moral was extremely low. It made sense though.

In just the past few weeks, the Flood and Reapers had launched a joint attack on the Council and her allies, even the Terminus systems. They had seen the Citadel fall, Thessia, Rannoch, Earth, the near extinction of the Geth and Quarians, then had watched the Queens planet fall in the matter of hours to the Reapers.

To top it all off the Flood had just taken a city on this new planet. From what she had heard it had been a symbolic city as well, one meant to stand for peace and prosperity.

The sight of the downed statue of the kid wielding a staff had apparently hit some of the natives hard since most seemed absolutely furious or devastated by it.

Bluntly speaking, moral was all but gone.

She knew it.

Garrus was making less and less jokes. Joker too. Ashley was quieter. The Arbiter seemed always on edge at this point. The Spartan, well she didn't know. The Queen was losing her mind half the time and Shepard herself was starting to feel alone.

She felt alone because of how hopelessly outgunned they were, because of how bad things were. Because she felt so many things were resting on her own shoulders like during the Reaper war, except this time even more was riding on her shoulders, not just one galaxy. All of Reality was depending on their success, and she saw how bad of a job they were doing.

Earth was gone and their fleets were losing the war to the Flood and Reapers. Even if she was this Alpha person, how could any of them stop the Flood and Reapers as a whole? How could they stop the Gravemind and these other beings whom they had never even seen before? It just didn't seem possible.

Katherine switched the galaxy map to show the last update from the war front.

At least a third of the galaxy was covered in red. A third of the galaxy already gone, and the rest barely holding out against the hordes of enemies attacking them.

A hand through her hair, a sigh, and she leaned forward on the railing before the Galaxy map.

She had a meeting with the natives soon. Another one. Diplomatic meetings never got anywhere, but she knew they needed to have it.

These people had just seen a city fall to the Flood. They were going

to have questions. Lots of them. Who wouldn't? Even she still did, but she knew enough to know what to do.

Shepard pulled up her omni tool and looked at the time. She had a few minutes to get ready.

Time to play diplomat.

* * *

><p>Thran stared at the screen in front of him. His mandibles flared in annoyance.<p>

"How bad?" He asked looking over towards one of his officers on the bridge.

"Fleet Master, casualties are at seventy five percent. The planet is lost." The Officer reported. Thran' growled out loud.

"Order a full retreat." Thran' stated with a wave of his hand.

"Sir."

He moved over to his chair and sat down. He placed one of his hands on his forehead, massaging it lightly.

The Elite was doing his best, but it was simply not enough. The Flood and Reapers were pushing his ships back at every turn and no matter how many ships his allies reinforced him with they weren't able to hold planets. The enemy forces were simply too much for them to handle.

He had even pleaded with his own people to send him aid. They had sent him another two dozen ships filled to the brim with soldiers. Still, his fleet was only at fifty percent strength. It was enough to hold off the thousands of weaker ships and so long as not an overbearing amount of Forerunner or Reclaimer Flood controlled ships engaged them, they could hold their own against them. Against such odds however, they still didn't stand much of a chance.

Fortunately, they hadn't been overwhelmed yet.

"Get me the human Admiral. We must coordinate our efforts to defend sector 31."

"Sir we have reports of Flood fleets arriving on the edge of Salarian space, right on our borders."

"Direct the third and fifth fleets to engage. Request assistance from the Council. Get them to aid our men. We cannot fight this battle alone."

* * *

><p>Korra sat up in her seat.<p>

She was sitting aboard one of the metal benders airships, many other refugees sitting or standing in the airship as well.

Most of them looked worse for wear, hurt, crying, afraid, or all of the above. The people were freaking out. Their home had been destroyed, overrun by monsters. Monsters that Korra herself had never seen before. They were definitely a lot worse than the dark spirits.

The Flood. She hated them already.

Parasites of demonic proportions. Monsters that scared her as well as everyone else.

She couldn't believe how fast Republic City had actually fallen. Only an afternoon, and the city fell.

The city meant to stand for peace and prosperity.

It was gone.

"Korra."

Tenzin walked up to her, his face looking more strained and tired than usual. A bandage wrapped around his upper arm. A Flood combat form had gotten a good hit on him. Fortunately he was otherwise fine. The Keeper had even checked him for infection, but he had been spared. Lucky for him she had stated.

"Hey Tenzin!" Korra sighed giving the airbender a smile and rubbing her face as if to wipe off any traces of exhaustion.

"How are you holding up?" He asked concerned.

"Fine." Korra replied a little too shortly. She really wasn't in the mood for a pep talk even if she needed it.

"Korra. I understand how you must feel."

She didn't hold back her rant. "I saved the world and stopped Amon just for these things to come and destroy everything we worked for. They did it so easily." Korra growled in frustration before letting out a deep sigh. "Seriously those things! They were!"

"Monsters." Tenzin finished for her, his face dropping and becoming darker. At least they were thinking on the same page.

"Yeah!" Korra replied. "Well at least we know they weren't lying."

"At least!" The Airbender replied rubbing his head in contemplation.

"What have the other nations said about the attack?" Korra asked. She stood up with a sigh and crossed her arms.

"Lin's sent out warnings to the rest of the nations. From what we've heard each nation is mobilizing their troops, though the Water tribes are hesitant. They believe the water will keep the parasite inland. Maybe they're right. Who knows."

"We should ask the Commander. She'll know." Korra responded. Tenzin

noded slightly before continuing.

"Speaking of that. We have a meeting soonâ€¦."

* * *

><p>Light.<p>

That was the first thing Elsa noticed as she regained consciousness.

Even through her eyelids she could see the light was on wherever she was. The brightness of it normally wouldn't have bugged her, but she wanted to sleep. She was tired.

A flash of deep pain up her side caused her to gasp and open her eyes. Her hand flew to her side, but the pain had already vanished.

"You're awake."

She turned to where the voice had come from.

It was the Keeper, her back to the Queen, and her hands pressing on a holographic display.

Elsa didn't reply right away. She examined the room around her.

It was empty of everything except for a few pieces of technology and the metal table she was laying on.

She then realized her dress was not on.

Fortunately, she was draped with what looked like a white bed sheet, covering all of her lower body and up to her neck. Other than that she knew she had nothing else on. Her ice dress was floating next to the Keeper, being held up by a solid hard light platform.

A subconscious grimace, and the blonde slowly sat up, pulling the white sheet with her to cover her body from any prying eyes.

She bit her bottom lip and eyed the Keeper warily before speaking.

"What happened?"

The Keeper didn't respond immediately, instead she pressed in a few commands on her display. She pressed a final command, the holographic display closed, and the Forerunner turned to the young Queen.

"You were injured while retreating. The others got you out before you bleed out. You almost died. The projectile pierced at an angle. It hit one of your kidneys, punctured a lung, shattered several ribs and barely missed your spine. Anymore to the right and you more than likely would have died instantly." The voice of the Forerunner sounded unimpressed. She had expected more from this 'Snow Queen'.

Elsa stared at the Forerunner, unsure of what to say for a few moments. She had almost died, yet it didn't feel like it. It felt

like she had just been asleep for a while.

Finally she found a way to reply.

"Thank you." She replied shortly, her face returning to its normal blank yet cold state.

The Keeper nodded at her before turning around, grabbing the floating ice dress and turning back to face the Queen.

"You need more protection than this. This simple dress will not keep you alive in the midst of a battle."

"When I made it I didn't know I was going to be in these battles with such.. thingsâ€¦" Elsa replied, her voice matching the Keepers criticizing tone. It hinted that she wasn't to be criticized by the Keeper, or by anyone for the matter.

The Forerunner either didn't care, or simply ignored the warning in her voice.

"It does not excuse you from being ignorant during a battle." Before Elsa could reply the Keeper held up a hand. "But I understand none the less. Before you go back down there we need to make sure you have adept protection. I was thinking weâ€¦".

"I'm not going back down there."

The Keeper looked up at her, having been distracted by her wrist device.

"Excuse me?"

"After seeing what those Flood can do, I need to stay up here and protect my sister and my people. The others can handle it without me." The Queen was sitting up fully now, her legs hanging off the side of the metallic table. Her face was blank but her voice brokered no argument. The Keeper however wasn't one to give in so easily.

"You may be a Queen but this is my ship."

"And they are my people."

"The Flood will never get aboard this ship. I will make sure of that, and you will go down with the others. They will need you."

"Why?"

"What?" The Keeper was slightly taken aback by the question.

"Why do they need me?" Elsa's voice and face were like steel, cold and firm. The Keeper didn't see, but in her eyes was fear. The Queen was afraid. She wondered how she could make any difference in all of this.

Sure she had powers, very powerful ones at that, but she was no solider. She was no fighter, no hero like the others. What did she have to offer that they didn't?

"You are an alpha, like them. They will need you just as you need them."

"An Alpha? How do I even know this is real? What if its just some big trick?" Elsa stated her head held high. She was sick of being played and if this was another trick, there would be hell to pay.

"This is no trick. If I was trying to harm you, I would've just ended you're existence while you were in a deep sleep in your bed, while my ship bombarded your planet. I did not. You are no threat to us. You are not evil either so I have no quarrel against you, but this is my ship. You may be a Queen, but my word on this ship is final. You will join the others. Its your place as an Alpha and for your people to do so." The Keepers voice rose slightly but she kept herself cool.

Elsa stared at the Keeper, her face emotionless but her mind running through everything. The Keeper had a point. The ship was hers, and Elsa needed a place for her people to stay, which was for now here. If she had to play nice to keep them safe and warm, then she would. She was playing nice a lot lately.

A sigh and then the Queen responded.

"Fine."

"Good." The Keeper nodded.

"As I was saying I could have armor desâ€|." Elsa held up a hand cutting off the Forerunner.

"I won't need it. I can take care of myself." The Queen had to put her foot down somewhere, and being treated like a child was not ok in her book. She had to play nice but that didn't mean she had to listen to everything the Keeper said.

"Fine." The Keeper responded. "At least use a shield generator." She pressed on her wrist, and pulled something from it. A small square like object. She placed it on a hard light platform, with the Queens dress, and sent it floating towards her.

The platform stopped in front of the Queen, who gave a small nod of thanks.

The Keeper didn't reply and turned away towards the door.

"The others are going to a meeting with the natives soon. Its best if you get dressed and meet them as soon as you can." And with that the Keeper left the room.

The doors slid shut leaving Elsa alone.

Despite having become closer with her sister and what few friends she had, she still found it better to be alone.

She knew how to be alone.

* * *

><p>"As of right now the other nations have begun preparing for war

but after seeing this Flood in action, I don't expect them to last much longer than Republic city did." Beifong sighed, leaning forward on the table and looking over the map on it.<p>

The meeting was being held on one of the United Republics battleships, currently enroute to the Southern water tribe. The entire fleet, plus hundreds of refugees were all heading there, the Keepers ship and the Normandy flying above with the metal benders airships.

"We don't have enough troops with us to fight off a full fledged Flood infestation." The Keeper stated from her spot next to the Chief of Police.

"If we had more time maybe we could get reinforcements." Garrus said from across the table.

"The Flood are too quick. Besides, they have a hold on this plant now. Either we order an orbital bombardment of the planet's surface, or the Flood take it over. The planets doomed either way."

"What exactly is an orbital bombardment?" Tenzin asked staring at them skeptically.

"Its when a ship fires on a planet from its orbit." Shepard replied.

"And this could clear the planet of them?" Tenzin asked still skeptical of the whole thing.

"Possibly, but it's too late and too risky at this point. The Flood will have already begun to spread. We would have had to ordered the bombardment minutes after they landed." The Keeper shook her head wearily.

"Then what can we do to stop them?" Korra asked turning from her spot at the window and looking back at the group huddled around the table.

Chief, Shepard, Elsa, Tenzin, Beifong, President Raiko, the Keeper, Garrus, the Arbiter and Herself were all present. Mako and a few others were taking watch outside. They didn't want a repeat of the black hands first attack, especially since so many refugees were on board. Anyone of them could've been working with the Black Hand.

"Nothing."

All heads turned to the Spartan. He stepped froward from his position in the back behind the others.

"The Flood will spread and we don't have enough firepower to stop them." Chief stated with crossed arms.

"What will they do to the planet?" President Raiko asked.

"What happened to Republic City, that'll happen on a global scale." Shepard answered.

"Then the planets doomed." Beifong sighed frowning. The group

exchanged looks, each one suppressing the growing desperation in them. They were almost out of options.

Korra looked at the group with wide eyes, her mouth open in disbelief at their lack of action.

"You've got to be kidding me! We can't just give up!"

"Korraâ€¦" Shepard started.

"No! You said if we beat this gravemind guy the Flood will get weaker. Well lest go find him and teach this guy a lesson!" Korra punched her hand as if to emphasize her point.

"Its not that simple." The Keeper replied.

"How is it not that simple? Thats why you guys need me isn't it?"

"We don't know where the Gravemind is." Shepard replied. "Last we know he was on Earth, our home, but he could've moved anytime."

"So then what was the point in trying to recruit me if we don't even know where he is? What was the point in finding either of us?" Korra replied nodding towards Elsa. The Queen raised an eyebrow and looked over at the Commander, curious as well.

Of course they had explained some things to Elsa. She had been told they needed her to stop these 'evil' beings. Yet they didn't know where this Gravemind was. Why exactly had they come for them even though they had no idea who they were, or even where the Gravemind was?

Katherine rubbed her head before replying, "We noticed unusual energy spikes in our universe. They alerted us to the Gravemind sending his troops out to other universes. We followed and found R first." Shepard said looking at the Queen as only she would know R, Korra and the benders never having met her. "We saved her from her world and only a few minuets later, did we get an alert of another portal being opened. The one for your world Elsa. We moved quickly and managed to get you out in time."

Shepard leaned forward on the table, looking between Korra and the Queen.

"As we told the Queen, we didn't just come for you all because we need you. We did it because we weren't about to let the Flood kill off any other universes. Not without at least trying to stop it. The way we found you two in particular, has to do with what little we know, which is that most universe's have at least one of these people within them, a few have none and others have two like our own. We tracked the energy signatures these people have and found both of you."

"So we're nothing more than tools?" Korra asked both frowning and scowling at the same time.

"No." Shepard replied forcefully. "We would've helped you either way. Its by pure luck you happened to be on the planets the Flood or Reapers attacked."

"It is more than likely however that your planets were targeted because the Gravemind and Catalyst were indeed searching for you." The Keeper informed.

"So its because of me my world's doomed?" Korra asked, seemingly to be taken aback.

"Possibly." The Keeper replied, Shepard glaring at the Forerunner but not saying anything in response. What could she say? The Flood and Reapers had attacked the two planets, in two different universes with the only Alphas in each universe on each planet. It couldn't have been coincidence.

"Either way," Shepard started before Korra could think to much about it. "The Flood would've eventually came, but at least we're here to help out now."

"But how can you help? Like you said the Flood will spread over the whole world and not to mention they're already attacking your own homes. What can we do to stop them?" Tenzin asked, Korra nodding in agreement.

"We evac the planet." Shepard stated standing up straight, a completely serious look on her face.

"Excuse me?" The Keeper asked, quickly turning to face the Commander.

"If we can evac the planet, then even if they lose the planet their people will at least live." Shepard replied.

"Commander my ship is not large enough to evacuate an entire planet." The Keeper responded.

"Yours isn't, but I know a certain fleet which has ships big enough for the job." Katherine looked at the Arbiter.

The Arbiter nodded in acknowledgment. "Our fleets could evac the planet."

"But that requires getting the fleets here, and as of now only my ship and myself have the technology capable of moving between realities. What are we supposed to do? Leave and hope the Flood don't overrun the planet while we gather enough ships to evac this planet?" The Keeper stated a hint of sarcasm in her voice.

"Exactly." Shepard stated with a firm nod. The Keeper looked taken aback by the blunt answer.

"I'll stay behind along with a few others and the Normandy. The Arbiter, yourself and whoever else, can go back home, gather enough ships to evac the planet, and fly back here."

"Commanderâ€¦"

"You've seen what the Flood and Reapers are capable of. We are not letting them kill all these people." Shepard's voice had been increasing in volume and anger. She was frustrated by the Keepers

lack of action. Especially since these kind of primitive planets couldn't defend themselves against such foes. How were they expected to beat the Flood or Reapers when the two entities had millions of troops and ships at their disposal?

"Shepard are you sure about this? We'd be stranded here for at least a few days." Garrus asked. He wanted to make sure Shepard knew what she was doing. Even the best of them could become too emotional if it came down to it.

"Yes. We're not leaving these people behind. Not when we have a chance to save them. The Flood don't have control over this planet yet. They still have a chance." Shepard explained, her voice softening slightly. She wasn't leaving this up to chance. If she could stay and help she would. Besides these people would need soldiers with experience fighting the Flood, granted they had only a month or so of experience, it was more than the natives had. It had been the same way with the Reapers, and they had beaten them. Evacuating a planet was easy compared to fighting the whole war against the Reapers. Besides, if they had these benders in their ranks back home, the front lines would have some serious back up with that.

"Well Shepard you point and I'll shoot." Garrus stated with a grin.

"Thank you Commander." Tenzin said with a grateful smile and nod.

"I'll do what I can to help." Korra stated with a small smile of her own.

The Queen was surprised by the turn of events, though she was glad Shepard was taking the right course of action. It only put her higher in Elsa's book. The blonde smiled and only gave Shepard a light nod of her own approval.

John watched the proceedings, carefully examining the situation at hand. The Keepers point was true. It was a foolish plan to leave a few people behind here while others went back to get ships just so they could try and evac a planet. The Flood would overwhelm the planet in less than a month.

He knew that.

They knew that, yet the Commander was insistent.

His job was to protect humanity at all costs and though the whole idea of alternate realities, of different universes, did intrigue him, these people were human none the less and so far they had proven to be allies over enemies. Maybe in another time they would've been enemies but for now, no. He looked back at the Commander and Avatar, also sparing a glance at the Queen. If they needed these three alive to help stop the Gravemind and this Catalyst, then someone needed to keep them alive.

His job was to protect humanity at all costs. The cost was making a huge risk, but he had to do it. The others would never listen to him. He held no position of leadership with these people, so he had to do his best.

Chief looked at the Commander and gave her a small nod as well, signaling his own approval of the course of action.

The Keeper looked back and forth between the others. She was breathing heavily, her eyes studying each of them, trying to find a way to compromise.

Finally, she sighed.

"Alright. Whats the plan commander?" She asked regaining her composure with a quick breath.

Shepard looked down at the map.

"First things first, we need to set up evac pointsâ€¦"

* * *

><p>Elsa couldn't help but feel afraid as she watched the Keepers ship leave the planet. They were on a small island in the middle of the ocean, the United Republics Fleets docked nearby. She was standing off to the side alone, a few guards of hers a few feet behind her. They had refused to leave and go with the Keeper, and reluctantly the Commander had let them stay with the Queen.<p>

She watched as the massive and graceful space cruiser engines came to life with a beautiful blue hue, then it flew up to the atmosphere and slowly out into space. It didn't take long for it to leave and Elsa knew it was only a matter of time for the ship toâ€¦ What was it called... go into a Slipspace? Whatever that was, it meant the ship would go back to the Commander's Universe, leaving the rest of them basically stranded here.

In hindsight, maybe she should've raised her objection to being stranded here with this parasite, but she was no strategist. In fact she had wanted to stay on the ship with her people, but for a compromise, the Keeper had insisted she stay with the Commander just in case the Gravemind showed up and in turn the Keeper would keep the girl R, Anna and her people with her on safe onboard. So if they all died on the planet at least one Alpha would be left, even if that one Alpha was R. So again Elsa had to reluctantly agree.

It was too late to rethink things now. The ship was gone and they were stuck here. At least Anna and the others would be safe on the ship.

Her sister hadn't taken it lightly being told to stay on board the Keepers ship. She had argued to no end with Elsa but Elsa had finally managed to get her to stop, even if stopping had meant Anna walking away, taking Kristoff with her. Hopefully the man could calm her down enough so she wasn't a nuisance to the Keeper.

Dozens, if not hundreds, of sentinels flew over the United Republic ships and the Normandy. A dozen Promethean knights were standing in a protective circle around the ship itself.

Though the Keeper had left, she had given them a little bit of back up. It gave the Queen some comfort knowing they at least had some help.

The Normandy was set down behind her, the bay door was open, and Shepard and the others were next to it talking about something. A few smaller lifeboats from the fleet were floating off shore nearby. Shepard and the others had waited till they reached an island where the Normandy could land so they could get onboard the smaller ship and the others could leave via the Republic ships. Elsa had a feeling though it was more so Shepard and the others of her team could plan, but she didn't care. It wasn't her team.

Elsa sighed and remembered that the group was being split up. She wasn't too fond of the idea, but she didn't have much of a choice. What say did she really have in all this?

Across the globe, they were going to set up four main evac points. One in a place the natives called the Fire Nation, another in the Northern Water tribe, one in the Southern Water tribe, and one in the Earth Kingdom. She had seen the maps, and they were at the farthest points away from what had been Republic city.

The Keeper, the Arbiter, R, a blonde soldier named Jacqueline, the blue lady alien called Liara, had all left. They were going back to Shepard's Universe. They had to find help for them, or else this planet was absolutely done for.

Herself, the Chief, Shepard, Garrus, another four eyed thing who called himself Javik, the floating hunk of metal Reluctant Promise, a human soldier named Ashley Williams, the walking metal thing named Legion, and then the big alien Wrex were all staying behind to help out in the evacuation.

The group staying behind had been split up itself into four smaller groups. It was herself, Tenzin, the native bald monk, and the big alien thing called Wrex. They were going to the place they called the Southern Water tribe. It was in the south pole and apparently was completely covered in ice. Her powers were perfectly suited for the environment which is why they had agreed to send her down there.

Shepard, Chief, Korra and Reluctant Promise were being sent off to the Earth kingdom to set up the evac and set up defenses at the capital. A place called Ba Sing Se.

To the Fire Nation, Legion, Garrus, One of the benders named Mako and a girl named Asami were headed off there to set up an evac point in their capital as well.

And the North, Ashley Williams, Javik and Beifong had agreed to go up and prepare the evac there.

Ships and planes of the natives' fleets were going to be sent to settlements across the globe, warning of the parasite and telling the people to flee to each evac point. It was a long shot, but they only had one chance.

Elsa watched as the Commander walked over to her, Chief, Korra, and some of the others getting aboard the Normandy.

The Queen and her group, along with the fire nation group were going to stay with the native ships and head to their respective

destinations that way, while Shepard was going to take the Northern group and her own to their respective evac points.

"So you're sure you'll be ok?" Katherine asked stopping in front of the Queen. The Queen's guards kept a wary eye on her. Apparently they still didn't trust the Commander.

"I can handle myself. Thank you for your concern." Elsa replied kindly but coldly. She continued to stand tall, her Queen persona on at all times.

"Of course. Wrex will keep in touch with Normandy. If you need anything. You let us know." Shepard stated seriously. Elsa nodded in return, catching the implied message. Just cause they were working with these people didn't mean they trusted them. It was why Shepard had at least one member of her crew on every team. She was kind, but not stupid.

The two slowly made their way to the Normandy in a comfortable silence. Elsa felt she should at least pay farewells to the others. It would be rude not to.

They arrived a few seconds later and Shepard turned to her, the Commander's back to the Normandy's loading bay.

"Take care." Shepard stated with a curt nod.

"Of course. Garrus. Korra." The Queen started. She only got halfway through the names before something caught her eye. A glint of strawberry blonde hair inside the Normandy's bay, and her heart dropped.

"Oh no!" Elsa sighed, Shepard looked at her oddly and then they heard the yelling, both turning towards the Normandy.

A Spartan, carrying a certain strawberry blonde haired princess made his way to them at the bottom of the loading bay's ramp.

"Let go of me! Darn it! Don't you do anything else but find me! Geez." Anna huffed as she crossed her arms from where the Spartan had set her down. The Spartan had caught her aboard the Normandy behind a few of the crates along with the blonde man, and a reindeer.

"You have got to be kidding me!" Shepard stated as the two women moved closer towards the two, Elsa's guards trailing behind them as well as the group of alien and human onlookers.

Garrus shook his head in annoyance.

"So this is awkward!" Kristoff laughed though a glare from Shepard shut him up. Him and Sven had been caught too, though since Anna had been the first one caught they had guiltily followed after then, knowing Elsa and the others would be furious.

"Anna what are you doing here?" Elsa asked through grit teeth. Finally the Queen was truly upset. She had wanted to keep her sister safe and yet her sister in rebellious nature, was here. On the planet with the Flood. Not on the ship with the Keeper.

"I told you I wasn't going anywhere without you."

"Who did you leave in charge of the people?"

"Olaf and Kai."

The silence was deafening.

"Anna!" Elsa warned, the temperature dropping all around them.

"Look." Shepard started raising a hand, keeping her eyes shut to handle her own annoyance with the whole situation. "Your sisters here. Deal with it later. We need to move. We only have a day or two till the Keeper gets back."

The group exchanged a solemn look.

A day. That was the time the Keeper had predicted. It wouldn't take long to convince Thran' and the others to spare a few ships to rescue the Commander and a planet full of possible soldiers. Shepard had figured the idea of a billion or so more soldiers would greatly improve the chances of the Council sending help despite the war.

The hard part, the impossible part, was getting all the people to the evac points in a day, while trying to make sure the Flood didn't overwhelm them. It was impossible.

Yet each of them on their own had done the impossible before.

Elsa creating an eternal winter, having control over nature itself, and finally coming to terms with her powers which to her had been impossible before.

Korra mastering all four elements, defeating the spirit of chaos, stopping the equalist movement, and reuniting the spirit and human worlds.

Shepard defeating the Reapers against all odds, stopping the cycles for good.

Chief defeating the Flood, the Didact and the Covenant, when he should've died years ago.

They believed they could do it. Especially if everything went according to plan.

It was only a day.

What was the worst that could happen.

* * *

><p>Dark and desolate, a place, a room, filled with the stench of death.<p>

Nothing moved.

Nothing stirred.

Spikes sticling out of the walls, harsh and with jagged edges, red

and black walls and floors. The look of decay and bodies of skeletons lined the floor, blood stains seemed to stain the floor and walls as well.

There was no light shining anywhere other than the red lights running along the walls. The lights pulsed making the room look like an emergency light was on somewhere nearby. In the middle of it was a large circular bowl, held up by what looked like golden people, though the gold was decayed and looked rotten. A planet was formed inside the bowl and it looked like a hologram of crude design.

A figure walked through the darkness, entering the room as his back cape flurried around behind him.

Another figure, a woman, red dress, one that hung off her shoulders and tied together right at the top of her chest. Her eyes seemed to be alight with fire and her hair was blacker than the darkest space. The edges of her eyes were made to look pointed with make up, emphasizing her sinister look. She followed behind the first figure, the Black Knight.

"Tell me Cinder. Have you ever heard the Ancient Greek stories of the Gods and Titans?"

He walked over to the bowl, dipping his hand inside and string liquid that was inside it, the view changing from the first planet and to that of stars.

"Yes. Why? What relevance do they have?" Cinder asked walking around the bowl in the opposite direction of the Black Knight.

"We have seen so many realities. So many worlds. Yet there are two you have not seen."

"Get to the point." Cinders voice was cold, but not Elsa cold. Where Elsa's voice was a cold of a controlled and secretive manner, Cinders had far more cruelty in her voice. One bleached in blood and treacherous deceit.

"Patience." The Black Knight responded, his glowing red eyes growing in intensity with his glare, before he then looked back at the bowl. his hand out reached behind him and pulled out a small vile, a dark red liquid in it.

"In another Universe one we have yet to touch, there was a group called the Titans. Masters of the Elements. Fire, Air, Earth, Ice. They were monsters in their world, defeated by a hero in their own world of course. None the less they could've been useful allies."

Slowly he poured the vile into the bowl. He then turned to her.

"And it is almost ready? We need it to be for our plans to succeed. We will not fail again."

Cinder took a step forwards looking into the bowl. "Never again. A few days and then Vatuu will rise again." Her grin grew wide, one of pure evil intentions.

"Good." The Black Knight sounded as if he was grinning. "But there is

also another group. They are called Gods in their Universe. Represented by cards, yet the entities themselves are real. Powerful, majestic and deadlier than almost anything they have faced before." The Black Knight pulled the vial back and crushed the glass in his hand, then letting it fall to the ground.

The liquid began to bubble inside, foaming and spurting.

"And?"

"These Gods, these Titans, are the perfect challengers. The perfect tool to do what we need to."

"Interestingâ€|"

"Of course. A few days and they will rise for our masters. These Titans, These Gods. Lets see how those Hero's stand against them."

The visual in the bowl changed, the foaming and spurting subsiding to reveal a picture.

Seven figures in it. The four in the back, A large Ice demonic looking slim creature, a mountain looking beast, a flowing river of lava, and a massive whirlwind of tornados.

The three in the front, a massive red serpent with two mouths and massive wings, a blue large beast, spiked and winged, with its teeth bared, and in the middle, a golden bird, powerful and majestic beyond comprehension.

"Beautiful." Cinder grinned.

The Black Knight laughed and stirred the liquid in the bowl again.

A picture of the five Alphas. Chief, Rapunzel, Korra, Elsa and Shepard.

It changed and suddenly it was of just the Queen. Her looks began to change.

"Long live the Queen."

* * *

><p>Thran' rubbed his forehead and flexed his jaw. He leaned back in his chair and looked up at the ceiling.<p>

Just a few moments of peace was all he needed.

He got it, then straightened his back and stood up from his chair in the bridge.

"Report." He called out to his officers.

His ship was floating above the new capital for the Galaxy, the Salarian Home world of Surkesh. It was where the Citadel Council and many of the council races home governments had fled. In fact it was the only remaining Council home world, Palavean was under siege

still, but the others had all fallen, Earth, Thessia, Rannoch and the Geths new home. All gone.

At least five hundred ships, forty of his own fleet, circled the planet at all times. It was a relatively small fleet compared to what the Flood and Reapers were sending but it was all they could afford to leave behind. The other thousands of ships were all on the front lines.

Thran' had been indeed glad to hear of the Commanders and Arbiters survival, thanks to the transmission the Arbiter had sent a few days before, but wondered what they were doing. Both had said it was of the highest importance and time was short. Whatever it was, for the leader of the Elites to leave a battle for his home, it must've been important. The galactic leaders had thought the same, but only only Thran' and the human admiral had been informed on the part of the Commanders plan.

They wanted to use the weapons of old, the Halos. He had sent out scouting parties to search for the weapons in the locations stated by the Arbiter. They needed to find them and hold out as long as they could.

So for now they were fighting this war. Every race in the galaxy together, standing against the odds.

Despite the reinforcements from his own people, the Arbiter's word had apparently carried a great deal of weight and at least two hundred extra ships had been sent to him not too long ago; just after the fall of one of the Turian planets only hours ago, they were still out gunned.

His Super Carrier was the flag ship of the allied fleet, being the largest and most powerful of all of them. Even then it wasn't invincible.

They could only hold for so long.

"Sir." An officer called back to him. "The Omega station is reporting breaks in the front line, and the infection is breaking out of the quarantined areas. Evac is only fifty percent complete, but the Flood have reinforcements arriving almost every hour. Our fleets can't hold the line. Seventy eight percent of all ships are already damaged or destroyed over the station."

"Tell them to hold the line. Send in the fourth fleet, and contact the Batarians. Lets find out out how many ships they can spare right now."

* * *

><p>AN Not much action. Now the whole Keeper getting ships thing is going to get interesting to say the least. Just wait till the next chapter.**

I have to state that Plot Induced Stupidity, will happen in this story. Of course ill try to make it reasonable but yeah.

For the person who said something about physicsâ€|

****In the cut scene for halo three the Covenant ship used to infect Voi, landed in a matter of seconds. Like that one, the one here was rocketing towards the plant at full speed. Though I didn't state it it did cause a lot of damage, like how it tore off City Halls roof.****

****Also in Halo Legends and Halo 4 trailer, The Infinity and Forerunner ships are shown destroying smaller Covenant/Flood ships almost instantaneously.****

****Physics may not agree with it, but im following game physics rather than actual physics. If that makes sense. Though I do understand your point that things move a bit too fast.****

****Poll is still up.****

****Two last things, I will be rewriting the earlier chapters seeing as they lack the quality of the last few, but not to much plot change. Though for a better read you may want to check it out. Ill let you know when I reupload anything. Next thing, I created a forum if anyone wants to ask questions or discuss anything over the story.****

****Anyway thanks for reading! Please Review! God bless you all!****

33. Part I Chapter 31 (Beta'd)

****A/N The legend of Korra soundtrack Being patient/Beifongs sacrifice as well as the end of Firebending training, and Wheels, work perfectly to set the mod for this chatter if you are interested. Anyway!****

****Heres the new chapter!****

*** * ***

<p>Part I

****The Voice and Face of All Evil****

****Chapter 31: Day 4****

*** * ***

<p>A sword, glowing a bright neon orange, swung straight for his visor. It missed by centimeters, the Spartan's instantaneous reflexes being the only thing that saved him from certain death.

John stepped back again, being sure to put space between him and the Promethean Knight attacking him.

He fired with his assault rifle, the bullets slamming into the shields of the knight.

The knight growled in anger and charged him despite the barrage of bullets hitting it. It fired its own weapon in retaliation.

_Hard light rounds flew by harmlessly or hit the Spartan's shields.

The sudden lunge of the knight caught John off guard. The knight hit him full force and sent the Spartan tumbling down to the ground, his rifle flying out of hand._

The knight roared and ignited its hard light sword, then brought it down at the Spartan.

Master Chief managed to moved his head to side just as the sword was coming at him. It missed him by centimeters and sunk into the metal floor below. The brief setback was used to the Spartan's advantage.

He grabbed the Knights arm and pulled it down towards him, using his legs then to kick it hard in the chest and send it flying backwards.

With a spin he got to his feet drawing his combat knife, and preparing to throw up a hard light shield when the time came.

The knight had already gained its balance back and used a speed blitz to get in front of the Spartan.

John ducked underneath its arm as it swung at him, then thrusting his knife right towards its chest. Its other arm had almost anticipated the move and countered his blow by bashing his arm away.

Chief grunted as the knight kicked him back forcing him to stumble backwards.

The Promethean lunged at him again, drawing a second hard light sword and slashing with speed almost too fast for the Spartan to predict.

Still, the supersoldier managed to keep up and dodged each blow, even knocking away a few that he couldn't dodge. A few swipes at with his blade, but each one was blocked or hit the knights shields.

Neither could damage the other.

John had faced other knights before. Dozens of them, but this was a new subtype. A new class the Didact had called an Assassin. Unlike the other knights, this one was built to be fast, deadly, and kill anything it fought one on one. The Spartan had seen its type kill the two Spartan fours that accompanied him inside the Didact's base.

Captain Lasky and Sarah Palmer were outside the Forerunner base, hopefully keeping the Didact distracted with an armada of UNSC, Elite and New Covenant ships and troops. They had to keep him distracted so he and the Arbiter could destroy this base and keep the Didact from completing his new weapon. A new Halo. One strong enough to Annihilate all life in the known Universe. One he was making to give birth to a new universe.

A swift blow to the chest and the Spartan stumbled back almost losing his balance as the Knight again tried to slash him with it swords.

Chief managed to sidestep the blows and again drove his knife into the knights shields.

It bounced off harmlessly and he was bashed away by the knight, his own shields collapsing from the force.

Suddenly the scene twisted, the colors lured and everything became surreal.

He was standing in a chamber, The Arbiter next to him with his energy swords drawn.

"And what can you do human?" A voice asked.

The Didact stepped forward out of the darkness. His armor glowed and he wielded a sword of his own as well as a light rifle in his other hand.

"What power do you have human? To stop me. You are nothing. Fleeting, cowardly, weak. Nothing more than a nuisance."

He stepped towards the Spartan and the glow of his armor changed to a blue color. One of a UNSC AI.

Two voices began to speak. One a woman's, the others the Didact's.

"I have learned that the greatest threat to life. Is humanity.."

"I have defied Gods and Demonsâ€¦|"

"You are hopeless. None can stop what is coming."

"You know why I picked you? You had something the others didn't. Luck."

"The Reclamation will begin human, and you, are hopeless to stop it."

"Don't make a girl a promise, you know you can't keep."

Fire.

Ice.

A blue vortex.

It filled his vision, and for one of the only times in his life, John was afraidâ€¦"

â€¦"The Spartan opened his eyes, the bright light of the sun shining in through the window and greeting him with a new day.

He wasn't laying down. He was sitting. Away from the bed and on a stone chair. One bed couldn't hold his armors weight, and two laying down in an unknown city, where he would be vulnerable, were not the best options in his mind. So instead he sat and slept, his light rifle next to him and his shields up.

The sun light was barely visible, only shining through the small crack in the curtains, but at the perfect angle to hit his visor.

Chief stared through the crack of the curtains at the sun, debating what to do next.

The groups had all reached their respective destinations and after a introduction to the city of Ba Sing Se, which reminded him of New Mombassa with all its streets, people and trash; Shepard, himself and the girl named Korra had all ended up staying in a hotel near the Earth Queen's Palace.

The decoration of the place was nice, the people were friendly enough despite a few giving him odd looks, the overall green themed city was absolutely massive, and the military was preparing for the inevitable arrival of the Flood.

However, it was not all good news. The military leaders and apparently even the Queen all doubted the reports flittering in from the remnants of Republic cities forces. They didn't believe them about the Floods true ferocity and the threat they posed. Apparently human ignorance transcended realities.

John made up his mind and stood up, a brief stretch of his arms and legs helping to wake his body up completely. He walked over towards the window, his footsteps loud and vibrant thanks to the natural echoing of the stone room.

His room was large, brightly lit with several lights, several banners hanging on the walls which were draped in colorful designs, a bed in the center, a personal restroom off to the side, and a office table to the side with a pitcher of water and a few glasses on it.

The curtains were pushed aside and the sun bathed the room in a new light.

He stared out and down to the street with crossed arms, studying the layout for the inevitable battle to come to Ba Sing Se. It would be a massacre. He hoped the Keeper returned before it reached that. The city would fall. It was too condensed, too close quarters for them to effectively fight the Flood.

They had the advantage of the city's massive walls, but he didn't expect that to last long against thousands of Flood forms rushing the city.

None the less, they had a job to do.

Today they had to convince the Queen of the Earth Kingdom to evacuate her entire kingdom due to the Flood threat. He wondered how on earth Shepard planned to convince her. If need be, he would try to help, but convincing a leader to evac an entire nation off of a single attack on a city that was not even your own? It was going to be difficult to win her over.

There was a knock on the door and the Spartan already knew who it was.

"Come in," He called out as shortly as possible.

The door opened and Shepard walked in. She looked ready to go, her face hard, but her overall demeanor seeming to be friendly enough.

"How'd you rest?" Shepard asked walking up to him and standing beside him as the two stared out over the city.

"Fine."

Katherine nodded in response and kept quiet a few moments before continuing.

"Korra and Promise will meet us in the lobby in ten minutes, then we're heading out to the palace. We have a meeting set with the Queen," Shepard stated.

"Any ideas how to convince the Queen?" Chief asked turning away from the window and making his way over to his light rifle. He grabbed it, then swung it over his shoulder and onto his back's magnetic clamps.

"Honestly I'm hoping some video footage and Korra's word will be enough to convince her. I don't have any idea yet how much she'll believe. Once I do I can make a better assessment and go from there," Shepard replied.

The Spartan didn't reply and made his way to the door where he waited politely for Shepard.

Together the two exited the room, John closing it behind him, not caring if it was locked since nothing of value was inside it. Two earth benders, guards stationed at his room, stood off to the side of the hall and nodded at the Commander and him, whom both in turn nodded back.

They walked together, silent and calm, to the end of the hall with the two earth benders following behind them. They reached the stairs and took to them, moving swiftly down and to the lobby on the first floor.

They stepped off the stairs and walked into the lobby.

It was large and open, the green colored banners of the earth kingdom decorating it lightly and the plush couches, tables, the plants, statues, and all sorts of decorations, showed off the Earth kingdom's prosperity and wealth. John figured it was a tactic meant to impress him, Shepard and Korra. They were technically foreign ambassadors, and the Earth Kingdom was understandably trying to show off.

The two were greeted by Korra and a few more guards who were gathered towards the entrance a few feet from the doors of the hotel's entrance.

"Where's Promise?" Shepard asked looking around for the monitor meant to accompany them.

Korra pointed behind her with an annoyed look.

John and Katherine looked around her to see the AI actively scanning

a part of the hotels pillars and walls, and was conversing with a guard whom looked rather annoyed.

"He talks a lot," Korra stated as the two looked on.

"He does," Shepard nodded. "Promise, let's go!" The spectre called out.

The monitor turned towards them, before scanning one last part of the pillar he was at, saying a farewell to the guard, then floating back over towards them while humming some tune none of them had ever heard before.

"Greetings Commander and Reclaimer! Pleasant day isn't it?" The AI asked coming to a stop next to Korra.

"Fine morning indeed!" Another voice called out from the doors to the hotel.

The group turned, John reflexively getting ready to grab his light rifle.

A man, light skinned, with a long and combed mustache, long nose and gaunt cheeks, slick shinny hair, tall, lean, and sporting an overall a rather creepy yet peppy look stood at the doors wearing what looked like a winter jacket, bright blue pants, and a shirt sporting various designs and colors. He walked towards them, Royal palace guards flanking both sides of him.

"Greetings. I am Sinestro, advisor to the Earth Queen and part of her war council. I was sent to escort you to the palace and give you a brief tour of it before your meeting with her majesty," He bowed with a polite smile.

"Greetings! I am Reluctant Promise of installationâ€¦!"

"Yes Yes." The man said with a wave of his hand. "You are the robot. You are Commander Shepard, you the Master Chief, and of course the famous Avatar Korra," The man said pointing to each respective name holder and giving each a smile, but gave Korra more of an unimpressed smirk.

Before anyone could respond the man turned away from them and motioned for them to follow. "Come come you all! We have a busy day ahead of us!"

Shepard and John exchanged a look, while Korra huffed in annoyance then followed. Reluctant Promise was the least hesitant and followed immediately.

Shepard shrugged and followed after Korra, John following behind her a little more reluctantly.

The Spartan was unsure of the man. He seemed polite enough but something was off about him. Something that the Spartan didn't like.

He would keep a close eye on the man.

A very close eye.

* * *

><p>Elsa stepped out onto the ice and snow. Her temporary quarters, a large home overlooking the main port city of the Southern Water tribe, sitting behind her. Her guards were standing around the building watching for any anomalies, a few standing closer to her. She knew against the Flood, from what she had seen, that they wouldn't stand a chance. Still it gave her a little more peace of mind.<p>

She glanced around with a smile, the natural cold and freezing weather of the South Pole making her feel right at home. Her smile vanished as she thought of home. All she could see, was it burning, the Reapers razing it to the ground.

A part of the United Republic Fleet was docked in the bay, while the other half had fled for the Fire Nation. The Queen wondered why the Nations were split the way they were. Only four. She wondered if the elements in their names had anything to do with it.

A gust of cold air hit her, but she was unaffected by it. She had received a few odd looks the day before people when people saw her with only her ice dress on and her hair in its normal braid. The little square on her shoulder being the only part of her outfit that was different.

Despite her initial hostility towards the Keeper, she had realized the small device would more than likely be of help rather than not, so she had put it on. She hoped she had put it on right, after all the Queen had no idea how it worked.

She took a few more steps forward and continued over to the cliffside, deciding just to stare out over the city with a small smile on her face, enjoying the brief moment of peace she had.

Her peace however, was short lived.

"Elsa!" A voice called from the temporary home behind her. The Queen sighed and closed her eyes. She was still upset with her sister, but she couldn't ignore her forever. Not again.

Slowly, the blonde turned around.

"Good morning Anna," She greeted with a small smile, though no joy was behind it.

The red head slowly walked up to her sister, a sheepish smile on her face. She wore her usual clothing, her green dress and white top that she wore right after the great freeze. However, over it she wore a thicker blue coat, provided by the Water tribe. "Still mad?"

"Lets not discuss it."

"Elsa look I'm..."

"Anna I told you to stay on the ship. Then you show up with Kristoff leaving our people alone with people we don't eventrust. What were you thinking?" Elsa asked, her eyes scolding, and her voice holding a cold yet quitter tone. She was pursing her lips and staring at her

sister hoping for a legit answer.

"I was not going to leave you alone. Elsa, like you said, we don't know these people so how can we trust them? Don't you remember what Hans did?" Anna asked her usual peppy voice disappearing and a more concerned one replacing it.

"Anna what else are we supposed to do? Our homeâ€¦ It'sâ€¦" Elsa tried to swallow the lump in her throat. "It's gone. We don't have a choice."

"Which is why I'm not letting you handle this alone," Anna replied crossing her arms. Elsa knew the look and turned away with a sigh. Her sister wouldn't back down. Besides the ship was gone and Anna was stuck here either way.

"Besides Kristoff misses the Ice. You know with the whole big metal ship and all having no ice on it, or anything fun for that matter," Anna stated with a smirk. Elsa grinned at her sisters attempt to lighten the mood.

A few moments of silence before Anna, as usual, broke it. "So what're the plans for today?"

However, it was not Elsa who responded but the person walking up to them from behind.

"Well the first piece of business is for us to meet with Chief Tonraq, father to Avatar Korra," A bald monk, wise and calm, walked up to them keeping his eyes on the far off horizon rather than meeting theirs.

He didn't keep that up for long and looked down at the two greeting each with a polite nod and, "Your Majesty. Princess."

Elsa responded in kind, "Master Tenzin," then gave a polite nod. Anna replied with a wave and a hello, her bright attitude surfacing again. The girl could only hold a serious attitude for a short amount of time.

"So where isâ€¦.?" Tenzin began trying not to show the fact he had forgotten Kristoff's name.

"Kristoff? Oh, he's getting ready, or he's still sleeping. Not that I'm judging because some sleep would really be nice," Anna replied with a lighthearted laugh.

"Well for your information I was not sleeping," The mountain man called from the house. He was just walking out, literally only moments after Tenzin himself.

"I didn't say you were!"

"Uh huh." Kristoff replied walking over to them and giving Anna a frown.

Elsa ignored the couples jabs at each other and instead focused on controlling herself, her powers. Ever since her home was lost, they had been starting to get out of hand, the constant stress was wearing down her self control and her sister intentionally putting herself in

danger was not helping the situation. Briefly the Queen considered locking Anna in an Ice prison for her own safety.

"Here comes the escort," Tenzin said pulling her attention to the cloud of dust and snow in the distance. Several men, riding what looked like metal sleighs, were riding towards them.

"What about the guards?" Elsa asked with a nod to her own guards not to far off and keeping an eye on the perimeter. She wished they had stayed on the ship.

"They can come of course. Just make sure they stay quiet. We don't need the crowds finding out anything more then what they already know," Tenzin replied as the Southern Water tribe escorts rode up to them on snowmobiles.

Elsa looked up at him with a look of confusion. She was about to ask what had they not told the people when someone interrupted.

"Master Tenzin," One of the men greeted with a polite bow. There were five in total, along with five snow mobiles, two being larger to hold the 'Foreign Ambassadors'.

"Captain Rolin," Tenzin greeted with a curt nod of his own. "I take it the South has been doing well?" Elsa's own guard approached the scene, weary of the new arrivals.

"Fine actually," The man started sparing a short glance at the Queen and her sister. "Though the news of Republic city's fall has gotten a few people nervous."

"You haven't said anything right?"

"Not officially, but people are still worrying. Tonraq said we should tell them but decided to hold off till you arrived. He wants to know what exactly what is going on and quite frankly we all do too," The Captain, a short man with a strong build and gruff look, stated. His clothing was made of wool and colored a darker shade of blue.

"Excuse me but what exactly haven't you told?" Anna asked taking a step past Elsa and closer to the Airbending master.

Tenzin sighed, "The news about the Flood we've kept from the people. The last thing they need to know is about them right now, at least so we can avoid a panic."

"Panic's going to happen," Kristoff stated with a frown. "Those things will come and these people will go nuts either way."

"Yes I know, but we're just trying to keep the panic to a minimum, even if its just for a short time," Tenzin replied calmly. He rubbed the back of his head before continuing, "Look I know you all are just trying to help but for now leave it to us to take care of our people. Though I can't thank you enough for your help either way."

"It wasn't us," Elsa stated taking a few steps towards Tenzin. "It was the Commander and her team. We barely know anything ourselves about thisâ€¦ Flood."

"Well it doesn't matter that much. We have a plan already and now we need Tonraq's help to put it into motion. The finer details we can worry about later," Tenzin said dismissing her statement.

"Alright lets move," Captain Rolin had taken Tenzin's dismal as the end of the conversation. "Three in each," He motioned at the snow mobiles meant to haul the group to wherever Tonraq was at.

"Wait wheres that big lizard guy?" Anna asked looking around.

"Ah yes. Wrex isn't it?" Tenzin mumbled looking at the house too. None of them had seen Wrex since the dinner the night before. Either way his company was not missed. He wasn't talkative or friendly to any of them. They weren't his friends, barley even his allies.

"I'm coming."

The group watched as the Krogan stepped out from the shadows at the side of the house, much to their and Elsa's guards surprise. No one had noticed him standing there the whole time.

The Krogan, sporting a frown and carrying his shotgun, made his way to them, staring down one of the water benders that looked at him oddly. The water bender turned away from the Krogan, more terrified of the way he looked than anything else.

Wrex moved past Tenzin and climbed into the back of the first snowmobile, grunting as he sat.

"Well we don't have all day."

The others hastily agreed and each moved to sit in one of the snowmobiles. Most were hesitant to sit with him, but it ended up being him, Tenzin and Kristoff, while the two girls sat in the other snowmobile, only one of Elsa's guard being able to accompany them. Apparently the guards and the blonde man were hesitant of leaving either of the girls with him. Wrex smirked, knowing he wouldn't have done anything to them, but finding it funny how the man was scared of him.

A sputter of the engines, and the snowmobiles were off, heading for Tonraq's location.

Wrex wasn't lost on the looks the others gave him. The only one who seemed not to care was the smaller of the two girls in their group.

It didn't bother him. He wasn't here to make friends, or impress anyone. He was here to observe. To make sure everything happened like it should, and to keep an eye on the Queen. Shepard didn't trust any of them yet, hence why she had split up her team and sent people she trusted with each group. They were to keep an eye on things and make sure everything went according to plan.

Wrex didn't see any problem so far with the Queen or the monk. They seemed alright, but he would keep his guard up. People had betrayed them before.

He ignored the small talk the monk tried to make with the two, and instead stared out over the horizon wishing to be back home.

The Krogan wasn't too sentimental about anything, but he hated leaving his galaxy behind. There was a fight back home, one he wanted to be apart of, to be there fighting, his krogan blood boiling with adrenaline as he tore through the enemy. Alas, he knew Shepard was right. She had not led them astray before, and he had faith that she wouldn't now. So for now, the battle could wait.

Elsa on the other hand was more nervous. She kept up the small talk between her sister and Captain Fredrick, the member of her guard that had come with them, but her mind was elsewhere. A small pool of nervous anticipation had formed in her gut, and despite the plan of the Commander and all the things working for or against them, she felt worried about something else.

The Queen didn't know why but she knew something was going to happen.

Something terrible.

* * *

><p>The Keeper and Arbiter stood side by side, riding up in one of the elevators. They were in one of the largest buildings on Sur'Kesh, a building called the Trade Commerce Building. A building that had been transformed into the new headquarters of the combined Galactic alliance.<p>

When they had first arrived, the humans and several other races had been angry, wondering what the Keeper and Elite had done with the Commander, fortunately the N7 Jacqueline had been with them and had diffused the situation, explaining everything to Admiral Hackett, Thran and the other military leaders of each race.

The other leaders had been puzzled to hear of the new dimensions theory, and where Shepard's whereabouts were, but with a confirmed transmission from Shepard explaining things in her own voice and over hologram, they accepted what was said but only to an extent.

She could tell many were still rather hesitant to believe Shepard's story, but the promise of a few billion new and fresh troops had kept their minds open. The Keeper noticed how Admiral Hackett failed to mention the plan with the Halo arrays. Apparently Shepard was playing it close to the chest. A smart move considering how influential the Gravemind was. He had taken over a Council member and a person of her crew, so playing it close to the chest was a smart move on Shepard's part.

However, things weren't that simple.

Despite the military leaders agreeing to the plan, or at least their initial support of the plan, they still had to go through the Citadel Council. Meaning the Keeper and the Arbiter now had to meet with the Council itself.

The elevator came to a halt and the doors smoothly slide open, revealing the large chamber before them. The two exchanged a look before stepping inside the chamber.

Dozens of guards and soldiers were posted all around the large

chamber, ready for anything. Within the past month, so many councilors had died, on the Citadel and on Earth. They weren't about to let that happen again so the security was upped.

Forerunner and Elite both made their way down the isle from which they entered, and passed the hundred or so seats making up what would be the seats for an audience.

The military leaders of each race sat next to their respective Council member, creating a large enough audience at the circular table. The odd one out was Thran, standing off to the side of the table with his hands clasped behind his back. He was there to represent the Elites, or the New Covenant.

It took a minute but the two made it to the table, each taking a proud stance before the Citadel Council.

The first to stand was the new Geth councilor, Providence, whom had been put forward as a representative of the remaining Geth population.

"Greetings Arbiter of the newly formed Covenant armada, and greetings to the one known as the Keeper of old," The Geth said with what would be considered a friendly voice.

"How do you know of me?" The Keeper asked slightly interested as to how the Geth knew who she was. As far as she knew, only the military leaders, Shepard, her crew, and the Arbiter knew who she was.

"We shared what information was deemed necessary when we briefed the Council," Admiral Hackett informed from his seat next to the human Councilor.

"It was not your.â€|," The Keeper started with a frown before being interrupted by the Elite next to her.

"Greetings Councilors," The Sangheili took a step forward and gave a curt nod to the Geth whom had greeted them, "I am the Arbiter. Leader of the Elites. You know Fleet Master Thran' Fredum. He is a great general of our people, and a fine warrior. He has told me of the bravery your people have fought with against the Flood."

He was trying to appeal to the Council, trying to win them over with flattery and chivalry.

One of the Councilors, the Salarian one, slowly stood up, taking the floor to speak, "I appreciate the pleasantries but we must get down to business. The parasite, this Flood, are at our doorsteps, and we have little time to concern ourselves with this 'rescue mission'. Tell us what has happened and what needs to be done, and we shall see from there what is to be done."

The Arbiter nodded calmly in response and continued before the Keeper could, "Commander Shepard and her crew are trapped on a planet within another reality. I have asked Admiral Hackett to upload the files to your separate tools."

The councilors nodded in response, two even pulling up the info the Admiral had sent them on their personal omni tools.

"Another reality you say?" the new Asari Councilor asked with a raised eyebrow. After the betrayal of Lithyia, Shepard's report to Hackett confirming it, the Asari had been forced to choose a new Councilor. It had been quick and precise, and Hackett hoped they had chosen right.

Taking her cue, the Keeper spoke up, "I understand your confusion Councilors, but the evidence is overwhelming. When there is time we will properly explain it but for now Shepard's life is on the line and debating about what is real can wait."

The Councilors shared a few mumbled words before looking back at the Forerunner and Elite.

"What is it you need?" The Turian Councilor asked scratching his scaled chin.

"Ships," The Keeper replied taking a step forward, "The planet we have found is rather unadvanced. They have barely begun to use electricity and with the Flood present on the planet there is no chance for them."

"And why do you need ships?"

"Commander Shepard wants to evacuate the planet."

"Blasphemy!"

"Is she mad!?" another Councilor added.

"We do not have the resources or the means to do this. This planet is not aligned with us and should not be our concern," The Salarian stated with a frown.

"Admiral Hackett you cannot actually agree with this 'Forerunners' idea?" Jeffery, the human Councilor added.

"I do," The Admiral stated standing up. "Shepard herself has already contacted me, and if what the Arbiter and Keeper say here is true then Shepard is asking for us to help evacuate a defenseless planet."

"Admiral we simply do not have the resources to undergo such an operation."

"I have enough ships to spare but not enough to evacuate a planet," Thran interrupted.

"There are your ships," the Admiral stated in response. The Councilor frowned and sat back with a sigh.

"Look it is not that we don't want to help but simply, we lack the resources too,. Our ships are fighting this war against numbers we cannot overcome. The only ships not currently engaged are those refueling and rearming within Asari and Salarian space as well as the ones currently over this planet." The Asari councilor interrupted.

"There are overall two billion people on that planet, more maybe," The Keeper started, "Thats at least one billion fresh troops for your

front lines here and not to mention these people have some rather special abilities," The Keeper and Shepard had both hoped to use the bargaining of more troops as a last resort persuasion tool but the Forerunner knew it was the only way to convince the Council. They need an incentive to help those they didn't know.

The Arbiter disapproved of the Council, though he had from the first time he met them. Now he felt justified especially since they were acting so cowardly and selfish. Though he supposed he would've questioned it too if the situations were reversed.

He remembered how quickly they had agreed with Shepard's idea when she wanted to save the last reclamer. How quickly they turned on her when the facts weren't as believable. Then again, it was talk of alternate realities and universes. He wasn't sure he would believe it if he hadn't been with Shepard and seen these new universes himself.

"A billion more troops you say?" The Turian Councilor asked leaning forward.

"And what of these special abilities?" The Quarian Councilor, Captain Quartin asked. He had been quiet throughout the meeting, deciding to watch and wait. He had met Shepard once but he trusted her. She had risked herself for his fleet and he was not about to throw her under the bus so easily.

The Keeper tapped on her wrist device and pulled a hologram. It was of Korra.

"Watchâ€¦!"

* * *

><p>Elite Captain Rolus'Varkem roared as he fired his MPR rifle.<p>

The upgraded Magnetic Plasma Rifle was based on the plasma rifle of old. The Elite's had abandoned the older models design and made it look more like a human rifle now rather than a small sub machine gun. The gun still had its blue/purple coloring, but it was less curved and more streamlined and blocky than before. Its shots were deadlier than before as well, the plasma using increased heat and magnetized shots to increase firepower and incinerate rather than just burn, and the higher power output allowed the shots to travel faster and hit harder. Overall it was a far deadlier weapon.

"Incoming fire!" One of his Elite commandos yelled.

The Captain ducked behind the pile of rubble, hearing the mass effect rounds and a few plasma shots hit the rubble. Small pieces broke off and fell on top of him.

It didn't deter him.

They were to hold this street on Palivan till the Turians sent reinforcements.

"Varka take to the right, use the downed transport to your advantage. Use your carbine rifle to knock out those with plasma weaponry.

Arcus, take your Necro Cannon and hit them from above. Use the building behind us. Wait for my order."

The two elites nodded and activated their active camouflage, using it to get to their vantage points without trouble.

Their current position had them backed up against a knocked over building, the result of a Turian bombing, and they were using it to cover their backs while the Flood and Reapers tried to overwhelm them from the front.

"The rest of you, form up defensive positions. Draw the enemy in. Close enough for Arcus's cannon to eradicate them."

The others roared in response, four in all left including him, and the group split.

Rolus stood up and sprinted over to his right, sliding behind a burnt out gunship, then standing up and firing with his rifle. The downed troop transport was not far from him, only a couple dozen feet from his position but Varka was holding from firing till he gave the order. He wanted the two heavy weapons to fire together.

The other three elites down on the ground with him opened fire as well.

Blazing blue and green plasma soared through the air, slamming into the chests of several marauders, their shields failing instantly and the plasma slicing through their armor. It was easy, like a hot knife cutting through butter. The shields and barriers did nothing to protect the Reaper forces from the advanced plasma weaponry.

Another shot killed them off if they hadn't died from the first.

Flood forms and other Marauders returned fire with their own weapons, a rocket from an old UNSC launcher flying towards Rolus.

The Sangheili ducked and the rocket soared harmlessly over him, hitting the side of the downed building behind him.

He returned fire, his weapon ripping through several Flood forms before being forced into cover by the combined enemy fire.

He could hear the husks screeching and charging for their position, even the sound of brutes and lower Flood pure forms accompanying the husks.

"Arcus, Varka, now!" He yelled over the com.

He didn't need to hear them acknowledge his command, already knowing they were ready. He only heard the fire of each of their weapons as a response.

The green fuel rods of the Necro Canon decimated the enemy ranks, the radioactive rods incinerating the brutes that charged at Rolus and his ground troops. It was a newer cannon designed to knock out the heaviest tank as well as able to provide minor ground to air resistance if need be. It looked partly like the Fuel Rod of old, except it was more square designed and had a black color to

it.

Those that survived saw their armor melt under the heat, the concussive force knocking them to the ground as more fuel rods slammed into them or the street around them. The husks wailed as the they too were destroyed, their skin turning to ash or being blown to bits.

Stream lined heavy carbine rounds sizzled and cut straight through the lower Flood pure forms, cutting them in half without effort, and setting any that survived ablaze, red and blue fire engulfing them. The shots were concentrated towards the back where more of the Flood troops wielding plasma weapons were at while the fuel rods hammered the forward ranks.

Rolus grinned to himself. He knew what damage the Upgraded Fuel Rod gun and the New carbine could do to organic life forms.

The Elite captain joined the fight, and opened fire with his own weapon.

Together the special ops team tore the enemy ranks apart, advanced plasma weaponry along with deadly skill saw the end of the enemy ranks before them.

Smoke and charred flesh was all that remained of both the Flood and Reaper forces once the shooting stopped. The hiss of new clips being reloaded into their respective guns could be heard through the dead silence.

"Captain it seems the enemy has withheld their troops," One of the Elite's commented over the comm channel.

"Sir we have movement. One tango coming for us. Different than the rest."

Rolus looked up and squinted. In the distance a figure was walking towards them, no other troops for support. No Flood or Reaper forces coming for them.

The figure had a black armor about it, an old, torn cape swirling behind it.

Rolus growled subconsciously.

Something about this unknown made his gut flip.

He checked his ammo count.

"Ready your weapons."

* * *

><p>Korra yawned, not even bothering to hide it and stretching her arms to the night sky.<p>

"Was it just me or was that meeting extremely boring?" The Avatar asked looking over at the Commander next to her.

The two were currently walking around the small trading center not to

far from their quarters. After the meeting with the Earth Queen they had time to kill, and with no training, fighting, or anything else to do, Shepard decide to walk around and study the area. She would contact the others in two hours, in the privacy of her quarters. The streets were cluttered with trash and people, the occasional honking of a car could be heard, but they weren't to bothered by it.

Shepard was intrigued to see how life worked here. The foods, the clothing, the customs were all different from her Earth, and though her armor and guns were out of order most people seemed to ignore her. They didn't seem to care about her for the most part, though a few gave her nervous glances when they looked at her.

She figured one of the reasons no one had approached her were the earth bender soldiers tasked to protect her and Korra. Not that either needed it, but it was custom.

Korra however was being treated like a celebrity. People were going up to her, wanting to get an autograph, shake her hand, talk to her, or just see her. Shepard had barely been told anything about it, but she figured being this Avatar was a big deal.

Either way Katherine kept an eye on the surrounding shops, careful to keep a watch on the shadows. Still she responded to Korra's earlier question, "Normally I'd agree, but seeing as the fact the Queen is hesitant to listenâ€|"

"You mean the fact she didn't even bother to hear us out?"

"Yes. You can't blame her. Its hard for anyone to believe these things. Especially if they haven't seen it."

Korra scoffed, "Heck I've seen it and I'm even having a hard time believing... Still she seemed pretty impressed by that thing on your arm. Whats it called again?" The native water bender leaned closer towards the commanders arm wanting to see the omni tool again.

"Its called an Omnitool." Shepard raised her arm and activated it. The orange glow and hologram of herself came to life. She had reprogrammed it while in the Normandy so she could activate a sort of trial and display function for any of the natives who asked. It had come in handy with the Queen too, but the Queen still didn't believe in the severity of the Flood threat.

"An Omnitool? That's quite a name." Korra smirked intrigued by the hologram. Several people watched the two and a few even stopped to watch the exchange.

Before they drew more attention Shepard shut off the Omni tool. A small group had gathered around the two, children staring at Shepard with awe filled eyes.

"Excuse meâ€| but who are you?" A little boy asked tugging on Katherine's hand. The Spectre looked down at him with a smile, prepared to answer when someone else spoke up, "I'm so sorry," A woman holding the boys shoulders stated looking at Shepard with nervous eyes.

"No worries."

Shepard got into a crouch where she was eye level with the boy. "I'm a soldier. My name's Commander Shepard. What's yours?"

"Bainko"

"Well it's nice to meet you Bainko."

"What's that on your arm?" The little boy asked not nervous in any way, just staring at her arm with pure curiosity and innocence.

Shepard shook her head with a smile. Many others were watching her, a few conversing with Korra, but most eyes were on her. She didn't have the heart to say no to a harmless child, so she reopened the Omnitool, risking to draw more attention to herself and Korra.

"Whoa!" The boy's eyes went wide and his mouth fell open at the sight of the hologram. He reached for it, only glancing at Shepard for a second where she told him to go ahead. The boy ran his hand through the hologram of her, the image then changing to one of Korra firebending.

His eyes went even wider at that.

"You're really cool miss!" The little boy stated giving Shepard a smile and showing he was missing both front teeth.

Shepard returned the smile and the Mom finally took her boy away, most of the people smiling at the little interaction between the two.

However, the mood was short lived.

"What is that?"

"It's huge!"

"Looks mean."

Korra and Shepard both turned around, the commander having gotten to her feet when the muttering started.

The crowd split like the red sea and through it walked the green armored Spartan, quiet and menacing to unfamiliar eyes. Behind him was Reluctant Promise and an escort of a four earth bender soldiers, two for each.

John stopped in front of the two and crossed his arms.

"Commander."

"Commander Shepard! You will not believe the things we have seen! This place is fantastic! The art and culture are much more pristine and colorful than the humans in our home galaxy," The monitor continued excitedly floating up and down.

Shepard shook her head in amusement, "So where have you two been? You split off when we left the palace."

"Maintenance," John stated simply flexing his hand. A maintenance check he had down, but the real reason he had left them was to talk to Sinestro, the man who had secreted them. He wanted to know the man better, wanted to figure out if he was a threat. The Spartan had simply distracted the monitor and told it to go back to the hotel to scan the pillar it had been. Promise hadn't argued, and John had met him there after his short talk. He needed to know all the variables to know what they were getting into. Especially with threats like the Black Knight out there, there was no thing such as too cautious.

"And you?" Shepard asked looking at the monitor.

"Why studying and scanning! Is that not what you have been doing?"

"He's not wrong.," Korra smiled with a shrug. Shepard shrugged in return and looked around to the shops.

One caught her eye.

"Whats there?" She asked one of the guards pointing to a smaller shop that looked more like a hole in the wall than anything else.

"It says Jenna's Priceless Items." The guard replied looking at the sign.

Katherine nodded in response.

"Anyone else?" She asked looking at the others. Chief just stared blankly.

"Of course!" The monitor exclaimed.

"Why not." Korra shrugged and started towards the store. Shepard and the monitor followed while Chief stayed outside to make sure no one followed them in.

The entrance was covered by curtains and beads. The walls around it looked older than the other buildings, and a few flower beds sat round the entrance as well giving it a sweet smell.

She pushed past the curtains, curious to see what was inside.

It was darker inside, the eerie light of candle being the only thing to illuminate the place. Plants of various shapes and sizes sat around, while shelves of old and ancient items seemed to be set around the place without any sort of symmetry or order. A few people were inside most looking through the items on the shelves with wonder.

"Avatar this place is crowded. I suggest we move to a larger store where there is more cover," One of the guards stated looking at Korra.

"Oh we'll be fine just wait outside for us. Im pretty sure we can handle a few plants," Korra stated with a roll of her eyes.

The few guards nodded and hesitantly went outside.

"I swear its like they think were kids," Korra muttered.

Shepard didn't bother to respond, knowing that Korra was only eighteen years old.

The three moved further into the store, each going their own way and beginning to explore the dark and gloomy shop.

Katherine moved past the shelves, her mind not really focusing on all the stuff but more about the war at home. She would rather be there fighting than here, but she needed to help these people as well. At least it was only a day. Tomorrow the Keeper would return and they could begin evacing the planet.

Shepard sighed, knowing they would have to try tomorrow to convince the Earth Queen again to evac her people.

She briefly looked at one of the shelves, picking up an object that looked rather strange. It was made of metal and tweeked at odd angles, a few pieces of the ends looking like they were once forks and spoons. She eyed it oddly wondering who would buy such a thing.

The Commander placed it back and picked up something else.

This item was different, and Shepard felt colder immediately.

It was small. A solid ball of glass, dark inside it and looking more like a black hole inside than anything else. She stared into it wondering what it was supposed to be. She shrugged and tried to let it go, when she found her hand wouldn't open.

Before the Commander could say anything it all went darkâ€”

â€”_Shepard was still. Her mouth a gape. Her shoulder shuddered and the great commander felt fear._

It was Earth. It was Palivan. It was Sur'Kesh. All of it. Burning. All of its cities, plants everything destroyed.

Ships crashed into the cities and dead bodies littering the entire floor. Blood creating rivers and Flood roaming the area with a sense of triumph.

A single figure was crawling on the ground towards her, but not.

A green armored Spartan. She looked on and saw his face through the cracked and broken visor, blood flowing from the wounds on his body.

His rifle was only a foot from him. He pulled himself with grit teeth and pure determination towards the rifle.

Shepard gasped. Fire and ice both engulfed him, and she swore she heard a scream.

She saw two figures walking towards her, but again the vision changed.

Now she was on a battlefield.

She fell to her knees. Her friends. Every last one was dead, blood flowing from their lifeless forms, icicles, bullet holes, charred bodies, or gashes from a bladed weapon littering the corpses.

Jacqueline was beheaded and charred to where she was almost unrecognizable.

The Keeper laid in her own pool of blood, her body slashed open from a large weapon.

The Arbiter dead on his back with several icicles stuck in him and ice having frozen him in place.

Garrus was in a sitting position, several large bullet holes in his gut, showing his intestines and leaking what little was left of his blood.

Wrex was literally in pieces, scattered around a five foot radius, his shotgun laying by his hand.

R was impaled and lifeless against building, held there by large shards of ice and earth, the shard having cut straight through her.

The rest she couldn't even recognize well enough to place who was who. Something just told her it was all of them, and that they each suffered a similar fate.

"No please..." A voice whispered and Shepard spun around to where she heard it.

Anna.

She was crawling. Blood staining the lower part of her dress and where she had obviously been shot in the stomach. Several gashes in her arms and legs, her dress torn and dirty.

She was crying and crawling towards a slab of rock ripped up from the ground.

Suddenly Shepard was in front of her unable to move as the girl made it to the slab and leaned against it.

The thud of feet and Shepard saw whom she was running from.

Korra.

Her eyes, the irises were red. Her clothing was its normal self except it was colored black and grey. Her hair was down and she grinned cruelly at the small girl, fire forming in her open hand. Where she had come from Shepard didn't know.

Another landing and it was someone Shepard didn't know.

_A small girl wielding what looked like a scythe, and was wearing a

red hood over her head. The blade was bloodied with multiple blood colors and the Commander knew whom had been the one to leave gashes and beheaded bodes everywhere._

A final landing.

Shepard grit her teeth and tried to punch the next person in the face.

"Please don'tâ€¦ Im your sisterâ€¦" The strawberry blonde haired girl cried, her eyes wide with fear and pain.

Elsa grinned cruelly. Her own irises red and lifeless. Her dress was death black and mixed with red. However those weren't the only differences. Her shoulders were more angled, spikes ran down her back, the flowing back part of it looking torn and wild. Her face was purely pale, her lips purple with lipstick and her smile was one of insanity.

Shepard could see wings, made of what looked like shadows, were floating behind each of them. She would never be able to describe it.

_"As if I ever caredâ€¦" _

_Shepard grimaced as Elsa moved closer to her sis_t_er._

Behind her the other two grinned and behind them, the Black Knight and a woman Shepard did not know, made their way towards them.

An icicle formed in Elsa's hand and she placed right above at Anna's heart.

"Lets see you stop this this time with your act of true love," And then plunged the ice into her chest. The cracking of bone, and the cries of pain filled the dead air.

"No!" Shepard screamed though no one seemed to hear or pay attention to her.

Anna gasped over and over, falling over to the ground with tears flowing from her eyes as she held her chest. Blood seeped between her fingers and cries escaped the younger sisters lips.

"Elsaâ€¦ Pleaseâ€¦" She cried, her life already fading. How she was alive was beyond Shepard.

The Ice Queen turned away walking back to the others as Korra stepped forward.

She grinned and thrust her fist towards Anna.

The flames and screams pierced the air.

Once the red hue of flames died down, Shepard could see all that was left of the young princess.

A charred body, unrecognizable to the naked eye.

_The once cheery princess, the bold and fearless Spartan, the genius

Forerunner, and her entire crew, her friends._

They were dead. Every one of them. Dead.

Shepard screamed.

"Destroy everything," Elsa stated.

And then, fire and ice, engulfed the Commander

Shepard gasped her vision returning and the sight of the shop returning to her. Her breath was ragged and her eyes fluttered around making sure she knew where she was.

"Are you ok?" A voice asked from next to her.

Katherine looked down and saw an older lady, a face completely wrinkled, and eyes filled with worry looking up at her. The old lady had grey hair and wore old green clothing.

"Fine," Shepard lied. "What is this?"

"Oh that is an ancient relic. Very old and very powerful. Be careful with it young one." Before Shepard could continue someone else spoke up.

"Commander?"

It was Korra. She was standing at the end of the isle, opposite of the old lady. Shepard looked over at her. Her heart was still beating fast but she fortunately had gotten her breathing under control.

"Everything ok?"

"Fine. Just looking at this thing," Shepard held up the little glass ball in her hand, not noticing the fire and black slit inside it.

"Well just don't. Look out!" Korra yelled eyes going wide and pointing behind Shepard.

The Commander spun around. The old lady was gone, having walked off, and in her place was someone dressed in black robes.

The figure spun around just as Shepard turned, and let loose a torrent of blue flames at the Commander.

* * *

><p>John flexed his hand again, bored for once in his life. His senses were alert and he kept his eyes searching, but for now nothing had happened. He wondered if this would be a babysitting mission more than an actual one.<p>

A scream and a torrent of blue flame blasted out from the shop, setting the front of the store ablaze and causing the crowds the the street to disperse inside or leave the area entirely.

Maybe he had thought to soon.

Commander Shepard tumbled out of the flames and onto the street, her armor slightly black. She coughed as she got to her feet and her armor sparked electricity, showing how her shields had been completely drained.

Reluctant Promise floated out after her, asking her a series of question and scanning her with an orange light.

"Ma'am are you ok!" Several of the earth bending guards rushed over to her. Shepard shrugged them off and forced her attention back to the store.

The flames had already ceased and John had already drawn his weapon, aiming it at the door.

Katherine followed his lead and drew her own weapon.

The Spartan could hear the tussle inside between Korra and whomever had attacked Shepard but his attention switched when he heard something behind him.

Chief spun around in the nick of time to avoid the large boulder aimed for him. However he wasn't able to avoid it entirely. It hit his rifle forcing it from his hands and causing him to stumble sideways.

A figure in black robes and with a hand painted on their chest. They stood up straight and got into a low crouch right before they stomped on the ground, jerked their fist upwards and sent two more boulders for the Spartan.

He didn't even have to avoid them this time as two earth bender soldiers stepped in front of him and deflected each boulder.

Another jet of blue flames, and Korra jumped out of the store, panting with grit teeth.

The robbed figure from inside the store leapt out after her taking a stance in front of the store, as if waiting to strike.

Shepard watched as tendrils of water wrapped around her gun, and ripped it from her grasp. It clattered away and on instinct she dove to the side, shards of water slicing into the ground where she had stood.

Katherine let her biotics swirl around her, spinning on her heel, and threw a warp in the direction she knew the attack had originated from.

Another black figure, on top of a roof, dodged the warp just as it reached them and flipped down onto the street, pulling water to him and creating two water whips on his arms.

Two other earth bender soldiers jumped in front of Shepard, pulling up shards and chunks of earth to defend the Commander.

Fours heroes and eight earth benders, stood against three black robbed figures. Normally John would've felt reassured but something about the enemy rubbed him the wrong way. This wasn't going to be a

fair fight.

"In the name of the Earth Queen You are under arrest for crimesâ€¦|" One of the earth benders started but was interrupted by a jet of flames. It hadn't come from any of the attackers before them, and caught him and his partner off guard. Both were knocked to the ground as another black robed figure jumped off the roof of the shop Shepard had gone into.

The person spun in mid air, two jets of flame hitting the earth benders again and knocking them down for the count.

The same happened to four other guards. Specifically the ones around Shepard and Korra. One managed to defend himself but wasn't quick enough to stop the succession of attacks by more black robed benders leaping off the roofs of the buildings.

Now, seven black robed benders in total surrounded those still standing.

Shepard looked back at Reluctant Promise and at the two earth benders still protecting him, "Get him out of here. We need him in one piece," She wasn't about to let their only communication with home get destroyed, no matter how capable he was of handling himself.

"Ma'am?" One of the earth benders asked.

"Commander are you sureâ€¦|" The monitor started.

"Just do it!"

The two benders hastily retreated down the now empty street, Reluctant Promise quickly following and already preparing to call the Normandy for assistance, which was docked somewhere inside Ba Sing Se.

Korra shifted her stance, carefully watching each of the enemy benders. Seven on three. She knew the Commander could fight, but what about the other guy? The Avatar could only hope he knew what he was doing. She could tell these weren't your normal benders. They had a lot more training and skill than even a normal soldier.

"So who's first?" Korra asked with smirk.

The leader of the robed benders, the one whom had attacked Shepard in the store stepped forward, igniting blue flame in their hand.

"Take them."

And with that the other six benders attacked.

John moved first, gracefully sidestepping the flames and water shot at him. He drew his combat knife and with expert precision, threw it hard at the bender throwing flames at him. The bender dodged it with ease, moving under the knife and back up with a spinning kick, letting loose another torrent of flames from his foot.

Shepard was meet with similar opposition. She dove to the side, avoiding a boulder and rolled again to avoid shards of ice. She spun

to her feet, glowing blue , then letting loose a biotic push and earth bending enemy raised a wall of earth in front of him, catching the biotic push while the water bender spun over the biotic blast, letting it sail harmlessly under them.

Korra on the other hand was more equipped for this battle.

Fire and earth shot towards her. She countered each move, blocking the fire blast with a gust of air and simply ducking under the boulder.

She spun around firing two blasts of fire, one at each enemy, then kicking up a small boulder and throwing it behind her fire blast at the firebender. The firebender managed to block her fire blast but the boulder hit him head on, knocking him back into a vending stall which came crashing down on top of him.

Another boulder came her way and she spun around it, then blasting a gust of wind at the earth bender in black. As usual a wall of rock stopped the attack, however the Avatar had a way around that.

The girl slammed her foot into the ground, shards of earth ripping up and smashing the wall of rock apart.

The earth bender retaliated by kicking off the earth shards and flipping back, thrusting his hands forward and sending a small earthquake towards Korra. She easily flipped over it using a gust of air.

A fire blast flew at her, which she countered with another gust of air.

John sidestepped another stream of razor sharp water, letting it fly by his head harmlessly. He charged again. The firebender retaliated at shot forward two jets of red flame. The Spartan rolled out of the way, the fire roaring by where he had just lunged forward again only to have to duck underneath several tentacles made of water that raced at him. He continued his charge at the enemy pulling up his hard light shield to counter a fire blast, pushing through the fire and right towards his enemy.

Shepard rolled again throwing another warp at the earth bender. Another wall of rock blocked her attack. She wasn't fast enough to get to her enemy and her biotics were being blocked by the earth bender, but she wasn't out of tricks yet. A jet of water came at her and she threw up a biotic shield to catch it, then firing a biotic blast at the water bender who again slipped under it. She had an idea of how to beat the benders, she just needed to wait for the right moment.

Korra again dodged the next fire blast, pulling water from a nearby fire hydrant, and sending it towards the firebender. He countered and a wall of rocks flew at Korra. Her eyes widened and she spun through them before twirling and letting loose two streams of flames at both enemies.

The firebender failed to block her attack in time, getting hit hard and slamming into the wall of a nearby shop, out for good.

The earth bender managed to pull up a wall of rock, saving himself

from the fire. However, a boulder slammed into it, shattering his protection and was followed by a swift blast of air that uppercutted him and sent him flying into the air. He fell back down hard and unconscious from the hit.

The Avatar turned to help Chief and Shepard, but stopped in place. The leader had already stepped between the Avatar and the others, standing in a stance Korra had never seen before, or at least one that looked too old for her to know. Almost a hundred years old.

"Look you should justâ€¦" Korra started but had to defend herself as a blast of blue flame raced towards her. She sidestepped it and scowled. "Suit yourself."

John blocked a kick from the firebender, and moved to the side just as a fire blast soared past him. He moved forward again, striking at the bender's head. The bender sidestepped and tried again to hit the Spartan with a fire blast at point blank. The Spartan grabbed the bender's arm and pulled him closer. He snapped the arm with ease, wrapped his arms around the bender's head and twisted. The snap of bone, and the body fell to the floor.

The water bender didn't seem to care and continued their attack on John, throwing shards of ice after at him.

Shepard dodged another jet of water, and as she saw the water bender preparing for another attack, she knew the time was right. A biotic push shot towards the earth bender forcing him into cover as a biotic blast rocketed at the water bender.

The bender flipped over the attack, bringing a wall of water with him, preparing to land and send a small wave at the Commander.

Katherine slammed her fist into the ground, a wave of biotic energy racing out from her and towards the water bender. It hit the bender the moment he landed scattering the water and sending the bender flying backwards.

She didn't hesitate and fired a push that hit the bender and flung them harshly into a wall with a crack of bones.

A chuck of rock flew at her and she barely managed to dodge it. It hit her shoulder and sent the Commander stumbling back. She managed to throw up a biotic barrier that blocked the boulder flying at her.

John flipped the water bender over by their leg. The bender tried to spin on his back, but John managed to kick the bender in the back, hard enough to just knock the air out of him. He bent down and grabbed the man struggling to breath. Another snapping of the neck. The Spartan let him fall to the floor and turned to watch Shepard catch her own earth bender off guard.

Katherine jumped over the wall of earth and landed in front of the bender. They tried to fight Shepard but it was short lived. She dodged his first punch and twirled around both him and his next earth bending move, the shards of earth ripping up right where she had been. She elbowed him hard in the back of the head and let a biotic

blast knock him out and to floor.

The two nodded towards each other and turned towards Korra.

Korra growled. This firebender was skilled. Far more skilled than the others, and she bended blue fire. Korra only knew of one bender, decades ago, who was capable of that.

The Avatar twirled around, water swirling around her and taking the lash of fire meant for her. The two canceled out and steam rose into the air. She flipped back and shot two short jets of flames at the other bender which the bender canceled out with their own fire whips.

Air shot out of her fists, and Korra rocketed towards the bender. She spun around letting loose a whip of air. The bender only stumbled back, since she managed to block the air with a wall of fire.

Korra pulled water around her and shot it at the fire bender whom again countered the water strike by flipping over and bringing down a fire storm with their foot, canceling out the water.

The Avatar groaned and Korra kicked up several boulders, launching them with kicks at the bender twirled around and stuck out two fingers. Lightning shot forward and obliterated the boulders before they reached their target.

With a sigh, Korra stood up straight, catching her breath as the dust from the clashing earth and fire attacks cleared.

The bender stood still, the dust swirling around them, the hood hiding their face.

John and Shepard both stepped up to the side, both having reclaimed their guns and aimed them at the figure.

"Give up," Shepard warned glowing blue. John was silent and his finger pushed the trigger, that hardlight rounds flying straight at the bender. He knew a threat when he saw one and was more than ready to kill if necessary.

Before the rounds hit, the figure suddenly slammed their palm on the ground, lightning and blue fire rocketing out in every direction from them, the hardlight rounds were stopped somehow the heat managing to dissipate them.

The walls of flames and streaks of lightning raced towards the three heroes. Korra pulled up a massive wall of earth just in time while Shepard formed a wall of biotic energy and John threw up his hard light shield. The flames encased them and passed them by, their defenses saving them from the fire and lightning.

Korra stepped out from behind her wall of earth and saw the bender leaping from building to building, using fire as jets to propel themselves to the surface of the building. The Avatar jumped in the air and kicked forward, her wall breaking apart and sending three large chunks at the bender.

The figure propelled themselves to the roof of one building, avoiding the three boulders and continued on top of the roofs, sprinting away

from the heros.

John wasn't deterred. He raced after the bender on foot, holding his rifle in hand and charging down the street.

Shepard and Korra exchanged a glance.

Chief raced, his feet slamming into the ground as he chased the figure. He could see the bender racing atop the rooftops trying to get away, however the constant movement and random things getting in the way kept his line of sight from ever getting clear. Still he wouldn't let this person get away. Then Spartan saw his chance and holstered his gun.

He sprinted faster and leapt up onto the top of a nearby parked car, landing and using his momentum to carry him forward and towards a wall. His foot landed on a ledge off one of the building entrances and he jumped upwards.

He grabbed onto the railing of the building and in one motion swung himself onto the roof. The figure was only a building away from him, using jets of blue flame to accelerate her speed.

The Spartan gave chase again, racing after them. He leapt over various things, buckets, boxes, plants, even having to avoid a person at one point as he gave chase. His steps were light and agile, allowing him to gain quickly on the bender. His hearing picked up Shepard and Korra's footsteps not far behind him. It didn't matter how they got up but he was partially glad they were there to help.

Shepard raced forward, using her biotics to power her legs and increase her speed, even then she was having trouble keeping up with John and the bender, whom was surprisingly forcing Chief to actually run, her flame jets speeding her up to astonishing speeds. Korra was using the same technique as the bender, fire jets speeding her up and keeping her with Shepard. The two were on a building behind Chief whom was now half a building behind the bender, gaining on them.

Shepard smirked knowing she had an upper hand though. One biotic move to catch the bender.

She leapt upwards and onto a crate and saw the perfect opportunity. She glowed and shot forward, the charge rushing her right at the bender. She was a blur of motion, even John being unable to see her.

The bender somehow anticipated it, sidestepping Shepard just as the charge reached them. She had already charged a fire blast and let it loose on Shepard, blasting her backwards at least ten feet and scorching the front of her armor.

"Shepard!" Korra yelled. The bender continued running and pressed something on their wrist.

Korra leapt into the air kicking forward two gusts of air at the bender right as a portal ripped upon fifteen feet in front of her.

John sped up as fast as he could, passing by Shepard whom was slowly sitting up, a few burns on her hands from protecting her face. He had to catch the bender.

The bender heard Korra's attacks and spun around shooting jets of fire to counter each one, which they did. The hood fell back right as John got five feet from them.

Black hair, a sadistic smile, and the girl winked at the Spartan before rocketing herself backwards and into the portal.

John leapt forward, only inches from the portal.

It closed and the Spartan hit the ground, cracking the roof slightly. A brief sigh and he slowly got to his feet.

Shepard shook her head and stretched her neck, Korra walking up next to her.

"Damnâ€| "

* * *

><p>Ice.<p>

That was all that was around. Ice and snow falling form the sky.

The south pole was a beautiful place

Cinder smiled and stepped forward a bit, pulling out a vial from behind her then pouring its contents onto the frozen ground.

"Rise Titanâ€| "

The liquid was black and slowly began to crawl upwards into the air completely defying gravity. It went hundreds of feet high, forming sickening angles and a skinny yet massive being made of black ice. Shards of ice stuck out from it and the ground froze even more under its feet.

The being looked around and roared, ice soaring out of its mouth and freezing over the already frozen tundra.

Cinder raised her hand and a purple bolt of magic flew out from her and hit the Titan in the back.

The Titan roared again and slowly began to shrink.

After a few minutes of cracking and howling winds, the Titan finally shrunk down completely.

It was a monstrosity in its smaller form. Dark grey skin, scarlet red eyes, skinning cracking and ice seeping through the cracked skin. Its chest was massive, the shoulders broad and not a single hair on its body. The beast was muscular, looking like it could break a mans neck with just a flex of its arm. It stood seven feet tall and stared down at the smaller sorceress in front of it.

Its head tilted to the side and an animalistic growl escaped its lips.

"Calm yourself. Your revenge will come, but we did not bring you back for your own sake. We need you to do something."

Cinder raised a hand and smoke lifted from it, forming an image of a blonde woman wearing a ice blue dress. Elsa.

"Find her and kill her. This smaller form should help conceal you till you find her. Do so and we will help you take your revenge onâ€|"

"Zeusâ€|"

"Yes. Him. We will worry about him later. For now. The Queen. Kill her," Cinders grin held only malice and ill intent but the Titan was completely infused by it.

It stared at her a second longer and looked off into the distance.

The beast finally spoke, its voice still raspy but deeper now in its smaller form,

"Which way?"

* * *

><p>The Keeper smiled softly as she watched the portal rip open in front of her ship, space and time bending with the darkness around it. Sparks of light extended out from it, swirling around and looking like lightning. The massive hole in reality set off alarms on the ships sensors signaling just how much energy was released in the opening of the portal.<p>

Dozens of Elite and Citadel ships floated in space behind her own, watching in awe as the Forerunner ship opened up a hole large enough for all to fit through.

Thran's ship was just above hers. The massive supercarrier was going to be used to deploy troops and help evac the planet faster.

The Council had agreed after a three hour long debate, to send Shepard help. Granted they only got a total of fifty ships but with Thran's super carrier and over a dozen other elites ships she had knew they could evac the planet.

"So you really think this can work?" A small voice asked her.

She looked down and was greeted by the big green eyes of the one Shepard and the others had come to call R. The young human looked up at her with a curiosity that managed to mask the sadness she truly felt.

"Of course," the Keeper replied looking away and clasping her arms behind her back.

"Lets hope," Jacqueline stated crossing her arms. She stood behind the Keeper and R, the Arbiter by her side. The four were watching the portal open and were now prepared to head back to Shepard and the others.

"Contact Thran let himâ€|"

"Ma'am incoming slipspace ruptures. About a dozen of them."The Keeper didn't even reply and clicked on her wrist deceive opening up a large hologram on the bridge, allowing it to float in front of them.

"Enemy contact," Claire the AI stated. "Arrow class UNSC ship inbound on our starboard side. Ninety seven percent charge on their main weapon."

The Keepers face paled, "Shields up! Put all power to starboard shields! Evasive maneuvers!"

R yelped as the ship suddenly jerked downwards.

* * *

><p>In space, a dozen slipspace ruptures opened up off to the side of the allied fleet.<p>

A single ship, twenty kilometers long, skinny and looking more like a large rifle than anything else was at the center of the enemy fleet covered in flood biomass. around it, the small enemy fleet formed a perimeter, trying their best to protect their strongest weapon. The Gravemind had learned of their plan. He had sent a fleet to catch them off guard.

The ship fired at the Forerunner ship, and like a knife through butter, ripped straight through the shields and metal. Metal screamed as the back of the ship was ripped apart however, thanks to the evasive maneuvers the Keeper ordered, the beam only ripped apart the upper half of the backside, only killing off sentinels and Promethean knights. The people of Arendelle, whom were still in the ships hangar, were saved by the Keeper's quick thinking.

By this point, the allied ships had already turned, Thran' having recognized the signature as well, had his ship already racing towards the enemy fleet.

In front of the Keepers ship, the portal suddenly began to destabilize, it started falling apart and the size of the portal rapidly decreasing every millisecond.

Chunks of debris floated off the forerunner ship and a small explosion rocked the ship just as the two fleets engaged one another.

* * *

><p>"Status report!" The Keeper coughed getting back to her feet and leaning onto the holotable in front of her. Sparks were falling from the roof as well as a few pieces of debris while red lighting lit the bridge.<p>

"Ma'am shields at zero percent. Another hit and we will be destroyed. Reality Traveler offline. Slipspace drive failing. Engines failing. Life support critical. Also Thran has engaged the enemy fleet. The Arrow has been destroyed already and the other ships are already

being taken care of. We are safe for now ma'am."

The Forerunner yelled, slamming her fist on the holotable. She couldn't believe it. The enemy had known their plan. She figured it hadn't been hard to figure out, especially knowing the Black Knight had seen them on the planet and if they knew who Shepard was, what she was like, then it would've been more than easy to figure it out. She had blindly hoped the enemy wouldn't figure it out, but they had. They had waited for the perfect moment to strike when their guard was down and they hit hard.

"What happened?" The Arbiter asked rushing over to her and studying the hologram being displayed.

The portal had already completely closed. Sirens wailed through the ship, and the allied fleet outside reformed a perimeter around the now damaged forerunner ship.

"The Arrow was a specific ship designed to be a one hit kill. When it fires all power is to be transferred to a singular weapon meant to destroy any ship with one shot of its NIMAC cannon. It was a weak ship, needing many escorts to ensure its safety since it has no power for shields or maneuverability after it fires."

"I know this, but what has happened to the portal?"

"It hit the Reality drive. Completely took it offline."

"What does that mean?" Jacqueline asked helping R to her feet.

"It means Commander Shepard and the others are going to have to survive without us. We can't get to them now. They're stuck in a different reality."

* * *

><p>AN: So heres the new chapter! So sorry for not updating in such a long time. Its a long chapter and college is a killer. I've been so busy but i will not give up on this fic! Whoo! Anyway hoped you enjoyed. Just so you know, benders have been calculated to be bullet timers so them being able to keep up with Shepard and Chief, to an extent, is cannon. OR at least as close to cannon as this story gets.

Thanks for reading! Please Review, have any questions or concerns leave it in the comments or PM me. Thanks again! God Bless you all!

34. Part I Chapter 32 (Beta'd)

****Part I ****

****The Voice and Face of all Evil****

****Chapter 32: Day 5****

* * *

><p>"What do you mean you can't come get us!?" Shepard exclaimed,

placing her hands on the table as she leaned towards the hologram. The Keeper and Arbiter were standing on the table in hologram form, Reluctant Promise projecting them for the group to see.<p>

"The Reality Transporter has been destroyed Commander, damaged beyond repair. It will take at dozens of years to fix it or more without Forerunner technology," The Keeper informed, however her eyes were focused on something out of sight.

Shepard sighed and wiped her face with her hand. They hadn't planned to stay for so long. With the rate the Flood could spread, with their potential numbers and ferocity, her team had no way or even the resources to help hold off such a foe. The planet would be overwhelmed, even with the help of what Sentinels and Knights the Keeper had left with them. She wondered briefly if she should move the Forerunner machines to defensive positions around the city. The were just guarding the Normandy for now.

She then glanced over at the Chief. He had been quiet the whole time, while Korra had been making a few comments of disapproval at the situation. To her credit though she let Shepard handle the talking.

The light from window shined brightly into the room, the hologram flickering as the two aliens looked at those standing around the round table.

It was the morning after the attack, Shepard having been patched up by her own medigel and Korra's healing abilities for her burns. Needless to say she was completely astounded by the water benders natural healing ability, her ability breaking all scientific rules she knew about water.

Despite their encounter with the assassin's of the Black Hand, Shepard had still contacted the other groups spread across the globe. Each was doing well and half were ready to leave only after a day. Elsa and Ashely had done a brilliant job of playing politics. The only nation hesitant to believe them other than the Earth Kingdom had been the fire nation. Apparently the Fire Lord had requested an audience with the Avatar. It would've been an impossible request before, but now things had changed. They were going to be stuck on this other world for at least a week or even longer now that the Keeper's Reality Transporter was destroyed. Meaning they had to prepare, if what the Chief and Keeper said was true, the planet would fall in less than a month.

"How soon can it be fixed?" Shepard asked trying her best to calm down. She was angry, and she still had to tell the other groups about their new predicament.

"Given the current rate at which my Sentinels are repairing it, as previously stated, it could be over twelve years till the transporter is fixed," The Keeper replied before continuing to explain why it would take so long. "The other Forerunner installations are destroyed and the only remaining two have been infected. Other than the Halo Arrays which have yet to be found, there are no more Forerunner resources to aid us. With what resources I have it will be a difficult task to accomplish."

"Great," Shepard sighed rubbing her temple once.

John eyed her warily, seeing how tired the Commander was. Not everyone was built like him and he knew that. He decided to steep in for a moment.

"Arbiter can the Sangheli help in any way?" The Spartan asked drawing the attention of all present to him.

The Elite however, was unfazed and responded, "We can but even then we lack the resources. Forerunner material is rare even by our own standards. We could replace it with our own, however I am unsure how the two will coincide when put together, especially when put with such delicate instruments such as a Reality Transporter."

"You've had thousands of years to work on this things. Shouldn't it be simple by now?"

"Personally I never thought this would happen. There was never a need for repair our ship. Never a need to fix anything. It was built perfectly. I should've remembered the weapons the Gravemind had at its disposal.

Ignorance is bliss... Shepard thought to herself with a a shake of her head.

"What about your Council? Could they help?" Chief asked looking over at Shepard. Her eyes widened slightly, wondering why she hadn't thought about that.

"The Citadel Council. Have you talked to them about it?"

"We have. They however have the same worries as the Arbiter here," The Keeper stated.

"So we're stuck here," The Commander replied with pursed lips.
"Damn."

"I do have my smaller transporter but it only has a few uses left and the power source is only enough for small groups to get out at a time before it needs a recharge. It would take years to evac the planet with it alone," The Forerunner added.

Shepard ran her hand through her hair and closed her eyes.

What could they do?

"A slip space drive is technically a reailty transporter of its own. Is there any way you could transform an elite Slipspace drive into a Reality Transporter?" John asked.

"Maybe... The risks are great despite the calculations having already being made. We would need the most powerful one available and even then we would need a larger power source to power it. My ships generator was damaged in the attack as well. Its almost useless at this point... Maybe one of the Arbiters ships could power it?" The Keeper asked.

"In theory our ship's reactors could power it, however, how many test runs would the portal need before use?"

"Unsure. It would possibly be an unstable environment since mine and my mother's calculations only included it for Forerunner power sources, materials, and base slipspace drives. The calculations were so precise it took us over a thousand years just to break the surface. Precursor technology is... Beyond me, but what other choice do we have?"

"Build a new ship," A new voice added.

The older warriors all turned, their eyes locking onto Korra whom had stepped forward towards them.

"Well, your ship is damaged and you need to rebuild this transporter thing. Why not build a new ship from the ground up using new materials? You could use the Elite slip space drive, other materials, and just adjust whatever the calculations need to be adjusted," The Avatar suggested with a raised eyebrow and folded arms.

John's mind raced. If his own thoughts and calculations were right. The Avatars suggestion indeed made sense.

"She has a point," The Spartan agreed. Shepard nodded approvingly.

"What? Rebuild my entire ship from the ground up? Do you know how much time that will take considering the lack of Forerunner industrial capability? These Council races have difficulty putting up a single kilometer ship. One of my size is going to take weeks maybe months to build," The Keeper responded.

"Not if the Elites there help you," Shepard responded, her own mind finally forming a plan.

"With our help we could reduce the build time significantly," The Arbiter added.

"Yes, but we will have to account for all the changes needing to be made in the designs for the transporter."

"Not true. Is the slipspace drive on your ship still operational?" Chief asked unfolding his arms.

"Yes butâ€¦"

"Use that as a basis for the new transporter and the elites can provide a new slip space drive for regular slipspace travel. It should avoid any major complications with the designs."

"I had not thought of that."

"And to add onto that," Shepard started, "Use the remains of your ship to build bunkers around the main systems of the new ship, most importantly the slips space and reality transporter. It would give the ships most important systems protection during combat considering how durable the materials are against anything less than that Arrow cannon you told us about."

The group was silent, the Forerunner holding up her head in thought till she finally spoke up, "This could work. Arbiter?"

"You will have the backing of the New Covenant."

"Thank you."

"How long do you think it'll take to finish the new ship?" Chief asked.

"Unsure, however I will contact you all tomorrow and tell you whatever estimations we have for it. Maybe a few months. I'm not sure. We will have to see," The Keeper stated.

"Then you should get started. The more time we're here, the better the chance of the Gravemind getting his hands on us," Shepard said.

The entire group nodded in agreement.

"Then we will speak with you tomorrow. Good day," The Keeper bowed politely and the Arbiter raised a fist to his heart then giving a nod to the group. With that, the two turned away and walked out of vision the hologram fading away and Reluctant Promise floating closer to the ground now that the connection was severed.

"Now what?" Korra asked unfolding her arms and looking over at the Commander.

"We prepare the city for an attack. The Flood will come," John stated, ignoring the look Shepard gave him.

"How though? You saw what they did to Republic City." Korra responded with a frown.

"We'll talk to the Queen. Maybe she'll agree to a plan of defense at the very least." Shepard stated.

John nodded, "Then lets go." The Spartan moved towards the door, opening it and stepping out. Reluctant Promise floated out after him, leaving Korra and Shepard alone.

"Just like old times," Shepard sighed rubbing her neck.

"Old times?"

"Its a long story," The Spectre sadly grinned, reflecting back on the Reaper War. It seemed no matter what war she was in, politics and bargaining were going to be a part of her job.

* * *

><p>Elsa leaned on the railing of the pier, staring out over the slow moving water. The breeze was light and chilly, but it didn't affect her. She was enjoying the few moments of peace she could get, knowing that all hell would come down on them soon.<p>

A small brush of pain in her side was enough to remind her of what that hell was. The Flood.

The Queen let a small and sad smile creep onto her face, her blue eyes shining with the sun as she tried to relax.

The meeting with the Avatars father had gone better than she had expected. Everything had worked out and they were prepared to leave. Shepard had been glad to hear of her progress and the Queen herself was glad to know that they would be leaving soon. She feared for her sister's safety.

She looked back over her shoulder towards the town behind her, wondering where Anna had gone. Two water bender escorts, along with the guard accompanying her, were off to either side of the Queen but she ignored them. She didn't need the protection. Her sister did. At least Wrex had gone to watch them.

She shook her head and continued looking for her sister.

Anna had sworn she was going to stay in sight and only go to the marketplace next to the docks where Elsa was waiting for Master Tenzin. He had gone off to discuss more private matters with Chief Tonraq. She figured they were more than likely discussing the manner of how to handle the Flood and evacuating the entire south pole. Of course they wouldn't trust her enough yet to let her make any decisions with or for them, it was their people, their home. She would've done the same.

Either way, she didn't trust any of these people. The only people she trusted were Anna, Kristoff, Olaf and Kai. The people from her home. The others she knew nothing of. She was more than grateful for Shepard and Chief saving her and her peoples lives, but they could've done it for many different reasons, like Hans. So she had no reason to trust them.

The Queen took a deep breath and pushed away any troubling thoughts, instead opting to enjoy the beauty of the bay.

Her blue eyes shined.

Maybe things wouldn't turn out badly after all.

A pang of fear.

A sixth sense and the Queen spun around. Her shoulders became rigid while her eyes watched the town behind her.

Something wasn't right. She could feel it. As if the wind and ice itself told her something was wrong.

Her hands clenched and an uneasy feeling crept into her gut.

She needed to find Anna.

* * *

><p>"Oooo! Kristoff look at this! I wonder how this works?" Anna stated loudly leaning closer to a radio that rested on one of the merchant's stands. Jazz music played from the device causing the girl to wonder how it was even possible.<p>

Maybe it has to do with little people singing inside the box! Maybe they shrunk them. No thats crazy even for meâ€¦ Then again I am friends with a talking snowmanâ€¦ But what ifâ€¦

Anan shook her head trying to figure out how it worked, again calling to Kristoff for an explanation.

Kristoff however, was busy. He was studying a scroll he had found, looking at it with a baffled expression and turning it every which way to see if he could understand it. He figured the written inscriptions had something to do with water, since there was a symbol of water on the top of it, but other than that he couldn't figure it out, yet alone read it.

"Kristoff what're you doing?" Anna asked with an amused smile.

"Do you ever wonder if we're dreaming?" The man asked looking back at her confused and showing her the scroll. "Seriously I didn't even know this kind of writing existed," He continued. The red head raised an eyebrow to accompany her smile, and walked over to him, inspecting the scroll herself.

"Well, what did that Shepard person say? We're in like some alternate place of things?" The girl stated unsurely though her attention was mostly on the scroll, her own face now turned into a baffled expression as she tried to read it.

"You mean a different world and Universe?" Kristoff asked.

"Yeah! That's what she said!" Anna stated with a smile looking up at him then back at the scroll. The store tender standing off to the side stared at them with an amused expression, the elderly woman intrigued by the smiling girl and rough mountain man.

Deciding she had let them run their course, she moved over to them and started, "The scroll explains the beginning of the hundred year war. How the Southern Water Tribe was assaulted by the Fire Nation."

Anna yelped at the sudden voice, jumping up and hitting Kristoff in the nose with one of her hands as she spun around with almost no control, almost falling in the process.

"Ow!" The man yelped holding his nose.

"Sorry!" Anna quickly cried, spinning around to face him before quickly moving to try to comfort him, when her hand again, thanks to the spin, hit a pot that had been sitting on a stand right behind her.

It fell to the floor with a great smash, shattering everywhere, which caused the noble again to yelp in surprise and spin around again her braid smacking Kristoff across the face.

The hit was sudden enough to catch him off balance and forced him into the table right next to him, where he tripped over it and fell, sending it crashing to the ground along with all the fruits on it.

It caused Anna to turn again, her foot landing on a piece of the pot, that preceded to slide on the floor and send her crashing to the ground.

The elder water bender couldn't help but chuckle louder at the

display, amused how a few words had caused so much to transpire.

"I am so sorryâ€¦" The princess stated getting to her feet and rubbing the back of her head, her cheeks a beat red as the embarrassment got to her.

"Sorryâ€¦ I swear we're not usually this clumsy," Kristoff stated with frown. Anna stepped forward, failing to see the same piece of pot form earlier and again slipped with a scream.

"Wellâ€¦ At least I'm not," The man chuckled as they watched Anna slowly get back to her feet. "How much do we owe you for the damages?" Kristoff asked turning back to the older lady.

She smiled and waved away his statement. "No need to pay me child. I think your clumsiness was enough payment for me. Besides, this is all replaceable," She stated.

"Are you sure? I mean like sure sure? Because we have more than enough gold and stuffâ€¦ I mean we could pay for it, or even buy it orâ€¦" Anna started in a rushing voice only to be cut off with another wave by the old lady.

"Relax. Its fine," The lady laughed.

"Are you sure?" Anna asked looking around at the knocked over table, broken pot, and the fruits laying all over the floor.

"Positive," The lady smiled.

"Sorry, again" Anna stated still feeling guilty over the broken items.

The lady shook her head and grabbed the scroll off the floor, then opened it up again for the three to see.

"This scroll gives a detailed history of the hundred year war. Well, as detailed as the author could write it," The woman stated with a sad smile.

"Hundred year war?" Kristoff asked with a raised eyebrow.

"Yes. A tragic time." She sighed.

"What happened?" Anna asked looking over the lady's shoulder and at the scroll.

"The Fire Nation happened," The woman's face soured slightly before she continued, "Almost two hundred years ago Firelord Sozin declared war on the other three nations. He attacked the air temples, and exterminated the entire Airbender population."

"Are you serious?" Kristoff asked, clearly displeased.

"What?" The younger princess gasped in horror.

"Yes. Only one survived. The Avatar. Master of all four elements, but he had disappeared at the beginning of the war, vanishing into thin air. With the Avatar gone, the fire Nation pushed its advance on the other nations. Only the Earth Kingdom truly responded to the threat,

the Southern Water tribes benders kidnapped and taken away while the North preferred to stay isolated. The Earth Kingdom, though great, was caught by surprise. Slowly the fire nation pushed into their lands and the war between the nations raged for a hundred years," The woman's face was sad, her age truly showing with all the memories rushing back to her.

"Well, that is until I found the Avatar in a block of ice," A smile appeared.

"Wait isn't Korra this Avatar person though?" Kristoff asked.

"She is. A reincarnated version of the late Avatar Aang," The woman smiled.

"Whoa," Anna stated wide eyed.

Across the street staring at the group was a large lizard, having followed them while Elsa was guarded by her own guard and water benders. After seeing how prone to trouble the red head was, he decided to keep a close eye on her. It wasn't like the Queen had protested.

* * *

><p>Wrex growled slightly at a man who walked by. The man gave him a frown, clearly displeased by Wrex's looks. The Krogan unfolded his arms and glared at the man, "What are you looking at pretty boy?"<p>

The man jumped gulped and sped up his pace, getting clear away from the Krogan.

"That's what I thought," Wrex grunted, putting his attention back to the mountain man and princess.

He wondered why he got the babysitting gig. Another pair of bystanders walked by him, but they didn't look at him. Their faces were scared, glancing back over their shoulders towards the snowy hills and tundra in the distance.

That's when something crept into his gut.

Danger.

The Krogan's frown deepened and his eyes widened, his arms snapping to his side and his head shooting towards the direction of the mountain.

Something wasn't right. His warrior instinct was telling him, something was wrong. He watched the faces of the people coming from that direction.

An increased amount of people were heading away from the area in hurried, fearful paces. It wasn't enough to create panic but it was enough for him to notice.

Something was disturbing the locals. He clenched his fists staring out over the crowds and looking for whatever was causing the unease.

It took him less than three-seconds to find it.

Walking in his direction was a large man. Bald and dark skinned, with cracks lining his skin. He was at least as tall as Wrex if not a bit taller.

Something about him unnerved the battle hardened Krogan. The Krogan openly growled in its direction and looked towards the princess. He wasn't sure what was going to happen, but a sixth sense told him to get the red head out.

He didn't hesitate and jogged across the street to her, pushing anyone else out of the way. Several people snapped at him, a few others yelled which was enough to cause Anna to look out into the street towards him.

"Wrex?" She asked confused, wondering why the monster guy was there. The older woman stood between the younger couple, staring at them all with a confused smile.

"Time to go princess," He stated nodding his head in the direction opposite the large man.

"Time to go where?" She asked confused. Wrex frowned at her.

"Don't worry about it. We need to leave. Now," He stated sparing a glance back towards the man.

"Don't worry about us. We can take care of ourselves. Its fine really," Kristoff stated politely, giving the Krogan a genuine smile.

"Yeah come on big guy! Stop worrying!" Anna smiled giving a playful jab to the Krogan's arm. Wrex growled in annoyance.

"Look we need to leave now, so either you come voluntarily or I'm carrying you out of here got it?" He stated pointing a finger at Anna.

"Whoa don't talk to her like that," Kristoff stated moving between the two and pushing his hand aside. The mountain man sported a frown of his own as he defiantly stared at the killer in front of him.

"Look pretty boy, you better get out of myâ€¦." A hand grabbed the Krogan's shoulder, he roared and spun around, already annoyed and not wanting to deal with another exasperating human.

"What?" He snapped coming to face whoever had grabbed his shoulder.

It was the large man. He stared with unblinking eyes at the Krogan.

"Where is the Queen?" It asked with a deep monstrous voice, its hairless arms flexing in impatience.

"What Queen?" Wrex growled back, taking a step towards the beast. He had to pretend he knew nothing about Elsa. Whatever this thing

wanted, it wanted her, its reasons weren't friendly, that he knew from just four words.

"You mean Elsa?" Anna asked looking from behind Wrex. The Krogan clenched a fist.

The beast looked at her and tried to move past Wrex, only for the Krogan to step in his way, "You can talk to her from here."

The beast glared at the Krogan but still spoke to Anna, "Where is she?"

"Well Iâ€¦."

"Anna! Kristoff!" The voice called out from down the street.

All of them turned to see Elsa briskly walking towards them, Tenzin, several water benders, and her own guard following.

"At last," The Titan grinned maliciously.

It took Wrex a split second to piece it together. The beast wasn't after the Queen for just any reason. It was just trying to find her, and it wanted to kill her. He knew a killer's threat when he heard it.

"Move!"

In a split second he powered up his biotics, drew his shotgun, and fired.

Gasps filled the air, Elsa stopping in her tracks.

The silence was deafening, as a realization hit the Krogan.

The rounds did absolutely nothing, shattering and freezing instantly. The beast growled and slowly turned towards him.

"Come on youâ€¦" Wrex never finished the sentence, a fist slamming into his chest and sending him flying backwards, cold winds and ice blasting out from where he hit the Krogan. He shattered wooden posts from the stores and hit the ground hard, completely freezing over from the one punch.

"Wrex!" Anna screamed surprised by the sudden turn of events.

The Titan turned towards her and raised its hand to the sky while staring at her.

Ice ripped out of the ground and incased her, Kristoff, and the elder lady up to their necks. It would save them for later. For now, the Queen was its target.

"Anna!" Elsa screamed. She turned to the beast and thrust her hands out, the blue magic racing towards it.

The Titan stared at her unfazed and when the blue reached him, smacked it away with a flick of its hand.

The Queens eyes widened.

"Arrest him!" Tenzin yelled pointing at the beast.

Elsa's guard charged as did the few water bending escorts.

The Titan frowned and stopped out towards them, extending one hand and unleashing gusts of snow storms.

The Water benders immediately went on the defensive, half working together to push the ice and snow away from them and letting it melt off to the side, while others pulled up a wall of ice to block the winds.

The Titan didn't stop and twirled around with amazing speed, shooting out its fists, stopping into an offensive stance.

Ice shards tore through the snow covered ground and shattered the ice wall into a million pieces.

Without missing a beat, the beast charged, leaping over the shards, and slamming his fist into the ground.

Ice ripped out from the ground around, impaling several water benders and water tribe soldiers. The red blood seeped down from them onto the ground.

"No!" Elsa cried, her teeth grit in both anger and fear. She wasn't used to death, despite having seen the destruction of her home and Republic city. It all seemed to surreal if she was honest with herself.

The Queen thrust her hands forwards again, this time letting a wall of ice form, and race straight at the Titan.

It frowned at the Queens attempt, standing up, and slamming its fist into the wall of ice. It shattered instantly, ice flying in every direction, forcing Elsa and Tenzin to duck underneath a large piece that flew at them.

The remaining benders and soldiers lunged at the Titan, Elsa's one guard being a part of the water tribe escort.

It grinned.

A sword slashed at its neck. It ducked and kicked the offender in the chest, shattering the metal armor with below freezing temperatures and freezing the man over instantly, his water tribe clothing doing nothing to protect him.

A water whip grabbed it by the leg, only for it to freeze over. The beast snapped the ice whip in half, and shot a gale of winds at the Bender. The bender pulled up a wall of ice to defend himself but it shattered against the gale forced winds. He flew back and hit the wall of a shop.

Another armored guard. Arendelle soldier. Dead in two-seconds.

Bender. Snapped neck.

Final water tribe soldier. Sword slashing. Impaled by ice, torn in half by sheer strength.

Final bender. Stands for a second. Dies in less than that.

The Titan roars in victory having defeated the soldiers and protectors of the one he was after. It's head turned, a malicious grin on its face as it stared down the Queen.

Elsa stutters something unintelligible, stepping back and away from the monster in front of her. She hated death, and she had watched this monster murder over five people in less than a minute. It sickened her.

She glanced around looking for Anna, and was relieved to see her sister nowhere in sight. Someone had gotten her out.

The beast didn't wait any longer, and charged forward at Elsa.

"Get out of here!" Tenzin yelled pushing her out of the way. The master Airbender twirled his hands and with a spin, thrust his hands upwards. A wall of air shot at the Titan which it effortlessly flipped over.

Elsa hit the wall of a store but managed to stumble back, staring on as the Airbender fought the Titan.

Tenzin scowled, a swirl of air lifting him over the Titan just as it reached him, forcing the Titan to miss, but he wasn't done. A twirl in the air, kicking at the monster's back, pushing himself back with a gale of wind and hitting the beast in the back.

The Titan stumbled forward and was sent tumbling down to the ground where it's hands just barely caught it, then it pushed itself back to its feet with an inhumane resolve.

Frost shot out from its mouth as it twirled back to the Airbender, the winds and cold racing at him.

Air blasted out towards the frost cutting a small enough hole in the blast to spare the monk while the shops around him were frozen or blown apart.

He returned the attack by spinning around and thrust his hands outwards, two separate streams of air having twirled around with him and rocketing out at the monster.

It growled and slammed its fist into the frozen ground, holding itself in place as the winds wailed over it.

With a grin it thrust its hands into the ground further, cracking the surface around him, which forced icicles to rip out of the ground and race straight towards the bald monk, the jagged forms looking like serrated teeth.

A grin.

The monk formed a quick tornado under him pushing himself into the air and launching himself onto the roof of a nearby building.

The grin disappeared.

Titans were the rulers of evil and power. None should stand against them. The Titan roared in annoyance and stepped towards Tenzin, wishing to end the annoying human's life when ice swallowed his legs and stopped him in his steps. Its head shot around and glared down the Ice Queen.

Elsa licked her lips lightly, her breathing partly heavy and her hands shaking slightly from their outstretched position. She took a step back, and with a roar the Titan shattered the ice around its legs.

The Queen took another step back. Her heart pounding and her palms sweating like an ocean despite the cold.

It turned and stared at her, before kicking outwards, where jagged shards of ice formed in mid air and sailed towards her with terrifying speed.

Elsa responded, her hands immediately going up to cover her face while a curved ice wall formed around her protectively.

The shards hit the wall and cracked it, the ice being thick enough to protect her.

It shattered a millisecond later, the Titan barreling through it and right at Elsa.

The beast stopped inches from her, the Queen shaking and staring at the monster with wide eyes, her ocean blue eyes meeting its black ones.

It grinned.

* * *

><p>The Arbiter stared over the expanse of space, the flickering stars and ever lasting darkness distracting him from the beeping of his comm line. It wasn't entirely space's fault. He ignored his comm on purpose, wishing to just enjoy the brief peace he had.<p>

Finally the beeping got to him. He sighed, his large shoulders slumping before he answered the comm, "Yes?"

"Sir, the Keeper and the alliance ships are approaching."

"Good. Open up an encrypted channel between the Keeper, myself, and Admiral Hackett."

"Sir," The Elite responded through the comm.

The Arbiter watched as outside, a slipspace rupture opened up, revealing the escort fleet he had sent along with the Keepers terribly damaged ship and thirty alliance vessels accompanying it. They soared out of the rupture and the brilliant tear in space closed just as quickly as it had opened.

"Arbiter, Good to see you," Admiral Hackett stated over the encrypted comm channel now open between the two leaders and

forerunner.

"Admiral. Forerunner," The Elite replied kindly enough, "Status?" He asked.

A deep breath, then the admiral spoke, "Well we have the backing from the Turians, Krogans, and what remain from the Geth and Quarrians. We have a good chunk of supplies and men to build the ship."

"You sound troubled," The Arbiter stated with confusion.

"We are," The Keeper replied, "Even with the supplies we have it'll take a month at least to build the ship we designed."

"Leaving Shepard and the others alone for a month in enemy territory," Admiral Hackett added.

"The natives are not our enemies," A retort from the Arbiter.

"Yes, but the Flood are present in the system. With no proper military defense and knowing what the Flood can do, that planet won't last two weeks."

"Hmmâ€¦" The Arbiter nodded. "My people will give what we can Keeper."

"Thank you. Lets hope it is enough."

The Elite only nodded and walked over to the view screen.

Ships moved around, forming a circle in space, where shuttles already carried supplies to the center of the fleet where a massive open space was created for the building of the new ship.

The ship was to be large. Four kilometers and two hundred meters in total length, one kilometer in width. It was going to meant to be maned by a minimal crew of twenty, but its would be able to house over three thousand personal. Its main weapons were to be derived from the Normandy and Covenant warships. The Thanix cannon would be added, three of them in total and their power output increased double with the help of Covenant technology. Two New Plasma Cannons were to be added as well, their firepower absolutely dwarfing the SMAC of the old UNSC, and the Old Covenants Plasma Torpedo. Poit defense systems were of course going to be added, plasma lasers cannons with Forerunner upgrades being the main defenses. Its hangar was to be large enough to hold the Normandy as well as several shuttles and other vehicles like Tanks and fighters. The ship was to have four Main engines derived from the Keepers old ship and the Elites Supercarrier, along with Eight smaller ones for additional thrust. It would be magnificent. Powerful and fast.

The Arbiter looked out. In space the framework was being put together, massive hunks of metal being welded by engineers and sentinels alike.

"And now we wait."

* * *

><p>"So how exactly do this thing work?" Rapunzel asked staring at

the metallic weapon in her hand. Her brown eyes scanned its surface, trying to figure out the machinery in the weapon.<p>

"Its called a gun, and it fires Mass Effect rounds. I won't even try to explain anything else, otherwise your brain will probably explode," Jacqueline stated.

"What're mass effect rounds?" The girl asked, turning the rifle around to where she could look inside the barrel.

"Don'tâ€¦|" The N7 started, grabbing the gun and taking it from R, "Do that. You could pull the trigger and literally blow your brains out."

"Sorry," The brunette said with small yet sheepish smile. Jacqueline sighed and shook her head. How she got stuck with teaching the FNG how to use a gun, and essentially anything more advanced than a pencil, was beyond her.

"Look kid," She raised the gun and pointed to the trigger, "This is what fires the gun." Without looking she aimed the gun down the practice field and fired. The hologram at the end flickered, sparking as it was hit then vanished.

"And this," She pointed to the sights on the gun, "Is what you use to aim." She spun around and aimed down the sights and fired again.

A perfect headshot.

"Wow. You're good at this," R complimented with an impressed smile.

"I'm not an N7 for my good looks you know."

"A what?"

"Oh yeah your not from hereâ€¦| N7 is fundamentally aâ€¦|" The soldier looking up for a moment to collect her thoughts, "A really, really great soldier. Better than most," She finished lamely. It was strange having to explain what an N7 was. Most people knew or understood what special forces were.

"Oh okay, so kind of like Captain of the Guard?"

"I guess."

"Cool," The girl stated with raised eyebrows turning her attention to the targeting range.

Jacqueline opened her mouth to say something but closed it almost instantly. She wasn't too good with small talk like Shepard.

"Umm here. Try shooting it," The N7 stated handing R the weapon. The girl gleefully took it, her smile contrasting with the bags under her eyes. Jacqueline wondered why the girl hid her grief. They all knew grief. They knew it far to went thanks to the Reapers.

"Okay now place the butt of the gun hereâ€¦|" She instructed helping R to hold the weapon right.

"Butt?"

"End of the gun."

"Oh okay. Sorry."

"It's ok. Its a pretty shitty mistake most people make."

The silence to follow was breath taking.

"What?" R asked confused.

"Never mind. It was a terrible joke butâ€¦| Ok now put your hand on the trigger andâ€¦|" The blonde guided the youngers hand to the trigger letting her rest her fingers there. She started to pull away, "Andâ€¦|"

A scream.

The gun fired.

The N7 jerked back, not having expected the girl to fire so quickly. She was used to trained military waiting till told to fire, not a civilian who had no idea what they were doing. Especially one from a different time and universe entirely.

She looked down at the girl, R having fallen down on her back from the recoil.

"Ow," The girl commented sitting up. She rubbed her head, staring at the rifle laying next to her with a frown.

"Maybe we should start you out with a pistolâ€¦|"

* * *

><p>Rolus gasped as he stumbled forward, his chest armor ripped apart and his shields having failed long ago. He checked his comm again and cursed when only static greeted him. Somehow, this new enemy was able to passively block their communications.<p>

A cough.

More blood.

The Elite held his chest with his hand, blood flowing down between his fingers from the heavy wound on his chest.

He couldn't believe it. One enemy had devastated his entire team, leaving him as the only one to escape. It had been a nightmare.

Flashback

The black armored figure stopped before them, a good distance for them to take it out if it became a problem for Rolus's team. Each Sangheili Warrior had become quiet, the demeanor this warrior had seemed to set off an alarm in each of their heads.

_The being was too calm, too quiet, too sure of itself. Like the

demons they had read about from long ago._

"State your business citizen," Rolus called out, his grip tightening on his rifle.

"You are but worms. Cowering in the dirt hoping what? To escape the coming fire," The Black Knight laughed, a red aura glowing around his armor.

"State your business or we will open fire," Rolus stated once more. Normally he would be more rational, but the figures last statement had sounded more like a threat than anything else.

The Black Knight stood still briefly, his head moving only the slightest amount as he looked between each elite soldier.

"Die," The Knight muttered, and without out warning raised his arms, a strange rifle materializing in his hand.

He fired first, a red beam with electrify encasing it slamming into an Elite. Shields failed instantly, and the Elite roared in pain as it's entire arm was taken off.

"Open fire!" Rolus ordered, however, they were not needed. The Elites had all already opened fire.

The Black Knights shields flared and he dove to the side taking cover behind a large chunk of metal as plasma rounds incinerated chunks of the debris.

"Varkas do youâ€¦!"

A scream of pain and the Elites turned to their right, watching as the Black Knight held one of their own by their head and only their head. The body laid at his feet, the blood dripping from a fresh decapitation.

He didn't wait and with glowing red power, charged the Hlites. Rolus' second in command, Greck'l, roared in challenge charging back at the Knight.

The Elite swung, his weapon sailing over the Knight, planning to pull it back and fire at knife fight range. However, he had underestimated the Knight's speed. Before he could, with deadly precision the knight ducked underneath his blow, a red energy blade snapping out from a hilt in his hand.

Gasping, and the Elite went limp, a red blade protruding from his back.

"Greck'l!" One of the others called out immediately firing with his plasma rifle.

However, The Knight never stopped moving, using the body as a meat shield and tossing it right at the other Elites when the fire slackened.

It was effective, taking the brunt of their fire, and managing to hit Rolus.

He stumbled back having been forced to drop his weapon to catch the body so it wouldn't crush him. With a heave, he tossed the body away from him only to watch as the last of those who had been with him get sliced in half by the red blade.

Rolus roared and drew his side arm unleashing its entire clip towards the Knight. Without hesitation the Knight dodged several shots before having to retreat and flip backwards and lunging behind another large piece of rubble.

Only him and Arcus were left. Two on one.

End Flashback.

Rolus growled as he fell forward hitting his head on the ground. He knew Arcus was dead when the Elite's severed head had been dropped from above and right in front of him. It had been then the Knight attacked him, where he had barley escaped with his life. (Rolus has a chest wound that magically appeared.)

He slowly pushed himself up with his free arm. His team hadn't stood a chance. They had been slaughtered mercilessly, and him defeated in combat, only to try to run. However he had a purpose for running. He needed to warn the others teams about this monster, but his comm line was still down. If only he could get far enough away from his attacker.

He heard the crunching of gravel behind him and closed his eyes. The Elite had hoped to escape but his hopes weren't much.

His hand slowly slide down to his side, gently resting on the hilt of his energy sword. He opened his eyes and spun around with terrifying speed.

A red blade blocked his, and a flash of light accompanied by sizzling electricity filled the air from the crossed blades.

The Black Knight said nothing. He spun around, red power blasting out from him and knocking the Elite backwards. He lunged.

Rolus sloppily blocked, his deflection only causing the energy blade to slice the side of his arm instead of killing him.

He stepped backwards, hoping to regain his balance only for the Knight to attack him again with a hard upper strike.

Pulling his sword up, he managed to block the red energy blade sending it off to his side and using the momentary advantage, he kicked the Knight in the chest, forcing him backwards.

The Black Knight quickly regained his balance and let a pulse of red biotic energy shoot out from him, knowing back the Elite again before he lunged for a killing blow.

Rolus again tried to block, but he wasn't as quick or as agile as the Knight, and failed to either block or regain his balance.

A red blade, then blood and the Elite roared as he fell backwards against a downed pillar from a building.

He held his hand, the charred stump of his wrist being all that remained of his severed hand while his sword laid on the ground beneath the feet of the Black Knight.

Black heels on his blade, then in shattered into a million pieces, the blade of his ancestors, gone.

Rolus pushed back and sat up against the pillar. He would not beg. He had honor and would die a warrior like his father before him.

"Elites. One of the most foolish of races to ever plague reality," The Black Knight stopped towards him, the red blade glowing with power by his side. "It will be a pleasure destroying your kind."

Rolus grunted, staring up in defiance, his remaining hand coming up to his side to hold his wound. He felt something.

The blade rose before him, the Black Demon stopping right as his feet, and the Knight drove it down.

With one last burst of energy the Elite managed to swipe the Knights feet, his legs still strong enough for one attack, and the blade drove towards his head though a quick jerk to the side caused the blade to miss and drive into the pillar behind him.

He head butt the smaller fighter as he fell then kicked him backwards while his guard was down.

The Knight grunted slightly but managed to catch his balance again drawing a second energy blade, his first having fallen to the ground when he was hit. He charged.

Rolus grunted and grabbed onto his side, his last hope activating.

The red blade sunk into nothing but concrete. The Elite had vanished into thin air.

A deep sigh escaped the knight and he pulled the blade back, turning around and looking all around. Not a sign of life anywhere on the streets.

He twisted his neck, the popping of bone ringing out from beneath his armor.

Rolus breathed quickly, hoping to keep silent as he laid on the floor. His active camouflage had saved him, the newer version of it was able to block him from both infrared, ultraviolet, radio, and visible spectrums. Unless the Knight had a way to echo locate, then he was safe for the time being.

The Black Knight powered off his blade, resting the hilt on his hip. He took one final look around, grabbed his first blade, and without a care, walked away.

Serval minutes later, when Flood cries and Reaper husks shrieking could be heard, Rolus powered off his camouflage. He was dozens of feet away now, having dragged himself underneath a large Turian

vehicle, bleeding profusely.

He groaned and powered up his comm channel. The clearness of the open, and working, channel a blessing to his ears.

"This isâ€|" Cough, "Captain Rolus of Shadow Squad. I need immediate evac."

* * *

><p>Elsa groaned, her head spinning, her body aching, and her hand bloody. Hands behind her, then she pushed herself up into a sitting position. Pain.<p>

She was used to emotional turmoil, but physical was different. It was why she fainted when the Flood injured her. This she wasn't used to.

Her hand reached up for the little device on her dress. Cold metal in her hands as she looked at the shielding device from the Keeper. It wasn't working, and the Queen internally berated herself for never asking how to use it. If she had, maybe she could've helped. Maybe.

Footsteps heading right for her, registering only barely to her ears.

She pulled herself back up, slowly, and stumbled when she managed to get back on her feet. The world spun and her head continued to pound. The blow she had received hadn't been a light one.

The Titan had attacked her relentlessly. Like the Flood but with powers and skill she hadn't even imagined were possible.

Back and forth she had tried to fight back, ice against ice, magic against an ancient being, but she hadn't been strong enough.

At least Anna and Kristoff had gotten out. Wrex was frozen solid. She had only gotten a glimpse of him, and wanted to help, but alas, was unable to with the Titan around.

The Titan walked closer towards her, its massive form shadowing her smaller stature.

A gust of air slammed into its back with the force that would've knocked over a pillar of stone.

Elsa jerked backwards and watched as the Titan spun around, ice ripping apart the ground around it.

Tenzin sailed underneath the ice shards sent for him, his clothing torn from the battle with the Titan. He had tried to protect Elsa, but the two were simply outmatched against the far older and far stronger entity.

Elsa stepped forward with grit teeth, letting her hands release their magic. The ice and magic together swirled around her before soaring at the Titan with terrifying speed.

At the same time, the master Airbender twirled around and unleashed

two funnels of air, aimed for the Titans legs and head.

The Titan roared and spun to face Elsa's blast. The magic hit it head on, splicing into two separate streams of power as it failed to harm the beast, the ice part of her attack failed to do anything either, shattering instantly as it touched him. Without missing a beat, he turned again, only a split second later, moving his head which barely avoided the first funnel of air.

The second funnel hit its mark and the beast was forced backwards.

Tenzin didn't let up, while Elsa staggered backwards on the icy ground.

They had left the cluttered shopping areas, letting the battle rage all the way down to the docks. Civilians had cleared out well enough and several benders had tried to help the duo against the Titan, but the Titan was too powerful for them.

Help was coming, Tenzin had assured Elsa that much. Yet, she only saw civilians looking at them through windows with frightened expressions. She was frightened.

The only reason Elsa was still moving was because she had retreated while Tenzin defended her. She knew she was no warrior, and every time she tried to fight the Titan she failed. It wasn't like the Flood. It was stronger, faster, and more skilled. Besides all she had really done against the Flood was run and bring to life several snow creatures to defend herself or others. Nothing worth mentioning.

The Titan deflected another bout of air headed for him. The beast scowled at the Airbender and opened his mouth just as Tenzin shot another swirling vortex at it.

Ice and gale forced winds together spun out from the Titans mouth. The two blasts collided and the Airbender's instantly collapsed.

Tenzin's eyes went wide and he braced himself. He was hit dead on by the cold winds, while the ice slashed his clothing and skin. The winds threw him backwards, hitting him hard against the ground.

Elsa ran.

Her footsteps echoed loudly against the wooden pier, having left the frozen ground trying to get away. She ran towards the ocean, knowing her powers could freeze it over and allow her to walk. Her only chance would be to try to run from the beast. It is to be hoped that it couldn't freeze over an ocean like herself.

Hands clenched holding up the light blue dress, breath caught in her throat, pain rifling her body, she ran with all she had, doing her best to escape.

Sensing it too late, a slip of ice caught her right foot and she went tumbling down hitting her head against a wooden post of the pier.

Blood dripped down her head, and her world swirled around

her.

Blinking did nothing to clear her vision and Elsa recklessly stumbled forward towards the ocean.

Her shoes clacked against the wood in odd patterns, but a heavier footstep closed in.

The pain and dizziness she suffered kept her from hearing it, and on a whim she reached out for the water, power collecting in her hand.

A large gray hand grabbed the back of her braid and yanked the Queen back, her power misfiring and only hitting a wood post. A drop of blood slid down the side of her face, leaking into her dress.

She groaned as she was forcefully turned around, the large hand grasping her by her face then lifting her up to face the attacker. Her hands grabbed and clawed at the larger hand, but they failed to do anything.

The Titan stared at her with unmoving, unfeeling eyes. A blank expression on its face.

Elsa's eyes went wide. Her hands. She had one shot to get out of its grip.

Pouring all she had left, her hands suddenly went to subzero temperatures and she let loose the coldest power she could on the beasts hand, a pang of guilt since she could only imagine what would happen to its hand.

Nothing.

The Titan stared at her hands, having felt it, but not being injured. It was cold. It was ice. It was higher than a god, no mortal could harm it.

A gray hand raised to the sky, ice cracking the skin and the hand itself preparing to finish her off.

Elsa's hands went wild doing their best to break her free. She shook and wanted to scream. She was going to die.

"Wait."

A voice. A woman's, but not one the Queen recognized.

The Titan turned, still holding the Queen, its hand now gripping her throat, the pain in her head and her body growing every second.

The woman walked towards them, straight black hair, a red dress, and demons eyes. Flames licked out from her hands as she approached the pair, melting a lick of ice that laid over the pier from where the Titan had caught the Queen. Where she had come from, Elsa could only guess.

* * *

><p>Cinder closed in. She looked down at the Queen, the Titan having

brought Elsa down to face her.<p>

"Well, well you really do disappoint don't you? All that power and you can't even put on a good show. Pity," The darker haired woman smiled the entire time she spoke. She reached out and caressed the Queens cheek, much to the latter's displeasure. Elsa tried to pull away but the Titans grip tightened, choking her further.

Cinders fingers slowly ran down the Queens cheek, a nail extended, and with a quick flick she cut open the Queens cheek. Blood oozed from the wound, the pale skin and red blood contrasting brilliantly.

She roughly grabbed Elsa's face, taking her from the Titans grip. "Pity indeed." A drop of blood slowly slipped down towards the Queens chin.

Cinder twirled her hand and a vial appeared. She placed it under the drop and let the blood slide in before pulling it away and throwing the Queen back.

Elsa hit the dock with a gasp of pain, her head throbbing from its harsh treatment.

"Nowâ€| "

A sudden body slammed into the Titan, throwing it forward and off the side of the dock and into the water.

"I really hate magic," Wrex growled, his skin still carrying flakes of ice. He hated the cold, much less being frozen over entirely by magic. Now he was pissed. He would have revenge.

His shotgun fired at Cinder who scowled at him and deflected the rounds with a twirl of her hands, red magic blocking each pellet.

She leapt back over Elsa, landing at the end of the pier and smiled at the two, cradling the vial in her hand like one a newborn.

Water splashed and the Titan climbed back onto the pier somehow.

Wrex fired again, glowing purple with his biotics.

The Titan roared as fire laced its skin.

The Krogan smiled.

Cinder ignited her free hands, flames extending out, while the Titan roared and let its ice spread over the pier.

The Queen slowly pushed herself up onto all fours staring at the two with pure anger and fear. She could barely feel anything now, the pain having knocked out her ability to feel.

"Enough of this!"

Cinder and the Titan looked past Wrex, and Elsa glanced behind her.

Tonraq, along with twelve benders, Tenzin, Anna, and Kritoff all stood at the piers entrance staring down the two enemies.

"Do you reallyâ€¦" Cinder started when a rumble could be heard behind her. The Titan and her spun around, staring at the United Republic warship that stopped about a hundred feet from the two, their main guns pointed at both of them, a massive honk and boom resonating from the ship.

"Well... Till next time then," Cinder grinned.

"Too late."

A shotgun fired.

Air and water shot towards them.

Cinder let a wall of magic intercept each attack, then spun around allowing portal appeared. The two were sucked in a flash then it disappeared.

The second round of shots Wrex had fired sailed harmlessly through the air and into the ocean beyond.

A breeze picked up and carried away the dust from where the two had so suddenly disappeared.

"Elsa!"

Wrex looked down, lowering his shotgun and watched as the younger sister and blonde man run past him and to Elsa. Anna held Elsa up, gently holding her sister, and cradling her head.

"Ohâ€¦ Oh myâ€¦ Elsa.. You're okay. You're gonna be okay. I swear if I see them again. I'llâ€¦. I don't know, but it'll be really bad and you have no idea how bad," The red head stated in a rush, a fake smile on her face.

"Anna," Elsa started, weakly smiling at her sister, "I'm fine. Just need to rest for a bit." She sighed heavily, her smile fading and eyes closing.

"Elsa don't you dareâ€¦"

Another pair of footsteps, and Tonraq stood over the three.

"Excuse me," He stated gently pushing Anna aside. The sister opened her mouth to say something with a scowl but Kristoff put a hand over her mouth and held her back.

Tonraq studied Elsa briefly, a smile creeping up on his face. He waved over two other benders, who rushed to his side immediately. "Get her to some healers, but be careful. We don't want her anymore injured than she is." He commanded. The two nodded. One moved to each side of the Queen and, bending water around her, lifted her up and carried her off, much to Anna's disapproval.

Toraq ordered more of his men to follow them and to guard the Queen at all costs, while Tenzin approached the small group.

"What was that all about!" Anna yelled having pried the mountain man's hands off of her mouth.

"Your sister will be fine. She was a little roughed up but nothing life threatening. She just needs to rest for now," Tonraq explained with a calm face and warm voice.

"Oh," Anna exclaimed, "Well can I go see her?"

"I wouldn'tâ€|"

"She's my sister. Can I at least make sure she's okay?" Anna pleaded her eyes large and her face covered in worry.

Toraq sighed and closed his eyes. His daughter would've acted the same way. "Fine. I'll escort you two," Toraq gave a brief nod to Tenzin stating, "We'll convene in the morning and discuss what has happened. For now," He placed a hand on Tenzin's shoulder, "Get some rest old friend. This way." He stated mooring for Anna and Kristoff to follow him, which the two did without hesitation.

Tenzin sighed and watched as the three left the pier.

Wrex walked up to him, still wielding his shotgun.

"Shepard's not gonna like thisâ€|"

* * *

><p>Chief hit the dummy with only half of what he could. It flew back and hit the stone wall, sand leaking out from its head.<p>

He straightened out and turned around, grabbing the next training dummy from behind him and tying it to the rope hanging from the ceiling.

He inspected the end of the rope, wondering how much more it could take before being ripped. Figuring it could wait for another time, he tied the dummy up again and retook his stance.

Practice.

Training.

He could never have enough. It was a place of peace for him. Somewhere he could think and clear his mind.

A series of precise and deadly jabs followed, each one tearing a hole in the dummies stitching. A kick followed and the dummy ripped apart entirely.

John straightened again and moved onto the next dummy.

The dummies used by the benders were resilient but not enough for a Spartan. He had already torn apart four. He hoped Korra had been right when saying the Pro benders wouldn't mind him using their dummies to practice his close quarters combat. He hoped that meant dismembering them as well.

"Dummies don't really prove much of a challenge do they?"

He didn't even have to look to know Shepard was watching him. She had been for at least ten minutes. He just didn't bother saying anything.

"Korra told me you were down here. I needed to talk to you," Shepard stated walking towards the Spartan. She had been studying him. His movements, his speed, his preferred attacks. The first time they had meet, he had utterly dominated her. She wanted to see how he fought, wanted to learn, so she had watched and studied.

John held his punch back, relaxed, and turned to face the smaller woman. He stared at her, waiting for her to speak.

"The Keeper contacted me. Said we might have to wait a month till the ships complete," The Spectre turned towards the dummy, but John could tell she was unhappy with the current situation.

"The Flood will tear this planet apart," John stated turning back to the dummy and taking his fighting stance again.

"What should we do?"

"Leave. This planet will die either way, and we have to protect what we can."

"So we leave them here to die?"

The Spartan let his silence speak for him.

"We're not doing that."

"Then we all die," John stated turning towards her. He understood her position, but he knew what, logically, the best decision was. As it was they should've left this planet alone and focused on the war, but Shepard was commander of her ship and the Keeper was playing sympathetically with her, so he had little choice in what to do. He could go rogue again, but it had gone badly the first time around.

"Do you really think leaving these people here to die is the right choice? Families? Children? Fathers? Mothers?" Shepard stepped in front of him, staring at the Spartan with a scowl. She hadn't expected him to answer the way he did.

"Its logical," He responded shortly retaking his relaxed stance.

"But is it right?"

John stayed silent. He had done many questionable things before. Whether they were right or not, he didn't know. Cortana had always been that guiding point for him, his conscious so to speak, and she was gone.

"Never mind," Shepard growled while shaking her head and looking away. She wasn't mad at him. Logically she knew he was right. Morally though? She couldn't do that. She couldn't abandon those she knew she

could help. Not again.

Apart from that, she was frustrated. Everyone had answered her call and taken the news rather decently about their delay, everyone except Wrex and the group sent to the South pole who had yet to either report in or answer. She figured the weather may have hampered communications, she hoped that at least.

Wanting to ease away the tension, Shepard grinned and started, "You know, I think I'd be a better sparing partner than that pile of sand."

"I don'tâ€¦"

"Please I've fought worse."

John tilted his head in question.

Shepard took a fighting stance, a friendly grin on her face.

The Spartan took a fighting stance, intrigued by Shepard confidence.

"Shepard! Chief!"

The two tuned towards the door, each ready to pounce the other. Korra stood at the door, eyes wide and filled with worry.

"Its the South Pole. There was an attack."

* * *

><p>Cinder stared down at the middle pedestal while it swirled with strange colors and liquids. The dark lighting helped to give the place an ill feeling. The blood stained walls and floors only helping to enforce the feeling. It was the same place her and the Black Knight had planned to raise the Titan.<p>

A man, red hair, white suit, golden cuffed shoulders, and an air of arrogance about him, stood on the other side of the pedestal, opposite of her. The Titan stood next to her, its arms crossed and blank face staring at the pedestal.

"You should've killed her when you had the chanceâ€¦" The man stated with a scowl.

"Enough. She needs to be kept alive either way," Cinder responded with a wave of her hand.

"Then why order him to kill her?" The man exclaimed pointing towards the Titan, whom in turned looked at Cinder questioningly.

"Because if she hadn't then he would've held back."

The three turned and watched as the Black Knight appeared from the darkness. He looked at each of them and slowly made his way over to the other man, glaring him down before turning to Cinder. "We needed to see what she was capable of."

"But why! You could've taken care of her and her sister then!"

Andâ€| "

"You will know soon enough," Cinder hissed. "Remember your place boy. We did not save you from your dying planet for no reason."

The man was quiet and only stared at Cinder through a squint.

"Leave us," The Black Knight ordered.

"Butâ€| "

"Now," He stared down the smaller red haired man who reluctantly nodded and walked away. The Titan nodded as well and quickly followed after the other man.

A few seconds passed in silence before Cinder spoke. "Did you get it?"

The Black Knight raised his hand. A green glowing crystal laid in his armored palm.

"Then he is alive?"

"Yes. Only in need of freedom, and what of the Queen?"

Cinder grinned and pulled out the vile with blood in it.

"And?"

"She has yet to unlock her potential. Pain doesn't do it."

"Find a way then, and make sure your plan works this time."

"It will work."

"Her power is like a God Cinder. None would be able to stop her."

"The Avatar and the others?"

"Pawns. She will be more powerful than every being in existence, save a handful. None of them would be able to stop her. Not even the God of thunder himself."

"And with him at our side as wellâ€|.."

Another voice entered the conversation,

Then none can stop us.

* * *

><p>AN Hey guys! Sorry for not updating in like a month, but finals, school, relationships, and my own novel have kept me really busy. Alas I have returned! This story will go on!**

So for an explanation, Wrex was beat because he got frozen solid. Plain and simple. Still he's kind of a Bada so he broke out and kind of saved Elsa!**

****Anyway, more secrets will be revealed. Only 15 more chapter left in Part I. Votes are in and the relationships are set for later. I won't reveal what romance will happen but some will. It is to be hoped that y'all won't be disappointed.****

****One last thing, I will be revamping the entire story before this chapter. What does this mean? I will go back and reedit the story, for detail, grammar, and story errors. Nothing major will change but seeing how much better quality my book is over this I feel like you guys and this story deserve the same treatment. So I will be eventually, this summer, updating each chapter again with completely rewritten interactions. The only chapters that won't really be rewritten as of now are Interlude 1, this chapter and possibly last chapter.****

****Interlude 2 will be coming soon whenever the story permits.****

****Review!****

****Thanks for reading! God bless you guys****

35. Part I Chapter 33 (Beta'd)

****Part I****

****The Voice and Face of all Evil****

****Chapter 33: Day 6****

*** * ***

><p>Fire.

An entity older than time itself, or at least older than a Queen who commanded the ice.

Her eyes glistened and she stumbled around, head twirling while she tried to think.

Her head hurt and thinking only made it worse. A pain that felt like fire burning not just her body, but further than that.

Elsa clutched at her head feeling only pain, still she tried to open her eyes, looking and not seeing anything but shades and vague colors.

She saw fire again. For reason it was the only thing she could see. Wings made of fire and a great roar.

A woman in green, fire surrounding her and a fear washed over the Queen's heart. Whatever was happening, the woman was inconceivably powerful. More powerful than anything she had ever seen.

The fire engulfed a place, but she couldn't recognize it. The pain kept it from being clear.

_Then there was a song. Not one with words, music, or even from a

human, but that of an animal. A bird. Great and powerful._

Pain hit her again and she screamed trying to keep her mind intact. For the fighters it would've been easier, but she had never felt pain. Not like this.

Images flew in.

Anna, smiling and waving at someone she didn't know, a red hooded figure.

Shepard, yelling while holding her weapon.

Chief, struggling against an opponent twice his size.

Korra, eyes glowing and water surrounding her.

Fire, flickering and engulfing a building.

A planet burning.

Thunder and lightning roaring through the sky.

Nothing.

* * *

><p>Eyes shot open, and the once Queen of Arendelle screamed. She shot up in the bed, pulling what covers were on closer to her.<p>

A single drop of sweat rolled down her forehead while her eyes adjusted to the room.

Wooden walls, dying fire in the corner, the sun barely beginning to rise in the window, a rug, and her covers made from fur, and antlers hanging on the wall.

"Elsa?" A voice asked.

The blonde woman quickly turned her head, far faster than should've been possible for a human. Her eyes scanned the person sitting in the corner. A man. She knew him yet her mind had trouble placing him, the pain was still there, just on a lesser level.

"Chiefâ€|. Toraq?" She asked rubbing her forehead, her eyes closing shut hard while she tried to force away the pain.

The man nodded and stood up, "You've been out for almost twelve hours," He stated walking towards her.

"How long?" Elsa asked through a squint and grit teeth. She hadn't heard him. A ringing in her head had started, and slowly it was getting louder..

"Twelve hours." Tonraq replied with a frown. "Headache?"

"Yesâ€|" The Queen nodded. She let ice form on her hand and pressed the cold to her head. It didn't really work considering the fact she couldn't feel the cold.

"Figured. You had a concussion. Our healers took care of any major damage but you need to rest. A concussion is no small thing, at least not the one you suffered," Toraq said, his voice fell slightly and Elsa caught it, eyeing him curiously.

"Howâ€¦ How bad was it?"

The leader of the South stared at her for a few moments then looked towards the door. No one came through and he sighed.

In a low voice he replied, "Elsaâ€¦ You could've died. Your body is not as durable as a normal benders. A blow to the head like that would've killed any non bender but you, fortunately, are a tad more durable than a non bender. We didn't tell your sister, had to kick her and that man out, while our healers worked butâ€¦ It was bad. You're heart even stopped for a few moments. You're lucky to be alive."

Elsa stared at him wide eyed. She had almost died, but she didn't feel anything. No fear, no worry. Why?

She sighed, and another bolt of pain hit her head.

She screamed, grasping her head and suddenly going into seizure, her body twitching violently, and eyes closing shut again all the while her ice powers flew out of control.

As all rational behavior left her, a single voice, transparent and almost inaudible, stood out, _"Our time has comeâ€¦|"_

"Elsa!" Tonraq roared jumping to his feet.

What they didn't know, was that she was not the only one in pain.

* * *

><p>Shepard held herself against a wall, the pain in her head almost as bad as the time when she dying from Harbringers blast.<p>

How that was even possible, she had no idea.

Her grip tightened on her hair.

Flashes, visions of people, beings, creatures she had never seen filled her head.

She felt her bitotics flaring and she was rewarded when she heard the break of several glass vases in the hallway she was in, her power having rocketed out and destroying everything in a five yard radius except the walls, floor, and roof.

"Commander?"

Katherine looked up, her breath short and sweat coating her face.

Reluctant Promise floated in front of her, staring at her with she thought was a look of curiosity.

"What?" She asked, the pain taking away whatever patience she

normally had. The monitor didn't respond and instead scanned her, a blue flickering light running over her body. She didn't care. She just wanted him to leave so she could focus on getting rid of the pain.

"Commander your heart rate is elevated and your dopamine level is considerably high. Is there something wrong?"

"Bad headache."

"Negative. Your body shows no signs of aches, or natural pain in any region," Promise stated as it floated in front of her.

"Look I have a migraine. How about you bring me something to help instead of telling me I don't have one?"

"If the pain your voice patterns indicates is accurate then there is nothing here that can help sooth you over. I am sorry."

She groaned and let herself fall against the wall sliding down to where she was leaning on it.

"The only thing I can offerâ€¦"

A scream pierced the air and Shepard grabbed her hair, threatening to pull out all of it while her voice reached new levels of pitch. Finally her voice cut off and the Commander shivered against the wall.

Promise floated lower towards her and his light dimmed.

"Well Commanderâ€¦ I will keep you company," He said, somehow his voice holding a caring nature to it.

Katherine didn't reply instead holding her shoulders and letting a few tears escape. Whatever was happening to her was not normal. That she knew. She just hoped no one caught her like this.

* * *

><p>Korra huffed over and over, her body shaking and fire escaping every time she screamed.<p>

She was lying on the floor, scorch marks, and tears in the earth rocketing out from her body. She twitched involuntarily and more fire stretched out from her hands, charring the floor.

Fortunately she was in one of the earth benders training rooms underneath a nearby police station.

She had gone here to train, and relax, especially after hearing what had happened at the South Pole. Shepard had been worried to say the least, Chief had been quiet like always and she had been down right pissed. They had considered going down there to consult with Elsa and Wrex but after some thinking, they had decided to send the Normandy down there and to drop off several Promethean Knights and Sentinels to watch over the Queen, seeing that she was currently in the most danger of all of them.

It didn't matter now thought. Not with the pain wracking her body. It

felt like bloodbending multiplied by ten and tormenting her head more than anything ever had.

She was surprised no one had heard her scream and basically destroy the entire training area when the pain she wasn't surprised at the same time.

Something was defiantly wrong and she could barely manage the pain.

Maybe it was all in her mind. The pain was definitely there.

Another surge and her body screamed in agony, jerking upwards violently as tears openly flowed down her face.

Her eyes glowed white and another surge of fire scorned the room.

She didn't hear anything but her screams.

Nothing, but the pain existed to her now.

* * *

><p>John clenched his fist, breaking apart the training dummy in his hands. His teeth were grit, and his helmet continued to blare an alarm thanks to his elevated heart rate, which was elevated beyond safe measures even for him.<p>

The pain that hit him was immense. He couldn't believe how much it hurt. It was even a challenge for him to stay standing.

Yet he was trained for pain, and it took all he had to keep himself upright. He was hunched over, his head resting on one of the walls while his arms held him against the wall.

His suit continued to give him reports of his body becoming unstable, but the only thing that interested him was the fact his brain had no fluctuations, meaning whatever he was feeling was not centered in his head.

Still all the pain was coming from there.

He had no idea what it meant.

How could pain of such an intensity come from his head, yet it didn't even register?

Maybe he was losing his mind.

A vision.

It was someone he once knew.

A friend being held up by the Didact. The Forerunner chanting something about his power and humanities destined defeat.

Kelly.

A blazing weapon and it went through his lifelong friend.

She slumped and a voice called to him.

"Don't make a girl a promise you know you can't keep."

The Spartan lost it.

Pain and emotion surging through him, he slammed his fist into the rock wall, shattering it apart, then grabbing a large chunk of it and sending it hurling into another wall, breaking that one part as well.

He yelled, no one to hear him, and fell to his knees clutching his head.

Even a Spartan could only endure so much.

* * *

><p>Ten minutes earlier

Rapuznel walked into the room. It was dim, but the window staring out into space was beautiful, the stars shining through and glowing brilliantly.

It reminded her of lanterns. Floating ones.

"R is it?" A voice asked.

The young girl looked down, sheepishly brushing a strand of her short hair behind her ear. Her old clothing had been thrown away and she now wore a pair of jeans and a dull purple top from one of Earth's colonies. Hackett had ordered her an entire wardrobe after meeting her.

She had impressed him.

"Yup. Thats the name," R replied with a small smile.

The wheelchair turned around and the Asari sitting in it smiled up at her.

"My names Liara. I'm afriend of Shepard's," Liara smiled sadly. She hated being back here while her friends were trapped and helpless but alas, she couldn't do much either way to help. She was unable to walk with a missing leg and until her request went through, would be without one for the foreseeable future.

"When is Shepard coming back? In a few days right?" R asked curiously.

Liara bit her cheek, "Soon. She'll be back soon," She lied through a smile.

They had kept the truth from R.

Of course they figured she could handle it, but they didn't trust her. She had done nothing to earn it and they wanted to keep Shepard's predicament close to the chest, so they kept the truth form her. Liara told herself it was for the girl's sake, but she had a

hard time convincing herself of that lie as well.

"So are you ready?" The Asari asked, rolling the wheelchair towards another chair in her office. She had a new office aboard Hackett's ship. It was small but cozy.

"Um yeah, question, what is a mind meld?"

Liara looked up at her. The Keeper and Hackett wanted to know more about the Flood, and outside from Chief, she was the one with most experience. Not everyone could have survived a few months on a Flood infested planet.

So she was the only one they could turn to. R had been willing to help and had saved them from giving her an explanation earlier, but now Liara had to explain. Either way it was only fair if R knew what she was getting into.

"A mind meld is when an Asari joins minds with another person. We can look into memories, emotions, almost anything about the other person. Its dangerous though. If itsâ€¦"

"I'm ready."

Liara blinked a few times in surprise. Even Shepard had taken longer to convince.

The Asari had been against the decision to mind meld with R, but being a guest aboard the ship she had no say in almost anything. Still, she had to make sure R knew that mind melding was not for the faint of heart.

"Are youâ€¦"

"Yes," Rapunzel stated defiantly. She could do anything. She knew she could. She had toâ€¦ she had failed once before. Never again. She would never fail at anything again.

"Ok, sit down," Liara ordered. The girl did as told and sat down.

"R please think this through. Melding is notâ€¦."

"Its ok. I'll be fine," R reassured with a shaky smile. Just because she was determined didn't mean she was made of steel.

"Okâ€¦" Liara looked down, suddenly looking up with black eyes, "Embrace eternity."

That was when the pain started.

R screamed grabbing the sides of her head and falling out of the chair.

Liara pulled out of the mind meld and gasped. "R!" She yelled out of breath. The brief connection had given Liara a glimpse of the pain R was enduring. She couldn't even fathom it.

R screamed again, the sound curtailing Liara's blood and sending a chill down her spine.

"Hackett!" The Asari yelled into her com, "Get a medic down here now!"

* * *

><p>The Black Knight slammed his fist into the wall, ripping a hole in it.<p>

Pain once more, and he fell back, pulling his fist out, and stumbling backwards into another wall while Cinder watched in confusion.

"Whats going on?" The Witch asked taking a step towards the Knight.

"It's too early. They moved too early," The Knight muttered.

"What's too early?" Cinder asked flaring her own power as a wave of red bitotics rocketed out from the Knight, cracking the walls around the two. The blood stains and the dark atmosphere did nothing to help with the pain in the Knights mind.

"Leave me! Go play with your experiments," He roared, slamming another fist into a wall.

Cinder blinked in confusion and backed away into the veiled darkness beyond the room.

Another roar and a red wave of power shook the place to its core.

* * *

><p>"What is it?" The Keeper asked rushing onto the bridge of Admiral Hacketts ship, red lights flashing all over.<p>

Hackett was leaning over a holotable at the center of his bridge, Claire, the Keeper's AI, standing in hologram form on the table playing with several holographic graphs floating in mid air.

"Ma'am," Claire started, "We have over two thousand portals opening up simultaneously around the Milky Way galaxy."

"Two Thousand?" The Keeper asked, astounded by the numbers.

"We have energy readings going haywire across the Galaxy. Every major party is picking it up, the Bartarians are even detecting signatures outside the galaxy," Hackett informed looking at her for some explanation.

"Admiral the Arbiter is contacting us."

"Put him through." A new hologram formed next to Claire, the Elite standing tall and arms behind his back.

"Admiral, the Sangheili have detected Thousands of energy signatures across the galaxy, they match the signal of a reality transporter," The Elite reported in a worried tone.

"Is it the Flood?" Hackett asked.

"No. No Flood ships are being reported anywhere within the orals direct vicinities." The Arbiter reported.

"My mother had a theory," The Keeper started, letting her hand hold up her chin, eyes scanning the graphs Claire was working on. "What she theorized, is that there are things called dimensional barriers. Whatever they are, it keeps begins from being able to traverse between dimensions without an immense power source. She predicted, how one day, the dimensional barriers would fall apart because of all the traveling between them. If there was too much traffic, like a circuit, the barriers could in a word overload."

"What do you mean barriers?"

"Dimensional barriers are essentially the shields to keep powerful creatures from escaping form one dimension to the next. Naturally there are very few that posses the ability to traverse the dimensions, the Gravemind being one. Those few were never enough to overwhelm the barriers but with the Gravemind and his allies waging war across the dimensions, as my mother believed he was, then ,the extra numbers, namely ships and other beings, could have overwhelmed the barriers entirely."

"So what happens when they're down?" The Arbiter asked.

"Wellâ€¦ I have no idea," The Keeper sighed, "Theoretically nothing. At least from what she told me. These barriers, if down would only allow... increased travel, meaning weaker beings and power sources would be able to travel through the dimensions."

"So normal humans could travel through?"

"No. A slip space drive, which is considerably weaker than a reality transporter, could punch a hole through the dimensions without any extra power source. Perhaps even normal FTL could,"

"Could this be a danger?" Hackett asked.

"Unknown. As I said earlier, its only a theory. For all we know something else is going on and we just have no idea what. That's what happens when ones mess with different dimensions. Strange things, even we can't explain, begin to happen."

* * *

><p>"So you had it too?" Shepard asked leaning over the table and closer towards Korra. The Avatar responded with a nod and meet the Commanders eyes,<p>

"It wasn't the best experience I've ever had."

"You and me both."

"It felt like my skull was on fire," Korra said moving the noodles in her bowl around, her appetite having never even existed.

"Is it common to have headaches around here?" Shepard asked ignoring the food on her own plate. They were alone in the private dining room set aside for the 'foreign ambassadors'. Promise had gone off to do

whatever he did while he wasn't with them but only after he had made sure Shepard's headache had stopped. Chief, well they hadn't seen him all day.

"Nope. At least not one that bad. What about where you're from?"

"Not even close to that painful," The Commander shook her head and once again looked at her plate. The headache had lasted almost two hours and she had lost her appetite for the day thanks to it.

She pushed her plate to the side. "I'm gonna go down to the training area, get a few hours of practice in case we run into anymore assassins."

"You know what," Korra stated getting up from her own seat, "I say we have ourselves a girls night out. What do you say? After the whole assassin thing and then this headache I'd say we earned one." The Avatar grinned mischievously.

"I don't think that'sâ€|"

"Come on! One nights not gonna hurt anyone!"

"It's not even night yetâ€|"

"Well we have a whole day then! Come on it'll be fine! Besides we kind of deserve it. You know, a day off."

Shepard frowned and stared at the young Avatar, wondering if she had a point. She didn't have anything work related to do, and she was an expert shot already.

Katherine pondered her options. She had already contacted the groups earlier in the morning before her headache, there was nothing they could do for Elsa at this point so that was a dead end, she had no real reason to train other than for her own amusement, there was nothing to fix, nothing to fight, nothing to plan for since they were waiting on the Keeper's new ship and fleet to get them out.

Slowly the Commander looked up at the Avatar.

"One hour," She had decided to entertain the girls idea for a little bit.

"Yes! Come on! I've only been here a few times but I bet there loads of things to do!"

* * *

><p>"So you're telling me that I still can't see my sister," Anna deadpanned with obvious annoyance.<p>

"Yes. Now go," The water bender guard stated with a frown.

"Why youâ€|" The hot headed girl started before being grabbed and pulled back by the blond man whom always seemed to be by her side.

"Look calm down," Kristoff started as he pulled Anna away, the girl

still glaring at the water benders standing outside Elsa's temporary hut. "Getting mad isn't going to make anything better. I'm sure they'll let us know when anything happens."

The girl sighed, "Yeah I guess you're right."

She looked back as heavy footsteps followed them, and glared lightly at the Krogan who had been following them all day.

"Why is he following us?" She whispered to the once ice deliverer.

"Because you two always seem to get into trouble and Shepard doesn't want you two getting yourselves killed while your sisters out of the picture," Wrex called out from his spot a few feet behind them.

"Oh I canâ€¦"

"Don't say it little girl," The Krogan replied through grit teeth. Unlike R, these two got on his nerves.

"Don't say what?" Anna stopped in her tracks and crossed her arms frowning at the much larger alien.

"Is she always like this?" Wrex asked looking at the blond man, whom seemed to be the more rational of the two.

"Only when she's upset," He shrugged which earned him a glare from Anna.

"Yes I'm upset," Anna stated looking back at Wrex, "My sister just got attacked, some crazy freak just tried to kill us, and now they won't even let me see my sister. Of course I'm upset!"

"Why do you think your sister wanted you to stay on the ship?"

"Wait, what doesâ€¦"

"Look," Wrex started taking a step towards the far younger princess and leaning down closer to her, "Your sister wanted you to stay on the ship so you'd be safe and I'm guessing keep out of trouble. I'm betting she at least figured things would get bad down here, and she didn't want to have to worry about her sister getting herself killed. You already snuck off the ship to stay with us and your sister almost died. So you better stay in line girl or I'm locking you up so you don't cause anymore trouble. Got it?"

Anna blinked a few times and nodded slowly.

"Good. Now get back to whatever you were doing." Wrex turned away from the two and walked a distance away. He wouldn't let them out of his sight, but he didn't want to talk to them and he was sure they felt the same way.

"Anna?" Kristoff asked looking at her with concern etched in his face.

"I'm fineâ€¦ Letsâ€¦" Anna let out a breath she was holding and turned away, not meeting his eyes, "Lets just go do somethingâ€¦" She

continued walking the same way they had been, but her stride had lost its energy.

The man sighed. He felt bad for her. She was head strong and always had good intentions, but she was too head strong sometimes. Still, he wouldn't give up on her, he couldn't.

* * *

><p>"And this..."<p>

A shot rang out, ricocheting off the walls but fortunately missing anyone inside the firing range.

"Hey watch it! A gun is not a toy!"

"Sorry just let me..."

Another shot rang out, this time much closer to the two women.

"Damn it! Just don't press the trigger!"

"I'm sorry! Its not like I've been doing this my whole life!"

Jacqueline growled and threw her hands up in the air. If it hadn't been for Admiral Hackett she would've never taken this job, but like he said, R or Rapunzel needed someone to look out for her. At least for the time being.

"Ok," the N7 started, "Just get that pistol over there. I don't think Assault rifles are really your thing."

"What's a pistol again?" R asked with an embarrassing frown.

"The smallest gun..." Jacqueline sighed rubbing her forehead.

"Got it..."

"No that's not..."

A third shot rang out this time shattering Jacqueline's data pad, which she had been using to take notes of R's progress.

"Fucking... Ahhhh!" The soldier roared tossing the doomed pad to the ground.

"Sorry..."

Before either could say another word the door to the firing range opened.

The two looked over at the door, Jacqueline looking ready to rip apart anyone that pissed her off anymore and R looking out of place with a submachine gun cradled in her arms.

"Arbiter," The N7 greeted standing up straighter and saluting.

"Uh hi?" R responded glancing at Jacqueline weirdly. She knew about army salutes but why would Jacqueline be saluting the lizard guy. She

thought he was just a friend of the Chief's.

"Leave us," He said looking at Jacqueline. His voice brokered no augment and though the solider was confused by the sudden intrusion, she nodded and walked out, slightly relieved that she could get a break from trying to teach R.

The Elite waited till the automatic doors shut and looked back at the younger girl with his hands held behind his back.

"So..." Rapunzel started nervously.

"I was informed that you had what humans call, a migraine?" His voice was deep and he strutted over towards the weapons laid out on the table.

"Yeah?"

"It happened at the same time as the dozens of portals began to open," He turned back towards her, eyeing her carefully. She didn't notice but his hand was resting next to his energy sword.

"Wait what happened?" R asked.

"Your 'migraine' happened at a the same time the new portals opened. Do you know why?"

"Bad luck?"

"Hmmm..." Again the elite moved away looking towards the targets at the end of the firing range.

He was being cautious. After Lithyia's betrayal, a fear began to fester in his heart. He feared another betrayal. He knew one would do it for power, or out of spite, but now with what had happened with the sudden portals opening and closing, it was too much coincidence that R had felt pain at the same time. He would keep a closer eye on her, such as how he came to see her.

The Elite had to know if she was capable of evil. If she would betray them as Lithyia did.

How could he do that?

He had to gain her trust.

Had to find out what she was really like.

And how did you gain someone's trust?

You had to give them yours.

"Do you know the story of the Didact?"

* * *

><p>"Welcome Citizens of Ba Sing Se to Underground
RRRRRRRRumbleeeeeee!"<p>

Thousands of voices cheered throughout the massive underground

stadium, almost shaking it with the power and adrenaline carried in them.

Shepard looked around anxiously, completely unsure of what was going on. She had no idea what Earth Rumble was but when Korra had gotten wind of it, she had dragged Shepard along with her.

"Tonight we have a special match! We have the underdog, rookie of the year, The Volcano, fighting the experienced three time champ of the ring, the one, the only! Unnnndddddeerrrrrminnnerrrr!"

Two men stood at the opposite ends of the ring made of solid rock. One was large, built and bald with a permanent frown, the other a skinny guy who was tall and stood with a smirk on his face.

The arena itself was simple, massive stands circling the arena in the center, stands selling various things below the arena, and crowds of thousands cheering on their favorite competitor.

"So what exactly is Earth Rumble?" Shepard asked having to yell so Korra could hear her as the crowd cheered and the announcer gave certain stats for each man.

"Well from what I've read its a lot like Pro Bending but only with one on one matches!" Korra explained having to cup her mouth to amplify her voice.

"What's Pro Bending?"

The crowd let out another furious cheer that drowned out whatever Korra was going to say next. Shepard frowned and repeated her question, but again a cheer drowned out any response.

"NNNNooooooooowwwwww! Get ready to RRRRRRRRUUUUUUMMMBBBBLLLLLLLLLEEEEE!" The announcer cheered and again the crowd followed suit. It reminded Shepard of whatever sporting events she had seen in TV back in her galaxy. Back home. On Earth.

"Who do you think's gonna win?!" Korra asked with an adrenaline filled grin, right after she had cheered for one of the two men.

Shepard studied the two. Neither looked too skilled, but the smirk in the skinner one made her feel like he was too confident, but maybe he had a reason to be.

"I say the small guy," Shepard replied, again having to yell for Korra to hear her.

"Nah! Other Underminers got this in the bag! I mean come on this guy doesn't even have an original name!" Korra bragged, then she cheered again, screaming for the Underminer to take the smaller man, the Volcano, down.

"Let the match begin!"

A cheer. Then the two began.

The larger man, Underminer, started off smashing his fist into the ground, earth ripping out from the arena floor and racing at the

skinner foe.

The other man let his smirk fade and, using flames, rocketed off to the left, successfully avoiding the attack.

He then retaliated and sent two small bolts of fire at the Underminer, to which the bender blocked by lifting up a wall of rocks to protect him.

Now, having a slight advantage, the Volcano flipped up into the air and with several spinning kicks let loose streams of fire from above.

With a roll, the large man avoided the flames, but was knocked slightly off balance from the sheer force of the blasts. He steadied himself and retaliated by launching three chunks of the arena floor at the fire bender.

Having barely landed the Volcano was unable to avoid all of the boulders. He managed to dodge two but the third slammed right into his chest, which sent him flying back.

The Underminer didn't let up and charged forward while holding his arms out, letting tears in the earth follow him on each side.

Despite the brief setback the fire bender spun to his feet, lashing out with flames.

More boulders flew at him despite his counter, and he was forced to dodge. He still managed a few more pot shots, but he had to avoid once more as the Underminer began another assault.

"Whoooo!" Korra yelled thrusting her fist into the air.

Shepard couldn't help but grin. Mindless entertainment. It had been a long time since she had done something like this.

Another clashing of fire and earth, and the crowd let out another cheer.

* * *

><p>It was quiet.<p>

The sound of pattering rain being the only thing to break the silence. That, along with heavy footsteps.

Footsteps only a Spartan could make.

Chief didn't care though, the rain covered up the noise he made. Either way it's not as if he was trying to sneak up on someone.

He was out. Walking. There was nothing else to do so he left, looking for Shepard and Korra. He had learned from one of the guards that the two had left to what was called the Underground Rumble.

So he went looking for them, wondering what the rumble could be. What was so important that it would keep the Commander distracted from her duties? They had to keep an eye on everything. The Flood could move

on the city any moment, and yet her and the Avatar were out doing who knew what.

The Spartan didn't approve, but he knew he needed to find them, at the very least to protect them in case of an ambush.

As he walked he thought.

Things were different. He knew that. The Flood were more of a danger now than ever before, threatening multiple universes now. Yet, the Gravemind was not one of them. He always had thought the Gravemind was apart of the Flood yet it wasn't.

He wondered who the true enemy was. He wondered who was behind it all. From what the Black Knight had said when they fought back on Elsa's home, he knew there were more enemies than just the Gravemind or Catalyst.

'They, we, are behind your comprehension!' _It wasn't what the knight stated but the way he had said it, that made John think. It made him wonder if there was more to everything then they knew.

Maybe he was wrong.

Maybe the Gravemind was behind it all.

His mind raced with possibilities.

Elsa was a target, considering the fact they had singled her out and attacked her, but why? What did she have that they didn't? He wanted to know, then he would be able to figure out who and what was behind this, or at least what they wanted.

Elsa wasn't a strong fighter like him, Shepard, or Korra. So it couldn't be that.

She was a Queen, but Shepard was the golden girl of her galaxy, he was the last of the Reclaimer, and Korra this special avatar. Her being a Queen wasn't it.

She had powers. That might've been it.

What if she wasn't a target at all? What if they all were?

The Spartan stopped, having noticed that the street he was on was now deserted. Nothing alive but him stood within it, even all the shops windows and doors were closed.

As he searched the area, his gut telling him something wasn't right, he connected the dots. Shepard was attacked first in the market, then Elsa in the South Pole. So either he or Korra was next.

And from the look of things.

Footsteps behind him.

He was next.

Earth flew right by his head, having missed thanks to him moving a

split second before. With that the Spartan spun on his heels, drawing his rifle and blasting the attacker in the chest at point blank range.

His attacker fell back, smoking from the shot that had burned through his chest, as dead as a doornail.

The Spartan studied him.

It wasn't one of the black hand assassin. Just a boy. A teenaged boy, dressed in rags.

"Hey he got Kalvo!" A new voice popped up.

"No ones messes with Kalvo and gets away with it!" A second roared.

John quickly scanned his surroundings, trying to figure out exactly what was going on.

Around a dozen other thugs moved out from the dark alleyways in between the homes and shops, all roaring for him to pay.

Gang territory. Some things never changed.

"All right boys! Get him!" A new voice cried out, the leader, a tall man with bulging muscles and a smug look on him.

He was being mugged.

Fire and earth flew at him from multiple directions, but the attacks were unfocused and lacked any real aim.

He dodged with ease, letting three fire blasts soar above him before running and flipping over a large boulder sent his way.

The moment he landed he retaliated.

Light Rifle rounds flew towards their targets and like flies the gang members began to drop.

Their clothing offered no protection, and despite their bending abilities, they couldn't bend as fast as he could shoot.

A storm of fire roared for his feet, forcing him to pull up a hard light shield which split the flames like the red sea.

Several more boulders flew his way, forcing him to move. With a roll he evaded them, though one almost caught him.

Another ball of fire later and John fired at the nearest attacker who in turn pulled up a wall of rock a second before to block the rifle fire. It succeeded and the fire washed over him, draining his shields part way.

The Spartan didn't stop and instead fired the moment the fire cleared, hitting the fire bender in the head.

Before the bender had even fallen John charged. Earth benders retaliated all the while the leader watched.

Shards of earth raced at him, and John was forced to dive off to the side. A piece of earth caught him in his foot.

He stumbled forward, but managed a few more shots. Several hit their targets but most missed. He caught his balance once more and threw up his hard light shield again. A large chunk of earth shattered against it.

His boots scrapped against the ground from the hit which actually pushed him back a few inches. He hadn't expected them to hit so hard.

Several more thugs unleashed various attacks and the Spartan was forced in a roll.

Fire swirls around him draining his shield and a boulder hit him, knocking the Spartan out of his roll.

He rolled again barely dodging several more fire blasts and a small earth quake sent right at him.

Using his momentum to his advantage he managed to push himself back onto his feet, and slammed back against the wall of another shop, firing as he got up.

One of the fire benders and an earth bender had anticipated this and managed to dodge or block his shots, but the others weren't as smart, the hard light tri-burst killing them instantly.

He dove out of the way as more earth shards that broke through the wall he had stood against.

The Spartan broke out into a run and dove through a window shop, fire and earth flying at him from the few surviving gang members.

He moved to the next window, quickly reloading his weapon. He glanced out the window.

Four left including the leader.

Something wasn't right.

Where were all the guards? Or Police? Where the guards supposed to be escorting him?

John flexed his hands and fired.

Hard light ripped through air and hit the bender to the far right. He readjusted his aim and fired again.

Another one down.

Two left.

He rolled to his left, hiding beneath a different wall, and waited.

Fire soared through the windows and large chunks of earth shattered the walls, fortunately they never hit him or the part of the wall he

hid behind.

He waited.

One...

Two...

Three...

He spun to his feet and his motion sensor went off behind him. Someone had snuck up on him. Again the Spartan turned only to get hit with a jet of water at point blank range.

Surprisingly the jet was strong enough to completely throw the half ton soldier off his feet, flinging him out the window, and into the street.

Glass rained down, and before he could react, the water froze around him, incasing his armor down to the finest creases.

With no leverage the Spartan was having difficulty, but before he could try to break free, two other benders, dressed in long green robes with solid dark green round hats on their heads stepped out from the shop he had been in along with two women.

Each of the women had dark hair, but one was tall and thin with green eyes and blue clothing. The other was shorter with blue eyes and red clothing.

"Too easy," One of the woman stated.

John struggled and he felt the sudden shift in ice holding him.

A crack in the ice.

With one swift movement he broke free, shattering the ice and drawing his knife and side arm in one motion.

A shot went off, downing the last gang member, and he lunged forward, driving his knife right for the taller woman's head.

She smirked.

Suddenly John froze.

He blinked.

The Spartan couldn't move. Nothing responded to him and the girl only stared at him with a cocky grin, one hand raised up next to her head in a sickening angle.

Without any hesitation she knelt to the ground, all the while holding her hand out and then laying it on the ground.

John had never felt something like this. He had no control. No control over any of his body. It was surreal, and painful. He felt himself twitching, struggling to regain control.

His knife fell from his hand, clattering to the ground, and with her

hand the Spartan was forced to the ground involuntarily kneeling, his armor even fighting to keep him in control.

Rain pattered against his armor, and the two mysterious men in robes moved behind him, and suddenly he felt earth slam around his wrists, closing around them like jaws of steel.

Wind howled, and the gang leader grinned, the shorter woman tossing him a bag of gold, "For your... Expenses..." Kicking the body of one of the dead gang members.

She looked up at the moon. It was full.

John scowled under his helmet, his armor already preparing to go into complete lockdown.

"Too easy."

* * *

><p>Elsa looked towards the window as lightning flashed and thunder roared off in the distance. Rain could be heard battering against the window and the wooden hut she was in.<p>

She felt the bandages around her head, and sighed when she ran a hand over them.

Another sip of the tea in hand, and she sat back against the pillow behind her.

She continued reading the book on her lap.

She felt useless.

Completely powerless.

She had been so utterly defenses against her attackers.

Helpless.

Again.

Ice coated the room, snow falling from the now frozen ceiling. This time however it didn't bother her.

The Queen let herself feel the disappointment, the pain. She was failing. Failing to protect her sister, failing to protect her people. If it had been up to her to defend them against these enemies they would all be dead.

She needed to be better, to be stronger.

The blonde looked at the snow floating around and the ice claiming the walls now.

A sigh escaped her lips and she closed her eyes.

A single tear rolled down her cheek.

She was no Queen. Just a failure.

* * *

><p>Shepard laughed and walked inside the hotels lobby with Korra next to her laughing just as hard.<p>

"I can't believe you punched that guy in the face!" Korra laughed, her exhaustion making everything funny for her.

"He had it coming," Shepard explained with an amused grin. She had to admit it was funny.

Some man had tried to pick a fight with the Commander while at the match, mainly because she didn't want to move from her seat which the man claimed was his. She wasn't sure if Korea could tell, but she knew he was drunk, so a single punch and he was out cold.

"You hit him once and he was out!" Korra exclaimed as if she was some sports star.

"Well he was drunk," Shepard explained as the two headed towards the stairs. She eyed the lobby, noticing the lack of guards around.

"Really? I couldn't tell," Korra shrugged, "Still he probably..."

"Shepard!" A voice from behind them.

The two turned and it was their AI friend.

"The guards they're all dead!" The AI exclaimed in a clearly worried voice.

"What?!" Korea asked startled, her eyes getting wide.

"Promise what're you talking about?" Shepard asked, though she drew her rifle off her back.

"The gaurds! Dead! Basement!"

"And Chief?"

"Unknown. I saw him leave and the guards we're all alive ready to follow him. I headed up to the roof for a chat with EDI over the Long range Coms, then, two minutes ago I came down to see if you had returned and everyone is dead! I've been scanning the place for the past minute till you showed up."

Korra and Shepard exchanged a glance.

Something was very wrong.

* * *

><p>Cinder studied, her hand caressing her chin in thought, "Which one first?" She asked to the Knight behind her.<p>

He simply changed the direction he was looking in and the Witch knew.

She grabbed the blonde bounty hunter and dragged her to the portal behind the knight, the blood red floors in perfect contrast with her blue bodysuit.

The Black Knight took one last look at the other Prisoners of War and stepped through the portal. Cinder looked at the blonde in hand with disgust and followed the knight through.

Death.

The only word able to describe the world they were now on.

Gray sky's, with lightning brightly igniting it, but with no thunder following afterwards. The only sound was that of howling winds shrieking through the sky.

Rubble littered the ground. Bones, debris, from a battle long past.

Ash fluttered down from the sky.

"And why exactly do we need her?" Cinder asked eyeing the knight curiously.

He ignored her question and looked at piece of clothing on the floor that somehow happened to survive the ages.

Kneeling down, black armored hands grabbed the blue cloth, a large red S faded on the front of it.

He stood back up, clenching it it tightly. A red glow surrounded him and the cloth turn to ash in his hand, the era of this planet long forgotten.

"A long time ago a battle raged on this planet..." The Black Knight started looking up at the sky, "The first. The most powerful of us, was deceived, trapped by these... Heros... Till only one remained. Till only the golden warrior remained, but even he fell."

The knight turned to her, "I was created soon after, meant to hunt and destroy the five before they could become a threat again."

"Yet three of them are already together."

"Yes they are, but what better way to destroy them but with each other?" He walked over to Cinder and grabbed the blond, ripping her from Cinders clutches by the throat, "The time of Heros is over."

A red blade appeared in his hand, and without a second thought he drove it through Samus Aran's chest, "And our time has come."

Her eyes went wide and she grabbed his hand, trying to pull the blade from her.

Voluntarily, he relaxed his grip on her before grabbing her on both sides of the head; looking down at the once powerful bounty hunter.

Cinder turned away as the screams rang out. A crunch suddenly filled the air, sickening and gruesome, the screams stopping

immediately.

She felt the red liquid swirl around her feet and she turned back to the Black Knight.

His hands were held out, a blue glow ran through his hands and throughout his body. It subsided and a red glow replaced it.

He raised his hand and a pistol formed into it. Not any random one, but an exact replica of Samus's.

"You know what to do."

Cinder nodded.

"Yes."

* * *

><p>AN So sorry for taking forever. Hopefully this Chapter doesn't disappoint too much. Next update will be an interlude.**

Anyway several things are happening as you may be able to tell. I can't say obviously but yeah. So theres only maybe eight or less chapters left, of course with a kind of final battle ***type***** thing, and Part I will be over! Then starts Part II with the Star Trek Arc. **

**Thanks for reading, review please! God bless you all! **

36. Part I Interlude 2 (Partly Beta'd)

Interlude 2: The Firelord/ A Spartans dilemma.

* * *

><p>A door slammed shut, and a young fire bender, groaning in frustration, walked over to a plush chair, sitting down with obvious annoyance.<p>

Sitting nearby reading a paper was a young woman with black hair, dressed nicely, "Guess things didn't go well?" Asami asked barely looking up at Mako.

"No they didn'tâ€|. The Firelord's asking to meet in private with that Garrus guy." Mako sighed leaning back in his chair.

"And why exactly is that bad?" The wound woman said raising an eyebrow.

The fire bender sighed again and closed his eyes, knowing the girl would lecture him for his answer, "Because Beifong wanted me to make sure none of theseâ€|. peopleâ€| were ever alone with him. She doesn't trust them and quite frankly neither do Iâ€|."

"Are you kidding me?" Asami asks, her voice rising as she puts the paper down once and for all, "Mako they saved our lives. The least we could do is trust them!"

"They saved our livesâ€¦" Mako started looking up at her, "Unalaq did the same remember? And he almost destroyed the world, almost killed Korra, almost destroyed Republic city and almost plunged the world into eternal darkness."

Asami opened her mouth to say something, but nothing came to her. She shook her head and went back to reading her paper.

She hated to admit it, but the boy had a point.

Trust was hard to come by.

* * *

><p>Garrus let out a slow breath as the firebender guards let him through after, what he guessed was twenty minutes of making sure he wasn't armed.<p>

He walked slowly, his boots echoing though the elaborate hallway, two firebenders on either side of him.

Truthfully, he was impressed by how seriously they took security here. Sure he could've slipped by unnoticed, but he wasn't here to snoop. At least, not entirely. He would keep his ears and eyes open for anything, but so far, nothing had come up.

So as he turned the corner, glancing briefly at the portraits of fire lords from history, he let his mind relax if only the slightest.

He sensed no ill will in these people, but he could be wrong.

He had been before.

As the battle hardened Turian made his way down the halls, to where he could see open doors and a lone firebender standing outside staring over the city below, he wondered why the Firelord would call him so late at night.

It was strange to him.

Minutes passed, and he moved past the large double doors that led to a balcony overlooking the Fire Nation capital, the lights from the city shining in the night.

The guards accompanying him stood behind at the doors, leaving him alone to approach the Firelord at the end of the balcony.

"Firelord." The Turian greeted as he takes a place a few feet behind the human bender. When he had met him earlier to discuss the news of being forced to evacuate the city, the Firelord had been very cooperative, kind, and understanding.

Still he had a few conditions, such as wanting to contact the Avatar before the ships arrived, and wanting to see the ships and go to this new universe to make sure it was safe for his people.

"Have you ever wondered what it would be like to ride a dragon?" The Firelord asked, only sparing a glance back at the Turian.

Garrus squinted in suspicion, "No not really. Why do you ask?" He asked cautiously.

"There is something I need to show you. Up at the North Pole." The Firelord stated, his voice beaming soft and dark. He turned to face Garrus, his gray hair and long beard giving him the look of an experienced and wise leader.

"Thanks for the invite butâ€¦"

A hand cut of the soldier, "Garrus," The Turian was surprised he had remembered his name, "This isn't a matter of obeying your commanding officer. There is something you need to see, and that you must report back to her."

Garrus blinked a few times, "Why can't Shepardâ€¦"

"Because its something you have to see in person. It would take to long for me to travel to Ba Sing Se then to the North from here. It's something you need to see now. I fear your Commanders in danger." His eyes became dark and the Firelord turned away.

With seemingly timed precision, a dragon roared in the sky, and dove to a stop before Zuko, flapping its wings and staring down the Turian soldier.

Zuko stepped up to where he was hanging off his dragons side from the saddle and looked back at Garrus.

"We have little time. If you don't see thisâ€¦ I fear the Commander and Avatar may have more to worry about then your Flood or Reapers." Zukos voice was dark and firebending.

Garrus looked back at the guards.

They were gone.

He looked back at the Firelord.

What was so important that he needed to leave now?

Reluctantly he followed suit and moved to mount the dragon, but not without typing in his omni tool a message.

A message to Shepard.

He wasn't going anywhere without her knowing, and he for some reason, felt he needed to warn her.

Warn her about what?

He had no idea.

* * *

><p>A sound.<p>

Soft at first.

But slowly, it grew.

High pitched.

A color followed it.

Red.

It took a minute, but finally, John was able to fully wake up, his head spinning and the alarm in his helmet blaring.

He looked around his visor, and was slightly relieved when the alarm stopped, telling him his armor was no longer in lock down.

He didn't even remember why it had locked down.

The last thing he remembered was looking up at two women, and now he was here.

With curious, yet calculating, eyes, the Spartan looked around. It was dark, with only faint light coming from below him.

The automatic flashlight on his visor powered up, letting him see further and clearer, and he wasn't surprised to see he was in a metal prison with nothing inside it but himself.

"Finally awake" A voice from his left.

The Spartan looked at whoever had spoke, realizing he had made a mistake in thinking he was alone, but to his surprise it wasn't his captor.

It was a girl.

She was chained up, her hands tied together and shackled, chains holding her to the roof, her legs tied in a similar way, with chains reaching out in every direction to make sure she couldn't escape.

Her hair was red, eyes green, a torn tunic that only covered her upper chest and hung off her back like a short cape, and skin tight green jumpsuit with golden lines forming V's on her lower chest, a weapon holster on her left leg, shoulder and knees pads, and boots wrapped in torn cloth.

John stared at her, not sure what to think. She was a prisoner, so obviously she wasn't a friend of his captors, unless they were trying to play a mind game on him. It was a possibility.

"Stare all you want. Its not getting either of us out of here anytime soon." She stated with a sigh, turning her head to look at the Spartan.

He could tell she was at least a foot and a half shorter than him, probably five' six'' in total height he estimated.

Ignoring the girl for now, he returned his attention to whatever was holding him.

A metal box, looking like a coffin that was held by chains to the

roof.

It was odd, because judging by the dimensions, John figured he should've been able to move his arms and legs, yet he couldn't.

He struggled to move, but whatever held him, held him so tightly that he had zero leverage to move his arms at all, and whatever it was, it was strong enough to keep his brute strength at bay.

"You're not getting out of that. Filled it with concrete, then closed that steel cage over it. Not to mention the fact your hanging over lava," The girl informed him.

The Spartan looked over at her, silently thanking her, and satisfied to know what was holding him and what the dim light in their prison was.

"So what they get you for? Walking around in the wrong place at the wrong time too? Cause from the looks of it, they'd need a army to take you down." The girl stated, looking at him curiously.

Chief saw no malice, or ill will in her eyes. Still, he had to be careful.

He nodded to her and she got the answer.

A sigh and she spoke again, "Me too. Been moving a lot now and just when I happen to find a decent place, with actual living people in it, I get caught and tied up by these freaks."

"Living People?" John asked. The words had been odd for her too use, and considering the way she was dressedâ€¦ Well he had a guess to what her story was.

"Yeahâ€¦" She stated warily looking away from John.

The Spartan continued to watch her for any sign of fault, anything that would hint yo him that she was just playing him for information, yet he found none.

Her eyes were sad, her face fallen, her entire body in fact showing her utter defeat and desperation.

"You said living people." The Chief urged on, curious to what she was going to say.

The girl looked up at him, a small smile coming to her face as she reminisced, "Yeah. Been to a lot ofâ€¦ Wellâ€¦ dead placesâ€¦." She was uneasy, confused he could tell, but not a liar.

Maybe he would indulge her in her story, let her play things out.

"Dead?" He asked questioningly.

She again raise an eyebrow at him, "You're not form here are you."

He didn't reply.

She shrugs and looks away, her look hardening.

"Neither am Iâ€|"

The girl waits for an answer, but when she gets only silence, she sighs and continues, "I've been hopping Universe for at least two months already."

"Universe's?" The Spartan asked, slightly trying to play the dumb card.

She looked at him as if she knew he was playing dumb, "Yeah," she sighed, "My Universeâ€| It's goneâ€| Everyone I knewâ€|." She shrugged to finish her little speech.

"What about you?" again she looks at him.

John contemplates answering, but there something in her eyes. She's sad, but not an emery. He can see that now.

"It's there." He replied shortly, implying his universe was still alive, which in some way it was. Just not the way he once knew it.

"Luckyâ€|" She says with pursed lips.

"Maybe." John responded looking away.

"They'll come once mornings here to feed us, though with your helmet that might be a problem."

"Is there anyone else?" The Spartan then asked.

Another shrug, "Don't think so. Only us for now. Maybe they know more about the whole, reality in danger thing than we think." Her voice becomes colder, a sudden change form her normal tone, or at least what Chief figured was her normal tone.

"Excuse me?"

"Oh come on. You're like a giant space robot. Im a girl with guns which have yet to be invented here. You think they captured us by accident?"

Silence.

"A guy in my Universe, before it wasâ€| well yeah, anyway, he had a theory that the Flood was attacking other universe's not just ours. I didn't think he was right till I jumped to a new universe. Sucks to say I found out he was right."

"How many did they destroy?" John asked.

"I think I went through ten that they left in ruins... Two more were still infected, which I barely made it out of by the way, and the others were just lifeless universe's entirely."

"You can jump through on your own?"

"I wish. Maybe if I had the Phoenix still, but no I can't on my own."

One of my really smart friends, well maybe more like a leader, or a boss, anyway, Stark made me a little device that could jump me through different realities. Said I was the last hope before they all died..."

"Phoenix?"

"Its a long story."

John nodded in understanding. He had plenty of long stories.

"So, besides my depressing past, whats your story?"

"Chief."

"What?"

"Call me Chief."

"All right? I'm Hope."

John looked at her, the girl smiling softly and friendly.

"Hope Summers."

* * *

><p>AN So here Interlude 2.**

To clear up any confusion, this interlude takes place between Day 6 and Day 7 of the main chapters. The 'Days' Chapter start at around 8 am and go to about 8 or 10pm. This takes place between Day 6 at 10pm and Day 7 at 8pm.

Heres Hope Summers! Whoo!

Also two more game characters will appear before this Arc and Part I are finished, but they will be more minor characters unlike our big four for now.

**Now something completely unrelated to the story... Ok so I have finished my first Novel, unedited still, but I need reviews and critics so I can see what needs to be changed etc... You a beta reader type thing. Anyway, if you my gracious awesome followers could read it and leave even a two word review that would be great, and I could possibly create a OC character in this story or my Novel as a little token of gratitude. The link is on my profile page (Fanfiction wouldn't let me put the link here) so please go there if you can read it! **

Anyway please and thanks again!

Thanks for reading. Reivew. God bless you guys!

37. Part I Chapter 34 (Beata'd)

Part I

****The Voice and Face of All Evil****

****Chapter 34: A proposition****

* * *

><p>Cold, Ice cold.<p>

Garrus shuddered as the dragon slowed to a stop right above a small structure, that of course, was made of ice.

"We're here," Zuko stated softly, breaking the silence that had reigned during the trip.

The building was small with two guards wearing white and blue standing guard at its front. It was built like a bunker, with three other people standing in front of the building conversing. Other than that, only white tundra could be seen in the distance.

"And where exactly is here?" Garrus asked sliding off the dragon. His back hurt and he subconsciously grabbed his rifle off his back, ready to shoot anything at a moments notice.

The fire lord didn't say anything and instead made his way towards the doors of the bunker looking building. Garrus trailed after him, cocking his rifle and loading a concussive shot to it. One could never be too careful. He had yet to hear back from Shepard, which worried him. She was normally punctual unless something had happened. All he could hope for was that she was alive and well. He had no way to contact Chief or the others with her. Maybe they should've invested in more long range communications.

"Lord Zuko," One of the men standing guard stated and both saluted.

The elder man nodded to them and they relaxed, while the other three looked at the new comers and greeted them, "Lord Zuko, Garrus."

"Tonraq," Zuko responded in kind, Garrus nodding in respect towards the broad man in blue. "Eska and Desna, leaders of the Northern water tribe." Zuko stated with a small smile, informing the alien of their company.

"Pleasure." Garrus nodded.

"Indeed." One of the twins replied.

The Turian couldn't tell the two apart.

"Why exactly are we here again uncle?" The other twin asked.

Garrus noticed how the other two were twins, hunched over and with long black hair, looking almost identical in appearance.

"This prison holds a dangerous criminal. Her name is P' Li," The man didn't hesitate to answer and continued as he walked towards the two metal doors at the front of the bunker, "We need to make sure she's secure."

"Couldn't have the guards have done this instead?" One of the twins asked as the group flowed Zuko.

Garrus stayed a few feet from them wondering why indeed they had to come.

"No. We need to make sure its secure ourselves," Zuko responded as the two metal doors opened revealing an elevator.

The twin who had asked sighed as they group entered the elevator, Garrus uncomfortably sliding in beside the benders. With a jerk the elevator started downward, and they were allowed to see the massive ice cave meant for only one prisoner.

"If I had known this place had existed I would've thrown my tailor in here for messing up my robes," One of the twins stated with a grin.

A grunt and Zuko looked back towards his guest, "So who exactly is this prisoner?" Garrus asked ignoring the comment from the younger human.

"She is a part of a group who tried to take the Avatar when she was just a child. She's dangerous and we have to make sure she won't escape," Zuko stated.

"This prison looks pretty secure," One of the twins stated.

"That's what we thought about the other prisons," The man Garrus knew who Tonraq informed the group.

Garrus's eyes widened slightly, "Other prisons?"

"The other three from her group escaped and if I'm right then they'll be headed this way for P'Li," Zuko sighed as the elevator came to a stop.

Garrus shook his head, "Look I get that you have a problem here by why exactly am I here?" He figured a few bullets would put these benders down, and in all honesty he had bigger problems to worry about, like the Flood invading the planet.

"Because if Zaheer and his group free P'Li they'll go after the Avatar, and they'll take down anyone in their way," Tonraq replied as they exited the elevator.

"You mean Shepard."

The Southern Chief nodded.

"Hmph," Garrus grunted, "Shepard's faced worse."

"I hope you're are right," Zuko started as he walked forward, leading the group to a cage covered in ice with guards around it, "Because I fear other, darker, powers are at work, and we may be hopeless to stop them."

Garrus slowed down.

A shiver ran down his spine.

Why did he feel that he would regret those words?

* * *

><p>"Nothing Avatar Korra. We searched the entire upper and lower rings and still nothing. The Middle ring is currently being searched as well but we still haven't found any trace of your friend."<p>

Korra pursed her lips, "Thanks," She stated shortly.

One of Ba Sing Se's police force nodded to her and left the room. Shepard stood off to the side with her arms crossed, her eyes narrowed at the door. Reluctant Promise floated next to Korra running through all, and any, possibilities that could have befallen the Spartan, and next to him stood the Police Chief of Ba Sing Se. The Captain was a large and bulky man, rugged and old.

"We have to find him," Shepard stated making her way over to Korra, looking at the map laid on the table before them.

They were inside Ba Sing Se's police headquarters, standing inside one of its rooms while the police scoured the city in hopes of finding their lost Spartan.

"I have officers looking all over for him. We're trying our best," Captain Rodan sighed running a hand through his hair, "But I must ask, why are you so worried? Other than the obvious reasons."

Shepard looked at him with pursed lips of her own, "Have you seen the way that soldier fights?"

A shake of the Captains head, and she continued, "He could take down fifteen of your best officers without a moments hesitation and without breaking a sweat. He was built for war."

She leaned on the table in front of her.

"Whoever took him downâ€¦." She let her warning hang in the air.

The Captain nodded, now understanding the Commanders worry.

A static buzz, filled the air and they looked at the radio, where only moments later a voice called out, "Captain, we're getting reports from the outer wall. They're saying that there'sâ€¦ These... these... monsters outside the walls. Funny thing is that they're not moving... Just standing there... We thought it'd be best to inform you and the Generals."

Whoever was speaking neither, Korra or Shepard knew, but the Captains face suggested he did. He picked up the receiver and pressed on the side button to speak.

"Tell the Generals that I'll head over there myself and survey the situation."

"Yes sir."

The Captain put down the receiver and adjusted his green uniform, "Avatar, Commander, I'll inform you of whenever we receive word of your friend. For now, I'm going to haveâ€¦"

Shepard held up a hand, looking him square in the eye, "Did he say monsters?"

"I don'tâ€¦"

"If my hunch is right," Shepard started pulling her rifle off her back, "Then we're out of time." She didn't wait and pushed past the Captain, leaving the room.

Korra and the Captain exchanged a glance, "Let hope she's wrong Captain."

"Why?" Rodan asked.

"Because I'll bet anything she's talking about the parasite, and if they're here we're in trouble."

* * *

><p>Elsa stared at the door in front of her. Her hands rubbed against each other, the soft feeling barely calming her nerves. It hadn't been that long since she'd been attacked. A little over a day actually. She hadn't seen anyone but Tonraq and a few healers in that time, but even then, she had only seen the Southern Chief once.<p>

Now though, after dozens of healing sessions, she felt well enough to go outside. Whatever the water tribe healers did had worked miracles on her, and she felt ready to face the world again. Her dress glittered brilliantly with its new coating of ice, making it slightly thicker than the one before. She still had no way to work the Keepers shielding device and she figured a thicker coat would offer her better than protection than her old one.

Her hair was tied up in its usual braid, and her eyes nervously scanned the wooden door in front of her. Finally, she reached for it. She grabbed the handle and pushed it open. Light engulfed her little hut, and she stepped outside onto frozen ground, squinting up at the sky.

"Queen you should not be out of bed!" A guard stationed in front of her hut exclaimed with wide eyes, "You have to rest! Tonraq's orders!"

Elsa held up a hand and silenced him with a glare, though he was more confused by it rather than intimidated.

"I'm fine," Elsa stated weakly. She had misjudged her injuries. She was tired and still slightly dizzy, but now was not the time for weakness. The Queen had to be strong for her people, for her sister.

She scanned what was around her, and noticed how she was still close to the docks. Only a couple hundred feet from it.

Aside from that, four other guards stood in a perimeter around her

hut. What caught her eye though, was the _ship_ landed right next to the docks. Not one of the United Republics ships, no, the Commanders ship. The one that had stayed behind with them when the Keeper left.

The Normandy, with several of her crew, including Wrex, standing around her and making small talk. Even Tenzin was there, talking amongst the group, discussing things she could only guess at.

"What is that doing here?" She asked looking at the guard. Consciously, she decided to stay next to her hut, realizing she didn't have the strength to go any further.

"You're friend, Commander Shepard, ordered the ship to come her and aid withâ€| reinforcements," The guard jerked his head towards the docks.

Several large mechanical beings, Promethean knights, were walking around scanning the area for any threats. Elsa frowned. She knew Shepard had sent them here to take care of her. Apparently even the Commander doubted her now.

The Queen pushed the thoughts aside and looked at the guard again, "Where's Chief Tonraq? I need to speak with him."

To be honest, she didn't need to talk to him, but she did want to know about anything new that was going on.

"He's not here," Elsa turned away from the guard with furrowed eyes, "He left to the north pole. Didn't say why."

A soft sigh.

She wished none of this had ever happened.

* * *

><p>Chief kept perfectly still despite Hope's voice calling for him. He had heard the footsteps coming for them, right side of the room from stairs probably out of sight, and at seven people coming for them.<p>

To his advantage, they probably had no idea he had been awake, so if he played it right maybe he could pretend to be asleep and they would only address Hope, who in turn may pull out sensitive information that he could use to his advantage.

In a normal circumstance he would've just contacted Shepard, but his comms were being jammed. It left a bad feeling in his gut. Something wasn't right. That much he knew.

He needed to figure out what was going on. He knew the Black Knight and his allies were after him, Shepard, Elsa, and Korra. He knew the Flood was invading the planet, and was at war across several different dimensions. He knew they were waiting for the Keeper to send a ship to rescue them.

But something didn't add up.

From what he knew, Elsa should've been killed in her attack. He

should've been killed too, not captured. That would've been the logical thing, yet they we're being left alive. Next thing, His comms were being jammed, the Flood hadn't attacked yet, and he had yet to see the Black Knight again.

Why? From what he could deduce the Black Knight liked to deal with things personally. It was why he kidnapped Anna, and tried to kill them himself in Republic City.

Then why wouldn't he come after Chief himself? Something else had to be keeping him busy since he sent his pawns after Elsa. But then why didn't his pawns come after him?

His glare intensified through his visor as the unseen door opened, letting in light from beyond as the creaking of old metal filled the room. It was because these people weren't with the Black Knight. They had another reason for capturing him and Hope. That was what he needed to figure out. After that he could figure out everything else.

"Well look who's awake," A woman, he concluded from her voice, dressed in black robes that covered her face and entire body, chuckled walking into the room. Following her, were two dark haired women that had captured him as well as four men dressed in green with large circular hats on their heads.

The Spartan noticed how Hope had become quiet, but he didn't dare look at her.

"And this one is a fine specimen indeed," The mysterious woman said walking in front of Chief, "I see you took our warning seriously then?"

"Seeing what he did to those thugs was impressive. He wasn't too much trouble but we didn't want to risk it," The taller of the two dark haired woman stated.

"And the payment?" The shorter added.

Black robes turned to them, "Of course." She pulled a black bag from her waist and tossed it to them, "Three thousand gold pieces for your trouble."

The women chuckled, "So much gold for one man."

"A unique man."

"Indeed he is."

"What about her?" The short one asked.

Black Robes and the green robed men looked up at Hope, "We'll take them to Zaheer. Let him deal with them. If there's one thing we know it's that the Avatar and Commander are suckers for hostages," A chuckle, "That is if they're even alive to meet Zaheer."

"You're going after the Avatar?" One of the women asked wide eyed.

"Indeed," The woman added, "Well maybe not meâ€¦ But.. This city will

see soon enough."

John's eyes went wide, the City. It was going to be attacked. He had to find a way to warn Shepard.

The two women looked at each other and shrugged, "Not our problem."

"We'll be taking our leave," The older one bowed, and before anyone could protest the two scurried out of the room.

With a sigh of annoyance, the robed woman turned to her men. "The girl," She ordered.

The four men obeyed, and moved closer to Hope. One raised his hands, while the others took defensive stances around her.

"Leave the man though. I want to talk to him before we take him," Black Robes ordered, the men nodding to her as they got to Hope.

"Don't touch me," Hope growled as the chains around her slackened and she fell to the floor, where one of the men moved to place cuffs on her.

The man stepped back and shot his hands out. Two rock shaped hands flew from off his hands and covered her mouth, where Hope then preceded to yell. Another man did the same to her wrists encasing them in solid rock.

John wanted to act. He knew there was lava behind him, cement holding him in place, and a steel cage around him. Fortunately, none of it was strong enough to stop a hard light shield. It would shatter the cement and cage around him as it expanded. But how would he get free with only one arm free, and five enemies around him?

He couldn't. So he'd wait. Even if it meant letting them take Hope.

Two of the men grabbed Hope by her hair and forced her to stand, to which they each earned glares from her green eyes.

"Take her up top."

They complied and forced the girl to the door, to which she struggled every moment, trying to break free.

"Lower him."

"Ma'am?" One of the two remaining men asked as Hope was finally pulled from the room.

"Do it. He's of no threat."

They complied and raised their fists. The metal prison holding Chief began to lower, the earth holding up the chains lowering down and the pool of lava being covered up by a stone floor.

"Now," The mysterious woman pulled out a metallic handle. To John's surprise, an energy sword blazed to life.

"What is that?" One of the men asked nervously.

"A weapon that I got from the Black Hand."

With a flash of light, then a swing through the air, "This thing can cut through almost anything and I want this man to know I mean business."

"What do you want from him?"

The Spartan could hear the grin in her voice, "He knows the Avatar," She raised the sword right in front of his visor, "And I want my revenge."

* * *

><p>Shepard checked her ammo count as the airship slowed to a stop.<p>

"We're here," Captain Roland grimly announced.

The vibe Shepard was giving out, worried him and Korra, though the latter knew what was bugging her. Katherine said nothing and only nodded for the Captain to lead. He huffed and made his way outside, Korra and Shepard following behind him.

Together, they walked out onto the outer wall, the airship's doors closing as they exited and it floated backwards slightly to give the men on the wall space.

"Captain thank god you're here. You need to see this," A man wearing a green uniform cried jogging over to the, two soldiers on either side of him.

"What is it Sergeant?"

"Sirâ€|" With a stutter the wreck of a Sergeant tried to explain while pulling the Captain towards the edge of the wall.

However, Shepard had already walked over, knowing what would be on the other side.

"Damn," She hissed, letting her biotics glow.

Korra walked up next to her, The Captain following a split second later.

"They got here fastâ€|" Korra grimly stated crossing her arms.

Outside the walls, was a ocean of pale bodies. Thousands upon thousands of creatures, pale, deformed, terrifying, and deadly all the same. Shrieks rose up from them, and together the congregation of death roared in challenge to the earth city. Shepard aimed, but held her fire. Something was off. They weren't charging.

They just stood still, why?

She licked her lips and glared at the army. They had thousands. Why

wouldn't they just try to overwhelm the defenders?

"What're they waiting for?" Korra asked taking a stance with her fists ready to splash flames at the horde.

"Sergeant contact the Generals, tell them to get every soldier to the wall. We're going to need all of them," Captain Ronald said calmly.

"Sir," And the sergeant and soldiers hurried off.

Only a handful of soldiers stood guard at the wall, and none of them were near Shepard and the others. They would need more to fend off at attack of this size.

Katherine scanned the Floods ranks. They were waiting. Right out of range of her rifle. When she had envisioned their attack, she had seen the Flood climbing the walls, throwing every body they had at it, eventually getting over and raining hell down from the walls onto the city.

She checked her ammo count again, "Something's not right."

"They're just waiting." Korra muttered, her own glare hardening.

"For what though?" Shepard replied glancing over at the master bender.

Then a voice, "For me of course."

Shepard spun around, her teeth grit and her biotics flaring out of control. Korra did the same, her fists ignited with flames, as the Captain raised his own hands defensively.

"And who are you?" The Spectre asked with her finger hovering over the trigger.

A wicked grin, a short red dress with swirling designs of orange, and jet black hair, "Cinder of course."

"And what do you mean they're waiting for you?"

Cinder rested her hands behind her back, her eyes swirling with flames and glowing brilliantly. She started to pace, slowly, calmly, but with a sly grin on her face.

"Commanderâ€¦ You have no idea what's going on do you?" She stopped pacing, "For all your talents, you've already failed to save this world. It's a shame."

"We're not talking about me."

"Haha, well then maybe we'll discuss this avatar," She looked at Korra, "She can bend all four elements, she's the golden girl of her people, yet you refuse to trust her."

"What're youâ€¦"

"Why do you think the Commander here insisted on sending a member of

her team with every group meant to warn the nations? Why do you think she's stayed so close to you Korra?"

Katherine didn't even have to drop her glare to know Korra spared a uneasy glance at her, but to her credit the Avatar kept her most of her focus on Cinder.

"Isn't it curious? Why she doesn't trust you? Yet she's trying to save you?"

"Enough," Shepard growled letting her biotics flare out before controlling them.

Cinder looked at Shepard, "Commander have you wondered why the Avatar here, has told you next to nothing about herself? Haven't you wondered why she insists on the things she does? Like leaving the hotel and now your Spartan friend is gone?"

"Look Cinder," Korra started without missing a beat, "You better stop talking or I'm going to blow you off this wall right now."

Cinder, pushed a strand of her black hair behind her ear, "If only you could Avatar."

"Thats it!" And the Avatar unleashed to bolts of fire. Shepard unleashed a biotic shockwave and the Captain surged his fists forwards launching to large stones at the witch.

Cinder laughed and twirled in place, walls of red magic blocking each assault, before slamming her palms on the ground and letting fire roar out from them towards the three. The Captain braced himself and was hit full force by the fire which slammed him against the rock wall. Shepard dove over the fire, rolled to her feet and fired at Cinder.

Cinder spun on her feet, smile gone, and flicked her wrists, intercepting the mass effect rounds with a wall of red magic. Korra, having countered Cinders fire with her own, kicked up two boulders and blasted them at the witch, using a gust of air to accelerate them dangerously. Shepard herself had been shooting and dodging counters from the Witch only to get hit head on with a blast of magic from the woman, knocking her down.

Before the boulders reached her, Cinder spun to face them. She met the first with her hand, obliterating it, but was caught by the second one. She hit the floor hard, hissing in pain, but smashed her teeth together, climbing back to her feet.

"Oh no you don't!" Korra roared.

Her eyes paled to white, and she spun into the air, launching fire down at the Witch before gathering a massive wave of air and throttling it right for Cinder. Black hair swinging behind her back, Cinder braced her lower body while twisting her hands.

A red circle appeared above her and intercepted the fire blasts, but then the air wave hit it, shattering it and hitting Cinder dead on. The witch stumbled backwards, and unable to regain a proper stance she didn't stand a chance when Shepard fired another biotic blast. It slammed into the witch and threw her against the back railing of Ba

Sing Se's outer wall.

Korra didn't let up, while her eyes glowed white, she unleashed a new volley of air attacks, kicking and spinning while forming a tornado beneath her. Cinder's eyes went wide, barley holding herself up against the back stone railing. She bit her lip and slapped her hands together.

Walls of flame ripped up from the ground, Cinder flipping upwards onto the stone railing, landing in a crouch, and watching as her wall of fire was obliterated but successfully managed to block any elemental blasts meant for her.

"The funny thing isâ€¦" She started with a smirk,

"There's nothing funny!" Korra yelled her eyes having returned to normal color and she fired another bolt of fire which Cinder easily blocked thanks to Korra's weaker state.

The Witch stood up slowly and placed one hand on her hips, "Its funny how you are so unaware of your surroundings."

A clink of metal and Shepard spun on her heel. The Black Knight, standing on the front railing of the wall, black cape swirling behind him.

"Fools," Cinder laughed.

Before either hero could react, the Black Knight jumped off the wall, backwards and sailing through the air while Cinder flipped backwards a portal opening behind her and closing before Korra could deliver another blow.

Shepard raced to the wall and looked down. She didn't see the knight. She saw a blinking red light. A click.

"Shit."

Then, her world went up in flames.

* * *

><p>Chief heard it before he saw it. Of course he was in the back of a van, moving at ridiculous speeds, but it was strange noise. One only people from his universe could recognize.<p>

Still, he remembered what the woman had said. It was like flashing lights in his mind.

She had only asked him one question, "Do you miss her?"

Nothing else was said. Then she let them take his cage up, and now his cage was chained to the wall of a van, while Hope sat across from him, chained and gagged. But that didn't matter now.

What mattered is what he heard.

A shriek, and one he knew far too well.

"Hope," He stated calmly, and was met with green eyes.

"Brace yourself," He informed a second before his freedom came.

It came, when the van suddenly jerked, a scream piercing the air, where the van flipped over. Hope yelled into her gag as the van rolled and tumbled, screeching as it crashed against pavement and finally slid to a halt. John, unaffected by the crash, blinked once and looked around. The force of the crash had broken the chains holding his steel cage, but he was still trapped inside.

He had to get free, and fast. More shrieks had already filled the air and the screams from outside were worrying him. If he was right, then the Flood were in Ba Sing Se and it was too late to try and warn Shepard.

Still, he heard no movement from the front of the van, which meant either the men up front were dead, or had already run for it. So with that in mind, he activated the hard light shield, which like he planned, broke out of the cement and steel with ease. Still, it was only his left side that was free.

Hope raised an eyebrow. Her chains had also broken, and she had already began freeing herself, having taken off the gag, and she was trying now to free her feet from their shackles.

"Need help?" She asked.

Chief didn't reply and powered off the shield. Using his free arm he grabbed a hold of the steel cage boxing in the cement and began to peel the front off, popping screws out of their place as he did.

Hope flinched as a screw almost hit her, but she forgot it and continued working on her own shackles.

The steel screamed as John managed to peel it off entirely, pushing it away before he turned his attention to the concrete. Cracks littered the concrete, and he searched with his hand for cracks in it. It didn't take long and he found one large enough for the tips of his fingers to edge into, and he began pulling the concrete apart piece by piece.

Hope grunted as she failed to get the shackles off her and she weakly kicked at them, sitting back in annoyance. She was at least glad the chains holding her shackles were gone because if they weren't she'd probably be hanging upside down or sideways. As the seconds went, concrete fell apart piece by piece, the pieces growing larger with every second as Chief broke them apart, till finally he broke his entire right half free.

He stretched his limbs while the red headed girl watched with an impressed smile, and finally, without the steel cage to hold him in place, he broke the last of the concrete and freed his entire body.

"You really are tall. I thought they were just overcompensating," Hope said through an amused smile.

John didn't say a thing and walked over to her. He grabbed the chains holding her and ripped the metal apart. After, he wrapped his hands

around the shackles and pulled them apart, popping the screws and breaking the joints.

She raised an eyebrow at him and kicked at the shackles off her feet. Green eyes peered up at the taller Spartan, and Hope climbed to her feet, stretching her arms and standing awkwardly inside the flipped van.

"Now what?"

"We run," Chief climbed to the door of the van, and slowly peered it open.

He quickly shut it and looked back at her, "Stay with me."

"Wait, why?" Hope asked scrambling over to him, her tunic barely holding onto her shoulders.

"You'll see," And with that he kicked the door open and immediately threw up his hard light shield.

Spikes, biological and as sharp as swords, shattered on his shield and John located the pure ranged Flood form hanging off a nearby roof. Hope's eyes went wide, an orange glow radiating from her pupils. So much death in front of her.

Buildings were burning, screams filling the air, people running everywhere with monsters scrambling and killing them. Benders fighting for their lives, cars fleeing in every direction, families split apart, smoke covering the sun and blue sky, and roars of beasts she had hoped to never see again.

"No! No not here too," She whispered to herself, the glint of tears in corner of her eyes.

"We need to go," John said looking over to the alleyway on their right.

It was clear. The only clear way for them to live was to run. John didn't want to have to fight the Flood in hand to hand. The tanks were stronger than him, and though he was good, he wasn't invincible.

"Now!" Chief yelled, and he saw Hope buckle slightly, stepping back into the van.

The Spartan had a choice, leave Hope, or grab her and run.

Her body weight, it not would slow him down, but if he was forced to carry her thanks to her sudden freeze up, it would leave him vulnerable to attack since he'd be unable to defend himself against any Flood that attacked him.

His eyes went to the alleyway. He had to make it to Shepard. She needed him, and he needed to keep them alive. With Hope, it would be harder to do that. Far harder. A few steps towards the alleyway and another round of spikes slammed into his shield.

Do you miss her? He stopped. Would he leave this girl? He didn't have a chance to save Cortana, yet here he had a chance to save this

young girl, yet he was choosing to leave her. Why? It was logical. Butâ€|

John felt more spikes slam into his shield and he stumbled to the right.

A scream.

Spinning on his heels, he turned around, lowering his shield and bolted for the upturned van. He slid to the front, spike spying around him, and saw the combat form wielding a plasma rifle standing in front of Hope, who had retreated into the van.

Another Flood body laid on the ground in front of the doors, its chest having been kicked in. Hope, held her arm, and was leaning against the van's walls, her arm bleeding and slightly scorched from the plasma burn on it.

John didn't wait and grabbed the Flood form from behind. The combat form roared and tried to spin, but John was able to grab its arms and break them off, forcing it forward where Hope kicked it head on and right back to John, who grabbed the Flood and threw it out of the van.

He swept the plasma rifle out of its fallen arms and twirled around, unleashing the torrent of searing blasts at the Flood on the streets. The one thrown out was gunned down first, and the others, even if engaged with benders or others immediately retreated into the building and roof's.

Apparently it was the only one that had had a weapon, a souvenir from the CCS class cruisers that crashed into Republic City.

"Let's go," Chief stated letting the rifle vent before they left.

Hope glanced at him and made her way over to him, "Ok." She bit her lip, flinching slightly as the benders in the streets cheered and began to make their way out of the streets.

John looked down at her arm, and seeing the scorch marks, was relieved. She had barely avoided being melted, but fortunately was able to avoid being hit by the Flood and infected. If they had infected her, he wouldn't have hesitated to put her down.

"Follow me," The Spartan raised the rifle and exited out of the van, making sure to check the surrounding area.

"Where are we going?" Hope asked wearily, as they moved from the van and into the streets, right towards another clear alleyway.

"To find the Commander."

* * *

><p>Sounds: voices, heavy breaths, and rumbling.<p>

Katherine, felt her a lump in her throat, and tried to swallow only for a dry itch to crawl up her throat and force a breathy cough out of her. The pain in her body was more of sore muscles than anything

else, but she could feel the broken ribs as well. Beside the pain, her eyes were heavy. She didn't want to open them.

Sleep called to her like the sirens of old.

In the back of her mind though, a feeling, one she could not place, nagged at her and pulled her mind from the fog. Why did she have to wake? There was a reason. She felt her mind race, her eyes twitching despite her eyelids being closed. Couldn't she just rest for once. No more war.

No. She had a mission. What was it?

A Spartan, a soldier beyond imagination. His name was Chief. At least that was what he wanted to be called. A young girl. Lean, powerful. The Avatar. Korra was her name. Then a blonde woman. Small in stature and fleeting eyes. The Queen, Elsa.

Something was wrong. She felt it. The Queen, her eyes went red, her hair became a scorched black, and her dress withered away replaced by tendrils of darkness. Everything faded. Why did she have to be a hero? Why couldn't she just rest?

"Shepard!"

A stir in her chest. She knew that voice. She had just heard it, hadn't she?

Korra! Her eyes blasted open and the smell of air filled her lungs with a strangled breath.

"You're ok!"

Shepard blinked a few times. She saw everything around her, but nothing clicked. Nothing made sense. Walls, a tattered stone roof, people scattered everywhere, most crying, crates lining the walls, soldiers moving around passing out supplies, and a dark exit with a sign above it.

"Shepard can you hear me?!" Two hands shook her shoulders, pulling her around to face whoever the hands belonged to.

Korra was staring her dead in the eyes, whether she was worried or not she couldn't tell. It was then everything clicked. The wall. Cinder. The Black Knight. Explosions.

"Korra!" She cried grabbing the Avatar and shaking her, her heart racing and her mind going faster than she could comprehend.

"I guess you can hear me," Korra replied her eyes going wide.

"What happened?" Shepard asked looking around. She wondered how they had gotten there.

"Well," Korra started as Shepard let her go, and she pulled the Spectre to her feet, "After the wall blew up, which kind of knocked you out, the Flood poured through the hole and attacked the city. It was only big enough for a few dozen at a time, but that's all they needed. I barely managed to get you out of there and onto the train before they overtook the entire outer ring. I got us to the docks and

now we're waiting to get for a ship to get us out of here."

Korra's face was tired, and judging by the tears in her attire, and the few scorch marks on her arms, Shepard could tell she had been through hell and back to get her out of there alive and in one piece.

"How long do we have to wait?" Shepard asked flexing her hands and doing a quick self check. She was intact, her armor had a few dings, but overall she was fine.

Korra looked towards the door, "Actually they just offered me a kind of fast pass. They said we could take the next boat out of here in like ten minutes."

"What about these people?" Shepard asked looking around. So much pain. She could only imagine the death and destruction the city was facing. She knew what the Reapers had done to earth. How could these people deal with the flood?

"Most of them are still waiting for more ferries to come, but I don't know if we can get them all out in time," Korra informed sadly, crossing her arms.

"What about the rest of the city?" The Spectre looked away and pulled up her omnitool preparing to call and contact Reluctant Promise.

Korra sighed, "The upper and middle rings are still under our control, but I don't think we can hold them for long."

Shepard didn't miss the uneasy glance she gave her afterwards. What Cinder had said was mostly true. Shepard didn't trust her, at least not entirely. Apparently, Korra had taken the words to heart, for now though she couldn't worry about that.

The Flood was here in Ba Sing Se.

They had to worry about that now.

* * *

><p>"They're coming."<p>

Garrus slammed a clip into his rifle and activated the cryo ammo modification on his gun.

He, alongside Zuko, Tonraq and the twins, Eska and Desna, we're standing outside of the bunker, staring off into the distance while dark clouds swirled overhead. At first he had doubted whatever Zuko had told him, but seeing the seriousness of Tonraq, and the genuine words of these people, he felt a little more trusting of them.

In all honesty he wondered though, why they believed Shepard and Korra to be in danger. They had said nothing of why they were, only that they were. These criminals had them worried. But not him. He had seen worse, far worse. In the end, it had been boring for hours, but now, as Garrus squinted, he saw off in the distance came a wave of white fog and snow, and racing in front of it was a vehicle coming right for them.

"We have to keep them from getting her out at all costs," Tonraq growled.

Before he could say anything about forming a plan, the benders all broke out into a sprint, heading right for the old truck. He followed suit, keeping a few dozen feet behind them. The Turian was unsure of these criminals abilities, and he was going to play it safe. Besides, all he needed was a clear shot.

He took aim down the scope.

That's when it started. Ice shot towards the truck, but the truck veered out of the way just in the nick of time. A man and woman climbed out from the truck and one shot a gust of air towards Tonraq. The water bender dove under the shot, and rolled to his feet launching forward a wave of icicles at the air bender.

The other, twirled into the air and launched a wave of her own icicles which Garrus noticed then how twins retaliated in a similar manner. Then Zuko engaged another man, the truck having stopped, and was unleashing smaller fire blasts at the man.

Garrus watched the three enemies, and being a couple hundred feet away, was relatively safe enough to choose his target. He chose, and raised his rifle, aiming right for the woman wielding the water as arms. At this range, despite her agility, and the fact she was still battling the twins, he couldn't miss.

Ming- Hua flipped over Eska and Desna both, and before they could react, froze both of them in columns of water. Garrus took aim right as she landed. A bolt of blue slammed into his rifle and instantly it shattered the entire front half, sending the pieces flying in frozen chunks to the ground.

"The hell?!" the Turian yelled tossing the remains of his rifle away.

He heard the scuffle of someone on the snow behind him, and turned around. A fist slammed into his face, and he flew back into the snow. Large and terrifying stood his opponent, Garrus rubbing his face with a glare.

"I had it!" Ming-Hua snapped, spinning around to face Garrus's attacker.

The Titan stood straight and glared down at her, "Go."

She hissed and leaped into the air, water spinning around her, and formed into a drill which slammed and drilled straight through the ground and to P' Li's prison.

Garrus pushed himself up, wiping away the blood on his lips, "Well shit," He cursed drawing his side arm.

The Titan looked at him and slammed a foot on the ground as Garrus fired. His rounds froze instantly as they hit the titan, and ice swirled around him, launching him up twenty feet and encasing the Spectre. Garrus grunted as the ice suddenly collapsed, and he hit the ground once more. Trying to spin back to his feet, he fired several

more shots off, only for a wall of ice to ram into and send him back onto the ground.

With an angry growl, he managed to roll back onto his feet and grabbed a grenade, watching the Titan walk towards him.

He fired once more, but after several shots the gun clicked empty. He tossed his pistol, seeing how it was basically useless, and powered up his own omniblade.

"Come on you prick."

A smirk formed on the Titan's mouth and it charged the Turian. Garrus returned his advance, but at the last second slid underneath the larger Titan's legs, slammed the grenade into the ice between his legs, and slide back up to his feet. His body pushed him backwards despite being on his feet, and he used his blade to lodge himself into the ice, tearing it in the process.

A red glow filled the air and the grenade went off, heat and chunks of ice flew everywhere, engulfing the monster, as Garrus enjoyed the minimum distance to be safe from its blast. Yet, out of the smoke, a column of ice soared through the air and hit Garrus head on, shattering and throwing him back once more, his shields flaring and failing entirely. Before he even stopped rolling, another swirl of ice twirled around and shot up into the air, encasing him once more in feet of ice. An explosion behind them, P'Li having blasted Zuko's dragon away from the group of benders.

She had gotten free, and Garrus spat. It had been seconds. Maybe a minute and these criminals had overwhelmed them.

"Let's go!" Zaheer called out, having knocked Tonraq down and out for the count.

The Titan looked at him then back at Garrus. The last thing the Turian felt, was ice crushing his body. He heard the snap of bones.

This was how he would die.

On an icy tundra.

* * *

><p>Cinder licked her lips, staring down at the pedestal before her.<p>

The liquids inside swirled around and she dared to prick it with her finger. She felt a risk of warmth and drew the finger to her face where a small cut had dared to cross her once flawless skin.

Korra had caught her off guard. She hadn't expected such power from the girl, but it was her own fault. Next time she wouldn't be caught off guard.

She rubbed the liquid over it once, and the cut sealed, the skin growing back together almost instantly and she let out a sigh of relief.

"She's here. I got her," A voice stated triumphantly.

The Witch frowned. She despised this man, but the Black Knight wanted him alive. Still, he had accomplished his goal, and that's what she really cared about.

"The girl?"

"Yeah. She was a pain to handle though."

She nodded and let a grin form.

"But why do we need her?" The man came around in front of her, his orange hair and menacing eyes boring into. His gaze didn't faze her though.

When her eyes met his, he immediately looked away.

"I have a proposition for her," Cinder twirled her hand and the vial of blood appeared in her hand.

"We have plans for all of them but one. Only one can ruin it and we have no one to kill her. She has a strong will, one to where she will do anything for what's right."

"And how isâ€¦"

"The girl is skilled with swords. She knows how to kill, and she has an almost unbreakable will, one of the few strong enough to actually challenge the Commanders."

"But her weaponsâ€¦"

"We'll give her weapons to deal with her."

"But why not one of us just kill her?"

"Our plans require it. We each have someone. You keep that in mind boy."

The man hissed and crossed his arms, but held his tongue in the end. He may not like Cinder but he wasn't stupid enough to cross her.

Cinder poured the vial, the blood dripping into the liquid. A hiss, and steam rose from the pedestal, bubbling and blackening the liquids, a foul stench filling the air.

Red flaming eyes looked at the man, "Where is she?"

"With the others, why?"

"Follow me, for as I said."

She grinned as the liquids inside the pedestal began to glow red and purple, "I have a proposition for Mikasa Ackerman."

* * *

><p>AN So heres the next chapter!</p></div>

****Sorry for taking so long.****

****So now that this has been written Im adjusting the length of Part one to only about five or six more chapters after this one. Why? Well I found a way to handle everything that needs to be i a much more fashionable and relatively easier manner, so It will make everything much shorter.****

****Where there were going to be a dozen more building and filler chapters, there will only be actually about there more fillers and builders before the final three chapters are out, since the final battle will be about three chapters long. Well the final battle for Part I, because then starts part two!****

****New characters! Say hello to Mikasa Ackerman from Attack on Titan. Whats her role? Well I think you have an idea of what it is. But what are Cinders plans?****

****Is Garrus dead?****

****I don't know! Like I said the new ending, though the plot remains the same, is different and may involve more character deaths than before.****

****As for our big four, Elsa, Korra, Shepard, and Chief, they have a lot to deal with. Elsa has her own more personal problems, Korra and Shepard trying to save a city, Chief trying to save Hope and find Shepard in a flood infested city. I'd say they have their work cut out for them.****

****What about the Keeper and her reinforcements? Well we'll get to see the Arbiter and everyone else next chapter, an update so to speak on their status with things.****

****Anyway, Thanks for reading. God bless you guys! Please review! Thanks!****

38. Part I Chapter 35 (Partly Beta'd)

****A/N: Hey guys! So unfortunately one of my beta's has is unable to continue betaing this story. So If anyone else wants to beta read for me just send me a PM.****

*** * ***

<p>Part I

****The Voice and Face of All Evil****

****Chapter 35: The Siege of Ba Sing Se****

*** * ***

>p>"You've got to be kidding me!" Hope hissed as she kicked away the arm of a dismembered combat form, "How many more of these things do we have to kill before we get off the streets?"<p>

She moved up the alleyway, careful not to make any loud noises and

slid next to the large Spartan.

In turn, John was standing at the edge of the alleyway looking up towards the wall separating Ba sing Se's interior. He could see the rails of the train system connected to it, but from the looks of it they would have to travel several more blocks down to reach the bottom of the actual station, which as far as he could see, was the only way up and to do that they would have to go through hundreds of more flood forms.

They had killed dozens already, but Hope was tired and John was having trouble dealing with so many of them with only his hands since his plasma rifle had ran out of charge ages ago.

Hope grit her teeth, realizing their predicament. She was a skilled fighter, and though she was no where near this mans skill in fighting, she knew neither of them could hold out forever against the parasites.

It was why they kept to the shadows and alleyways, leaving the civilians and soldiers to distract the Flood while they tried to find Shepard.

She wasn't fond of it. She had tried to save some poor lady, but John intervened when she almost got overwhelmed herself by five combat forms.

In the end, the once mutant messiah decided to listen to the Spartan, yet she hated every time they had to turn a blind eye on someone in need. It pained her.

John on the other hand knew what was at stake. If they tried to save anyone, they themselves could die and that wouldn't help Shepard and their universe in anyway. He didn't have a choice. He had to keep going.

He wouldn't fail.

"If we had my transporter I could get us out of here." Hope whispered next to him, cautiously glancing out to the streets and flexing her hands.

She secretly wished she had the transporter Tony Stark had given her. The goons who had kidnapped her had taken it, and now she had no way to get it back or leave this realm.

"So whats the plan? No way we can go down the streets."

The Spartan glanced upward, keeping a keen eye on his motion sensor. He still remembered how those benders earlier had gotten him without his motion sensor picking them up. He'd have to be careful.

He looked around, studying the entire area.

The homes were dingy and run down, but most were tall, at least four or three stories tall. The station thought was about six stories up as were the railings.

He couldn't see any buildings tall enough to reach the station, but when he glanced at the wall he saw a single apartment complex that

was about five stories tall. A few feet or so shorter than the railings, but tall enough that they could jump onto the railing from the roof.

"One chance. That apartment complex." John nodded towards the apartments and looked back towards the streets while Hope checked out the building.

"How on earth are we going to get over there?" She asked looking at him.

Chief looked back towards the apartment.

It was two blocks down and on the left corner of an intersection. Stands, stalls and wagons littered the streets, fires burning on some buildings and on the streets. Aside from that, over two dozen flood forms roamed the streets, apparently having defeated and assimilated the locals.

With no weapons, he wasn't sure if they could take so many combat forms.

Alone and in an enclosed space, he may have been able to single them out and do it, but with Hope and in an open area, there was no way to over power so many of them with just their hands and feet.

He did have his hard light shield, and there were cars for cover.

It wouldn't be enough.

There was no way they could cross through the streets and make it to the apartments alive.

"There's no way we can get through the street. There's too many." Hope muttered to herself, tensing slightly.

The street.

John looked up.

The roof's.

He checked the buildings near the apartment complex.

None of them were nearly tall enough to get to the roof of the apartments, but the building right next to it was at least up to its third floor.

A plan began to form.

"The roofs." John motioned, checking the streets again to make sure they were still hidden.

Hope's eyes went wide as she realized what he was getting at, "We can get into the apartment from the roofs, then climb our way up to the railway."

"Exactly."

The red head glanced out again to the street.

"What about the Flood?"

"We'll only have one shot at this."

Hope furrowed her brow.

"Greatâ€¦!"

* * *

><p>Shepard closed her eyes and turned away.<p>

She had spent enough time watching cities burn, and yet another was burning down around her.

Korra however continued to watch, her face dark and her arms held at her side with clenched fists.

"I'm sorry Korra." Katherine said shaking her head.

The Avatar didn't respond. Instead she tuned away and headed towards the door, "You coming?"

They were standing inside a room towards the top of the outer wall on the far end of Ba Sing Se, which had the perfect view through windows to see the city burn.

Shepard nodded, and Korra moved out the doors.

Together, the two women made their way down the stairs.

It was slow and awkward, an unsaid accusation hanging in the air.

It took a few minutes, but they finished climbing the steps and stepped back out onto the main floor of the docks.

Hundreds of people lined the docks, waiting to get out on ships while some screamed, others cried, and many more just simply chattered wildly about the threat their city now faced.

Fortunately, the docks were shielded by the city's outer wall, being underneath the wall with a massive hole in the side where the ferries could sail in and out of the docks without problem.

"Avatar Korra!"

The two turned as an elderly man, dressed in an obvious military uniform and flanked by several soldiers, walked up to them.

"Yes?" Korra asked raising an eyebrow.

"Ah where are my manners!" The man laughed, "General Kun Lou at your service." He bowed slightly gracing both with a smile.

"Nice to meet you." Korra smiled back as she respectfully bowed back. Shepard shook her head so slightly that no one noticed but gave a small tilt of her head in respect.

"Commander Shepard." The General commented with a nod.

"General." Shepard greeted.

The man turned back to Korra, "Avatar I have grave news."

Korra closed her eyes and bit her lip, "What happened?"

"We've called it. The city will be lost in a days time. We simply can not hold it. There're too many and our forces are being overwhelmed."

The Avatar only sighed and looked at the general sadly, "So whats the plan?"

Kun Lou looked at the docks.

"This is the plan. We evacuate as many as we can and as quickly as possible. The Fleets ten minutes out and they'll evacuate the refugees from the ferries and take them to the Northern and Southern Water tribes."

"Greatâ€|" Korra muttered crossing her arms in frustration.

"Its the only plan we have. We can't take back the city and we can't hold it." The General replied.

"There has to be something we can doâ€|"

A hand softly grabbed Korras shoulder. She looked back at and met the green eyes of Shepard, "Korra theres nothing we can do."

"Theres always something we can do." With that the younger girl pulled the commanders hand off her and looked away with a scowl.

Katherine furrowed her brow. She wasn't stupid. The annoyance Korra was showing wasn't just because of the General's plan, it was her.

Cinder had done her job, created a wedge between them. It wasn't enough for Korra to just leave Shepard to die when she was unconscious but it was enough to place doubt in the Avatar, and doubt could be fatal in times of war.

Shepard however didn't have time to deal with that. She would deal with Korra later and instead she looked down at her omni tool, powering it up and checking her comm's status. Still jammed, she lowered her arm and looked out towards the docks.

She needed to get ahold of the others. With how fast the Flood were moving the other nations had to be warned, and she had to get a hold of the Keeper.

Their time table was up.

They needed their evac now.

* * *

><p>"Rah!" Wrex roared throwing his arms up in the air and snarling

like a madman. He turned away from the Normandy and headed towards the port shops.<p>

Most of the water tribe's people steered clear of him and any other nonhumans, but being Wrex, he couldn't care less.

Despite the Normandy being here, despite the dozens of Promethean knights and Sentinels patrolling the entire area, despite his allies, the Krogan was uneasy.

He was nervous about something. Yet he couldn't figure out why.

It was why he called Shepard, but she didn't pick up. That worried him.

She almost always answered and if it had been the first or even second try he wouldn't have been worried, but after three tries she should've replied.

Something had to be wrong, but he had no way of contacting Shepard without the comms.

What could honestly keep her so distracted?

The Krogan shook his head and headed straight for one of the open stalls serving food.

Several teenagers that had been hanging out at the sea food joint nervously quieted down as the Krogan approached, moving aside to give him more than enough room to order.

"Whatcha got?" Wrex growled leaning on the stalls counter.

The cook inside gave a shaky smile before speaking, "We have fried Scallops, roasted tunasquid, a fewâ€|"

"Get me one of everything."

A few blinks, "Evâ€| everything?"

Only a nod was given in reply and the cook immediately turned away.

Wrex crossed his arms and turned around himself, watching everything with intent and purpose.

The ships in the seaport were all moving, the men carrying out orders and using the ships to form a defensive perimeter outside the port.

He had been told by the monk that the Water Tribe leader was anxious about something which was why he had left so suddenly, even leaving orders to form both land and sea perimeters around the entire city.

There was something they weren't sharing with him, and it royally pissed him off, even more so than he already was.

No matter how much he wanted too, he couldn't force it out of them, not unless Shepard agreed. He knew enough that being rash with people

who barely knew you wasn't ever a good idea. Only if Shepard, who was normally the most rational of them, thought it was best would he feel ok doing it.

"Wrex."

With a sigh, the Krogan opened up his omni tool, "What do you want Joker?"

"Wellâ€¦| somethings weird."

"I had no idea." Wrex growled.

Joker took a second to respond, "Haha when did you get sarcastic?"

"Stop wasting my time Joker."

"Sorryâ€¦|" A breath, "Well I was scanning the planet again with the probe, and well theres a comm jammer over the planet."

Wrex squinted up at the sky while the pilot continued, "And you've probably figured that its not global since we can talk to each other."

The Krogan baared his teeth, "Let me guessâ€¦|"

"Its over that giant city Ba Sing Se. I confirmed it with that old monk a few minuets ago."

"He knows about it?"

"Not at first. He actually came to me..."

"Because no one can get ahold of the city or Shepard."

"Yeah... Only one explanationâ€¦|"

Wrex roared, "I knew something was wrong!" He grabbed his shotgun off his back and stormed away from the food stall ignoring as the poor cook called out to him to come back and pay for what was already made.

A gunshot in the air shut him up.

"So what do we do?"

"Get a hold of Vakarian and Lieutenant Williams. We're heading to Ba Sing Se."

* * *

><p>"Sweet jesus! What the hell happened in here!" Jacqueline screamed.<p>

Her hands were pulling her hair and her usual stone cold face was dropped in shear shock.

"It was an accident?â€¦|"

The entire room, the armory inside Admiral Hacketts ship was utterly trashed. Guns lay everywhere, ammo clips half open and pouring out their contents, food wrappers thrown around like garbage, scorch marks lining the walls, and Rapunzel holding a grenade in her hand.

"How did this even happen!" The N7 yelled stepping towards the smaller girl.

The brunette flinched and dropped the grenade, which was fortunately inactive.

"I uh. Well ok." She pointed at one the food wrappers, "I got hungry and so I kind of brought some stuff here to eat while I got better at using these things and I got sort of careless with my trash"

"And how the hell did the guns get thrown everywhere, or how did the scorch mark get there!" The N7 said through clenched teeth and seething eyes.

Rapunzel shrunk down visibly, "Well ok the guns I got lazy, and kind of forgot to pick things up and the scorch mark was when I kind of lost control with the really large tube looking weapon and it kind of fired at the wall."

"Dear God" Jacqueline sighed closing her eyes, wondering how they had not heard it.

Before their 'discussion' could continue the over head comms buzzed to life with a voice voice, "Lieutenant Winters and R please report to the bridge."

The N7 sighed and ran a hand through her hair, "We'll figure this out when we get back, just come on."

She turned away and headed back into the hallway with the younger girl following her with a defeated slouch.

Spending a week aboard the ship, R was getting used to the basic design of the ship and to the life style of those aboard. They ate, slept, trained, talked and basically did what any army would do on its down time. She herself spent most of her time in the armory, not cause she liked weapons but because she felt safe there.

Trust wasn't the issue, fear was.

The girl feared being alone anywhere without a weapon or someone else. She feared the things lurking in the shadows. She had seen the shadows come alive before and attack her and Shepard.

She wondered why Shepard told no one. It worried her that someone like Shepard kept that to herself. It was so unnatural even the Spartan who had saved her said nothing about it.

Maybe they had forgotten about it, but something told her otherwise. They were born and raised in science and technology, how could they even comprehend something like that?

"Hello? Earth to R?"

The girl blinked and looked up to see she was already outside the doors to the bridge. She'd been here a few times with the giant lizard so she remembered where it was and what it looked like.

"Sorry I guess I zoned out."

"I can tell. Come on." The blonde, still slightly frustrated, walked through the sliding door and onto the bridge, R following her.

The Keeper, Admiral Hackett, Thran, and the Arbiter all stood around the bridges center holotable.

The bridge itself was empty of anyone else except for a few key personnal and the leaders.

They barely paid any heed to the new comers that approached and joined their circle.

"Sir whats going on?" Jacqueline asked, feeling the bad vibe the group gave off.

Hackett looked up and nodded to the Keeper.

"I have been unable to contact Shepard for over twelve hours now." The Forerunner informed.

R tilted her head curiously and looked around, "So?"

"Nothing in that realm is technologically capable of blocking my transmissions." A grim voice accompanied by slight frustration got R to shrink again.

"So what could possibly be blocking the transmissions?" Jacqueline asked baffled.

"Thats exactly what we were discussing when you came in." Hackett stated rubbing his chin in thought.

"My theory," Thran started, "Is that the Flood used the random portals opening a few days ago to traverse the realms and refuel their lines with weaponry form our own."

With a shake of her head, the Forerunner retorted, "Impossible. I checked over and over, the signals given off by all the portals were random and not a single one I detected was opening to the universe Shepard's in."

"Is it possible you miscalculated or misread one of the signals?" Hackett asked.

"No. No chance."

"There could've been other portals. Hundreds, maybe thousands opened up at once. One could've slipped your instruments detection." Jacqueline added.

The Keeper sighed.

"It is possible." Thran agreed.

"I agreeâ€|" The Forerunner hissed, annoyed by such technicalities.

"Then theres no way to contact her without destroying whatever's blocking our transmissions." Hackett guessed.

Thran nodded, "Precisely."

"I have another theory." All heads turned to the only one who had yet to speak.

The Arbiter.

He leaned forward, "The Keepers and my devices did not catch anything even to hint that the Flood were moving towards that universe with those portals."

"Your devices?"

"The Keeper and I placed some of her technology with my ships. We sent scouts out to the voids of space before the portals began opening."

"And when were you going to plan on telling the rest os us this?" Hackett asked crossing his arms. Their alliance was new sure, but he firgeud against the Flood secrets couldn't be afforded.

"We were to tell you that day, alas we were distracted, and deemed it wise to keep it between us for now."

"Arbiterâ€|"

The ancient warrior held up a hand, "I mean no disrespect and I apologize for my deeds, however you may want to here my theory before you speak anymore."

He took the silence as a welcome to speak, "If the Flood have not transferred or even moved from our realm to that realm then how would the technology have gotten there?"

"It couldn't have."

"Unless they gathered it from another," The Arbiter waved his hand over the holotable and a diagram, one of a massive creature with dozens of tentacles flickered to life.

He looked at the keeper, "You said the Gravemind had ways of crossing universe's without technology."

"Yes but it was only a theory." The Forerunner responded.

"What if your theory is correct? What if," The elite motioned to the hologram, "He opened a pathway and transported machines capable of blocking our communication with Shepard from another universe?"

"Impossible. We would've been alerted by the signal. As far as I know he is still within our own universe."

The Arbiter sighed and lowered his head in a glare towards the hologram.

"Wellâ€¦" Heads turned to R who finally spoke up, "What if theres more like him?"

"What do you mean?" Hackett asked curious as to where the girl was going.

She brushed a strand of hair behind her ear, "When Shepard rescued me, theseâ€¦ things attacked us. I've never seen them before. It was like the shadows on the wall came to life and came after usâ€¦"

Hackett smiled sadly at her, "R I understand that in a fight things can be stressful but shadows don't come to life and just attack you, besides we have other matters to worry about."

"She may be right Admiral."

The Admiral looked back at the Keeper.

She gave him a nod and looked at the hologram.

"When we went to recuse R we were attacked by these beingsâ€¦ Creatures even I've never seen before. At first I passed them off as just other creations of the Flood. I never considered that maybe they were something else entirely."

"I too was attacked by those beings." It was the Arbiters turn to speak, "On the planet you refer to as Thessia, beneath the surface we were assaulted by creatures that manifested themselves from the shadows." the elite visibly tensed up.

"Why did you not tell us this?" the Keeper asked.

"For the same reason you did not. It was not logical. I believed they were of the Reapers, or even the Flood."

"Is it possible that these are just more pure forms?" Hackett asked.

The Keeper rubbed her chin, "Possible. The Flood can theoretically assimilate any being. Its possible they found some with the ability to become intangible across the different realms."

"Maybe the Reapers created a new soldier?" Jacqueline added.

"And genetically enhanced it with the parasites bio material?" Thran agreed.

"But its not!" R yelled finally losing her cool.

The room became quiet, each of the older warriors and generals looking down at the younger girl.

She let lose a shaky breath, "I've lived for almost two years with theâ€¦ those things in my home! I know what they can do and what they are! And those shadow monsters are not them! I hadn't even seen them till Shepard came through that portal!"

"We can't be sure." The Keeper replied without missing a beat.

"They're not!"

"Râ€| "

"Why won't you believe me! I know that you guys are all super great at fighting but these things are not the Flood! You have to believe me! There's something about themâ€| Iâ€| I just know!"

"Jacqueline." Hackett nodded.

"Come on kid lets go talk about this somewhere else." The N7 stated gently grabbing R by the arm and ushering her towards the door.

"Please trust me!" R begged trying to pull herself back towards the table. "I know their not! I don't know what they are butâ€| Just please!" She wasn't nearly strong enough to get out of the soldiers grip and it only took a few seconds before the two were gone.

"Poor girl." Hackett sighed taking off his hat and running a hand through his hair.

"What if she was right?"

"Excuse me?"

"Those beings had capabilities I've never been before." The Arbiter replied.

"What if it is something else? Worse than the Flood?" the Keeper added.

"Worseâ€| " Hackett didn't even want to dare think of the possibilities.

"What if," A wave of her hand, and the forerunner pulled up several different Flood forms in hologram form, "R's right? If these things arent Flood, and part of a different group entirely."

"Thenâ€| "

"There could be other creatures, other abominations out there like the Flood." Thran growled.

"By the godsâ€| "

"Not just like the Flood." The Keeper looked up at them and let the hologram change again, "What if there are other beings out there like the Gravemind? With capabilities similar to, or greater than his own, giving the enemy technology and weapons to destroy us."

Hackett shook his head in disbelief.

"Admiral its time I showed you how I know what I know. There is a video you must watch, a message from years ago. I showed Shepard, but

we haveâ€| played it close to the chest so to speak. See if those people who left the message were correctâ€| "

She looked at the hologram herself, "We may be in more danger than any of us could have ever imagined."

* * *

><p>Shepard watched as a ferry left the docks and headed out to the water beyond, people crying and cheering as it left. It was another group that got away, but was a reminder of those who didn't.<p>

She stood with her arms crossed, and leaned up against a wall, watching as the people of Ba Sing Se tried to flee through the Ferries.

There were only four operational ones, and they kept coming back and forth to move people out to the Earth Kingdoms fleet out in the ocean.

It pained her to see the thousands struggling to get aboard, to see fights break out between people who were all just trying to survive, and to hear the screams and cries of the city behind them.

The wall provided them excellent protection, and so long as the held this portion of the outer wall and the small patch of city around the docks entrance, then they could continue to evacuate as many as possible.

She wondered how long they could last.

From the sounds of it, the city was in chaos, and from the things she heard soldiers discussing, the entire left half of the city had already fallen. They were still holding the upper ring and the right halves of the lower and middle rings, where the docks entrance was, but she didn't think it would last long.

The Flood was too much for them. They would lose.

"Hey Shepard."

Katherine looked and found Korra walking towards her.

The Avatar was still a little cold towards her, but for now she was cooperating. Shepard could explain herself later. They had a world to save after all.

"Korra."

"Next ferries where we get on. Took a bit longer than ten minutes though.. Anyway The General wants us to get to the southern water tribe as soon as possible. From what he knows the entire northern half of the earth kingdoms already gone, and once Ba Sing Se's gone, the southern half won't last much longer."

"A week at best."

Korra didn't reply and instead took her place next to Shepard leaning against the wall with a frown.

An uncomfortable silence fell between the two.

"Korra."

"Look I don't want to talk about it alright? Whatever Cinder said doesn't matter."

"I was going to say the ferrys hereâ€|"

"Oh."

Shepard held back a smirk, instead shrugging towards the docks newest arrival.

The Ferry was already docked, refugees piling on board, as a group of soldiers headed straight for the two.

Korra pushed herself off the wall and met the soldiers who told her it was their time to go. Shepard without hesitation, pushed herself off the wall and followed after Korra, who had already started the short trek to the boat.

The Spectre couldn't help but cast sad glances at the Refugees they passed.

Their tired and scared faces.

The injuries, the fatigue, the broken souls, the pain of loss and suffering.

Despite all that, it was the looks they received that hurt her.

Mothers glaring at them with envious eyes, fathers angrily shouting at them, sons and daughters crying for safety and salvation.

People afraid of death.

It was happening all over again.

It was just like the Reaper War.

"Commander Shepard please hurry."

Katherine snapped her attention back to the front, where several soldiers holding back civilians from the ramp were standing. Korra was already on the ramp waiting for her, and one of the soldiers ushered her forward.

"Mam?" A child. A young boy, "You look funny."

Katherine smiled and kneeled down, "Do I now?"

The boy nodded and tilted his head at her.

"I am so sorry!" A woman, not much older than Shepard, cried running up to the boy and sweeping him up in her arms, "I'm sorry he doesn't know any better."

Shepard shook her head and to back to her feet, "Its fine. I probably

do look sort of strange."

Something shook under her feet.

Before she could even look, a loud boom echoed from outside. The roof of the docks shook, the walls shook, small rocks and dust falling down into the crowds of people accompanied by more screams.

"What theâ€¦" Katherine mumbled looking around as another boom echoed through the docks.

Static filled the air, and the docks PA system came to life, "The flood have breached the outer perimeter! They're inside the tunnels! They'll be here any minute! Evacuate immediately!"

Panic.

Screaming, shoving, cursing, crying, people jumping into the water and trying to swim away, others trying to push their way onto the ferry in front of her.

"Commander we have to leave now!"

She turned to look at the soldier who had called to her.

The red head turned back to the docks entrance where the massive undergrounds tunnels were.

Hundreds were still filling through in a rush. Then there were the hundreds waiting for the ferries.

They'd be slaughtered.

Just like the people on earth when the Reapers invaded.

She wouldn't, couldn't let that happen again.

"Tell the ship to go!" Shepard called out drawing her rifle.

"Wait up!" A gust of wind, and Korra landed in a crouch next to her, having launched herself off the ferry to land next to the Spectre despite the masses of people and ever growing panic, "You're going to need help." She knew what Shepard was up to.

The N7 nodded in thanks as the soldiers stared at them with somber looks of respect and awe, then the one on the ferry jumped off the ramp entrance to the ferry. The soldiers pulled the ramp away and signaled for the conductor to leave even as civilians continued to try and get on.

The ferry whistled, steam crying out from its shaft and slowly pulled out into the water.

"Soldier keep evacuating people as long as possible! We'll buy you as much time as we can!" Korra yelled. The soldiers nodded and immediately their resolve solidified. One of them immediately started shouting orders, and the avatar turned away.

Katherine looked towards the tunnels again, then back at Korra, "You

ready?"

"Come on these guys are like bugs. I'll just roast them."

"Then lets go." Together they broke off into a jog, chaos surrounding them, and headed right towards the tunnels.

* * *

><p>Hope slammed into the tiled roof, scrapping her knee against the harsh material, "Seriously this was your plan?"<p>

A screech and she instinctively ducked, serval razor sharp spikes flying right over her head. She didn't stay put and continued, running on the roof and hurtling over a small chimney.

On the building in front of her, Chief didn't say a word, instead just continuing on the roof towards his destination.

The spartan noticed a potted plant, grabbed it then spun around and launched it right at Hope.

She ducked, already knowing what he was doing, and heard the shatter of porcelain against rotting flesh. Her movement never stopped and she continued forward in a burst of speed, leaping right off the edge of the small roof and landing on the one Chief was on.

A roll kept her speed and momentum, and she used it it to launch herself in a flip right at chief. Her aim wasn't for him, but the Flood that had just landed behind him, so when he moved she proceeded to land a two footed kick to the abominations face, sending it hurting over the roofs side railing.

The mutant landed lightly and looked up at the Spartan who instantly drew his hard light shield, deflecting several more spike aimed right for them.

"Now I owe you." Hope sighed getting to her feet.

They had one more roof top to go, but this was the farthest jump. At least a twenty foot jump. That wasn't all though. The Apartment complex wasn't just farther in distance, it was taller, meaning they would have to jump through a window to get inside.

John didn't wait, and the moment the last spike shattered against the shield, he dropped it and turned on his heel, spiriting right to the end of the roof and jumping.

His enhanced muscles made the jump relatively easy despite the length of said jump and the sliding glass doors he was aiming to land through.

Shattering glass raining down around him, Chief landed hard, cracking the wooden floor, and spun to his feet.

Hope, though slightly hesitant, didn't wait and followed after the super soldier, her feet pushing off the stone roof and throwing her to the air. She had done crazier back home, but that was with her powers.

Time slowed, the distance closed, but her eyes caught her mistake. Her feet had failed to propel her far enough into the air. She would fall.

As a last ditch effort her hand reached out for the balcony of the room Chief had fallen through, a hopeless and last try.

After all she had done and been through, at her weakest and most vulnerable, that was when she would die. It was fitting. No more suffering.

Her fingers scraped the edge of the balcony, flesh on stone, but she didn't fall.

Metal clasped around her wrist, breaking her free fall, and without effort, it yanked her up over the balcony, placing her safely on her feet.

Shields flared, shards of biological spikes shattered in every direction, and Hope Summers threw herself into the apartment, rolling off to the side behind a wall.

Chief followed her, and dashed into the apartment. His shields began their recharge, and shrieks could be heard from outside.

"Now what?!" Hope asked as the shrieks and the thud of spikes impacting the walls rang out around the building.

"Up." John stated. He charged what looked like the front door, and kicked it off its hinges.

Hope ran after him as he exited and looked around.

It wasn't like a typical apartment from his time, but he figured that would be the case.

Alas, there were similarities, such as the stairs at the end of the hall. Debris of all sorts, blood and gashes in the wall, and he paid no heed to them.

The Spartan ran, knowing their window to escape was short. He could hear Hope behind him, and made his way five at a time, up the stairs.

They had landed on the fourth floor. At their current rate, it'd take thirty to thirty seconds to reach the top. Seventy for the Flood to surround and completely over run the building.

Door in their way, it lasted less than a second as the Spartan literally barreled right through it.

The roof.

"How on earth are we getting up there?" Hope asked a few seconds later when she caught up to Chief.

The train railing was at least twenty feet above them. The sides of the roof were taller than the actual roof. It had mislead him.

John could survive a twenty foot fall easy, but jumping straight up

twenty feet was different.

They needed a plan and quick. He counted his options. They couldn't fight, couldn't run.

What else could they do?

He spun around when he heard the feet and mush of decaying flesh charging up the stairs after them.

"Chief?"

He took a fighting stance and powered up his hard light shield.

Hope gulped and let out a huff of air, taking a lower fighting stance and tensing every muscle in her body.

This was it.

The sun was bright, the smoke black, the sky blue, a single black dot in the sky growing bigger as it raced towards them, fire in the distance, screams, and yet she felt peace.

No more running.

A final stand.

* * *

><p>"We should've just sealed the the tunnels." Korra muttered as she stepped over a fallen chunk of roof.<p>

Shepard kept her light on and her gun pointed ahead, "They would've just blown a hole in it. Better we give them something to fight then nothing at all."

"We'll give them more than a fight."

"Hmm." Shepard only grunted, more focused on the enemies she knew were coming for her. Her Comms were still down, her friends and allies spread across the globe, and the Flood had basically taken the largest city on the planet. She wondered where Reluctant Promise was. She hadn't seen him since they split after meeting at the police headquarters.

"Just like old timesâ€|" She muttered under her breath, though not quietly enough.

"What?"

"Nothing."

A disapproving sigh, "Look Shepard if were gonna be allies then you better start trusting me."

"It goes both ways you know."

They turned around a corner, still having seen nothing more than debris from the explosion outside. Apparently the crowds had been smaller than she anticipated. What truly worried her was the lack of

Flood. It had been at least ten minutes since the explosion, and they still had yet to run into any trouble.

"Well after what Cinder saidâ€|"

"Look Korra," Katherine stopped and faced the younger Avatar, "I know what she said bugs you, it bugs me too because she's right, but we can't let that tear us apart. We're in this together, andâ€|"

She spun around, facing the dark hallway to her left. Considering that she had just heard something soft, like a breath, she figured it wasn't the best of ideas for them to stop right at an intersection within the tunnels.

"Shepard?" Korra asked taking a stance and standing back to back with the Commander.

"Quiet."

They stayed still, their experience, their instincts screaming at each of them to leave, to run. A human sixth sense that no science in any world or realm could explain.

When the shadows moved and red eyes met hers, her heart stopped.

"Shit." Shepard hissed firing rounds in the dark tunnels. The flash of light from the muzzle and her own flashlight were enough to see the shadows skid and something dodge her rounds.

"What theâ€|" Korra asked looking behind her and over Shepard's shoulder.

"Korra!"

Too late.

From in front, a mass of black shadow slammed into the avatar knocking her over, and in turn throwing Shepard off balance.

Bullets ripped into the stone walls, light flashing in every direction, Korra tumbling to the ground with a massive beast on top of her.

Katherine powered up her biotics and still knowing the direction the first beast was at, fired off a shockwave.

The blue lit up the tunnel, and she saw the same type of black wolf from Thessia and R's home. It snarled and tore itself apart into black smoke, dodging the shockwave and seeping into the tunnel walls.

Korra rolled under the weight of whatever had knocked her down. She didn't need to stop and instead blasted a gust of air from her hands, propelling herself into a wall and the beast into the air. The pain was minor and she rolled out of the way of the beasts landing.

With a twist, fire sprouted from her feet and slammed into the creature, as well as lifting her off the ground.

The beast rolled within the smoke from the fire, and now seeing its form, Korra watched as the wolf snarled at her before bubbling, and like a liquid, reformed into something else entirely.

"What the heck are these things!" She roared, slamming her foot into the ground and ripping up several chunks of earth before hurtling them at the newly formed creature, a massive samurai with dual katanas.

Shepard grabbed the head of the wolf that was attacking her and kicked it hard in the chest before slamming a full forced biotic back punch into it, throwing it back a dozen feet, "No idea thats for sure, but I've fought them before."

The wolf again tore itself apart into smoke and reformed itself behind Shepard, grabbing her leg with its teeth, slicing open both armor and flesh, as well as flipping her onto her stomach.

A scream let itself out, but the Spectre was more than prepared for the pain. She grabbed her rifle, and twisted her body then letting lose a stream of rounds at the beast holding her leg.

It shuddered and yelped when one round hits it red eye, releasing her and letting itself literally flow back into the wall.

Fire and earth were deflected with dark swords, and Korra was forced into defensive moves as the dark entity now swung at her body.

She flipped over one sword, using a gust of air to propel the other one away from her when she landed. A boot hit her gut and she slid backwards.

A sword swung at her, cutting the bottom of her ribs, before she managed to unleash another torrent of air, which pushed her and the samurai away from each other.

She grit her teeth, feeling pain, "And you didn't think it would be a good idea to tell me about them!"

"Would you really believe me if I said the shadows came to life and attacked me and Chief?" A singularity, a charge, and a kick to the head then Shepard hit the wall hard.

Korra ignored the obvious, and ducked under a sharp and cylindrical projectile, before the samurai tore apart into smoke and raced at her.

Unlike Shepard though, Korra had a better defense against this.

Smoke surged behind her, but a twirl of air dissipated the smoke, forcing it away from the Avatar before it reformed into a massive snake, the reformed snake crashing into the ground as it reformed.

"Really a snake?" A sigh, and another kick which sent a blast of flames at the new beast.

Shepard rolled underneath the wolfs lunge. Her cryo ammo was ready, and she spun up onto her knee.

Before she could fire the wolf slammed into her, deforming and wrapping tendrils of shadow around her shoulders.

Korra flipped over the massive snake, letting air boost her away only for the snake to continue away from her and towards Shepard. Her eyes went wide and she unleashed a volley of concentrated fire.

The snake opened its mouth as it raced towards the incapacitated commander, and Shepard put everything into her biotics preparing to overload and send out a shockwave in every direction. It'd hurt but she didn't have a choice.

Waiting for the last second, she didn't expect the snake to fall apart, and form a mass of black shadows that suddenly lightened up with orange sun light.

Before she knew it, the one holding her trusted her forward, and the next thing she knew she was falling.

"No!" Korra roared as the portal closed.

Her eyes glowed white.

The wolves reformed and snarled.

Then there was fire.

* * *

><p>Shepard's eyes looked up to smoke covering blue sky, her head slightly dizzy from the fall.<p>

She wondered how far the fall had actually been.

A swish in the air, and her instincts screamed again. She immediately moved her head to the side, only for a sword to slam into the stone her head had just rested on.

Her biotics activated and she formed a barrier right above her as another sword came down at her.

It hit her shield and she pushed it off.

Her armor had deployed its medigel, but her injured leg wouldn't let her flip onto her feet so instead she rolled away just as the first sword struck again at where she had been.

Katherine cursed, then stopped herself, putting out her hands towards the attacker and sent a blast of pure energy at them.

It struck seconds before the next sword hit and threw the attacker over a dozen feet back.

The Spectre used the time and got to her feet, drawing her side arm, her rifle having been left in the tunnel.

She glanced at her enemy.

A girl, black straight hair down to her shoulders, black eyes, and a

cold look. A red scarf was tied around her neck, and her body was covered in black armor that reminded her of the Black Knights. Two small attachments were on her hips, and she twirled two swords in her hands.

"Who are you?" Shepard called out powering up her omni blade just in case. She knew she was on a wall, a large one, but where she couldn't tell without looking away from her enemy.

The girl narrowed her eyes and Shepard knew talking was not an option.

She lunged towards the spectre. Her speed wasn't super human like Chiefs, but it was definitely peak humans, close to Shepard's.

Shepard drew back her arm with her blade for a strike, and readied her pistol.

Then a wire, made of pure light energy, shot out of the device on the girls hip, shooting out right at Shepard.

The Commander's eyes went wide and she ducked underneath the light, not seeing the second wiring that had shot out from the second device and anchored itself into the wall.

A foot slammed into her face and she rolled to the ground, the wiring having pulled the girl forward at exponential speeds.

The Spectre threw up her arm just as a sword came down, meeting the omni blade.

The second came at her from her side, and she was forced to block it with her pistol. Somehow, said sword imbedded itself in the pistol, not breaking it but almost cutting it in half.

Katherine twisted her body, and swiped her attackers feet from under her.

Her swords left Shepard, and the Commander kicked the girl in the gut as she fell. The girl flew back and hit the ground, but rolled back to her feet.

Shepard regained her own footing and fired a biotic attack at the girl, then her black armor formed a shield of red around her, deflecting Shepards attack and dissipating into the air.

They stood still.

Hunter and Prey.

Warrior and Assassin.

"I'm figuring the Black Knight gave you that amor." Katherine grit her teeth and raised her pistol, though she knew her pistol was a bluff. The bullets would likely face the same force field her biotics met. It would be pointless to shoot.

The girl glared at her and lowered her chin, to where the scarf covered it. Her swords twitched.

Green eyes studied her.

It was a waiting game, waiting for the perfect moment to strike.

An explosion in the distance.

The wall they were on shook, only slight enough for Shepard's left foot to need to move an inch. It was all the girl wanted.

Two strings of light shot out on either side of the Commander and the girl shot towards her.

A wall of biotic energy appeared, but the girl twisted, one line of light disappearing, and spinning her around to where she was able to land a hard kick on Shepard's back.

Her armor protected her and the only repercussion was a stumble forward.

Knowing what her enemy would do, Katherine rolled forward, using the momentum to her advantage to avoid the dual swords the sliced the air above her.

She spun on her heel when her body rolled upright, and thrust her blade at her attackers gut.

Her attackers eyes went wide, and she barely avoided the blow by moving to the side, when Shepards elbow slammed into her gut.

The girl gasped for air, not expecting such a harsh blow and received a blow to the head with the other elbow when Shepard got back to her feet.

Not letting up, the red head continued her assault with punch to the face, then to uppercut the girl.

Each blow landed, and the dark haired girl flew back, hitting her back hard on the stone.

She got up only a moment later, using her swords to block Shepards blade meant for the killing blow to her neck. Her devices activated and light pulled her backwards and away from the attacking N7.

The momentum was reversed in an instant, and with a twist she shot forward at Katherine.

Her foot slammed into the older woman's chest, of course not doing any damage but forcing her again into a stumble.

Biotics flared, and swords slashed, they two continuing their engagement like a well choreographed dance.

Finally, Shepard got the upper hand. She noticed the girls flawed stance, a foot a little to far out, one sword holding off Shepard's omni blade and another coming for her throat.

With an all or nothing move, she stepped back, the sword missing her throat by inches, the sudden lack of resistance letting the girl fall forward a bit, before unleashing a charge.

Her head slammed into the girl, a red barrier barely saving her life, and ended up sending her towards the wall's edge to where she slammed into the stone railing.

The Commander started to raise her pistol, thrusting her free hand forward with a singularity when a strand of light shot out towards her.

She misfired her biotic attack so she could dodge, but failed to see the second strand.

It pierced her armor, bypassing her shields entirely, and slicing open her right side.

She gasped in surprise and lost her balance, being forced to catch herself with her left hand as she held her side with her other one.

The girl got to her feet with a bloodied lip and sore muscles, twirling her swords.

Blue shimmered in the air as Katherine let her biotics power up again, preparing to unleash all she had on the girl.

The girl lowered down and glared.

Yet their fight wouldn't conclude, as a gust of wind picked up around them and they were both forced to look up from the noise of whistling air and engines.

A large figure slammed down next to Shepard, and the Krogan stood up wielding his shotgun, "You picked a bad day to mess with Shepard kid." And he fired.

A red force field again powered up, blocking Wrex's rounds, but the girl fired off both strands of light, yet not at the Krogan.

The strands implanted into the railing on the far side of the wall and she shot towards the railing, flipping over it, and launching herself away and down as Wrex continued to fire after her.

He roared as she tried to escape, but by the time he reached the far side of the wall and looked down after her, she was gone.

In seconds, she had escaped.

His shotgun cocked back, and he turned to his old friend.

Katherine, having gotten to her feet, looked up with a smile.

* * *

><p>Chief stared down, holding himself as he watched Shepard talk to her old friend.<p>

He was lucky to be alive.

Hope and him had fought at least a dozen more Flood forms when the Normandy had arrived above them, Reluctant Promise in tow, and ended

up rescuing them from the hordes of Flood.

Like Cortana had said all those years ago, he had luck.

"So thats Commander Shepard?"

He looked at the small red headed girl besides him.

"Didn't know she was a red head."

* * *

><p>The Normandy hovered over the wall Shepard was on, and on the back ramp were Legion, a large green spartan she had thought was dead, her favorite floating light bulb, and a young red headed girl she didn't recognize.<p>

She couldn't believe they had come. Her friends never failed her, and Chief was alive too. She would have to ask him where he was and how he got away.

"Looks like I got here just in time." Wrex stated taking a place next to her.

"I had it."

"Of course you did."

She only glared back at him for his statement before looking around to see where she was.

Still in Ba Sing Se, on top on one of the outer walls. The wall next to the water, above the docks.

It clicked. The wolves had sent her to the top of the wall for her to get assassinated and for them to take care of the Avatar. "Korra is she with you guys?"

"No why?"

"She's going to need our help."

* * *

><p>Korra hissed in pain, rocketing backwards towards the docks once more with jets of fire as blood leaked from the wound on her side.<p>

She had fought hard, but the wolves were refusing to go down.

Again, the two leapt at her, having followed her as she retreated back towards the docks.

The girl slammed her fist into the wall, and let shards of earth rip out and close off the tunnel. The Wolves of course, turned to smoke and phased through and around the shards, reforming on the other side of the closing, chasing after Korra who had resumed her retreat.

A gust of air barreled at the them, and they sunk their claws into the ground, taking the blast and letting it wash harmlessly over

them.

White eyes and a blast of fire was sent at one of the wolves. It would've killed anything else, but the wolf dispersed into the air, reformed, then rejoined its comrade in its chase.

Korra flipped back, avoided the teeth of one wolf, while kicking up two large rocks that slammed right into the second's head.

The first wolf deformed itself, transforming, and then three smaller bird-like creatures zoomed at Korra.

She went wide-eyed and shot bolts of fire at the first two, but failed to deflect either, each of the birds landing swipes with their claws and opening up wounds on her shoulder.

The third bird raced towards her chest, and when she failed to blast it, it slammed into her, digging its claws into her gut and snapping at her neck.

Again, her eyes went white, and the dark-haired girl let loose a breath of fire that singed the bird into a hasty retreat.

Two pairs of claws grazed her back, and she screamed in pain reverting back to her normal self, when the second wolf slammed into her head on and sent the young avatar flying backwards.

She used air to catch herself before she hit the ground, but weak and injured she lazily held her balance.

With grit teeth she studied her enemies.

Every attack she threw at them was almost useless. Other than being blown back, they were completely unaffected by any of her attacks.

"Avatar Korra?!" A voice from behind her. She glanced back, seeing the entrance to the docks only fifty or so feet away. The soldiers were still guarding it, and from the noise, she could tell hundreds of refugees were still there.

"Close the entrance!"

"But—"

"Do it!" Fire and air surged at the wolves, which each dodged by falling part into smoke and leaking into the walls.

She heard the entrance seal with stone.

She had to stop them. The soldiers and refugees would be massacred if she didn't stop these things now. But how?

Her attacks hit sometimes, but did hardly any damage. The wolves always recovered, and attacked. None of her attacks seemed strong enough.

Then it hit her as the wolves reformed only a dozen feet from her.

Every time she tried land a harsh blow, they turned to smoke, and avoided her attacks. Only air ever seemed to hit them, or when she used area attacks with fire and earth.

A close ranged, focused hit. She hadn't tried that yet, at least not consciously.

Her fist, lowered down, heating up dangerously. Charged hits weren't part of her style.

The wolves charged.

She lowered herself down as the wolves lunged at her, one for her upper half, the other for her legs. They were going to try and rip her in two.

With her free hand, a gust of air was enough to send the wolf aiming for her legs away, but the other was about to hit her.

She spun around it, lifting her fist as the wolf sailed by her, and let loose a charged blast of flames.

The blast ignited and slammed into the wolf. It's hair singed, and it yelped, hitting the ground and rolling as it snapped at the flames coating its back.

A smile, and she twirled around, waiting a second as the second wolf lunged for her, mouth open and teeth aimed for her face.

Her hand thrust forward, and a pure concentrated and charged line of fire hit the wolf dead center in its mouth.

Its body hung in mid air as fire pumped into it and a second later the wolf was incinerated into black ash.

Korra bit her lip and ducked down, unleashing another blast of fire when the remaining wolf rammed her.

They rolled together, and the wolf sunk its claws into her back trying to hold on.

Like before Korra opened her mouth and breathed fire on its face, but it held on.

White eyes appeared again. She kneed it in the gut the moment they stopped, breathed fire, and blasted it in the chest with air.

The wolf flew up in the air and deformed into smoke, while Korra twirled on the ground, using her back as a center of balance with her hands held out in a charge.

A samurai reformed the moment Korra thrust her hands up, sword pointed down for her heart.

Flames, heated to the extreme and charged up with enough force to shatter stone walls, slammed into the samurai.

It floated in mid air for a split second, red eyes staring down at her before the flames completed their work and tore the beast apart into nothing.

The air was clam.

Korra's hands fell down to her side, and she took in a deep breath, smiling as she did.

The floor shook slightly, and she looked over to the entrance, watching as the earth moved away and several people charged in.

"Shepard?" She asked sitting up with a groan.

Katherine kept her weapon up and trained down the tunnel, "What happened?"

"They weren't that tough."

* * *

><p>"So are we ready?"<p>

A shake of her head, and the Keeper sighed, "We have no way of getting to Shepard and with her communications still being jammed we have no way to contact her."

The Arbiter crossed his arms and Hackett shook his head.

The Admiral was still having a hard time comprehending everything he had been told. So many realms, their implied enemies, men who could destroy stars with their power, and technology that could transcend neural physics.

"What if we amplify your personal transporter?" He asked.

"We could, but the power needed would destroy it. It wouldn't last long enough to evacuate the world, and we both knowâ€|"

"Shepard won't let us go back on our word. We said we'd get all of them out."

"Why don't you go and find her yourself? Tell her about everything."

"My transporter has yet to recharge its own power supply. Its charging station was within my ship."

They stayed silent.

"I have a solution."

Hackett looked up at the Arbiter who looked at the Keeper who looked at Hackett.

The Admiral raised an eyebrow and looked over at the crew on the bridge, "Who said that?"

A flicker on the holo table, "I did!"

Another monitor, like Reluctant Promise.

"A monitor?" The Keeper asked baffled, as far as she knew Reluctant Promise was the last of the monitors yet here one was, floating in hologram form over the holotable.

"I am 343 Guilty Spark!"

"Impossibleâ€|" The Arbiter said with a low growl, his hand lowered to his sword.

"How the hell did he hack our systems!" Hackett snapped at his crew.

"Simple I used complex forerunner algorithms to bypass your security in point zero zero zero two four seconds. I would explain but the equations may be too complex."

The Keeper stood tall, "Guilty Spark how are you still functioning?"

"It does not matter, what matters is I have a way to get to your Commander. Is that not your current dilemma?"

The Keeper was prepared to respond but Hackett beat her too it, "What do you have in mind?" His voice was agitated from the monitors actions but he was slightly interested in what it had to say.

The monitor turned to him, "I have myself a reality transporter. One that is functioning and ready for use. It could lead a fleet of ships to wherever they need to go."

"How did you know what we need?" The Keeper asked.

"You should know Keeper, daughter of Librarian, that theseâ€| primitive communication systems are easily able to be hacked by superior Forerunner technology."

She stayed silent.

"How do we know we can trust you?" Hackett asked.

"Take my word for it admiral."

A man, dressed in Alliance uniform stepped up next to the monitor.

"Captain Johnson?"

"Alive and well sir. This guy was the unknown fleet when earth was attacked. Bought us time and got me and my men out of our ship before they were destroyed."

Hackett nodded, skeptical of the whole thing.

"Here are my coordinates. If you wishâ€|"

"Hold up Spark." Johnson took a step forward, "Admiral we know Shepard's in trouble. I can guess how this looksâ€| I swear to you he has this portal. I've seen it. I don't exactly how it works or even where he got it, but he can help."

Hackett shared a look with the Arbiter, "Send us your coordinates. Well meet you there."

Johnson smiled slightly and nodded.

"We shall see you soon reclaimer!" and with that the hologram flickered off.

"What exactly is a reclaimer?"

* * *

><p>Ash.<p>

A descendant to her name.

Cinder.

She stepped over the black remnants of a building, ashes and black soot spread everywhere, the fires having destroyed the building hours ago, in the few hours it had taken for the city to fall.

Two people followed her, weary of the woman they followed and the creatures in the city.

"Zaheer you want the Avatar correct?"

"Yes." The man with a strong build and bald head replied.

"And you want her because?" Cinder looked back at him, a sly smile on her face as she continued forward.

"Thats for us to know." The woman with Zaheer, P'Li, stated.

Cinder didn't reply and stopped when she reached two charred logs left from the roof.

A glint of metal caught her eye. She bent down and with a wave of her hand, the dust swirled up into the air.

She grabbed the circular device and stood back up, studying it with a vicious smile.

"You want something. Power, money," she turned to them and seeing the distaste on their faces smiled, "Freedom."

Zaheer crossed his arms and intensified his glare.

With a wave of her hair, she lifted the device up to her eyes, "What if I told you I could not only give you the avatar, but you could free the rest of the realms as well?"

"What do you mean?"

A grin.

* * *

><p>AN Here we are again! So Korra is pretty powerful, but like Shepard, had to figure out how to beat those wolves. What

exactly are those wolves? Where are they from? The Korra defeating them should actually make sense since in Legend of Korra and the Last Airbender, firebenders have been shown to use attacks that are weaker and dissipate rather easily against solid objects and have also shown much more concentrated and deadlier attack that can shatter rock walls easily so it makes sense that her weaker flame based attacks did no damage.**

**Shepard was in her fight a superior fighter however she was caught off guard by AOT's 3D maneuvering devices, which said devices were enhanced by the black knight just so you know. **

**Who forgot about Captain Johnson and Guilty Spark?! **

Now the heroes are all together! Chief, Hope, Elsa, Shepard, and Korra, but the enemies are expanding their own ranks.

What happens next?

Find out next time!

Thanks for reading! Please review and god bless you guys!

39. Part I Chapter 36 (Beta'd)

A/N thoughts in Italics. Rated T, but the rating will change soon. I own nothing.

* * *

<p>Part I

The Voice and Face of All Evil.

Chapter 36: The Beginning of the End.

* * *

><p>"I can't believe itâ€|" Tenzin sighed rubbing his forehead.<p>

Shepard let out a deep breath, "Cinder out smarted us. The Flood own Ba Sing Seâ€|"

She sighed, "How?" The Commander quietly asked herself, going over every possible idea she could formulate. The enemy seemed to always be a step ahead of them.

There was only one way they could be a step ahead.

"So what do we do now?" Korra asked from her spot next to Tenzin.

Katherine frowned, trying to think of what to do next, a nervous feeling crawling over her. They were inside Chief Tonraq's hut, Korra's home, standing around a large table with a map of the world of it. Chief and Hope stood off to the older red head's left, Korra and Tenzin across from her, Wrex and Reluctant Promise on either side of her.

"We have to buy the Keeper more time."

"More time?" Korra's voice raised, "I don't if you've noticed but we just lost the Earth Kingdom in a week! Those Flood guys aren't going to wait, give it a month and they'll take over the whole world! We have to stop them now!"

"And how do you propose we do that?" Wrex grunted with a frown.

"I don't know, we could launch our own offensive! Push them back and contain them!"

Chief crossed his arms, "The Flood can't be contained."

"I agreeâ€|" Shepard stated.

"Then what can we do?" Tenzin asked with a tired voice.

Shepard looked down at the map. Chief Tonraq was still to be heard from as was Garrus, and they still had three more weeks till the Keeper had said her ship would be complete for evacuation.

They were running out of both time and options.

"Nothing." All heads turned to the Spartan. "This planets doomed. We can't save it."

"So what we just abandon it?" Korra hissed.

"Yes."

His answer was unexpected and took everyone by surprise. Shepard glared, Korra went wide eyed and Tenzin scowled while Wrex shook his head, even Hope frowned at him.

"We can't just abandon everyone!" Korra snapped, taking a step towards the man.

"The planet's doomed."

"Doesn't mean we just leave everyone to die!"

Chief looked down at her with his faceless helmet, the golden visor reflecting the Avatars face.

"Enough," Shepard stated forcefully.

Korra held her tongue and Chief looked back at the Commander. Katherine bit her lip and leaned on the table, studying the map with frustration. She had no idea what to do. They didn't have the weaponry to contain or hold off the Flood. They had no way to flee, and had no place to stay.

"Tonraq already set up perimeters around the city. Let's reinforce them. Put as many men as we can on the perimeters. We should send out a scouts as well. Let them check the entire surrounding area as well as set up outposts for early warning systems."

"I agree," Tenzin replied thoughtfully, "With Tonraq gone General

Dasas is in charge. I'll talk to him. Hopefully he'll agree."

With that Tenzin stepped past the others and left the tent.

"Wrex take the Normandy and scout out the Flood. I want every inch of their territory accounted for. Keep in contact. Once every hour. Leave Legion here."

Wrex began to take his leave but stopped at the entrance, "What about Elsa? What do we do with her?"

Shepard looked at Chief before responding, "I have no idea.. Maybe we can send her somewhere away from the fighting.."

"She won't like that, and her sister especially won't."

"I'll deal with them."

Wrex grunted, then moved out of the home leaving the four heroes alone.

"We need to contact the Keeper." Shepard added.

Chief nodded in agreement.

"Our communications are still jammed, but I'll see what I can do. Maybe we can boost a signal through the Normandy's long range arrays and see if we can get around it..."

Korra huffed and uncrossed her arms, "Well, while you guys figure out when you're going to leave, I'm going to find a way to save my home." With that she shoved her way past the others and out of the hut.

Chief watched her go and Hope awkwardly scratched her head. The red head was indebted to the man, but she felt uncomfortable with the things he said since she disagreed with almost anything he says.

"She's right," Shepard sighed rubbing her temples, "We should be doing more to help."

"There's nothing we can do."

"I know."

"So what do we do?" Hope asked, finally deciding to voice her opinion now that there was only three of them there. She had been introduced to Shepard and the others, but she only knew Chief, and even then she barely knew him.

"We survive." With that John turned, walking out without a sound.

Hope frowned, "Why is he so blunt?"

Katherine shook her head.

"Because he's right."

* * *

><p>Elsa waved her hand and let a wave of snow wash over the icy tundra beneath her feet. It collected together with the natural snow and with another twist it dissipated into the air above her. A smile graced her face.<p>

They were only a few dozen feet or so behind Elsa's hut, towards the outskirts of the dock and the newly arrived Normandy. She had heard the talk of her water tribe guards, who currently stood off by her hut watching the perimeter carefully.

Shepard, Chief and an apparently new member of their group had arrived during the night while she had been asleep.

In all honesty it didn't seem of any importance because nothing much had happened since their arrival, though she had yet to see them.

It was better that way. She had no particular desire to see them and they didn't trust her, nor did she trust them. They could keep out of each others way. Then again they needed each other didn't they? It was why they had saved her and her sister.

It made her wonder why they hadn't come to see her.

Deciding that worrying would do her no good, she pushed the thoughts away and focused on the present instead. Being outside, using her power without fear, and with her sister and Kristoff laughing only a few feet off was what she needed.

A day off, just to get her mind off things.

She still wasn't fully recovered. Her head still pounded with harsh movements or sudden bright lights and harsh sounds, and sometimes she felt woozy no matter what precautions she took.

Today however she felt better than she had in days.

The sky was blue, she had her family, or what she considered one, and no bad news had come today.

"Hey it's Shepard!" Anna's voice called out from behind her.

Elsa spun around, dark ice barely spreading from her feet. There stood the Commander, armor and all, with her sister and Kristoff, a third red haired girl in tattered clothing standing next to her.

A feeling of unease fell over the Queen. She should've figured one of them would eventually come. It reminded her of everything happening, of all the death, war, and suffering around them.

Ignorance was truly bliss. Still, seeing a friendly face was comforting. Besides it was the Commander, who had been mostly friendly to her so she let a small smile grace her lips. Hands held in front of her, Elsa walked over towards the small group.

"Commander," She greeted kindly enough.

"Elsa," Katherine replied back with a curt nod.

"So whats going on because I'll tell you this place is cold and people here are crazy! I mean some woman tried to kill us! Then there was that big bald dude! Like what the heck is happening!"

Anna had spoken, blurting out all the questions she had been harboring for the past couple of days.

Straight to the pointâ€| Katherine thought.

She raised an eyebrow, "Wellâ€|" She only left a brief hesitation but one of the sister sensed it.

Anna's face dropped, her green eyes turning sad yet serious, her peppy demeanor dying away.

"What is it?" Elsa asked her own blue eyes trying to decipher Shepard's the moment she saw her sisters reaction.

"This planets doomed. The Earth Kingdom we visited is completely destroyed. The Flood justâ€| These people don't stand chance."

Anna closed her eyes, and the quiet blonde haired man scowled.

Elsa frowned slightly, keeping her emotions at bay, her brow furrowing and her face as cold as ice. She felt the temperature drop dangerously and glanced at the girl standing with Shepard. She felt something coming from her, something odd.

"We're going to try to contact the Keeper. If we can get a hold of her we're going to start evacuations as soon as possible. With the Earth Kingdom gone, there's nothing between us and them now. The Water tribes already setting up perimeters to keep the Flood at bay but there's no way we can do it indefinitely."

"What if that lady doesn't answer?" Anna inquired, confused.

A shake of her head and the Spectre responded, "We'll try our best to survive."

The younger girl opened her mouth but she found it hard to speak, "Whatâ€| if she does answer?"

A small smile, "Then we can finally get the hell out of here."

"Well, I hope you guys have a lot more food cause there's too many people to feed here. Seriously, these guys like to eat," Anna laughed hearty as she pointed back to the city around them, "You should've seen the eating contest we entered."

Shepard pursed her lips.

"What now?" Anna groaned.

"Trust me, I want to get as many people out as we can, but for now it looks like we'll have to leave most of them behind."

"What! You can't do that!" Anna gasped her good mood shattered again by the thought of having to leave so many people behind.

She was ignored, "If the Keeper responds you three are to be the first to evacuated out of here."

"Huh?"

"We're getting you out first," Hope stated crossing her arms, her gaze moving to Elsa.

"Well yeah I got that, I mean that's good and all, I think, but why us first?" Anna asked, her tone still slightly raised from her early exasperation.

Hope didn't know the answer to that and looked to Katherine for an answer. If she was being honest, she knew next to nothing about Anna, Kristoff or Elsa. All she knew is that they were with Chief and Shepard's group, that Elsa was a Queen with ice powers, and obviously not from this world.

Katherine hesitated, and the ever preceptive red headed sister of the Queen caught it, "You don't think we can take care of ourselvesâ€|." Her voice was quieter but sharper.

Hope raised an eyebrow at both parties. They two sisters had fire.

"No, that's not why we'reâ€|."

"What about you huh? And mister green man? And her!" Anna pointed at Hope, who in stepped back with hands raised defensively to keep out of the argument.

"We're staying to help out."

"We can help out just as much as you!"

Shepard had to literally bite her tongue to keep from saying anything offensive, with this girl she knew verbally attacking her wouldn't do the trick, at least not when she was so worked up.

"Enough Anna."

The Spectre looked around, grateful for the calm voice of Elsa stopping her sister. Said Queen blinked a few times, and only Shepard noticed her gulp, a sign of her trying to keep calm despite the situation.

"We can help Commander," Elsa started and immediately Shepard felt regret for coming without Chief. He was far more stern than she was, and she knew they argued because she was kind, too kind to say anything harsh or cruel, "My sister and Kristoff can help direct the evacuation of the people. I can help with whatever you need me to."

"Elsa I appreciate the offer butâ€|"

"Look we just want to help is that so bad!" Anna exclaimed clearly not understanding Shepard's reasoning.

Hope stepped back again. Sure she had seen people fight, but watching

this girl was like watching Nick Fury yelling at Tony Stark, tiring and awkward.

"Commander please."

"Elsa lookâ€¦"

The snow and air began to twirl around them, and Shepard twitched her hand, a light blue glow surrounding her hand. Fortunately no one saw it.

The group had fallen into silence while Elsa and Shepard stared at one another, their gazes locked and the air growing tenser every moment.

For a moment the Commander felt more annoyed than impressed. Obviously all three took offense to being 'useless', according to the Commander's insinuations, but she realized at that moment that maybe they, or at least Elsa, weren't entirely useless.

A Queen that could control ice with her thoughts or a just flick of her wrist? She could form barriers, walls, bunkers, all sorts of things if she was directed to. They needed more defense's either way.

"Can you build walls?"

Elsa simply nodded.

"I'll get someone to escort you to the perimeter. With the Flood coming we could use some big walls to keep them out."

She knew it hadn't worked for Ba Sing Se but that was because of Cinders interference. If they kept a more watchful eye, then it shouldn't happen again.

"As for you two," She looked at Anna and Kristoff, "I'll talk to Tenzin. We'll figure something out."

Anna nodded gratefully, though slightly pestered by the fact Shepard considered her useless.

Hope was impressed. Elsa had stood up to Shepard, despite Shepard being a fierce killing machine, and yet Katherine had still managed to defuse the situation.

More stubborn leaders would've put their foot down and earned insubordination or hatred, weaker ones would've let the Queen walk all over them, yet Shepard managed to appease both parties. Not all leaders could. Only the good ones.

"Thank you Commander," Elsa continued, her voice slightly colder than before.

She spared a glance at the younger mutant.

Shepard nodded and turned away, motioning for Hope to follow her. The girl waved at the trio awkwardly and left after Shepard.

A few seconds and the three from Arendelle felt the temperature rise,

yet Elsa's frown deepened.

"Elsa are you okay?" Anna asked, concerned for her sister since her powers normally reflected her attitude.

"Annaâ€¦ Kristoffâ€¦ Did you feel how cold it was?"

"We're in the South pole?"

Anna shook her head at the man's light hearted joke, "It's fine Elsa. Shepard stepped way out of line anyway," She answered referring to her sisters powers and their ties to her emotions.

"Anna... I wasn't doing that. That wasn't meâ€¦"

* * *

><p>"This is where we're supposed to meet them, is it not?"<p>

The Arbiter nodded and held his gaze at the stars and black void of space, his hologram above the holotable reflecting his movements from within his own ship's bridge. Hackett grunted and the Keeper stood still, collecting her thoughts and ideas.

They had received the coordinates where Guilty Spark and Captain Johnson had wanted them to meet, but they had been here for at least half an hour and no one had shown up yet. Only their small fleet of Hackett's ship, the Arbiter's, and three escort destroyers were present.

"This is taking foreverâ€¦" Jacqueline said squinting out towards the stars, "What if it's a trap?"

R's eyes went wide at the idea.

"Its possibleâ€¦ Guilty Spark knows too much," The Keeper stated.

"We could have a traitor," Hackett replied grimly.

"Another one?" Jacqueline added, remembering how they had barely defeated the last traitor, Lithyia.

"It would make sense, seeing how Spark and your Captain know so much," The Keeper added.

"We should not worry," They four looked over at the Arbiter's hologram, "If there were traitor among us, the Gravemind would've foiled our attempts long ago."

"Then how do they know so much?"

"Simple. They have someone reporting to them."

"Thats exactly what a traitor isâ€¦."

"Only if they are malicious and working against us."

Jacqueline rolled her eyes, "Then what are they if not a traitor?"

"A mutual ally working for two parties that have the same goal."

The N7 turned away, annoyed but not bothering to argue with the giant alien anymore than necessary. To her a traitor was a traitor.

Minutes passed, tensions rising by the second, and impatience gnawing on the edge of their heels. Jacqueline paced back and forth, wanting nothing more than to leave and search for the mole that had infiltrated them again.

R sat in a chair staring at the holographic monitors a crew member was working at. She had no idea what any of the symbols meant.

"I'm getting a signal," The Keeper stated lightly, standing tall and staring out the ships viewport.

"Finally," The N7 yipped, turning to the viewport and staring out.

In his ship the Arbiter narrowed his gaze. He remembered Guilty Spark, and the things he had done in the name of protocol. If anyone knew not to trust the monitor, it was him. Still, the machine offered them something they needed, so for now he'd have to make good with the pseudo-enemy.

Fortunately, no one here other than himself and the Spartan knew of Guilty Sparks previous actions. Curiously, he glanced at the Keeper. She knew a lot, and he wondered if her and her mother had know about the AI's actions all those years ago on the Ark.

Her calm stature and lack of emotion told him nothing, but people could hide their emotions. Anyone could.

The ships in the void behind them were ancient, old but definitely of Forerunner design. Their sleek sides, massive frames, blue lights, and overbearing appearance was enough to cause a few crew members to stumble in their tasks.

Even after seeing the Arbiter's ship, the Forerunners were still impressive, or at least what they left behind was.

Hackett squinted, worrying about what those ships could if they decided to attack. They had gone over a few safety measures and plans incase Guilty Spark wasn't friendly. First, the Arbiter's ship could take the incoming hits with its size and shields while Hackett's returned fire.

The second option for a counterattack would be lead by the stealth ships, most of the New Covenant's design. The ships were based off UNSC prowlers of old, but together with their own and the Alliance's technology they were made virtually invisible to both the naked eye and any form of detection.

Twenty of these stealth ships were currently surrounding the fleet of Five Forerunner ships.

With all their numbers and firepower, they could win if it came to a fight.

No one hoped it would. There had been enough deaths already, and the only reason they were here was out of desperation. Hackett couldn't allow Shepard and the others to die, not if what the Keeper showed him was true. Not if every universe was under attack by these beings her video had mentioned. They needed Shepard.

It was a desperate act on his part. They needed this portal. They needed it now.

Finally, Hackett cleared his throat, "Send an open transmission to the fleet," An officer nodded and he continued, "This Admiral Hackett of the Systems alliance. We're here to meet just like you wanted. Now show us the portal."

For a while, nothing happened. The ships floated in silence of the void, waiting on the edge of a knife for anything to happen. Finally, a transmission was received back, a hologram forming over Hackett's holotable, right next to the Arbiters hologram.

"Greetings humans!" The peppy voice of Guilty Spark greeted, "I had feared you would not come!"

"Admiral," Captain Johnson greeted as he too appeared before him in holographic form.

"Show us," Hackett ordered again.

"One moment Admiral"

Together the leaders of the Covenant, Alliance and the Keeper watched as the center Forerunner ship moved forward.

Guilty Spark began to hum, and the Arbiter huffed a breath of annoyance.

Blue lights began to pulsate on the ships, looking like it was charging up. Hackett clenched his fists, while the Keeper crossed her arms. They expected a trap.

They were wrong.

The ship jerked backward, and a lance of clear white energy blasted out from it, stopping in the void of space only a mile from it, and ripped open a portal, one that immediately set off the Keepers detection instruments as well as the Arbiters.

"He did not lie," The Keeper said impressed, walking forward a bit as if to examine the portal.

"Well, let's get him to open up a portal to whatever place Shepard's in!" Jacqueline added.

"He already did!" The Arbiter hissed, though his voice was still calm.

"Can we contact Shepard?" Hackett asked, ignoring the fact Spark knew where they needed to go. If they could open a portal it was possible then they may be able to contact Shepard.

"Trying to reach Reluctant Promise and the Commander..." The Keeper stated holding up her arm and typing in a few commands to her gauntlet. The little monitor was the only way they could contact Shepard, and she hoped that neither he nor Shepard's omnitool were being jammed.

"How did they know?" R asked in a whisper walking up to Jacqueline.

The N7 shook her head, an uneasy look on her face, "No idea kidâ€|"

"What do you want Guilty Spark?"

A surprised jerk towards the Admiral let them know that the monitor had not been expecting the question, "Why nothing. It is my duty to help the Reclaimers succeed."

"Succeed with what?"

"Why stopping the Parasite of course."

* * *

><p>Elsa made her way towards the men in blue, the ones working together to build small bunkers and lift up solid wall's of ice up from the earth around their city.<p>

She glanced back, seeing the Southern water tribe city not even a twenty minute walk away, her sister and Kristoff not far off behind her. A thumbs up from her sister and the Queen gave a weak smile before turning around. Fortunately the men hadn't noticed her.

Still her nerves sky rocketed when heavy footsteps matched up besides her, her escort having been only a few feet to her left since they left the city.

Her eyes moved over and looked up at the large Spartan, who in turn paid her no heed, his visor facing the men and his weapon relaxed but ready to use at a moments notice.

In retrospect she should've figured the Commander would've sent the deadliest, and if not the most stubborn of their group as her escort. She would've preferred anyone else.

"Queen Elsa!"

The blonde turned, watching intently as a water tribe man jogged over to her from the walls being built.

"I was told you were sent to help us out?" His voice was tired and he looked weary, yet sported a smile on his face.

The Queen nodded politely, "Where do you need help?"

With a laugh the man motioned behind him, "Well we're not the northern water tribe. We have a lot more land to cover."

A wall went up as seven water benders worked together to pull up a massive forty foot wall, as long as it was wide.

"I don't know if we can get it all up in time though!"

Elsa smiled, "I can help, just please step back." She headed towards the newly built wall, John watching her every move with an emotionless gaze under his visor.

Her dress sweeping behind her, the sun gazing down, and the winds fluttering, the proud woman stopped next to the wall, dozens of water benders and soldiers alike watching her with pure curiosity.

Some doubted her, others listened and waited, and others still only guessed at why she was sent to help them. Their work had been slow and tedious. They had only a few sections of wall and bunkers standing. Not nearly enough to encircle and protect the whole city.

A wave of her hand, and the icy tundra below her raised Elsa up to the top of the wall, letting her step out onto the wall.

Her blue eyes surveyed their work and the tundra past the walls. Ice in every direction. She smiled and raised her hands, and flicked her wrists to both her right and left.

The ground cracked, tearing apart slightly as a blue glow surrounded it, and instantly massive walls shot up from the ground, in layers and in sections, rising from the ground with all the grace flowers had when blooming.

Faster than any single water bender, aside from what the Avatar, could accomplish, the walls were raised, racing around the city, a smile sporting the Queen's face as forty foot high, thick and powerful walls raised to the sky.

The water benders watching gasped, confused and overwhelmed by the feats being accomplished before them. The Queen was not done yet.

She slammed her hands into the wall she was standing on, and watched as her powers rocketed out across the tundra. Bunkers and watchtowers lifted up from the ground, the tops of each being formed from the snow and magic swirling in the air.

As they rose, the walls rose even higher, tall enough that they rivaled or even surpassed the once great walls of Ba Sing Se.

Eyes were wide, hearts beating fast, nervous and amazed expressions covering those who watched from both the city itself and from the outskirts where people had been building the wall.

John narrowed his gaze, an uneasy feeling in his gut. She was even more dangerous than he expected. She could create a massive wall like this in under a minute. That kind of power within someone so unstable was dangerous.

Elsa happily smiled at her work, but continued, waving her hands and creating staircases, ramparts and even railings on the walls for the soldiers.

Within two minutes time, the walls were created, and the southern

water tribe was secured.

"Whoaâ€¦" A soldier muttered walking up next to Chief, "She's really got some powerful bending..."

He hadn't expected an answer, but he didn't expect the Spartan turning around and walking back towards the city, quiet and as silent as a spirit.

The Queen, finished with her work looked back towards the city and started down the stairs she had created as the soldiers and benders began to walk up.

She saw the green mass walking to the city and frowned. The Spartan didn't trust her. She knew that from the start.

Looking back at the wall, she realized what had happened. She had given him even more reason to not trust her. All this power in her, and he didn't trust her. Anyone would be skeptical.

Elsa shook her head. Things were never simple for her. People always saw her as a monster. It's all she would ever be.

* * *

><p>Shepard downed a shot of whatever alcohol had been left on the Normandy.<p>

It had been a long day, and the day had barely begun.

"So what now?" Joker asked weakly.

The two sat at the dining table alone. The rest of the crew were either sleeping, doing their duties to maintain the ship, or were off in the shopping markets outside.

Things were looking down. She didn't know where Chief, Hope, Elsa, or Korra were and honestly at the moment she didn't care.

She wanted to drink. It was the only thing she could do to keep her mind off the inevitable.

There's was no way they could hold out forever, and she had tried countless times calling and sending transmissions, trying to reach the Keeper or anyone back in her universe for that matter. She hadn't gotten anything, hell the damn signal had never even gotten past whatever was jamming them.

If they didn't get help, they were doomed. Every person there, every one of them would die.

She took another shot, the last of the alcohol. Hell be damned she wasn't going to go down without a fight. She'd make the Flood regret they ever existed.

"Shepard?" The pilot asked, wondering if she had heard him.

She had, "I don't knowâ€¦" Katherine looked at her old friend with a frown, "We're outgunned in every way. Without reinforcements or some damn big guns this place won't last a week."

"Well, we have the Normandy, and besides we've been in worse situations."

"She can only do so much Joker. She can't save this world alone," The Commander replied only going after the Normandy part of his statement. She didn't feel like arguing about how they'd never been a situation like this.

"Hey she's done it before."

A laugh, "You're not entirely wrong."

Joker grinned and shook his head, "Come on Commander you always get us out of these things. No way we're going down by a mutated flu strain."

Shepard chuckled, "I wish they were a mutated flu strain. We could just use some antibiotics to kill them then."

Joker laughed, "Imagine sending Wrex out with a needle and a spray can, filled with antibiotics and roaring about the enemies inevitable defeat."

"He'd never forgive us."

"It'd be worth it."

They laughed again, lightly but with heart.

"If onlyâ€|" The Spectre sighed sadly.

Before Joker could respond her omnitool lit up. She stared at it curiously, "I thought COMs were jammed."

"Long range still isâ€|"

Katherine narrowed her gaze but opened up the call she was getting.

A familiar voice spoke, "Thank God for trans-dimensional portals."

"Jacqueline?" Shepard asked in complete confusion.

"Shepard! Damn have we got a story for you."

* * *

><p>An orb, radiating power and glory. In the center of it a picture. A blurred scene, a red headed girl standing and talking to her blonde sister.<p>

"Through the eyes of a Queen shall death come."

Cinder tensed and eyed the Black Knight cautiously. Red power glowed around her to protect her body from the elements around them.

The tundra, an icy place with freezing winds. It was a merciless place, and why they were here, she didn't know.

A black hand waved over the orb, "They plan to make a stand."

"That or they plan to retreat."

A nod and the witch stayed quiet. He knew something she didn't and it bugged her.

"So what?" A red haired man asked, rubbing his arms as the cold of the tundra swirled around them. He stood a bit behind Cinder in a thick wool coat.

Off to the side stood the Titan, staring out into the cold with bored eyes. Mikasa Ackerman stood with it, staring off into the Tundra, her thoughts somewhere else.

"We need to act."

All heads turned towards the Knight.

"I have the blood magic already. Why should we strike now?" Cinder asked narrowing her gaze.

The Black Knight turned towards the tundra, "Contact Zaheer. We will need him. Titan."

The massive monstrosity looked over its shoulder at the Knight.

"We shouldn'tâ€|" Cinder started only to be cut off by a raised hand.

"Go. Cause Havoc. Our Hand will wreak havoc as a distraction. You are to subdue the Avatar."

A nod and the Titan walked off heading towards its destination, the massive wall's in the horizon. Wall's made of ice and snow.

It was then the Black Knight turned towards the Witch, "They are together, yet separate. There is not better time to strike then now. The portals are near."

"The Queen?"

"Do what must be done. Ackerman keep the Commander and the child busy." He looked at Cinder, "Take the Queen. I will deal with the Spartan myself."

Cinder waved her hand, and a black dagger formed in her hand, "I shall."

* * *

><p>"Whats the story?" Wrex grunted.<p>

"You know the whole story. We'll be there soon," Hackett informed.

Aboard the Normandy, within the War Room stood him, Legion, Joker, a hologram of Javik and Ashely Williams, and another hologram of Admiral Hackett. A secret meeting with the people Commander Shepard

really trusted.

A half hour ago Shepard had received a transmission from Jacqueline when she was drinking with Joker. It had been a miracle to her. Through opening a portal they were able to get past whatever was jamming their communications.

The Keeper had informed them of what had occurred, and with that Katherine had immediately got everyone together. Finally, they had some good news.

When they gathered, Chief, Korra, Tenzin, General Dasas of the Southern Water Tribe, Wrex, Hope, along with the leaders back in their reality, they discussed the evacuation of the planet, which Korra and the monk had been beyond happy to hear about despite them not really knowing what evacuation of a planet really meant.

Korra had said something about it being anticlimactic, and Shepard couldn't help but agree. It was far too easy, but too easy was better than fighting for their lives against hopeless odds.

Tenzin was going to have to give a speech to the entire Southern Tribe about having to be evacuated, and General Dasas would show his support. They were going to blur the details of course, but she wondered how badly the people would take it.

Discussion had gone on concerning the remaining nations. They were ready to be evacuated, the Keeper and Hackett had promised evacuation within the next two hours.

They would come with a fleet of a hundred, sporting at least two dozens of the Arbiter's Assault Carriers, as well as his Super Carrier.

Each capital would be evacuated, since those were the main rendezvous points for each nation, then the two portals to the spirit world would be evacuated next. The portals were being used for a rendezvous for all towns not near enough to reach the capitals within a day's time.

The Fire Nation would be evacuated at the furthest points south and north on the island for those not near enough to reach the Capital within a day.

Scouts would be sent out to search for survivors and to scout the Flood's progress, and gunships along with with bombers would carry out airstrikes to see if the unyielding Flood wave could be halted ever so slightly so the evacuation efforts could be carried out unhindered.

It had all been agreed and decided upon, but Shepard wasn't done. She had matters to discuss. Things only those she truly knew she would trust with. However, she had seen something. A detail Hackett didn't mention during their meeting with everyone. So she called a meeting. A meeting between those she trusted: truly, trusted.

"What're you not telling us?" Shepard asked suspiciously.

"Shepard I'veâ€¦"

"Admiral we've come this far trusting each other. Please don't break that trust now of all times."

A sigh, "It's about the evacuation." Hackett's voice was weary.

"What do you mean?"

The Admiral didn't answer immediately and pulled up a hologram of Reluctant Promise, "A monitor visited us. He said he had a way to save you. Somehow, he knew what trouble you were in."

"Well, if the Council knewâ€¦"

"They didn't."

A raised eyebrow.

"Shepard we kept it close to the chest. We agreed not to inform anyone till we got you the hell off that planet. Only those involved really knew. We we're going to keep it a generally small operation between my personal warship, the Keepers and the Arbiters fleet."

"How did the machine know of our predicament?" Legion asked beating Shepard to the question.

Hackett shrugged, "We have no idea."

"He claimed to have hacked out systems and was eavesdropping the entire time. Its makes sense seeing how he knows so much." Liara added.

Shepard shook her head, "It's too much of a coincidence."

"What?" The Asari asked.

"Chief was kidnapped while we we're in the Earth Kingdom. I talked to him about it, and it was perfect. Korra and I were gone, and he just so happened to be alone walking through the city. They attacked him and they to knew who he was. When he told us about the way they took him down, Korra said it was a rare technique called blood bending. Why would they use such a rare technique to take him down unless they knew who and what he was? They knew too much, just like your monitor friend."

"It's possible they were just smart and lucky," Wrex grunted.

Katherine shook her head, "Then there's this Cinder along with that girl that attacked me." She decided to tell them about everything that had happened. No point in keeping secrets now.

"Who?"

"She attacked Elsa here along with me and Korra in the Earth Kingdom."

"Preemptive strike," Williams stated.

"No. She could've killed Elsa, and probably at least either me or Korra. She had the jump on us but didn't use it."

"Odd. The chances of that being an accident are point zero two percent," Legion calculated.

"Exactly."

"Why go after Elsa, and leave her alive if she had the chance to kill her?" Ashely asked clearly confused.

Shepard pulled up a hologram of said Queen in question, "Elsa is obviously powerful, but she's not a real threat. Any of us could bring her down if we needed to so I doubt it has to do with her herself."

"Maybe something she owns?"

"Possibly," Katherine replied before pressing in a new command a new hologram powered up.

A woman, in a short dress.

"Cinder. She distracted me and Korra to take down Ba Sing Se's walls, and didn't take the drop on us like I said. Then there's the girl who attacked me on the walls."

She crossed her arms and continued, "My point is that each time they've attacked us, it was at the most opportune and convenient moments. When we left Elsa here, Chief alone in the city, when me and Korra were distracted by monsters."

"So?"

Shepard looked at Hackett and his eyes widened, "The traitor."

"Someone's been spilling everything to them." Ashely hissed.

"So what do we do?" Liara asked, crossing her arms.

"We stay quiet. Don't say anything to anyone. We need our mole to show themselves. If we let it known that we're onto them, they'll just go to ground and then were screwed out of every catching them," Katherine suggested.

"What if there's no mole?" They all looked at Joker.

He shrugged, "I mean come on theses guys are magic and monsters Shepard. That chick Cinder, she blasts fire and magic like its no big deal! Then the whole bending thing not to mention trans-dimensional universe's and alternate realities."

A gulp, "What if they're just that much better?"

The Commanders gaze softened. So many uncertainties, so many variables.

"Joker. We'll get through this just like we did with the Reapers."

He nodded, "I know it's just weird."

She laughed.

"Tell me about it."

* * *

><p>"At least people aren't killing each other..." Hope sighed leaning over the balcony of the roof her and Korra were standing on. They had ended up here on both Tenzin's and Shepard's request to keep an eye on the protests in case they got out of hand and to keep an eye out for anything suspicious.<p>

"Well they're close to it," Korra frowned.

People, protests, violence. All of it had sparked only an hour ago when Tenzin had been forced to tell the people of the south of the evacuation plan. Some refused to believe him, others reacted with violence and curses, others still only seemed scared out of their wits, while even more were simply confused.

"Once they see the ships they'll calm down," Hope assured turning away from the streets below at looking up at the sky.

Korra shrugged, "Hopefully."

"What? You don't think they will?" The mutant stared curiously at the Avatar. She had been surprised to see how well the natives took everything. Then again, when the proof was in front of you, it was hard not too believe.

She looked back at the crowds on the street who were still rioting.

_Well, maybe not everyone takes it wellâ€| _She thought to herself.

"Look, I don't know what to think," Korra stated harshly, looking at Hope as if she had been the thing bugging her all day.

"All right geez," The other teen said scowling at the darker Avatar.

Korra groaned and lowered her head, "Sorry," She shook her head and looked out towards the ports and the sea beyond, "Its justâ€| This is kind of a lot to take it. When I was in Ba Sing Se fighting the Flood I could just kind of ignore all the things Shepard saidâ€| But nowâ€|"

Her voice trailed off and Hope looked at her with complete understanding.

The mutant messiah cleared her throat, "Well you're taking it fairly well. Even I didn't take it so well when Stark first told me I had to leave."

"Stark?"

"He was a genius and a good friend from back home."

Korra turned around and leaned back against the roof's railing, "What happened to your home Hope?"

The red head brushed a strand of hair behind her ear. She remembered everything. The war. The deaths.

The pain.

"The Flood happened," Her voice was low and something in it was primal, angry, and powerful.

Korra visibly tensed. Something in Hope's voice sent off a shiver down her spine. She felt the urge of the Avatar state, as if her body was trying to protect her from something she couldn't see.

"Sorry to hear that," The Avatar frowned, ignoring her natural instincts.

"It's okay. I never thought I'd find another Universe with life. All the others were barren."

"And you just happened to end up in the middle of another war."

A laugh, "Just my luck."

"At least you didn't have some crazy machine man and military woman come and tell you your entire planet's doomed, and then that they can save you only if you help them because of some big mystery and an evil scheme that I had no idea was going on," The water tribe girl chuckled.

"Please. I once had the God of Thunder come charging into the kitchen screaming about how he needed some form of substance before he went hungry."

"Try having Meelo wake you up at three in morning when he's screaming to be fed. Now that's a party."

They laughed, each at their own story, and imagining how ridiculous and true the others' stories were. It was good to laugh. Both had needed it.

Hope sighed happily and with a smile, "I wonder what Shepard's up to."

"She said—" Korra started only to be cut off by an explosion whose boom silenced the entire crowd below them as well as the two girls on the roof.

The girls' hair flew back from the shockwave and they each stood straight, tensed and ready for a fight. Then the crowd began screaming.

"What the heck's going on?" Korra asked trying to figure out what had happened.

Smoke rose a few blocks away.

"I have no idea!" Hope looked at Korra, preparing to ask her something when her eyes went wide, "Behind you!"

She pushed Korra out of the way, and a rocket of fire slammed into her, sending the mutant backwards and over the roofs railing.

"Hope!" Korra yelled completely confused.

A man in black robes landed on the roof and thrust another fist forward, only for his next attack to be completely dissipated by the Avatar.

"You just made a big mistake bud!"

* * *

><p>Elsa held her head, standing against the wall, pain pounding in her skull.<p>

Whatever had happened, whatever blew up, had caused her headache to intensify to the point she was almost incapacitated. She barely managed to open her eyes, staring at the crowds rushing by her in a daze.

"Anna?" She cried softly.

Why had she let them go to the market place? She had been against it, but relented when Anna persisted.

They had separated briefly, for just a moment, when Elsa went outside of shop to look at the glass figurines on a stand outside.

Then something exploded. Then the crowds panicked, and she was pulled away with the crowds, forced to follow their flow. Here she stood, against one of the buildings down the street, hoping her sister would happen to walk by.

She barely had the strength to even stand. A few people rushed by her, but towards the action rather than away from it.

Red hair caught her eye and for a second she thought she saw Anna. It wasn't her. The hair was too dark. It was Shepard.

The Queen bit her tongue, trying her best to ignore the pain and pulled herself off the wall. She had to find her sister, and Shepard was her best chance of doing that.

* * *

><p>"Everyone move!" Shepard roared firing her weapon into the air as more water tribe soldiers filled in past the crowds of terrified people.<p>

She didn't know exactly what was happening, but when she saw black robed men fighting the Water tribe soldiers, and received contact from Wrex stating how one of the outposts had been assaulted by men in black robes, she had put two and two together.

They were being attacked by the Black Hand. Why? She had no idea. She

would've figured a local terrorist group would've taken the evacuation idea badly but attacking now of all times? It was strange.

"Clear the area!" Shepard yelled, a few soldiers standing near her and ushering people forward with a hurry.

She could see the fighting happening a few blocks down, and wanted to help. She had already sent Wrex and Legion to help, while she stayed behind and got people out. A few dozen remained on the street still, heading away from the fighting.

God where's Hackett and that damn fleet when you need himâ€|

"Commander Shepard!"

She spun around, only to find a certain Queen being held back by a few soldiers.

A brief moment she spent wondering why on earth the Queen would be around here, but the last time she had seen Elsa had been when she had met to tell her about her and her sister being evacuated early.

Then a few hours ago Chief had taken her to help build up the walls, but that had been hours ago. She should've figured the Queen and her sister would've somehow ended up in the middle of any trouble.

"Elsa get out of here! Get aboard the Normandy now!"

"Commander my sister was on this street have you seen her?!" A voice filled with fear.

Shepard growled and looked around, "No! Now get the hell out of here!"

Elsa frowned and opened her mouth to say something when another explosion rocked the entire block, knocking her down, and sending Shepard into a stumble. The Commander cursed and turned around, looking down the street to see what had happened now. Fire raged, earth shattering and water sliming back and forth in very direction.

"You!" She pointed to one of the soldiers. "Get her out of here!" She then motioned to Elsa and the man nodded.

Katherine saw the three men in black robes standing in the middle of the street fighting one soldier only a block down.

"Let go!" Elsa snapped as the man pulled her to her feet.

Katherine drew her rifle and aimed down the sights when a random civilian fleeing the fires and explosions ran into her. The black hand operatives, having taken down their last opposition, turned to face Shepard and the soldier with her.

She took aim again and fired. A wall of earth ripped out of the ground and stopped her mass accelerator rounds.

The soldiers, five of them, stood together twisting their arms and raising up several whips of water that lashed out towards the black hand men.

Fire countered two of the whips, but the other three spouts of water hit their targets, knocking back all their of the Black Hand opponents.

Katherine fired again, hitting one of the Black Hand in the chest, and another in the head. The third one managed to place a wall of rock between himself and Shepard, but the soldiers took care of him quick enough.

It grew quiet for a moment. Across the street a door from a building suddenly burst open, and out ran a certain red head with a larger blonde man.

"Bad guys!" The girl, Anna, screamed running towards Shepard and the others.

Like locust, more men in black robes burst out of the building after them, one of them turning around and letting loose two jets of flames at the building, burning it down like the rest of the city.

Shepard formed a singularity, "Move Anna!" With the civilians warned she fired the hyper-condensed ball of alternating Higgs fields at the group of men heading towards them.

The red head and the blonde man dashed to their right, diving at the last second as the two opposing sides engaged, elements flying overhead.

Water, Fire, and Earth crossed the streets, clashing with enough force to send shockwaves in almost every direction.

The singularity flew into the midst of the Black Hand and two of them slipped from the ground and flew into the singularity only to get picked off by the experienced Spectre.

Another biotic attack, a shockwave slammed into the ground and raced at more of the Black Hand while the soldiers distracted them.

One Black Hand saw the attack and slammed her fist in the ground. The earth broke apart, and the shockwave dissipated front the cratered surface, unable to keep it's erratic form.

Fire lanced at Shepard from another attacker and she threw up a barrier that took the blast for her. Fire kept coming at her, and she was forced to roll towards a building, letting the fire slam into the ground where she had been.

Outnumbered now, a second attacker joined and water slanged at her, freezing mid air and turning into shards of ice. Katherine was forced to power up her biotics again, throwing up a second barrier to intercept both the ice shards and another fire blast.

"Damn it," She hissed as a third attacker joined, more fire forcing her to keep the barrier up.

She couldn't attack. She had to keep the barrier up.

Suddenly, ice spikes ripped up from the ground, faster than she had seen any of the benders do, and caught the three men, ripping their clothes and launching them into the air.

The high gravity barrier died and the Spectre looked to who helped her.

Elsa stood with a harsh stance, hands out, grimacing, and blinking to keep the pain in her head at bay. She let a sigh escape and gave the Commander a smile. Shepard nodded a thanks and turned back to the enemy at hand.

Before they could get up she took down one with a shot to the head, but the second managed to wrap a water whip around her gun, freezing both and pulling it from Katherine's grasp.

She pulled her side arm and unloaded the whole clip, which was intercepted by a wall of ice. Elsa on the other hand, faced the third attacker with grit teeth, staring at the man coldly as he got up.

He tilted his head at her, "This is all your fault!" With that he flipped over, slamming his hands together and sent two twirling vortex's of fire at her.

The Queen immediately forced the ice to rise, and a pristine wall caught both vortexes with ease.

She didn't know what to do and took a step back as she prepared to lower the wall, only for the wall to explode, tendrils of fire curling around the walls remnants then dissipating as Elsa flew backwards.

The young woman hit the ground and rolled several times, her dress ripping in several places before she stopped.

A groan escaped her lips and she pushed herself up to her knees as more fire raced towards her. Instinctively her powers came to life, and a half dome of ice formed over her, taking the brunt of the attack.

She pushed herself out of the half dome, and stumbled to her feet as the fire bender hissed, and twisted his hands, lightning igniting on his finger tips.

Her gaze narrowed and she thrust her hands out again, letting magic race out towards the fire bender. Lightning met her magic, encasing it and exploding outwards.

Fire rained down at Elsa the moment the smoke cleared and she crossed her arms. The air and snow picked up immediately, twirling around her in a protective funnel of sheer power and wind.

The fire turned to steam as it met the funnel, and the Queen grimaced. She pushed her hands forward again, her mind racing with what she could do. Ice, instead of just forming from the ground, shot out in massive daggers, racing at the fire bender at astronomical speeds.

He twirled and smashed the first with a blazing kick, before

rocketing backwards as another missed him.

Elsa stepped forward and thrust her hands forward again, more ice daggers flying at her attacker. The man continued to dodge each of her attacks, but she steadily gained footing, stepping forward repeatedly as she approached him, her deadly shards racing from the ground around her towards her attacker.

She changed style, and whipped her hand up in a twirl.

A vortex formed under the man and threw him up in the air, yelling in confusion as he went up. She let the vortex fail, and the fire bender hit the ground with a hard thump, unconscious and sporting several broken bones.

Taking a deep breath and the Queen spun around, her eyes searching for her sister, "Anna!"

Shepard finished off her last attacker, sparing a glance over at Elsa who had beaten her own attacker, then looked back towards the rest of the Black Hand operatives.

She hadn't noticed when more water tribe soldiers had joined the fight, which had made it an even fight for her allies, so in turn she powered up a warp to help when she heard something behind her.

Before she could turn, two feet slammed into her back and sent her forward with enough force to crash her through a vendors cart.

Debris flew everywhere, pain racked her left side, but the Commander pushed herself over and pulled herself to her knees.

Her gaze narrowed.

"You."

The girl from Ba Sing Se, wielding her dual swords like a master of death.

Katherine grit her teeth and started to get up.

She wasn't allowed the luxury and a blast of red hit her in the chest, throwing her backwards once more and slamming her against the ground, cracking the ice and breaking her shields.

"Shepard!" It was Anna, having taken refuge during the fight with Kristoff under a nearby Sato mobile.

Elsa stood not too far away, completely confused, though her hands were raised defensively.

A woman in red leapt down from a nearby building. She grinned, flames in her eyes, "Take care of her," She said referring to Shepard.

The blonde's eyes went wide.

She knew this woman.

Cinders gaze fell to Elsa, blue and yellow eyes meeting.

"The Queen's mine."

* * *

<p>AN**

Hey so this chapter was going to be longer but I decided to split it in two, meaning next chapter we get to see fighting. Lots of it. Mainly of course between some of these big bad guys and our heros who've been around all of Part I.

Next time we get to see just how our heroes fair against enemies that have been planning to defeat them this whole time.

Anyone wonder what Cinder has planned?

Well, this Part's almost over. Four or five more chapter till the end, and the next one will probably each be over ten thousand words.

Also I have a question.

Concerning the rest of this story, part's II, III, IV, and V, should they each be their own actual separate story, or should I just continue it on here? Post more chapter but just specify if its part II, V, etcâ€¦ You know? Please leave any ideas or reviews! Thanks for reading!

God Bless!

Big thanks to my Betas:

zekebomb, Jlyman, and thehaloproject

40. Part I Chapter 37 (Beta'd)

Part I

The Voice and Face of all Evil

Chapter 37: The Beginning of the End Part II

* * *

><p>Elsa didn't have time to think, she only reacted to what her instincts told her. Relying completely on the small part of the brain that focused on self-preservation, her hand shot forward. Ice spikes rippled across the ground, ripping it apart. Snow flurried when the wind swirled violently as all the power she contained raced towards Cinder.<p>

There was no way this woman would defeat her again. She had almost killed her once and Elsa was not ready to lose again, especially with her sister so close by.

Cinder took a step back as ice spikse raced towards her. Without even having to move both feet, she spun around on her left heel, the ice

spikes racing by and missing her entirely.

Using her generated momentum, she gracefully grabbed the largest spike, then plucking it out of the air like it was a feather she slapped her palm into the base. The force of the magic infused strike cracked it in half and incrusted it in red dust before returning it to the sender.

Elsa's mind hadn't even registered what had happened yet when her own ice spike was suddenly flying right at her with a red glow. The blonde tried to side step but was no were quick enough to dodge completely. Familiar ice rocketed by her gut, ripping open the flimsy dress she wore and slicing into the unprotected flesh of her side.

She gasped in pain, stumbling to the side as her hands automatically moved to cover the wound, blood oozing out.

"Too easy," Cinder grinned, rotating her neck to pop an unseen vertebrae.

As Elsa's hand turned cold, moister solidified into snow to coat her wound. She looked back at the woman who had caused her injury. Cinder was fast, and definitely powerful. There was next to no chance Elsa could win - not the she would let her - but she was injured and judging from the pain lancing up her side and across her body, it was bad.

Warm blood seeped through her hands, and she grit her teeth, sticking out her other hand. Ice and snow gathered and she blasted gale storm winds towards Cinder. A moment later the ground moved and massive pillars of ice charged out from the ground towards the witch.

Narrowed orange eyes calculated, the powerful sorceress was already two steps ahead of Elsa before she had even moved. Her hands twirled together, and a wall of fire separated her from the pillars of ice and winds.

The two's powers clashed and Cinder's wall completely collapsed under the Ice Queen's powers. Her orange eyes went wide with amazement before she relaxed her muscles, lowering her center of mass closer to the ground. As the pillars raced at her she prepared herself for what was coming next. In the scarce microseconds before the first wall of blistering cold met she leaped into the air.

With unmatched finesse, her tiptoes landing lightly against the crest of the pillars, using them to propel herself into the air as the chilling winds and frosty ice raced underneath her. Superhuman agility and strength powered her ability to sail harmlessly over Elsa's assault. She landed with cat like grace down right next the blonde.

Elsa gasped in fear, taking a step back way from the woman landing next to her. Her brain went into overdrive trying to come up with something; however, nothing connected into what could even resemble a plan. Going with the only action her panic stricken mind could come up with she thrust her free hand out for the third time. Wispy blue magic streamed from it only for a stark white hand incased in red magic to grab her own, the two powers dissipating the moment contact

was made.

With a sadistic grin, Cinder twisted the other woman's arm. The force pulled Elsa towards her. Cinder lifted her leg while pulling the Queen around and pushed her heel into the blonde's back, slamming Elsa face first into the snow she created.

The Queen yelped in pain as the gash on her side throbbed even more. Her entire body ached from being slammed against the ground. Cinder, still holding the Queen's arm up while her foot held her down, twisted her enemy's arm. She only stopped when she finally heard the tune she wanted, a gut wrenching crack. Elsa screamed in sheer agony.

* * *

><p>Shepard dodged, twin blades flying past her face. The roll's momentum carried her forward. As she completed her roll she rose to her feet in a crouch, firing away at the younger girl attacking her. Red shielding deflected the mass accelerator rounds, before accumulating into a large ball of red energy that blasted towards the Commander.<p>

The swords in Mikasa's hands glowed a dark red and she lurched forward as Shepard erected a biotic wall.

The ball of red energy dissipated as it hit the barrier. Mikasa slammed into the barrier, barreling through its weakened state, ramming Katherine head on. Shields flaring, rifle flying out of her hand, the Spectre tumbled down as a sword caught her shoulder, breaking the pauldron and cutting the surface of her skin. She rolled to a stop and cursed under her breath.

The girl's armor was stronger, and her abilities even more acute than before. The cables she used to sail around Shepard like bird, moved her faster than the red head could keep track of.

With such agility, weapons that broke her shield in one hit, and shields that deflected everything she threw at the girl, Katherine was running out of options. She needed a plan and fast.

A blue biotic ball of energy grew in her hand, and before Ackerman could charge her again, she slammed her fist into the ground. Shockwave's rippled out from her, shaking the ground and racing towards the black haired girl.

Her enemy grit her teeth, and fired two cables away from her, pulling herself up onto the roofs of the buildings and away from Shepard's biotic attack.

The Commander cracked her neck and stood back up, grabbing her rifle from the ground and taking aim at Mikasa. It was then a scream pierced the air, and she knew exactly who it was.

Elsa.

When she had seen Cinder land and go after Elsa, she knew the Queen was doomed. The woman had managed to hold off her and Korra back in Ba Sing Se. There was no way the Ice Queen would be able to win on her own.

Still, Katherine had hoped Elsa would've held her off long enough for her to beat the girl with swords, so they could face Cinder together. Obviously her hopes had been too high.

Taking a chance she spun on her heel, looking down the street. She found Elsa and Cinder, the latter standing on top of the blonde while she twisted her arm in an excruciatingly painful manner, and fired. As rounds of Mass Effect Drivers flew towards Cinder, the Commander saw movement out of her peripherals.

Instinctively, she rolled to the side, two blazing swords missing her by mere inches.

* * *

><p>Cinder, having heard the automatic weapon, turned to face the oncoming slugs. She waved her hand, creating a small red circle in front of her with hieroglyphs surrounding it that blocked the oncoming slugs with ease.<p>

Her mind ran through all her options. Of course she could kill Elsa easily, but that wasn't part of the plan. Though Killing the Commander was. If everything went as planned then Shepard would end up dead one way or another. In fact, all of her enemies would. The only thing that worried her was the girl that the Spartan had rescued from a Sing Se. She was an unknown variable, one that her own allies had failed to take care of.

Still, it was only a small nuisance, unlike Shepard's guns.

Deciding to help the swordswoman fighting Shepard she narrowed her gaze, and struck the center of the circle she had formed with her fingertips. The red circle then collapsed into a ball and rocketed away at Shepard, a trail of red fire raging behind it.

* * *

><p>Elsa watched fearfully as Katherine kicked the younger attacker away from her, having held off another of the assault's poised by the sword fighter. She had wanted to scream for Shepard to turn around, to worry about the witch, but her voice wouldn't respond.<p>

As if having heard her thoughts, the Spectre turned around a moment later but only to come face to face with a ball of pure red energy.

She watched as her friend's biotics instantly powered up, creating a barrier over herself where only a split second later the energy crashed into her. Both shields and barriers collapsed, and the Queen watched as the red head tumbled back, rolling over and over as her shields sparked wildly, before coming to a halt in the middle of the street. Her stomach dropped as Shepard slowly started to push herself to her knees, only for a foot to hit her face and flip her over.

Elsa's shook, tears welling up in her eyes. She couldn't feel her arm, the severity of the pain having numbed it. Her side was still throbbing as it bled, a lip was busted, and the bruises she could feel forming all over her body.

It took her a few moments to gather the strength, but she finally turned her head to look up slightly at the woman pinning her down.

Cinder was staring off, looking at something more interesting than the Queen, which meant she had only a momentary advantage. The blonde didn't hesitate, using her one free arm, pressed her fingers into the ground. Spikes of ice shot up around her and up towards the person holding her.

Cinder, surprised by the sudden movement, looked back at Elsa and barely managed to side step the spike aimed for shoulder. She was a split second too late, and the spike slit open a small paper thin cut on the Witches flawless cheek. Her surprised expression grew into a frown, and she pressed her foot against the Queens neck, eliciting a yelp from Elsa as her neck felt ready to break at any moment. Sticking her hand out, orange and red began to swirl over it, she slowly formed the unmistakable shape of a dagger, a black dagger with pulsating red veins.

The Queen had no idea what Cinder wanted, but she tried to raise her hand again only for Cinder's other foot to crush it down, breaking several more bones in her hand and forcing the blonde to cry out in pain. She wasn't trained to deal with pain like this. She wasn't trained for anything at all.

The dagger finished forming after a few seconds, and the Witch twirled it in her hand.

"I really expected more of a challenge. What a waste of potential," She chuckled mockingly towards the blonde beneath her feet. She adjusted her foot to hold Elsa down more efficiently when suddenly a rock slammed into her arm.

"Get off my sister!"

Anna and Kristoff stood only a dozen or so feet away, the girl holding multiple rocks and the man carrying a large chunk of wood as a makeshift bat.

Cinder looked down at Elsa, "Well looks who's come to save you." She let her gaze settle on the red head and the man with her. She grinned, "This is going to be too easy..."

* * *

><p>Shepard cursed as a sword again slipped past her defenses and cut her leg. She hissed, and launched a biotic blast at her attacker which was of course blocked by a shield of red energy.<p>

She raised her omni blade and countered one strike of the dual swords as the other came for her other side.

The Commander forced her biotics to pool into her free hand and at the last second she grabbed the sword, shields again flaring, and her biotics tearing at her strength as she held the sword at bay with her biotically enhanced hand.

A cry pierced the air, and Katherine kicked Mikasa in the gut, shoving her away for a brief moment. She glanced down the

street.

Cinder stood over two more bodies, her energy radiating around her as she kicked a blonde man unconscious.

"No..." She sighed, recognizing the two people who had tried to save the Queen. She bit her lip and turned back to face Mikasa. Defeating her attacker was her first priority. Trying to help the others when she could barely handle one enemy on her own was a suicide mission she wouldn't survive.

Two swords lunged for her gut, and she sidestepped before using the swordswoman's momentum against her. She let Mikasa fall an inch to far forward before slamming a knee into her gut, grabbing her by the hair and throwing her backwards.

Another cry of pain echoed out into the air, and Shepard internally cringed.

She needed to finish this fight now.

* * *

><p>Anna groaned, rolling onto her stomach as Kristoff laid unconscious besides her.<p>

They had tried to save Elsa, hoping they could somehow outsmart the woman in red that had beaten Elsa. They had tried, and failed.

The woman holding her sister down had only needed to flick her wrist and her red magic had managed to knock down her ice harvester with one hit, and another flick sent her sprawling to the ground.

Now her body ached, and her bones creaked. Her green eyes looked up the street towards her sister and tears formed in as she watched Cinder press down on Elsa's hand, enticing another scream. Her hand reached out for her last living family.

"Noâ€¦"

Her plea was ignored and Cinder adjusted the foot on Elsa's neck, using it to hold her head down. She gazed at the left part of the woman's exposed back, right where the heart would be.

She raised the dagger, and brought it down.

It would have struck, but air was always the trickiest of elements, and a gust of it slammed into her, throwing her off Elsa and down the street. She flew a couple dozen feet, right over the downed noble and mountain man and crashed into the ground before rolling to a stop.

A bald monk, son of an Avatar, landed next to Elsa the moment Cinder had been blasted off.

"Are you alright?!" Tenzin asked, immediately trying to help the Queen to her feet.

"Ah..." Elsa gasped as the man grabbed her broken arm and broken hand.

The man's brow furrowed, "By the spirits, we need to get you to a healer."

He hoisted her up on his own, briefly studied her injuries and knew she was injured far worse than he had anticipated. He was glad now that General Dasas had asked for him to help reinforce the militia station up in the northern part of the city. If he hadn't, Tenzin wouldn't have been headed down the side streets and would've missed the chance to save Elsa.

The Airbender looked down the street to Cinder who was already on her feet, brushing her hands on her short dress.

She looked up at him, "Of course." Then waved the dagger in her hand away with a flash of orange. She had figured Shepard and the other two had been enough of an inconvenience but here was another one for her to deal with.

"Anna?" Elsa asked, looking to where her sister was lying on the ground only a few feet away.

Tenzin didn't say anything and stepped away from Cinder. He noticed the red headed girl pushing herself to her feet, arms shaking with fatigue. He pursed his lips but stood his ground.

The young girl stumbled towards them, "Elsa!" She gasped running up to the two while Kristoff, having regained consciousness, held himself up against a wall as his head continued to spin from the blow Cinder had given him.

"Anna what happened?" The Queen asked as her sister reached them.

Before either could say another thing Tenzin spoke up, "We'll have time for a family reunion later." The master Airbender kicked upwards, sending a blast of air at the oncoming fireball Cinder had sent at them while the two sisters had talked briefly.

The two separate blasts dissipated the moment they touched.

"Take your sister! Find General Dasas and get her to a healer!" Tenzin roared, pulling Elsa off him, and handing the Queen off to her sister.

Anna grit her teeth, and wrapped her arm around her sister, holding her up as best she could. Kristoff managed to make his way over to them, looking tired but focused on Cinder as she walked towards them.

"Go!" Tenzin yelled. He thrust his palm forward, and a vortex of air twirled at Cinder.

* * *

><p>Chief reloaded the pistol Shepard had given him, having taken down several black hands assassins that had thought it wise to engage the Spartan in close combat. Unfortunately, ammo was limited and he had only two more clips before he ran out of ammo.<p>

The other bad part, he had no idea where anyone was, and the Comm's

had gone dark when the attack started.

The Spartan had been making his way towards the docks when all hell had broken loose. There had been soldiers around, and together they fended off multiple assaults from the Black Hand.

"Move to next block! Teran take five men and head to the docks they need help down there!" One of the soldiers ordered, holding an age old radio on his hip, listening in on the receiver as he held it to his ear.

John glanced around, making sure all their enemies were dead. The soldiers began to move out, most heading north towards the next block and the other five heading south towards the docks.

Explosions rippled out from the city, black smoke filling the air as screams and the sounds of fighting echoed out from the city. He powered up his Comms, trying to reach Shepard again, only to be greeted with static.

"Soldier," He said looking down towards the water bender holding the radio, "Do you know where Commander Shepard is?"

Said man in question turned to him and shook his head, "Haven't heard anything in a while, but last report I heard she was in the Eastern District trying to evacuate civilians."

"Where's the Eastern District?"

The man raised an eyebrow but quickly glanced around the block, "Take theâ€|"

Suddenly, the radio exploded, and fire poured over the man, his screams piercing the air.

Instinct screaming at him, John bounded backward, a blast of red ripping the ground apart where he had just been. Fire rained down on the soldiers around, and several retaliated with water based attacks. Black hand members jumped down from the buildings around, assaulting the remaining soldiers, but left John alone.

Something landed behind him and the Spartan turned on his heel to face whoever it was. He wasn't surprised when he saw the enemy before him.

Black Armor, a red sword, and a torn black cape swirling behind him.

"Greetings," The Black Knight nodded with a hallow voice.

Chief only tightened the grip on his weapon, his finger hovering over the trigger. He noticed the Black Knights stance, and waiting for the perfect moment to fire. Sometimes patience was a virtue.

The Knight twirled the sword in hand, "Tell me, do you believe you can win?"

John tilted his head, his silence answering the question for him.

"A soldier. A hero. A Queen, and the Avatar. Four heroes destined to

save their worlds, but thrown together to save everything else."

The Black knight raised his hand, and light began to form over in a ball.

Pictures, people, formed like a hologram.

A shield. A hammer. A blue chest piece. A boy in black holding a sword, a girl in red and white by his side with her own rapier. A ship, round and massive with dual engines branching out from its round top soaring through space. A young man with a blue and green sword in ether hand, standing against another welding red. A girl with a scythe.

A grail.

"All these realms depend on the four of you, but do you really believe you can win?" The ball of light disappeared, "Do you believe you and your allies truly have a chance when secrets, lies, and anger pollute your souls? How can you win, when you don't even stand together."

John began to step forward.

"You know just as well as she did. That no matter what you sacrifice, there are some promises you cannot keep."

The Black Knight began to glow red and Chief froze in his place, "You told Shepard you would help save humanity, help save everythingâ€|"

Chief fired, a red shield blocked his rounds and a ball of energy fired back at him. He knew exactly what the Knight would say next,

"Do not make a promise you cannot keep."

* * *

><p>A dull pain was the first thing Hope felt. Pain that seemed to last a lifetime, till she finally opened her eyes, the light becoming an intrusive force that forced her to close them again.<p>

A groan escaped her lips, and feeling like she and been hit by a truck muttered, "Uhâ€| what the hellâ€|"

She felt the hard ground beneath her, and placed her hands on the ground before slowing pushing herself up to her knees. Her muscles ached and her head throbbed, and after a few tries she was finally able to open her eyes. She squinted around, trying to figure out where she was though all she saw was hell on earth.

Fire, burning buildings, bodies lying on the ground and then her eyes grew wide as the memories came rushing back to her.

"What the heck did I miss?" She asked aloud, getting to her feet and brushing off the dust from her clothing.

It was quiet, only the flickering of flames were able to be heard.

The red head looked around, wondering what had happened. She noticed many black robbed bodies laying around. Whether they were dead she didn't know.

The sounds of explosions echoed in the distance, voices yelling and screaming as well. Knowing a battle was raging, Hope quickly moved towards the nearest street, ignoring the pain racking her body. There was nothing but destruction and burning buildings, so she made her way down the street, looking for any sign of life, enemy or ally.

A scream pierced the air.

Hope looked to the East. The scream had been close, and from the sound of it whoever it belonged to needed help. She grit her teeth and rolled her eyes when she realized she had no weapon.

After a few seconds of internal debating she took off towards the scream. She would improvise.

* * *

><p>"Ok, come on..." Shepard hissed, holding her side as blood leaked through her fingers, her face scratched and bruised, "First there's the Flood, the Reapers, the Knight, and then this freak... What's next..."<p>

Mikasa, cuts lingering on her face, stood off to the side staring at Shepard with piercing eyes.

Suddenly, the shadows from behind her moved, and two black wolves formed, exactly like the ones Shepard had faced before.

The Commander sighed, "Of course."

Her green eyes glanced around, hoping for anything that could edge the battle in her favor, but like the fifty-first times she had looked, she realized there was nothing that could help her. She knew Elsa was down, and knew Tenzin had saved her. How the two had fared after that, she didn't know, but since they had yet to come to her aid she figured she couldn't count on their help anytime soon.

Two strings of light shot out at her, and the Commander dodged, powering up her biotics again.

Before she could move any further a wolf slammed into her, having deformed into smoke before crashing into her at full speed. It sent her stumbling back, only for a pair of feet to hit her face first. Then black tendrils grabbed her by the feet while she was unbalanced and flipped her face first into the ground.

The Spectre's biotics faded, and a groan escaped her lips as she tried to sit up. Her fist glowed blue and giving it all she had left, she slammed it in the ground.

A shockwave rippled out, throwing Mikasa and the two wolves back before they could attack.

Shepard spit out a glob of mucus and blood before she pushed herself to her knees. She was outgunned, again. That was happening way too

much lately for her taste.

A growl caught her ear, and she looked dead into the eyes of the wolf closest to her.

She powered up her omni blade, "Come on." Her enemies charged.

There was a flash of light, blinding Mikasa and the beasts as well as Shepard for a few moments.

When she could see again, Shepard pushed herself to her feet, looking towards Mikasa and expecting an attack. Instead her heart soared, and she smiled, "Been a while."

"Indeed," the Keeper said as she turned away from the Commander and stuck her hands out, forming two hard light weapons in her hand.

Growls and snarls escaped the wolves and the Ackerman girl narrowed her gaze at the two.

The wind picked up and Shepard heard sonic booms along with more screams. She turned around and looked up to the sky where the sonic booms had come from.

Dozens of portals had opened up, Covenant and Alliance ships alike floating into the planets atmosphere while drop ships flew out from their ports and headed towards the city at break neck speeds with what she knew was reinforcements.

Their reinforcements had finally arrived, which the Keeper herself was proof of.

"Shepard, the Arbiter is going to set up an evacuation point south of here like we planned. We're to try to lead the civilians to safety," the Keeper informed, though she kept her eyes trained on the enemies before them. She had expected to stay aboard her ship for the evacuation, but when they had entered the new reality her ship had automatically picked up the vitals of all those she had set to monitor. When she saw Shepard's she wasted no time in teleporting to her.

"Well," Shepard said, taking up a fighting stance next to the Forerunner, "Let's hope Chief and the others can evacuate everyone. We're sort of busy."

"I'll take care of the beast's. Can you handle the girl?"

"I can hold her off, then we take care of her together."

The Forerunner nodded, "Then let's end this."

* * *

><p>Cinder blocked another gust of air, her own magic dissipating as the attacks were deflected. She had hoped to kill the monk quickly, but he was still standing. Bruised, cut, and barely holding a stance, Tenzin stood at the ready, waiting for Cinder's next move.<p>

That's when she heard the sonic booms. She glanced up and saw the

portals, "No..."

The Witch pursed her lips. With more troops on their side it would be harder for Cinder and the Knight to complete their mission. It would be easy to locate Elsa, but with more troops they could simply take the Queen and flee.

She would not allow that. Not when they were so close.

Another bolt of air was aimed for her head, and she merely side stepped it. With fury filled eyes, she charged Tenzin, avoiding every attack he sent her way. She reached him, and twirled around him before brining her elbow down on his back.

Tenzin gasped in pain as her blow landed, and Cinder flipped over him, landing in front and kicking him in the gut before raising her hands and blasting him a concentrated bolt of dust magic. The monk flew back and hit the ground hard, rolling a few feet before coming to a stop.

He coughed but again pushed himself to his feet, staggering and stumbling, but standing up nonetheless.

Cinder narrowed her gaze, her patience wearing thin. How this man was still standing was beyond her. She had tossed him around like a doll, despite him having gotten a few hits, and yet he still kept fighting.

Annoyed now, the witch placed both hands together. It wouldn't be her strongest attack, but it was one of her most deadly. The only downside was that it would fatigue her even more than she already was, but it needed to be done. She needed to end this.

Red aura spread over her entire body and Tenzin lurched forward, launching several attacks at once. The air seemed to wash over her without any consequence, breaking apart from the red glow that seemed to protect her.

She stretched her hands outs, the yellow of her dress glowing brightly, and symbols appeared in mid air, twirling around her arms.

Then it happened.

A massive lance of fire blasted out from her fists, spinning in the air while red power swirled both around and inside it.

Tenzin gawked at the power behind such an attack and pulled a large sphere of air around him for protection, but the moment Cinder's attack hit the ball of air collapsed, and the attack slammed into Tenzin, engulfing him in flames before continuing forwards towards the end of the street.

Mikasa saw the fire first and used her equipment to escape to the top of the buildings around her.

The Keeper finished off a wolf with a blast from the light rifle she had materialized. She noticed Mikasa leap away and her suit began to ring, alarms from going off from the dangerous amounts of fire racing towards her.

Shepard kicked a wolf back and felt the fire, turning around just as it reached her.

The Commander threw up a barrier, and the Keeper powered up a hard light shield as the fire engulfed the entire end of the street, shattering light posts, vendor carts, and even blasting apart a few smaller building that had been on the corners of the street.

For a moment, fire covered everything, the flames eating away at every building, every sign, every stall, every living thing that had been in the street.

Cinder relaxed as the fire slowly died away and felt the toll on her body. Dust was the major component to using magic for her and others from her world, but it required some sort of physical concentration and skill, hence the fatigue. Using such a technique that vast and powerful was a tiring feat to accomplish since it pushed her control of magic to its limits, both mentally and physically.

Smoke seethed out from the streets where scorch marks and ash lined the ground. Embers flittered in the air and the unconscious forms of Shepard and Tenzin lay on the ground. Only the Keeper was still standing, her hard light shield a dangerous red from almost collapsing.

The Witch frowned. She had hoped her attack would've cleared out her enemies.

Mikasa leaned forward, studying the battlefield, then looked over at Cinder from her vantage point. She wanted to wait and see what the woman said. She needed to follow orders.

"Ackerman," Cinder stated loud enough for both the girl and Forerunner to hear, "Deal with her. I need to find the Queen."

The quiet girl nodded and didn't hesitate to launch herself at the ancient warrior.

The Witch raised her hand and focused on forming another attack. Only a small burst of red appeared, floating above her hand before she waved it away and scowled. Her attack had taken more from her than she thought, at least dust wise it had.

She inspected her clothing, and noticed how it looked faded and worn. Her dust supply was running out, and without its amplification and control it would be nearly impossible for her to use any form of magic. Still, she was easily strong enough to deal with Elsa. She looked down the street behind her.

"Now where could she be?"

* * *

><p>"Elsa?" Anna asked in fear, holding her sister against a wall, inspecting the injuries that ravaged her body.<p>

"I'm fine." A cough, "Fine." Elsa tried to smile but only grimaced. She was hurt, badly, and her sister had noticed. She couldn't believe the woman she had fought was so deadly. The woman had beaten her in a

minute, and she didn't even look like she had broken a sweat to beat her.

"Come on guys we gotta keep moving," Kristoff stated looking out around the street they were on.

Where they had come from was all but abandoned, however further down the larger streets civilians screamed and ran as soldiers tried to ease the chaos and direct them to shelters or safe zones.

The Space ships that Shepard had told her about continued to pour into the atmosphere, and Anna had prayed that they were friendly when she saw them flying closer to the city.

"Whoaâ€|" Anna muttered as the largest ship of the fleet came into view. It looked larger than the whole city and covered a huge portion of the sky above them.

"Geez that thing's bigâ€|" The blonde man said taking a step back out of sheer surprise.

Having been lost for a few moments in sheer awe, Anna shook her head and refocused on the present, "Come on. We gotta go."

As she spoke a Phantom drop ship raced down towards them, slowing down to a hover above the street and letting out at least a dozen elites and grunts. The Arbiter jumped down from the phantom a moment later, glancing around the street as he surveyed the situation.

"Hey isn't thatâ€|" Anna started when a monstrous shriek filled the air. Loud and piercing, it traveled across the city and sent a chill through every fighter.

Elsa stared off into the distance, towards the wall she had built to protect the city. Her eyes had grown large and her lips trembled, "Not themâ€|"

On the other hand the leader of the Covenant stood tall, and glared towards the North, "Captain move to the North and begin evacuations. Phantoms are standing by to lead all the civilians to safety," he ordered with clarity.

"Sir, what about the Parasite?"

"The Justicar and the Maleficent are headed that way. They will hold the parasite as long as they can." As the Arbiter spoke two Assault carriers soared over them towards the Northern wall. It took seconds, but the Carriers slowed to a stop then unleashed a raging purple beam from underneath the bows of the ships.

With a satisfied 'humph' the Arbiter looked away and saw three humans that were dressed oddly and were completely out of place among the natives. Before he could go to them several water tribe soldiers surrounded his group, screaming at them, "Who are you!" or "Get on the ground!"

He was momentarily surprised by their aggressive reaction. Most humans would cower when faced against a fully armed Sangheili Spec Ops squad.

"Stand down Sergeant!" Another human added running up to them and glaring at the others, before walking over to the elite.

"I heard you're supposed to help us?" The man asked looking up at the Elite.

"Indeed. We are going to evacuate. The Flood have arrived on the northern borders of the city so we are setting up safe zones in the southern part of the city. Gather your civilians and lead them there. My men will hold the parasite as long as they can."

"So it's true then?"

The Arbiter looked at him questioningly, but if the human understood his gaze he didn't know.

"Those things that took down Ba Sing Se? They're coming here?" The man asked, looking at the Arbiter as if he knew what the Earth Kingdom City was.

"I do not know of the place you speak, but if it is the parasite you refer to, then yes. They will destroy this city." The man nodded in understanding and the Arbiter continued, "Go and gather your people. We will do what we can to hold them off."

He looked towards the Elite Captain with him and nodded. The groups split off, heading down the streets with their assigned mission to clear out all attackers then to ensure people headed to designated evacuation points. However two elites stayed with him, his personal guards.

At last returned the Arbiter's attention towards the out of place humans.

"Uh, Elsa you really need to lose some weight!" Anna joked as she and the mountain man continued down the street towards the soldiers. She hoped the soldiers had healers with them. She had seen them work before and her sister definitely needed them.

The red head looked up to see where the elite she knew had gone only for his massive body to suddenly slam into the three, his sheer size being enough to drag them all down just as a bolt of fire raced over head.

Elsa screamed as her broken bones were pushed past their limit and as the other two tried to scramble back to their feet only to get pushed down again by the massive alien holding them down.

As their leader held down the humans, the two Spec Op Elites drew their plasma repeaters and unleashed a volley of super heated shots on the two Black Hand assailants. They lasted less than thirty seconds.

"Clear sir." One of the elites spoke lowering his rifle after eradicating the threats.

The Arbiter, having both heard his guard and saved the humans lives, pushed himself up and stared down the street. He would've been content with their victory had it not been for the lone woman standing a few dozen meters from him.

Her eyes blazed, and her red dress gave her the look of one meant for a life of pleasure and royalty, but the three elites knew an enemy when they saw one.

The woman sighed, and pushed a strand of her black hair behind her ear before forming a ball of fire in one hand. She stepped forward, scowling as her eyes burned with rage.

Again someone stood between her and Elsa. In actuality, three people stood between her and the Queen, but only one was of any threat. The creature, the larger one with silver armor, Cinder had never seen before. She knew it was on Shepard's side considering it had just saved the Queen, her sister and the other man from Black Hand assailants.

She increased the size of her fireball and thrust her arm forward.

The fire soared at the alien, which he simply sidestepped. The other two raised their weapons, but the Arbiter raised an arm, "She is mine."

Cinder narrowed her she hadn't used her power so much earlier she would've blasted him away from a distance, but she needed to save what she had left in case any other benders, like the Avatar, decided to attack her.

The monster drew two swords, white and blazing, and having only one choice Cinder formed two black swords in her hands from Dust.

* * *

><p>Korra flipped back, retching a chunk of earth up then kicking it as she flipped, landing in a graceful crouch only seconds later.<p>

The Titan roared as the earth slammed into him, shattering, and forcing him back a few feet. It looked at the young girl and slammed its hands together, sending out a shockwave of ice spikes from where it stood.

A wall of fire intercepted every bolt of ice meant for her, and the Avatar spun on her heel, kicking out a lance of piercing fire before rocketing a chunk of ice at the Titan.

With a grunt, the Titan took the bolt of fire to its chest, and punched the chunk of ice before it hit. It slammed its foot into the ground and sent another wave of ice from the ground towards Korra.

She threw up a wall of earth, only for it to shatter and the ice to hit her head on before sending her flying. She hit the ground and rolled over and over before Korra managed to stop herself. With a heavy groan she pushed herself to her feet as the Titan approached.

The monster growled and charged her.

A gust of air propelled the girl into the air, barely avoiding the

creatures charge by inches. She fired down several bolts of fire before forming an air spout beneath her, balancing in the air as she fired down mixed vortexes of both fire and air.

Bursts of ice ripped up from the ground and countered several of the attacks, while more launched into the air, headed straight for the Avatar.

The vortex of air carrying Korra twisted her away from the ice shards sent at her. Her eyes glowed white and she forced the tornado below her down to the earth where her feet slammed into the ground and sent out a wall of powerful winds.

It hit the monster head on and threw the Titan backwards, a wall of fire racing after it. An ice wall intercepted the wave of fire, and the two canceled out as the Titan shook its head in amusement.

Korra sighed as the Titan straightened up. She was glad that there was no one around to get hurt, but she also wondered where everyone was.

They were fighting in the middle of the market place and the last she had seen of people was when they were running away from their fight. After that, no one came around. It was just her and the Titan.

She just wondered where the others were.

A gust of wind raced passed her and she saw the Titan gathering up ice and snow in his hands.

"Oh no you don't!" Her eyes glowed white and she thrust her hands forward, a jet of fire racing out to the monstrosity before her.

Ice raced out from the Titan at the same time, and the two streams of elements collided.

* * *

><p>Hope slipped around the corner, only to find the street she had come to was charred over and destroyed. Bodies laid at the end of the street, unconscious or dead she didn't know, what caught her attention was the person standing in advanced armor over them.<p>

She stopped in her tracks but wasn't able to hide before the being saw her.

Then another person, a girl with black hair and black armor suddenly appeared, surging towards the being with exponential speeds, holding swords that were aimed for the first person's head. The person dodged, and was able to hit the girl with a kick to the gut.

As they fought, Hope studied each of them. She unsure of who was who, but then she noticed Shepard laying on the ground.

The girl with black hair and swords flew back at the first person, and she realized it was the same girl who Shepard had said attacked her on Ba Sing Se's walls, if she counted appearances as anything. Whoever the other was, she was still clueless on.

Either way two continued fighting while she watched. She knew who one person was, but if the other being was friend of foe she couldn't be sure.

However her mind was made up when she saw the first person blocking the swordswoman from delivering a killing blow to Shepard. She looked around and noticed Shepard's rifle laying on the ground only a couple dozen feet from her.

Without hesitation she dashed to the weapon, grabbing it and aiming it towards the swordswoman. It was slightly covered in ice, but she would bet anything it still worked. Round after round tore through the air the moment she squeezed the trigger, and the shots slammed into the sword wielder, knocking her off balance as they pelted her red shielding.

Instinctively, Mikasa shot back lines towards the buildings and flew backwards before the Forerunner she was fighting could do anything to end the fight.

Hope continued her own assault, letting lose stream after stream of mass accelerator rounds at the sword wielder while the Keeper formed a hard light rifle and joined the mutant in her assault.

Mikasa grimaced as hard light and mass accelerators flew past her or crashed into her shields. She slipped her swords back into their holders, knowing a lost fight when she saw one, and rocketed backwards and away from the fight, completely disappearing among the surrounding buildings.

Hope kept her gun up for a moment before lowering it, knowing the whoever the girl was had retreated, or at least she hoped she had.

The Keeper glanced towards the mutant, and seeing the way she was dressed, figured it was the new girl Shepard had mentioned. She steeped towards Hope, though kept her weapon at the ready, "And you are?"

"Hope," The red head stated uneasily, "Hope Summers. I know Shepard and Chief."

A nod from the Forerunner when a groan filled the air.

They both looked towards the bodies, and noticed the armored soldier getting to her feet.

Shepard's mouth hung open and her eyes were shut harshly as she pushed herself up. She took heavy breaths, and felt the heat on the left side of her face. She remembered the fire and immediately looked up to see what had happened after she was knocked out.

Fortunately, two friendly faces greeted her.

"Hope. Keeper."

Hope smiled and made her way to Shepard while the Keeper simply nodded and relaxed her stance. The mutant helped Katherine up, having placed the rifle on the ground to help while the Forerunner moved to the still downed Airbender.

"He's unconscious and has suffered second degree burns on over a third of his body," the Keeper said as she inspected him, "He needs medical attention immediately." Then she looked at Shepard, "As do you Commander."

Shepard, though grateful, pushed Hope away and straightened herself up, "I'm fine."

"Shepard you have second degree burns on the left side of your face and from the scans I'm reading you have several broken bones and some internal bruising."

"I said I'm fine." The Commander reached down to her leg and a compartment opened up, revealing a pack of Medi-Gel. She opened it up and applied it to her face before taking some for her internal injuries.

The burns on her face began to heal, reducing the burnt skin and healing it slightly, while the pain inside lessened significantly.

"I do notâ€¦" The Keeper started for Shepard only to raise her hand and cut her off with, "Take Tenzin to your ship and get him taken care of. Me and hope will find the others and see what we can do about Cinder and the other girl."

The Forerunner bit her tongue and lifted Tenzin off the ground before a slipspace portal formed behind her and she stepped through it and into her ship. The portal closed, leaving Hope and Shepard alone.

"So now what?" The younger red head asked.

Katherine grunted, and picked up both her side arm and rifle from the ground, handing the rifle to Hope, "We take Cinder down."

* * *

><p>John rolled to the side, a red sword sizzling as it sliced into the frozen ground he had been standing on. A kick to the chest sent him stumbling backwards, but he regained his balance and was able to dodge the Black Knights second sword swipe, grabbing his enemies arm and kicking the sword out of his hand.<p>

The Knight pulled away and twirled around as it formed a pistol in its hand, the pistol of a once legendary bounty hunter. The Paralyzer fired, its once orange shots now a ghastly red.

Chief immediately ducked under the shot and charged the Knight as the red energy hit a wall, incinerating it. He slammed into the knight, and pushed it backwards only for the Knight to slam its own feet into the ground and push back with equal force.

The two stopped in their tracks, engaged in a dual of strength and will, each trying to over power the other.

However John knew what to do in such situations and as the Knight pushed he let up slightly, letting his attacker stumble forward before slamming a knee into his gut and then hitting him in the head

with his elbow.

With a spin, the Knight used his new momentum to twirl around and kick John in the head, draining part of his shields and knocking him away. He didn't wait and flipped into the air, landing a mid air kick with both its feet on the Spartan's chest.

The Spartan was thrown backwards a few feet and the Black Knight landed then fired the Paralyzer again. Fortunately, the momentum carrying John allowed him to duck under the Paralyzer shot. He stuck his left foot back, effectively catching himself before he fell.

Another shot was fired from the Paralyzer and he rolled under it towards the Knight. As his roll finished he kicked off the ground and tackled the enemy trying to shoot him.

They rolled till finally the Spartan gained the upper hand and managed to land on top of the Knight. Holding him down Chief unleaded a rain of punches that would've killed any normal human instantly, however the Black Knight's armor didn't even dent and instead a red glow surrounded him before blasting outwards and throwing the super soldier off him.

Seconds passed between the time either of them managed to get up, but the Knight had gained an advantage. His attack had blasted the Spartan back a couple dozen feet away, giving him the advantage of distance. He raised the Paralyzer while powering up a red biotic blast in his other hand.

Chief sidestepped as the Paralyzer fired, the blast scratching his shields and draining a part of them as the biotic blast soared at him. He raised an arm and a hard light shield power up, taking the biotic blast in full. Before he could move another Paralyzer shot slammed into his shield, and though it didn't break the hard light, it did push him back several feet.

A second biotic blast raced at him and John rolled under it. His luck however didn't hold out, and he crossed his arms as a Paralyzer shot hit him, blasted apart his shields, charred the front of his armor, and sent him flying through the wall of a store behind him.

The Black Knight rose to his feet and followed through the store, preparing to finish off the luckiest man alive.

* * *

><p>Wrex kicked the last of the Black Hand forces attacking him to the ground, and fired a shotgun shell directly into his head. The alien kicked the body away and surveyed the streets around him, "Well this is a damn mess."<p>

Legion, having also dispatched the last to oppose him walked over to the Krogan. It tilted its head when it reached him, and turned to survey the battlefield.

"We have sustained minimal harm and eliminated all targets within this vicinity. We should relay the information to Shepard Commander." A frown sported the Clan Chiefs face. He wondered what was going on.

When they had engaged this street it had been over run with Black Hand operatives, and even with the Water Tribe soldiers they were outnumbered two to one.

As he figured only him and Legion made it out alive, but what rubbed him wrong was the way the terrorist group had attacked. Sure he was hot headed and loved charging into battle, but he wasn't stupid, and from what he saw neither were his enemies.

They wouldn't start an all out brawl like this unless they had a specific reason, especially with how outgunned they were overall.

With Shepard, her team, the others, and the entire Southern water Tribe military along with the surviving military from Republic City it was a suicide mission even if the Black Hand had had a thousand troops to spare.

So what're they playing at? Wrex thought to himself.

"Ah," He grunted and shook his head, heading to where he knew Shepard had last been, "Legion contact Shepard and find out where she is."

The Geth didn't respond and only fired up its Comm channel, "Shepard-Commander we have dealt with the Black Hand in the northern Market facilities. What are your next orders?"

Only static greeted it.

"Shepard-Commander did not respond."

Wrex stared up at the horizon, smoke and an orange glow having filled the sky from all the fires, "Try again."

The Geth tried, and again received nothing, "There is only a two point six percent chance that Shepard-Commander would willingly ignore us."

"She's not ignoring us!" Big alien eyes squinted off into the distance, "We need to find her now. It's too much of coincidence."

"I will contact the others."

* * *

><p>The Arbiter side stepped and slammed his energy swords down, Cinder's own weapons blocking them before she flipped backwards and away from the Elite.<p>

She grinned, but not from confidence. She was impressed. Not many people could cross swords with her alive, and yet this alien was standing against her.

Of course her dust and magic gave her an unfair advantage, but every time she tried to use it he would evade it effortlessly or just attack her before she could use it.

A brilliant swordsman was all she could think. She sidestepped the Elites next attack, kicking off the ground to place distance between the two before charging him again.

Before she could even get halfway to the Arbiter the store nearby by exploded in a shower of debris, a hunk of dark green armor flying into the street between them.

* * *

><p>Korra twirled her hands together, dissipating the ice spike that had come right at her into a stream of water and launching it back at the Titan. It hit the beast square in the face and sent it flying backwards, the vortex below breaking apart as it was separated from its creator, then the ground shook as the Titan rocketed into it.<p>

The Avatar frowned as the beast slowly got to its feet and fired down two bolts of fire at it.

An ice wall rose up before her attacks could hit, tanking each blast. Korra didn't even have a chance to think as the ice wall shattered and a new line of ice spikes raced at her. She pulled water from the air, and formed an ice capsule around herself while her air vortex kept it and her airborne.

The Ice spikes slammed into her capsule, breaking it in half and throwing the Avatar down towards the ground, yet before she landed a funnel of snow and air slammed into her and sent her sailing into a building.

The walls cracked as she hit it, a loud gasp of pain escaping her lips before she fell back down to the ground.

With a black face, the beast began to make its way over to her when the native water tribe citizen pulled herself up to her knees with shaky arms.

The girl grit her teeth and her eyes glowed white, the air around her beginning to swirl as she did so. She slammed a fist into the ground, and a pillar of earth shot up at an angle to the Titan, hitting it in the chest and flinging it into the store behind it. Then she twirled and fire spewed forth from both her fists.

An attack of absolute power, untold amounts of fire raining down on the beast that once challenged the Gods.

The attack was devastating and the Titan crashed through the front wall of the store, the fire blasts obliterating the entire front of the store.

Korra pushed herself to her feet and pulled her fist back, her eyes still glowing white. She held her fist back for a few moments then fired another more powerful stream of fire at the store.

However on the other side of the store a certain Commander rounded the corner of the street parallel to one Korra was on.

"Hope where was the last..." Shepard started only for a massive lance of fire to blow through the back of a store that was mere feet in

front of her.

"What the hell!"

* * *

><p>Only moments after the wall had exploded next to the Arbiter, letting through a hunk of green metal, a wall of fire had suddenly blasted through a store. The Arbiter roared as the stream of fire blasted out behind Cinder, forcing the woman to create a barrier of red that shielded her from the heat.<p>

The green hunk of armor that had landed between him and Cinder had just pushed himself up, and John was forced to power up his hard light shield as the fire engulfed a massive portion of the street, including the part he and Cinder were in.

Behind the Sangheili Commander Anna screamed where her sister, Elsa, closed her eyes and looked away from the fire as the Arbiter's two guards growled and raised their rifles.

The raging fire was only momentary, and once it stopped Hope was able to look around to see what was happening. She saw Chief with his hard light shield drawn, having shielded himself from the fire with it, the alien friend of Chief's and two like him standing in front of Anna, Kristoff, and Elsa, and Korra standing in the hole of the store where fire had just spewed from.

With a raised eyebrow the Avatar spoke, "Well, isn't this a touching reunionâ€|" Though her voice was laced with anger.

Hope nodded in agreement and Shepard bit her lip as she saw both Cinder and the Black Knight as well as another being she knew was not her ally.

Cinder, the Black Knight, and the Titan had all themselves stood up, facing different attackers. Cinder looked towards Hope and Shepard, The Titan at Korra, and the Black Knight drew a second red sword as he stared at the Chief and Arbiter.

Thanks to the sudden interruptions, each fight had come to an uneasy standstill, the heros facing the villains, each of them waiting for the other to strike.

With grit teeth, the mutant girl took aim with her rifle, not noticing how her eyes glowed a faint green and orange when she did.

Cinder on the other hand looked back and forth between her allies and her enemies. They were outnumbered almost two to one. She could probably take an injured Shepard and the mutant girl, but she was unsure if she could fight all of them at once, however she had allies.

The Knight was formidable, and so was the Spartan. It was a death match between the two and it was why the Knight had gone after the super soldier, since only he was a true match in strength speed. The Witch knew she could match the Spartan's speed with ease, but his strength and endurance were a problem best suited for the Knight to handle, which was why they agreed he would handle the

Spartan.

Looking at the girl's fallen hair and the cuts in her skin and cloths, Cinder could tell the Titan was obviously dealing with Korra, though his own demeanor showed it was a more even fight than she would've liked.

What left her uncomfortable was the fact they were outnumbered. If one of them lost their fight, the others would be doomed since she doubted any of them three could handle all the heroes alone.

Her mind raced with possibilities, with plans and strategies, but as she thought a swish of air behind her announced the presence of a certain black haired and black armored ally. She grinned as the girl stood up next to her.

It was about time Mikasa showed up.

* * *

><p>Chief tensed even more. He held himself in a basic fighting stance, center of mass lowered and hands balled into fist raised next to his head, and waited for the inevitable fight to begin. He had studied the situation, and everyone was banged up a little. He had dents in his armor as did the Knight, and the Arbiter had a few cuts.<p>

Elsa was down. Korra and the Titan both had the visible signs of a rough fight, scorches for the Titan, bruises for both and a few cuts in Korra's case covered their skin.

Shepard had burn marks on her face along with several internal wounds Chief could tell she was nursing, though Mikasa was also obviously nursing wounds of her own.

The only uninjured one seemed to be Hope though she did have a red mark on her forehead, from what he didn't know, while the woman he figured was Cinder, the one Shepard had spoken of, was standing from but looked slightly weary.

It was then four figures leapt down from the building next to them.

A bald man, hardy but a little short, landed next to Titan. Behind him, a armless woman whose suddenly formed arms out of water and ice. Then came another man, darker skinned but with long hair and as he landed he moved the earth beneath him and it changed into boiling magma. Finally a tall woman, with an eye painted on her forehead.

The first man, Zaheer, smiled, "Sorry we came late."

On the other side of the street Shepard cursed under her breath. For a moment they had had the advantage. Now they were outnumbered and the enemy had fresh fighters ready to go.

She glowed blue as her biotics activated. Things definitely didn't seem to be going well for her and her team.

Cinder smiled as she took a step towards Katherine, "It seems the

tables have turned." A flash of light behind Shepard and the woman was forced to cover her eyes.

"Indeed they have." The Keeper stood next to Shepard, Wrex and Legion behind her, each of them aiming their rifles for Cinder. She raised her arms and two hard light swords appeared in each hand. She twirled them and the Forerunner straightened her stance.

Besides her and the two aliens, several portals opened up and several Promethean knights walked out, roaring their challenge to those that dared to challenge them or their creator.

The air began screeched and Cinder looked up to the skies. Metal tubes raced down, not at them but at the buildings surrounding them, and she wondered what they were. A few seconds later her thoughts were answered as the tubes slammed into the surrounding buildings, resting on the roves.

A hiss, and the metal fronts popped off, revealing more creatures like the one she had been fighting, like the Arbiter. They were armed to the teeth and they aimed their weapons at her and her compatriots.

"Glad to see we came in time." One elite called out in a grim chuckle.

"Better late then never." Shepard smiled.

From behind the Arbiter, Chief and Anna, Elsa glanced around.

They had the numbers on their side, Cinder and her forces were outnumbered, but why did the Queen feel uneasy? Why did she feel even more threatened now then before?

The Master Chief lowered his gaze. Something was wrong. He felt it. That six instinct that he had developed over years of fighting and killing warned him about something, but he couldn't place what was wrong.

"Give up." Commander Shepard called as she took a step forward, her aim trained for the witches forehead. Then Cinder grinned.

John felt time slow down, his heart accelerating. Everything had worked according to Cinder's plan. Every last detail. When she grinned, he knew that right away.

"You see Commander," Cinder tilted her head and narrowed her gaze, "To make demands, you must first have all the cards." She formed a silver device in her hand.

It was time for the final part of her plan.

* * *

><p>AN So hey! Cliff hanger I know. Sorry!**

**Anyway yeah so here this chapter and the next chapter we get more fighting and its revealed what Cinder and the Knight have had planned all along. In case anyone thinks, 'why didn't the elite just shoot Cinder and the others' well thats because the Arbiter is the highest

ranking officer there along with Commander Shepard, so they would have to order it first considering the fact they arrived during a stalemate. Also most of the bad guys are easily fast enough to deflect plasma rounds, heck Cinder can block sniper rounds at ****almost point blank range with her hand, without moving anything else. Also there is of course some PIS involved.**

Now it seems like an end game to our story but its only the end of Part I! Well, actually there's two chapters left.

Also after careful consideration and seeing some action scenes in RWBY I can confidently say that Cinder is just as fast as Chief, and close to him in strength though in durability she doesn't have it in her to take as strong as a hit as the Spartan can deliver. So don't hate me if she's seems OP.

To add to that, along with all the other universes that will be added to this, I have three more universes I was considering adding to this fix, of course in the later parts though. **I was considering adding SAO, Akame ga kill, and Fate Stay night. Well, actually they'll all be in it either way so yeah. Don't worry it'll all work out perfectly because thanks to several Forerunner experiments I lean red about through the Halo Terminals it'll all make sense when the time comes!**

Anyway I just want to thank you all for sticking with me this far! Our journeys not over yet!

Big thanks to my Beta's jlyman, thehaloproject, and zekebomb.

Please Review! God bless you all!

41. Part I Chapter 38 (Partly Beta'd)

Part I

The voice and face of all evil

Chapter 38: The beginning of the end part III

* * *

><p>Faster then Shepard could react, Cinder pressed on the device in her hand and a pool of energy formed behind her. She was instantly sucked in, and the Black Knight slammed his fist into the ground, creating a dome of red energy around him and his allies, where only a second later Katherine's and the Arbiter's shots slammed into the barrier.<p>

She grit her teeth and powered up her biotics while her allies fired their own weapons, and in the case of Korra, unleashed a massive spout of fire on the dome of energy.

The next thing she knew, ice ripped out from the ground in every direction and raced towards her and the others.

The Elite's Spec Ops squads, who had landed on the roofs of the surrounding buildings, were forced to duck or retreat to cover as

shards of ice raced at them. Shepard herself sidestepped an ice spike, only for another chunk of ice to hit her head on.

Hope rolled under a flying blade of ice, then continued firing her rifle. The Arbiter cursed in his native language as the rush of frozen water sent him sprawling to the ground, and the Master Chief barely managed to avoid getting impaled by half a dozen shards of ice. The Keeper slip-spaced out of the way as did her Promethean Knights, while Wrex was thrown backwards, and Legion was impaled.

With the amount of firepower being poured down on them significantly reduced, the Black Knight lowered the dome of power and the benders with him immediately went on the offensive while Mikasa lunged straight at them.

Dodging Hope's rifle fire, Ming Hua used the icy ground to her advantage, and by slamming her water arms into the ground, took control of the ice around Hope. She commanded it to rise and used it to wrap around the mutant girl, freezing her solid in the block of ice.

Zaheer zoomed forward and unleashed a funnel of air at Korra, who had just shielded herself with a wall of earth from another of the Titan's ice attacks. The air threw her back and hit her against a wall.

P' Li, the woman with a strange eye on her forehead, sucked in a breath, and unleashed an explosive shot of fire at Chief. It hit him dead on, his reaction time delayed since he had just avoided an attack from Ming Hua. His shields drained instantly as he flew through the wall of a building behind him.

Shepard cringed at the swords that sliced right by her head, instantly throwing herself backward and firing away at the swordswoman who was attacking. The swords came back at her and she was forced into a roll. She had just been knocked dizzy by the ice block and now the swordswoman was after her. She wondered how much worse things could get as she let loose another burst from her rifle.

The Arbiter roared and charged with his energy swords. Ghazan, the earth bender with Zaheer, leapt into the air towards the Arbiter. He landed barely ten feet from the Elite, and slammed his fists into the ground.

Instead of moving the earth he changed it. It burned, and sloshed into a thick, red, boiling lava that surged towards the Elite. Wide eyed, the Elite commander sidestepped the lava, his shields failing against the heat. He was forced into a retreat as Ghazan pressed on with the lava.

Suddenly, plasma and needler shots soared down from the buildings around them, racing straight at the benders.

The Black Knight formed another domed barrier around his group, extending it to protect only his own allies. It stopped the plasma rounds, but the benders attacks were unaffected, allowing them to continue their own fights.

Gazhan's fists dug into the earth, and lava raced at unnatural speeds towards the buildings surrounding them as well as forming a moat between himself and the Arbiter. It collided with the buildings, and the ground underneath them suddenly began to transform. He raised his hands and lava blasted up from the earth, engulfing the sides of buildings then pulling them down. The support fire from the squads stopped.

The Arbiter snarled in anger while Korra, who had briefly engaged Zaheer before the dome went up again, raised her fists and spewed blistering flames onto the dome.

Elsa watched everything from where she lay. She had to help. She had to do something. Though pain laced her body, she raised her hands, slowly getting up from her knees and standing to help.

"Elsa no!" Anna cried.

The Queen ignored her and focused on the lava. She would put it out.

Her hands glowed and there was a brief flash of light in front of her.

Then a hand wrapped around her throat and she felt nothing but the worst pain ever in her gut. She gasped, unable to form words as she felt the blade enter her chest, right under the ribs.

"Elsa!"

Katherine looked over to the scream and her heart ached at the sight. She had failed. Then two feet crashed into her and sent her to the ground.

Behind all the action, down where the Arbiter had left Elsa, Anna, and Kristoff safely behind his back while he protected them from the front, stood Cinder.

She held Elsa up in the air by her throat, a black dagger buried in the Queen's chest.

"Korra! Get to Elsa!" The Commander roared, letting her biotic power rise like the tide, swirling around her in its blazing glory as she unleashed a nova blast at Mikasa.

The Avatar only grunted in agreement. She stopped the flames that were eating away at the dome and kicked up a chunk of earth. Her foot slammed into it with practiced ease, and the arctic rock rocketed at Cinder.

Spearing through the air like a javelin, the rock soared, but the witch was prepared. Her heel twisted her around, still holding onto Elsa with one hand while the other conjured up a beautiful glyph that shattered the rock to pieces.

Shepard kicked Mikasa in the gut, twirled, and pulled the trigger, her aim readjusted to take out Cinder, but her rounds too were stopped by the glyph. The silent warrior pressed on and hit Katherine in the head with the butt of her sword before suddenly retreating as

pelts of plasma fire were redirected her way from the Arbiter who had drawn his own plasma carbine.

Cinder didn't even bother to give them a glance. She turned back around to Elsa and yanked the dagger out of her chest. No blood spilled from the wound, in fact the only thing there was a glowing red mark, a sort of hieroglyph on her chest.

Yet despite no physical wound being present, Elsa could barely take the pain radiating from where the dagger had plunged into her, and she didn't even know why. Then a harsh hand wrapped itself in her hair and dragged her down, pulling her to her knees while a second hand placed itself on the upper part of her chest right below the throat. Fingers dug into her skin and began to pull away.

A soul wrenching scream leeches from her throat, and the next thing to happen completely baffled Shepard, Hope, and even the Keeper, none of who had seen such a thing before.

Icy blue, misty, and faded, something followed Cinder's fingers from Elsa's chest. A ghost like version of the Queen herself, that looked dead, weakened and frail, was literally pulled from Elsa. Her eyes glowed a brilliant blue, and her screams faded, and her hair changed from platinum blonde to a light brown like her mothers.

"What the fuck." Wrex, having gotten back up, muttered.

The Commander didn't say anything and only watched. She'd seen weird things, she had even been brought back to life at one point, but this was new.

It cost her, and she was hit by red biotics while the others were assaulted again by the quartet of skilled benders, the Titan and Mikasa.

Chief muscled through the hole in the wall, shaking off chunks of rock from his armor, and stared at what was happening. He saw everyone fighting, everyone except Cinder and Elsa.

He had seen the Flood and the Reapers. He had fought the Covenant, he had fought Cinder, benders, and more monstrosities than anyone else he knew, but this was something else.

He stepped forward, then a voice announced, "If you want him to live put down your weapons!"

All heads turned, Korra facing the Titan with fire in her hands. Shepard had her weapon aimed at Zaheer, Wrex was standing above Gazhan, the Keeper and two Prometheans were standing in front of Ming Hua- who wielded several whips of water- and P' Li. The Black Knight had its swords drawn and was facing Hope. The Arbiter had redrawn his swords along with the few Elites that had managed to survive the lava sunk buildings and were facing Mikasa.

A man with red hair stood off to the side, a gun in his hand, with Garrus on his knees in front of him while the gun was pointed at the back of his head.

"Garrus!" Katherine called out only for a spout of air to slam into her and knock her back like a rag doll.

"Weapons! Now!" the Black Knight called out.

Wrex looked at Shepard, while Korra only enlarged the flames in her hands. The Keeper straightened her stance and the p[ro]metheans froze in place. Chief stood his ground, and Hope dropped her gun.

It was then Elsa fell to the ground, gasping in pain, tears falling from her now brown eyes and her hair having becoming completely brunette. She grasped at her chest, feeling like a part of her had been taken away. She called to her powers, trying to form ice in a fit of rage, but nothing happened. No magic, no powers, no ice. It was gone.

She looked up at the Witch, and saw Cinder holding a misty, icy blue version of Elsa in her hand. The woman then manipulated the spirit in her hand, and condensed it into a single ball of light.

"Let her go!" and the woman's younger sister charged at the witch.

Cinder simply kicked Anna in the gut, then blasted her in the chest with a ball of fire. She flew back and Kristoff caught her only to fall over himself from how much momentum the girl had carried.

"Cinder!"

Her head turned and she locked eyes with Commander Shepard.

Unlike Hope, and the others who had at least stopped, Shepard took a step forward, her weapon raised and her finger hovering on the trigger, her eyes seared with determination.

"Let them go." Katherine hissed.

Cinder raised an eyebrow, "And why should I do that?" A smirk, and she made her way over to the man that held Garrus, pushing the man away and grabbing Garrus by the back of head.

"Don't touch him!" the Commander roared. Korra's flames intensified, Chief took another step forward, and Wrex cocked his shotgun.

John wished he had a rifle.

"Commander, what creates chaos?"

The Black Knight and the others began to back away from the heroes. Chief's instincts screamed at him to get to cover, to stop them. Unfortunately he couldn't do so without a weapon, or without getting half of his allies killed.

Shepard didn't answer and let her biotics flow around her body. She felt the pain tearing at her muscles, her very bones creaking with how much biotic energy flowed through her. She didn't know for how much longer she could keep this up.

The Keeper opened her hands and studied her enemies. Something wasn't right. She was sure of that.

With a cruel grin, the Witch pushed Garrus forward with her heel over to the Black Knight, who in turn grabbed the Turian and lifted him into the air.

"Let him go!" Katherine roared again.

Garrus-barely able to breath with all the injuries he had - coughed out, "Shepard shoot. Kill the bastards."

"Chaos," the Black Knight started, "Is born in death." He raised his head and looked Garrus in the eye.

"Now Shepard!"

It was too late. The Knight raised his hand and slammed his palm into the Turian's forehead, fingers digging into the plated skin. Black energy swirled around his forearm and rushed at Garrus. It slammed into him, but did nothing more than flow right into his eyes.

"Garrus!" Shepard screamed. Like wildfire, her biotics flared and she unleashed a shockwave. Chief and the Arbiter charged as Wrex and the remaining Elites opened fire, while Korra unleashed fire and air.

Cinder countered with a red wall of magic while Ming Hua twirled what water she had. A wall of red stopped the shockwave and bullets, while Ming Hua's water attacks managed to dissipate Korra's flames, as well as knock back those who had charged.

The Keeper slipspaced and her knight's charged forward.

A horrendous screech reached Shepards ears. She watched as Garrus shook violently, his body trembling as the dark energy raced into him. She could've sworn she saw faces in the energy, faces of people. She watched in horror as the Turian began to crack. Not just his skin, but on every part of him thin cracks etched their way all around. His armor, his skin, everything began to crack. A red glow radiated from the cracks. All she could do was watch and wonder what was happening.

The Keeper reappeared behind the Black Knight, only for the Titan to slam into her and send both tumbling down, while her Promethean knights engaged Mikasa, who had jumped in their way.

For a moment, everything froze. Shepard felt her heart race, and she saw Garrus look at her. He smiled.

Then he exploded. A powerful shockwave rocketed out from the spot, throwing almost every hero and villain to the ground. Only Chief, Cinder, and the Knight managed to stay on their feet.

"Garrus!" Shepard screeched, climbing back to her feet.

Other than her, no one moved. They were frozen in place by what they saw while Cinder grinned in triumph. They had done it. Freed, the last of the five. It had been their plan all along, to drag the heroes to this world where spirits and humans were almost one in the same, to take the powers of the strongest of them, and to fuse it with the spirit of chaos itself.

She grinned at how marvelously everything had worked out for them.

"I am free!"

Korra's eyes went wide.

A being of pure energy, a spirit, towering dozens of feet in size and shape over them, floated up from where Garrus had once been. It had tendrils of black, a pulsating orange-red glowing through its body, swirls and agitated designs rippling across its jet black form.

Its "face", a hieroglyphic symbol on the front of it, looked down at those below it. A blast of dark purple and white was discharged from its face, and slammed into the ground next to Korra, then razed everything in front of Shepard and the others.

They all flew back, rolling on the ground or slamming into walls.

"Did you think I was gone forever Rava!" The Spirit called out with a maniacal laugh.

Korra grunted, using her feet to lift herself back up before firing a lance of fire at the spirit. It effortlessly dodged her attack and fired back another energy blast which hit her dead on and threw her through another wall.

Hope, having been freed from her icy prison when the energy blast hit near Shepard, coughed out specks of blood. She was on her hands and knees, disheveled hair hanging in front of her face as she stared up at the spirit. She pulled her gun to her and stood back up.

"Who the hell's Rava?" Wrex growled as he helped Shepard up to her feet, dusting himself off immediately after.

Katherine ignored him, trying to contain the hole she felt inside. One of her best friends in the universe had just died in front of her, and there wasn't even anything left of him for her to bury. She grit her teeth and vowed for vengeance.

"Rava's me." Korra stated, shakily climbing through the hole her body had made in the wall. She glared at the spirit and spat, "And that's Vatuu."

"Who?" Wrex asked, raising his shotgun at the spirit. Chief and the others having already gotten to their feet as well.

"Vatuu. He's the spirit of chaos."

"Great." And the Krogan fired. His rounds did nothing, and the spirit retorted with a massive lance of energy that knocked all of them back down.

Cinder then launched the glowing orb in her hand towards Vatuu. The two collided and the spirit laughed.

"Last time you faced me Rava I was weak! But now I have more power than you or I ever had! Even more than we had together!" The white

light mixed with its dark energy, twirling and grabbing, pulling itself together and ripping itself apart. The Spirit and orb fused into a singular, massive orb of light. It hummed loudly, the dark red of Vatuu flashing out from within the orb.

"Oh no you don't." Korra growled, her eyes blazing white. Air twirled around her and she rocketed forward, off the ground and right for the spirit.

Cinder and the Knight raised their arms, red power glowing in their hands to counter Korra, only for the Avatar to spin mid air and unleash waves of flame and air at them and Vatuu. The Black Knight and Cinder formed barriers that failed against the elements, allowing the girl to charge past them and right for Vatuu.

She slammed her hands together and fired a concentrated blast of fire at Vatuu. Suddenly a fused beam of blue and purple flew out from the where the orb was, ripping right through the fire and hitting Korra. She screamed[,] falling right out of the avatar state and slamming into the ground like a comet.

The orb ceased to exist, disintegrating into the air, and revealing what had laid inside it.

A woman. She looked exactly like Elsa had, except her hair was jet black, her skin even more pale, red eyes glowing eyes, and a dress made of what seemed to be just darkness that floated off her skin. The red hieroglyph of Vatuu pulsed on her chest like an emergency light, and the woman opened her mouth.

"You see Rava, not even you can harm me anymore. With her power I am more powerful than every being in existence!" The new Queen slammed its hands together, discharging a brilliant purple beam that raced at Shepard and the others.

A Spec Ops Elite pushed the Arbiter out of the way and took the brunt of the blast. He was blown apart into ash, and the beam exploded with enough force to throw Chief almost a hundred feet down the street. The others fared similar fates.

Shepard hacked up blood, wiping it off her lips then pushing herself onto her knees. With half closed eyes she sucked in air and gazed at the new enemy they had. The Knight and Cinder stood next to Vatuu, the other four benders and the Titan standing behind them while Mikasa crouched downnext to them, swords drawn.

A flash of light, and the Keeper appeared next to her, her armor iced and scratched. Her knights reappeared too, one missing its arm from the fight with the swordswoman.

"Commander I would advise for our retreat." The Forerunner stated as Shepard, for the hundredth time, climbed back to her feet.

"No." She turned around and saw Hope and Korra, with the latter being carried by her friend.

"If we let Vatuu escape with that kind of power, there's no way I'll be able to stop him. We have to beat him before he gets full use of her powers." Korra stated with a cough.

Hope set her down and from experience with absorbing powers said, "Korra's right. He just got those powers so I doubt he's in full control. We have to take him out now."

"Move!" Chief slammed into Hope, throwing her and Korra both out of the way of a red bolt that blasted apart his shields and sent him to the ground.

Cinder continued forward a few steps, raised her hand and unleashed several more bolts of energy. Shepard countered one with her own warp, Wrex created a barrier to absorb another, and the Keeper escaped in a flash.

"No," The new Vatuu stated, its voice a mix of his and Elsa's, "leave them to me." The new queen inched forward, stuck its hands out and rocketed forward. Ice trailed behind it, mist spread out in every direction, and the ground ripped apart from the sheer power the spirit wielded.

Chief lunged to his feet, pulling the gun from Hope's hand, and fired as the woman charged. The bullets simply bounced off her, ricocheting in every direction till she was right on top of them. With a spin, she twirled under the Spartans weapon and landed a palm on his chest. A blast of energy threw him back. She then spun again, kicking Shepard in the jaw, dodging a shotgun round from Wrex, then kicking him with enough force to shatter his chest armor.

Korra kicked at the woman's face, missing by a mile. In return, she caught a point blank energy blast to the chest that seared her clothes and skin while launching her back. Hope tried punching the woman, but she only got a knee to her chest and a punch in the back that felt like a hammer. The woman spun and dropkicked Hope, knocking her to the ground.

The Keeper reappeared behind her, and the Arbiter lunged with his energy swords. The woman moved a inch, letting the energy sword slip right under her right arm, leaned forward and headbutted the alien with enough force to crack his helmet and knock the eight foot behemoth on his back. The Keeper slashed with her own hardlight sword, which was avoided. A quick jab of her palm sent the Forerunner flying, purple energy cascading all around her from the point blank discharge.

The remaining Spec Ops Elites fired, but a full-powered beam of energy vaporized all but one who had managed to dodge out of the way.

"Cinder, take the others and find the assassin. We will need her in the coming months. Then I-" A sudden burst of green fire engulfed Vatuu, forcing it to form a pure barrier of ice around it.

Shepard popped her arm back into place and sat up, rubbing her head from when Vatuu had sent her flying. Her eyes went wide and she scooted back a few feet, trying to stand back up. What she saw was something she couldn't explain. Again.

Hope, was standing up, still bearing her wounds, but ignoring every one of them. A green fire surrounded her and she floated slightly off the ground, her eyes blazing orange and green.

"She's a bender?" Korra asked through a cough, walking up next to Shepard while holding her arms.

Chief walked over to them from where he had been knocked down, "It doesn't matter. We need to retreat."

The Keeper flashed in, "Agreed. We need to fall back now."

"Look," Wrex growled while walking up to them.

Hope gently floated back down to the earth, the green aura around her lowering in its intensity and sheer power. Her eyes stopped glowing and she blinked a few times, taking in the green flames that were caressing her hands and body. She looked around her, taking in how every person stared at her with confusion. She still had Shou Laos power, the power that helped her fight both the Scarlet Witch and the Phoenix. It was enough power to fight omnipotent beings. Enough power to defeat Vatu.

How she had unlocked the power again, after having used most of it all that time ago against the Phoenix Five, she didn't know. Somehow she had.

"Shepard, get everyone out of here." She stated staring at Vatu.

"Hope, what the hell's going on!" The Commander yelled back as a sudden gust of ice and wind began to pick up.

The mutant stared at the spirit, "Don't worry about me. I'll hold him off. Just get everyone off this planet." The green aura around the girl expanded and instantly she dashed forward.

Anna watched in complete shock as the girl she knew was Hope charged the woman who looked almost exactly like her sister. She watched as the two clashed, Hope slamming her fist into the woman's chest with an explosion of green fire. A blast of pure energy hit the mutant but it did almost nothing to faze her.

She watched as Cinder and the Black Knight both stood in the girl's way only for them to get thrown aside like rag dolls.

The ground tore and cracked as Vatu and Hope soared into the air, ice and clouds following one while another was fueled by a green fire.

She turned away from the fight and looked back down at her sister. Elsa was unconscious, laying on the ground with a broken and powerless body. How Cinder had managed to take her powers neither knew, but Anna was terrified. Her sister was the most powerful person she knew and in a few seconds Cinder had beaten her. Then that spirit thing had single-handedly defeated all of the others including the green soldier. How could they possibly win?

"On your feet!" A pair of cold metallic hands grabbed her and hoisted her up.

"Hey hold up!" Kristoff called from beside her, apparently having been hoisted up as well. The redhead turned around and looked up at the Spartan who had pulled them up. She watched as he quickly pushed

them over to the Arbiter, who lifted them both with ease, then picked up her sister in his arms.

"Come on lets go!" Shepard yelled from where she stood down the street.

"What's going on?" Anna asked, eyes shooting back and forth between everyone.

"We're getting the hell out of here that's what." Wrex roared, his aim trained on the benders, witch, swordswoman, and knight that stood up the street from their group.

She watched as the Keeper looked over at Chief and asked, "What're they waiting for?"

"They were ordered to leave us alone." Chief replied, still carrying Elsa.

"Normandy come in," Shepard said to a glowing orange light on her forearm. What it was, the princess had no clue.

A moment later, "Read you loud and clear Commander. What's up?"

"We need immediate evac Joker. Get down here."

"Rodger ETA two- "

"Down!"

A flash of hardlight formed around the group, taking the brunt of an explosive blast and a bolt of red energy.

"Shit!" Shepard hissed, "So much for orders."

Anna looked up the street and watched as their enemies marched towards them. It was going to be a death match.

"Arbiter, take these three aboard the Normandy when it gets here and get them to Chakwas. We'll deal with them," Katherine stated.

The Elite nodded and the only surviving Spec Ops Elite with him took Elsa from Chief.

She looked back at the others, and she saw the man at the end of the street with red hair. It was Hans. She hated the man, but a question rose up. Why would they need him? A normal man among all these super powered people?

* * *

><p>Hope flew backwards, rain pattering against her skin and the dark clouds swirling around her until she finally halted her own momentum. She waited and a split second later Vatu appeared through the clouds in front of her. She moved her head and a fist soared by her by inches. She then countered with a knee to the gut then pushed it back, unleashing a wave of fire at the spirit.<p>

She groaned as the fire raged and she rocketed herself backwards with a burst of flames.

Ice shards formed mid air and dashed at her from every direction. She twisted and turned, getting cut on her arms, legs, sides, stomach and face as the shards moved quicker than she could react.

With a yell she let off a burst of Shou Lao's fire and incinerated all the shards near her. Slamming her palms together, she then sent a comet-like beam of fire right to where she knew Vatuu was at.

The spirit blocked with a wall of wind and snow that absorbed all of the fire, before breaking the wall and sending a vortex at Hope. The mutant dodged and unleashed a backhanded arc of fire at Vatuu which it blocked. A chunk of ice smashed into her from the clouds and steam made from her fire being blocked and sent her tumbling through the air.

"Shit," She said through heavy breaths. The fire around her waned and she felt the strain on her body. She had miscalculated. She had thought all of Shou Lao's power she had absorbed all that time ago was with her. Instead, only a portion of it was - a limited amount that was already running out.

It didn't matter. She just had to hold Vatuu off and give the others time to escape. Then she could finally give up. No more searching for worlds with life. No more.

Vatuu suddenly reappeared besides[beside] her and she used a wall of fire to block the energy blast it[it/she thing] sent for her. She shot backwards and punch after punch launched several bouts of flames at the spirit.

"If only you had enough power to beat me!" The being chuckled, racing towards her.

"I," Hope started, blocking several large chunks of ice, then smacking an energy blast away, "Don't need to beat you."

The spirit froze and looked at her in confusion.

"I just need to hold you off!" She yelled then sent forward a massive tornado of flames.

* * *

><p>Shepard kicked Mikasa away, only to get hit by a blast of red energy from Cinder, which shattered her already broken armor on her arm, freeing and exposing it to the air and cold. She felt a twinge of pain, and was, again, thrown back by a vortex of air. She rolled to a stop, hitting her face on the ground, and looked up.<p>

She watched as Chief blocked a kick from the Knight, then landed a blow on it, only for Cinder to spin a circle of violent energy into him that knocked him back and allowed the Black Knight several hits.

Mikasa, had just engaged the Keeper, and blocked the hardlight swords the Forerunner wielded. Then a funnel of water hit the Keeper and threw her back as well.

Wrex roared as an explosion knocked him through a wall and Korra

yelled as a wall of earth and air hit her together, blowing apart her barricade of ice and crashing her into Chief which knocked them both down.

They were losing.

She looked and saw how a shard of ice was aimed right for her.

Suddenly a green biotic attack tore through it and in front of her landed Javik and two others.

"Damn barbarians," The Prothean hissed before firing his weapon. She looked up and saw the Normandy hovering above them. Joker was always just in time.

The two others, boys from what she could tell, unleashed lightning and a wall of earth respectively at the attacking benders, which forced them to go on the defensive.

Chief used the opportunity and assaulted Cinder, who was hard pressed to match his sudden attack with how much fatigue she felt. Korra smashed a chunk of earth into the Black Knight, and the Keeper blasted Mikasa away with a shot from her Scattershot.

Shepard got to her feet and threw a warp at the benders.

"Good timing right?"

"Not the time Joker."

* * *

><p>AN Hey guys. So that was that. The chapter changed a bit from my initial plans, but next chapters the last chapter for this Part.**

I have also decided that, rather than continuing this story with Part two, I will just make the Universe of all reality Part II a separate story that'll still be a sequel. Why? Because this semester I'm in a writing class, and after months of work and improving, my writing abilities are much better than before. So with the next story I'm going to start it with a high quality and give it as much attention as I do my other ones. In short, its like turning over a new leaf, so the quality shall improve a lot more, and the plot will be more hashed out and clear. The story is still the same however.

About the chapter, if you go back and read certain things with Hope, I've been hinting at her still having the powers of Shou Lao from the Avenger vs X-men comics. Of course, they're limited, but she can at least fight Vatu for now. How do you think they'll beat Vatu? Well there are ways a spirit can be defeated. You'll see next chapter.

Sorry for Garrus fan's. He's gone.

**And for anyone wanting a better fight between Chief and the Black Knight, or Shepard and Cinder, you'll get your wish next chapter. Next chapter is the last of Part I and I'm actually going to release

the next story at the same time. **

Thanks** to my beta's Joat the Goat, Jlyman, The Halo project, and Zekebomb.**

Thanks for reading and God bless. Till next time.

Metal4k

42. Part I Chapter 39 (Beta'd)

The Universe of All Reality

Part I the Voice and Face of all Evil.

Chapter 39: A Long Day

* * *

><p>Chief raised his arm, using its armor to shield himself from the red energy ball thrown at him. It crashed into his armor and like a wave, washed over his entire arm before dissipating from the impact.<p>

His shields were at half strength, and he was forced to dodge roll another blast of fire that came raining down at him. He spun to his feet and looked down the street. Cinder was grinning at him, and she raised her arms, pooling red energy around her.

He fired the rifle he had been using before she got the chance to attack again. In response, her energy formed a wall in front of her, absorbing his attack before launching itself at him.

Again he evaded and retook his stance. He had to give Cinder credit-she was smart. He had attacked her in close range and with his sheer speed and strength had almost managed to overwhelm her. But she was smart, and got a good amount of distance between them and was keeping him at bay. So long as he was at range his weapon could do nothing to harm her. It didn't matter how accurate he was since all his bullets were intercepted before they could even hit her.

He squinted and calculated the fight. At this rate neither would kill each other, but she was getting tired, her attacks were just milliseconds slower, but he could tell. If he kept it up long enough, he could tire her out then move in for the kill.

"Ah!" He heard the cry of one of his allies but kept his head forward. He couldn't afford to get distracted right now.

On the other side of the street from the Spartan and witch, stood Shepard with a warp in one hand and a pistol Javik had given her in her other. Her rifle had run out of ammo long ago.

She panted heavy breaths and looked at the Black Knight, who stood a dozen or so feet in front of her with a red sword of pure energy drawn. Her eyes were locked on his helmet and she swore he was mocking her.

The Knight charged and she stepped back, blocking his sword with her omni-blade, then discharged her warp at point blank range. His shields only flickered at her attack and his leg spun around and landed a blow to her side.

Her ribs screamed and she was sent tumbling end over end. Then she stopped and pushed herself back to her knees, spitting blood from her mouth. She looked up at the knight walking towards her and rolled her eyes. This whole mess was way above her pay grade.

A sword of red slashed at her head, but she ducked and leapt back to her feet, shooting her pistol right into the Knight's helmet. Of course, her bullets only reflected off it, but she knew that would happen. The Black Knight instinctively moved to block her shots by grabbing her pistol. He was close now, and she detonated a nova around her.

The attack was enough to throw the Knight back, but she fell to one knee. She felt the pain in her head, and tasted the blood in her mouth. She snorted when she felt the blood starting to run from her nose.

It was too much. Her body was going too far past its limits. But she had to keep going.

A blast of red biotic energy flew at her and she blocked it with her own before getting back up and spitting a blotch of blood on the ground.

While the two soldiers confronted their deadliest enemies, aside from Vatu who was dueling Hope somewhere in the sky, Korra was dealing with Zaheer. The Airbender wasn't so tough without his friends but she was hurt. Broken bones, seared skin, and cuts all over her from Vatu and the Titan were more than enough to even the playing field.

So when she was hit with a slash of air that threw her against the building, she just growled under her breath. She needed to end this fight before Zaheer got too much of an upper hand on her.

Another air based attack came at her, to which she responded by just dodging it. The man spun, letting a small tornado race at her. She used a wall of earth to counter that then let loose several bouts of fire at the man. He dodged, but not without getting hit by a small rock she launched at him.

Out of the corner of her eye she saw ice racing at her and turned to deal with her new threat when a friend of hers jumped in her way and crashed his fist into the ground which counteracted the ice with his own fire.

"Mako!"

The boy grinned at her before yelling, "Look out!" She turned just in time to block another blow from Zaheer.

She stepped back to recover from the counter and ended up back to back with her friend and old lover.

"Well isn't this just great." The boy said with as much sarcasm as he

could muster.

She scoffed, "Just another day as the Avatar." Then the two unleashed a river of flames at the Titan and Zaheer.

Above the four, high in the clouds was Hope. Battered, bruised, and cut, she floated in mid-air, panting as green fire glowed around her. Before the flames had been like the sun, but now she looked more like a torch. Her power was fading. Without the dragon of Shao-Lou to constantly power her like it had with the Phoenix Force, she was forced to rely on her own strength and reserves. Needless to say, her power had limits. Vatuu's did not.

Her eyes went wide and she rocketed downward, as a massive pillar of serrated ice raced at her. The even scarier part, was that it seemed Elsa's powers had no limit. In the hands of Elsa herself the power was almost laughable, but with Vatuu in control of such power, it seemed unstoppable.

She twisted awkwardly to avoid the pillar, then breathed a wave of fire up in the air to where she knew the Spirit of Chaos was.

Vatuu laughed as it blocked her attack then raised its hands, forming three large shards of ice. Then they were launched at her like comets, streaking through the air at soul wrenching speeds.

Hope charged head on, the green fire extending around her. The first pillar meet[met] her head on, and she crashed through it, obliterating it entirely. It dazed her for a second, and she was unable to dodge the second pillar, which crashed into her and rocketed towards the ground.

She didn't even hear her own screams as both her and the ice slammed into the ground with enough force that shook the entire south pole while the buildings still standing started to crumble.

Several blocks down the street from where she landed, from where Chief, Shepard, and Korra fought for their lives, stood the Arbiter on the edge of the Normandy's ramp.

His eyes watched as the dust from where a pillar of ice had chased into the ground cleared. He could've sworn he saw Hope underneath the thing when it crashed.

"Arbiter sir?" He turned back to the ship and looked down at a male crewman. He nodded and handed off Anna to the crewman.

"Hey don't touch me!" The fiery girl snapped at the man as the Elite turned back to the battle. She would've said something to the Arbiter but instead turned the other Elite that handed off a broken Elsa to a woman with gray hair.

"She's critical," the woman said to a rather large buff man, "Get her to the med bay and radio Hackett for immediate evac."

"Got it." Then the man was off and Anna sprinted after her sister without a second thought.

The Arbiter ignored her and the blonde man who stood next to him. He watched the battle as Hope flew back up into the air and continued

her fight with Vatu. Around the pillar of ice that had shattered into a million pieces, were the others that continued to fight. The Forerunner he watched as she fought a human swordsman whose skill was unparalleled. He watched as Korra and a boy engaged a bender and the Titan. As Wrex and another alien he had met once or twice engaged two other benders, while a third and fourth bender fought with earth and lava.

"I don't think she's going to win," Kristoff stated with a soft voice. He wasn't a soldier, but he sure as hell knew when someone was losing a fight, and the girl with green fire was losing.

"She won't."

"Well we have to do something!" The ice harvester exclaimed.

"There is nothing we can do other than flee. Vatu is more powerful than us. He will win even if we keep fighting." The Arbiter replied tiredly.

"Come on when there's a will there's a way!"

"An old human saying that's useless in such a situation." The Elite sighed and looked down at the man, "You have heart human. As does your mate. Go with her and live to tell our tale. We will fend them off."

With that he stepped down from the Normandy, his single remaining Spec Ops Elite following him, "Arbiter are you sure this is wise? The fleet needs a commander."

He shook his, "Thran is a capable commander, and an honorable death is more than enough to suffice for one as old as I."

With that he marched towards the battle.

* * *

><p>Chief rolled again, this time going back to back with Shepard. She was smaller than him, but it didn't matter. At least he had someone watching his back.<p>

"Well this is a shit storm." The woman coughed from behind him.

He didn't reply and only charged forward at the Black Knight, while Shepard simultaneously fired off a warp and throw at Cinder.

The witch blocked as the Black Knight spun around and tried to kick the Spartan in the chest. John ducked under the kick and tackled the Knight down, only to be thrown off by an area effect biotic blast the Knight unleashed.

He quickly got to his feet after being thrown off, and retook a fighting stance. The Black Knight charged.

He blocked a kick, then ducked underneath the sword swipe aimed for his neck, before punching at the Knight's side. The Knight blocked with his forearm and tried spinning to elbow Chief in the head. The Spartan backstepped before punching the Knight in the head.

He stumbled backwards and the Spartan pressed his advantage. The Knight swung his sword and Chief easily evaded. He spun and kicked the Knight in the chest which sent him stumbling back again. He kept on and delivered a series of punches to the Knight, but in return he let loose another biotic attack that hit John and drained his shields before blasting him backwards with a push.

In a few seconds the Black Knight was once again on him, and John was forced to dodge over and over as the Knight drew a second sword and continued his assault. John ducked, weaved, and slid around the Knight looking for an opening.

A sword sliced his armor when he was a second too late to move, and cut through the top layer of his skin. He felt his suit react and start applying biofoam, but he kept moving. Another slash was aimed for him, but he dodged and let the Knight impale the ground instead of him. He kicked the Knight's arm, who then used the momentum to spin around and try decapitating Chief in return.

John sidestepped and stopped up a chunk of rock from the ground then crashed it into the Knight's chest. He backstepped, John grabbed another rock and hurled it at the Knight. Two red swords cleaved the rock in two and Chief rolled as a biotic warp was sent at him.

He stopped and looked up at the Knight. He saw Shepard in the background fighting Cinder, but the witch was gaining an advantage on Shepard. The Commander was an excellent fighter but he could see her wounds were making it hard for her to fight properly.

The Knight hesitated for a second, and Chief knew to leap backwards. He did, and two pairs of swords imbedded themselves in the ground of where he once stood.

Mikasa spun on her heel and tried to take his leg off, but the Spartan was quicker and spun around to avoid the attack.

The girl stared at him through her black hair, and the Spartan saw nothing but cold death in her eyes. A look he knew he had worn so many times before. A look he knew was fake.

She lunged at him and he ducked.

Chief grabbed her wrists and snapped one with a fierce squeeze and twist. The girl didn't even flinch and stabbed at his shoulder. He was forced to let go so he could sidestep but ended up getting blasted by the Knight's biotic ability.

He tumbled over but landed on his knees. He readied himself to continue fighting when something pierced the air.

A screech choked out across the city, and he gazed up to the sky. He saw the hunk of green fire racing down at him and he opened his arms just in time to catch Hope. She crash into him, and the two flew backwards, smashing into the ground and ripping open the street from the sheer force of their landing.

Shields spent and armor creaking with overuse, Chief sat up, holding Hope in his arms as he got to his feet.

"Thanks," the girl groaned, pushing off him and landing on her feet.

She looked up at the sky and they both watched as Vatuú flew down and landed next to the Black Knight.

John tensed as he prepared for the worst and Hope did the same, fueled by the raging fire around her. Surprisingly it did nothing to John, and his shields began to recharge.

Vatuú raised its hand, and then John saw it. A brief moment of hesitation, and a-

Ice raced out at them and Hope was forced to blocked with a wall of fire. Then the two collided and a shockwave ripped out from their collision that knocked Chief over and interrupted the battles around them.

Chief shook his head and saw Shepard on the ground, groaning in pain as Cinder was engaged by the Keeper. He looked to Hope, who was standing with a hunched back and was drastically panting for air.

He remembered what he saw and looked for Korra, the hero of this world, and the girl who said she knew exactly what Vatuú was. She was in the middle of a fight with the bald bender.

"Hope hold Vatuú off!" He ordered as he got to his feet then ran to Shepard and pulled her up to her feet to which she growled and pushed away from him.

"Don't worry about me! We have bigger problems!" She yelled powering up her biotics and turning to face Cinder who was busy with the Keeper.

John grabbed her arm and pulled her to him, "Shepard we need to help Korra. I think I found a way to beat Vatuú."

She blinked and opened her mouth to question him when a bolt of red energy crashed into her and Chief spun around to face the Black Knight. He sighed inside his helmet and prepared to fight when a blue warp crashed into the Knight.

"Go help Korra!" Shepard raced past him faster than he could blink and charged into the Knight with a crunch that sent the Knight flying. She shook her head as she regained her balance, "I'll deal with this joker."

He didn't need to be told twice and turned to help Korra when he saw the Arbiter leap into the fray of fighting and block a blast of air meant for Korra.

He ran for them and ducked underneath an air blast that was meant for his head. He saw Korra looking at him like he was crazy but tackled her to the ground just as a whip of air was meant to raze her head off.

"What the hecks your problem man!" The Avatar roared as she kicked off him.

"Korra," Chief started, grabbing her while the Arbiter and Mako dealt with the Titan and Zaheer, "Vatuú's a spirit right?"

"What doesâ€" "

"He took Elsa's spirit and absorbed it with his own correct? That's what that thing Cinder pulled from Elsa was right?"

Korra blinked in confusion, "No! Elsa would be dead if that happened and I'm not even sure you can pull someone's spirit from them!"

"But they pulled something from Elsa. Something that could possibly only be attuned with her own body and spirit?"

"What are you saying?" the girl asked, completely lost in their conversation. She wondered if the soldier had gone mad.

Chief looked over to where Hope and Vatuú were engaged in close quarters. Ice and fire clashed in a display of sheer awe-inspiring power. If he was a lesser man, he might've felt impressed. Instead, he only felt the impulse to complete his mission.

"When Vatuú attacked Hope right now," He remembered how the Spirit woman looked when it attacked, "It hesitated. It looked like he was in pain." The Spartan gazed through his visor down to the Spirit of Chaos.

"Then," He looked back to the young girl, "It's hand. There were two in one. One looked like Elsa's, the other like a hand made from red and black energy. Like his." He motioned towards the Black Knight.

Korra raised an eyebrow, and in disbelief said, "Seriously?"

The Spartan didn't reply and replayed the scene in his mind. It was only for a split second Vatuú had hesitated, there had been a grimace on its face the moment before it attacked Hope after he had caught her. He had seen its hand. It split for a moment when the ice was released, when it commanded a power that wasn't its own.

"The power." He looked back at Korra, "The power is notâ€"

His motion sensor went off and he pushed Korra away from him, spinning on his heel and raised his arm. A sword sheared right through his forearms armor, and embedded itself in his good arm. Blood sizzled from his arm and the sword was yanked back out, cauterizing the wound as it left.

He bit his lip and stepped back to avoid another swipe from Mikasa's swords.

"It's not compatible!" He yelled, dodging another sword. Korra leapt over him and slammed her fist into the ground. The earth ripped up and a few shards of earth tore apart the surface and raced at Mikasa. The girl flipped backwards and used her 3D maneuvering gear to fall back a dozen feet or so.

Korra tuned to John, "What's not compatible!"

"The power!" He said pushing her out of the way as Mikasa launched herself back at them. He dodged her then kicked her in the chest, knocking her back a few feet. "If I'm right Elsa and his powers aren't compatible."

Korra used a vortex of air to blow Mikasa back as she charged, giving them another second or so to speak.

"You're from this world. Is there any way to do what Cinder did and pull that power out from Vatu?" John asked.

"No I've never even heard of that happening!," Her eyes went wide, "But I can pull Vatu from the power instead! He did it to me once! I bet I can do it to him!"

Chief nodded then spun around just as Mikasa's swords went past him, "Go and deal with Vatu! Use Hope to help!" He then focused completely on the swordswoman who twirled her swords then pressed on her attack of the super soldier.

Korra moved, using her firebending to rocket her towards Hope and Vatu. She remembered the day she fought Unalaq for the fate of the world. When the man had used Vatu's power to rip Rava right out from her, ending the first line of Avatars with Rava's initial destruction.

If she could copy that power then it was possible she could separate Vatu from Elsa's power the way he had separated her and Rava, the way Cinder had separated Elsa's power from her. It should be even easier if the two didn't mix.

She landed next to the two fighting and ducked as a star blast of green fire almost took off her head.

"Now for the hard part!"

* * *

><p>Shepard ducked under another one of Cinder's attacks. The woman was getting slower, making it a fairer fight. She twisted on her heel, and crashed her elbow into the woman's side. Her soft flesh buckled on the impact and Cinder stumbled backwards in a gasp of pain.<p>

The witch tried to retake a stance, but Katherine fired off another warp at her. It threw her off balance and Shepard charged, slamming into Cinder with enough biotic force to break through a wall.

The woman flew backwards, crashing against a wall, then opened her eyes and launched her own attack back at Shepard. A ball of fire raced at her, and she was forced to roll away, only for another magic attack to hit her in the leg. Her balance gave and she fell onto her shoulder.

Her eyes went wide and she pulled her back moment before Cinder's arrow ripped into the ground. Another arrow slammed into her side, and she grunted in pain as she fell onto her back. She looked over at Cinder who pulled up another arrow from thin air, placed it on the black bow she held and fired again.

Shepard used her remaining biotic energy to form a barrier around her, and the arrow shattered on impact. She grit her teeth as the barrier faded away, and she slowly got back to her feet. She looked at her hand and willed a small warp to come to life. Nothing happened and instead she felt pain lance up her arm. She didn't have any

reserves left, at least none that she could safely use.

She powered up her omni-blade and Cinder grinned, "You can't win Commander."

Katherine chuckled. She raised a hand, and taunted the witch with a beautiful bird, "Bring it on."

With a flash of energy Cinder unleashed several red projectiles at her.

Shepard charged forward, twisting as a enraged bolt missed her head by an inch, ducking under another meant to impale her body, and shrugged off a third projectile that shattered against her shields.

The grin on Cinder's lips faded and she stepped back, raising her hands and flicking them forward. Red energy sped off them and a wave of fire sparked to life. Shepard's eyes went wide, but she kept going, and leapt right into the walls of flames. Her shields broke and the heat began to burn, but she landed on the other side a moment later.

She threw a punch at Cinder, whom redirected the punch so it only glanced off shoulder. An elbow smashed into her nose, breaking it even more as well as pushing Shepard back a few feet.

Katherine cursed as she opened her mouth to breath. Her nose wasn't working anymore, that or there was too much blood for her to breathe properly though it.

A red bolt of energy flew at her, but she sidestepped. The witch charged her, and she raised her omni-blade to block Cinder's own sword. It was almost a split second too late she realized that Cinder wielded dual swords, and she barely managed to dodge the second one.

She spun and swiped at Cinder's legs, but the woman blocked with one sword, and reversed Shepard's momentum to strike at her head with the other.

The Commander pulled her head under the sword as it passed over and threw herself against Cinder. She pushed her against the wall of a destroyed building and crushed her fist against the woman's chest.

Cinder buckled but kicked her back before she could try anything else. Shepard lunged with her blade, but she missed and the blade sunk into the wall while Cinder raised her knee and slammed it into Katherine's chest.

She fell back, and Cinder leapt on top of her, bringing down her swords. Shepard grabbed them an inch from her face, and held on as the swords scraped and tore her armor and skin as they edged their way to her face. She kneed Cinder in the back, which unbalanced her and allowed Shepard to overpower her hold on the swords. She ripped them from her grasp and head-butted Cinder.

The witch grunted and stumbled off her, holding her nose. No one had ever broken her nose before. Blood seeped down the perfect skin, and

Shepard was oddly glad to see Cinder bleeding.

Cinder's eyes filled with fire and she threw another blast of magic at Shepard, who spun around it, and sent a sword flying at Cinder.

The woman waved a hand and the first sword disintegrated into dust. She saw the second sword flying at her face and instinctively stepped back as she willed the sword away. The momentary lapse cost her, and Shepard rammed into her shoulder first.

Spit flew from her mouth, and Shepard roared as she threw the woman against the same wall. She punched her once, twice, then got kicked back.

"Commander, you're tired." Cinder fired a red blast of energy again.

Shepard spun around the first blast. She prepared an insult but noticed how the wall behind Cinder swayed just an inch forward. Knowing she only had one chance to win, she started gathering what was left of her biotic energy, no matter how dangerous.

"I am tired but," She ducked under the second blast of magic and met Cinders gaze with a smirk, "Fuck you."

She ignored the searing pain, and let loose a final massive warp that Cinder dodged.

"Is that all you ha-" The warp exploded on impact and the wall came down on Cinder before she could even move.

Dust flew into the air and Shepard fell to her knees, coughing up blood over and over again. She wiped blood from her face as she looked to the wall. It had fallen into pieces, but the rubble covered everything. Nothing moved underneath the mounds of rocks and Katherine sighed in relief.

One down.

* * *

><p>Chief kicked up one of Mikasa's swords and slapped the second one away. The girl was skilled, but she was inexperienced at fighting someone faster than her. He was faster, and he had the advantage.<p>

The girl kicked at him, but his armor absorbed the blow, and he crashed his fist into her head. He could hear the jaw bone popping out of place.

She yelped and used her maneuvering gear to pull herself away from the Spartan. Unfortunately she wasn't fast enough and he grabbed onto her arm, pulling her back against the maneuvering gear.

The machines helping her move groaned and a fist met her face. Her nose shattered and John pulled back his fist as the girl fell limp as a fish to the dry ground.

He flexed his arm, feeling the added resistance in his movement

thanks to the biofoam that had hardened to stop the bleeding from his wounds. The girl had taken longer than anticipated to put down.

His motion sensor went off again and he ducked down as a red sword swiped overhead. He stepped back just as the sword slipped back and tried to slice him from the bottom up. He grabbed the Black Knight's hands but was met with a punch in the chest.

The Black Knight advanced on him as he lost his footing but a hardlight sword met his blade mid air. Then from behind him the Keeper appeared, grabbed the Knight by the neck, and threw him backwards.

Chief looked over to her, and the Forerunner tossed him a Scattershot.

The Black Knight let red biotic power swirl around him, and the Spartan took aim with his scatter shot Scattershot.

He fired.

* * *

><p>Korra twisted, her body angling so the beam of energy swirled past her and ripped the ground open instead of her. She pivoted on her foot, and unleashed a vortex of flames at Vatu, who in turn blocked the fire with a palm and twisted its hands so the fire dissipated on impact.<p>

She bit her lip and whipped her hand upwards, sending a strong and violent stream of air at the spirit.

The being simply sidestepped the attack and kicked the ground. The ground opens and multiple spikes of ice leapt out at Korra, forcing her to dive out of the way. She rolled onto one knee and commanded the ice beneath her to melt, then she sent a whip of water towards the spirit.

It backhanded the whip, freezing it, but was hit by a puff of green fire. The being stumbled forward, and Hope slammed into it from behind, having recovered from the rather hard hit Vatu had dealt.

Korra kicked off the ground, using the earth to launch herself at the two.

Vatu rolled with the mutant savior, only to kick the redhead off, then blast a gust of air up at Korra that threw her off course and into a pile of rubble nearby.

The being smirked and got to its feet, stepping down lightly and letting ice spread out at dazzling speeds. It raced at both mutant and Avatar, and each was forced to become airborne to avoid being frozen alive.

The Avatar let her eyes glow white and she placed both fists together, pulled her arms back then fired a concentrated stream of fire at the spirit below her.

A wave of snow and ice countered the stream, racing up to Korra and

hitting her like a wall of rocks.

Hope unleashed her own barrage of flame-based attacks. Hers were dodged, and Vatuun fired back a beam of purple spirit energy from its hand. She flipped mid-air to avoid the attack, only to get hit by a second beam that sent her flying into the street below.

Korra wiped her face clean of snow, staring down from where she had landed towards Vatuun. They couldn't get close enough. They couldn't hold him. She had tried to freeze Vatuun, trap it in earth, and engage it in close quarters but she could never get the jump on it. The Spirit was too fast.

She launched herself into the air, used the air to spin herself, and kicked out two more lances of fire. The Spirit turned to her and blocked her attacks with its hand. It flicked its wrist upward, a vicious smirk on its face as an entire vortex of ice and snow surrounded itself in a protective gesture.

The girl landed on her feet, pressed her fists into the ground, then raised them to her sides, pulling the ice into water and surrounding her arms with water whips. She squinted at the vortex of snow but failed to see past the white flurries.

"Hope!" She looked down to where the redhead was barely getting back onto her feet. The green flames surrounding the girl were almost non-existent now, and from the sluggish movement she displayed, Korra wondered how much longer she was going to last against Vatuun.

The mutant looked at her and she continued, "I need to get close!"

Green eyes stared at her for answers, but Hope shrugged and instead flew forward, crashing through the vortex and pulling the spirit out of the other side.

Vatuun kicked her in the chest, sending her down the street by a few dozen feet as the vortex reformed around it. Then a massive burst of green flames raced towards the vortex, collided with it and turned all the snow flurries to steam.

The spirit was visible once again, and this time Korra saw what Chief had saw. A grimace of pain, then ice raced back towards Hope and her fire attacks were countered.

A grin spread on Korra's face. She had noticed that Vatuun was weaker, slower than it had been when it first fused with Elsa's powers, an obvious side effect along with the pain she was seeing. If Chief was right, she could use this to her advantage. The pain, the hesitation to use the ice powers, she could use it to get close and to rip Vatuun from Elsa's power, then she could lock him away forever yet again.

The two powerhouses collided and Korra took in a deep breath. She felt the warmth in her lungs, she felt it spread over her arms and legs, seeping into her bones, and the next moment she breathed fire out, flames spreading out and engulfing the entire area Vatuun was in as her eyes glowed violently.

The flames receded back into her body, and with a nasty frown, she

charged forward. She used the air around her to speed herself up, and used it to help her jump high into the air then land right next to Vatuu.

The queen-looking spirit went wide-eyed, and she immediately wrapped her lashes of water around it, freezing the ends and pulling the spirit towards her.

She noticed the purple energy gathering on its chest, and was forced to drop the water whips to move out of the way just as a point blank blast of energy discharged. A kick in the head from the spirit sent her to the ground and she grunted as another foot collided with her gut.

Then a hand wrapped itself around her throat and lifted her into the air.

"I told you Rava! You cannot defeat me!" The Spirit raised its free hand to her, purple energy gathering around it, "I am beyond you!"

Suddenly a green biotic attack hit Vatuu, and the loss of balance allowed Korra to kick free of her momentary captor.

A wall of green armor slammed into Vatuu, and she watched as Chief lifted the spirit and sent it flying into a wall.

Two people ran up beside her along with some strange alien creature with four eyes that she didn't know.

"Bolin! Mako!"

The older brother smiled at her then let loose a bolt of lightening where Vatuu had landed, and his brother gleefully stated, "Korra! Its so great to see you!" A purple lance of energy forced them apart.

Bolin coughed, "You know if it weren't for the homicidal spirit trying to destroy the world again!" He grimaced and kicked up two massive chunks of earth and sent them flying at Vatuu.

"Humans." Javik muttered under his breath, firing off another biotic blast.

Korra joined in with a few shards of ice, and a few well placed kicks of air. Their attacks all met the spirit, but a wall of ice took the brunt of their assaults, then several beams slashed into the ground around them. They flew back, and most of them hit the ground hard before rolling to a stop.

She grit her teeth and pushed herself back to her knees.

Vatuu floated in the air, looking down at her and her two friends, Javik and the Chief.

"Die!" A blast of green fire hit Vatuu, lowering it towards the ground, its back towards them as it looked to face Hope.

She saw her opening and entered the Avatar state. She pulled her arms up and tendrils of water raced up and grabbed the arms and legs of

the feminine form of Vatu, pulling it down towards her.

Javik, noticing her strategy, fired a singularity the moment the beast was next to her, and the Avatar in turn froze each tendril of water.

A blast of ice from the spirit's mouth almost skewered Korra on the spot, but she managed to duck just in time. Then a spirit energy attack released from its chest, which she barely side sidestepped to avoid being disintegrated.

Vatu shattered the tendrils of water, but Korra lurched up and placed her hand on Vatu's forehead, her other hand on its chest.

The two froze and a flash of white light filled the air.

* * *

><p>Anna looked on through the window as Chakwas and a few other works don[worked on] her sister. She had no idea what they were doing but she didn't have the heart to ask. All she knew was that they could help her. At least, she hoped they could.<p>

A familiar arm wrapped itself around her shoulders and she leaned into the ice harvester's waiting arms.

"She'll be ok."

"I know."

Then there was silence.

What would she do if Elsa died? If Elsa didn't make it, what would she tell her people? Kai? Olaf? What would the others do if Elsa was gone and what if they had no need to keep her and Kristoff around? Would they let those Flood creatures take them? The Reapers?

Her heart began to race, her hope faded. What was she going to do?

Suddenly she saw something flicker past her, a brief flash of white that slipped past her faster than she could see, and the next thing she knew a bright blue light filled the medical bay and she closed her eyes for a moment.

The next second she opened them back up.

There was snow all over the place and she looked through the window.

She saw blonde hair. Blonde.

* * *

><p>"No!" Vatu roared, his spirit form floating in mid-air as he looked after the power Korra had just pulled from him and sent flying towards the ship still landed down the street.<p>

Below him Korra grinned then looked back up at him. She had gone into

the Avatar state, and using Rava's cosmic power managed to pull Vatu from Elsa's power. The moment the two had separated the blue form of Elsa raced off towards the Normandy, towards its rightful home.

She had done it. She had beaten Vatu.

The Spirit loomed over them, glowing in anger. Its hieroglyphs turned a bright purple and a blast of energy raced at Korra. She pulled up a wall of earth with a motion from her hands, but the wall shattered. She stumbled back but as she stumbled back, a stream of lightning, rocks, and hardlight ammunition pelted the massive spirit. Holes tore in its sides and body, its spirit form giving way to the relentless assault.

It quickly rushed to the ground, using its massive tendrils to smack Chief towards a building, and the other two benders into each other, while another wrapped around Javik and threw him back towards the Normandy.

Korra blasted off into the air, readying herself for another fight when someone raced past her in the air and collided with Vatu. Green fire exploded outward in a brilliant flash, and she was forced to look away for a brief moment, only to look back and see Hope falling towards the ground while Vatu roared in agony.

Whatever had happened left a massive hole in Vatu's side and had knocked the mutant girl unconscious.

She rolled her eyes and with a burst of fire from her feet sent herself towards Hope. She raced through the air, zipping past Vatu, and grabbed the mutant by her foot. She used a quick burst of air to cushion their fall, and they landed on the roof of a nearby building.

She laid the girl down and looked back at the spirit who was slowly starting to heal itself from Hope's charge.

Her eyes glowed white and she jumped off the building, catching herself mid-air with a tornado then raised her hands above her. The earth shook below her, and massive chunks of it tore apart from the ground and floated up towards her. They encircled her and two lances of fire left her palms and slithered around her, the earth and fire forming an X around her. Finally the ice all around broke free from the ground, turning to water as it flew up to meet her and made its own circle around her, perpendicular to the X the other two elements had formed.

"I'm locking you away for another ten thousand years!" She roared. The Spirit of Chaos turned to her and the elements surrounding her immediately shot off towards it, while a gust of air wrapped around the spirit. The elements encircled Vatu and they each began to glow a brilliant purple.

On the ground Chief looked up with concern. He wondered what Korra was doing, but figured she knew best in this matter. He gazed down the street and saw Shepard and the Keeper subdue the Black Knight with a couple of well-placed hits that sent the remains of a building on him. The others- the Arbiter, Korra's friends, and Shepard's crew members- all continued fighting the four benders and the Titan left standing. Outnumbered now, their enemies were being subdued and

beaten.

The Black Knight was under a building, Cinder was under mounds of rubble, and Mikasa was unconscious.

Then he remembered the man. The man with red hair who had brought Garrus to this world. He was nowhere to be seen.

His scanned the entire street and as a ball of white began to enclose Vatu, and as the Titan came under attack by his allies, he heard a noise. A screech, that pierced his soul, that sounded worse than anything he'd ever heard.

It was like the sound of metal being torn apart, of nails on a chalkboard, of the high pitch ring that happened when a flash-bang went off right next to you.

He grabbed his helmet and fell to one knee. It was inside, it was outside. The noise was everywhere. His heart pounded, and his vital signs spiked, but his suit picked up nothing. Not a single physical sound.

All around, Shepard, Korra, and the others all fell to their knees. The Titan stumbled, roaring in agony and Vatu's cage of light fell apart.

John watched with pain as the Spirit looked to the sky, "The fourth is free." It turned back to them, "We will meet again."

The being glowed all around, and its tendrils shot out, not towards its enemies, but at the rubble where Cinder laid and the Black Knight had fallen. Its tendrils pulled them out, then grabbed the Titan, and a second later the horrid sound filling John's head stopped.

It was a relief, and instantly the Spartan got to his feet and fired at Vatu. No way was he going to let them get away.

His rounds were blocked by another tendril, and a piercing ring broke out as the light around Vatu climaxed.

"Till next time Rava!" It taunted with a dark chuckle. Then it began to swirl, colors and what he could've sworn were stars twisting and turning like a whirlpool in the middle of the sky.

Fire, rocks, biotics, plasma, and more hardlight rounds raced at the being, but before any could hit the whirlpool suddenly accelerated and closed into nothing. Every attack they sent at it harmlessly sailed through the air of where their enemies had once been.

Chief lowered his weapon. He took in a breath and glared at the spot. They had gotten away. In his gut, he knew the man with red hair had something to do with their escape. Something to do with 'the fourth being freed', whatever that meant.

He turned around and tilted his head in a pleasant surprise.

Not all of their enemies had gotten away.

Four psychotic benders, and one unconscious or dead swordswoman.

He heard someone walk up to him, and he looked over at Korra.

The girl had a frown on her face and bags under her eyes. She followed his gaze and said, "So, what do we do with them?"

* * *

><p>Shepard frowned, her heart heavy and her body exhausted. She stared out of the Normandy's bay as the ship slowly rose up into the sky. Its engine roared and the ship began to sail forward to what she knew was the rest of the fleet.<p>

The city below, the capital city of the Southern Water tribe, slowly began to fade away. The fires, the rubble, the smoke, and the scene of the Flood rampaging through the streets all became too small for her to see.

Footsteps then a voice spoke up, "You should get some rest Commander."

Katherine nodded, but didn't bother to pay Jacqueline a look. The blonde N7 looked at her, then back out as the ship's ramp began to close.

"How'd the natives take it?"

The Spectre shook her head and turned away. She started off towards the elevator, careful not to bump into anyone in the ship's loading bay. Most of the people down here were natives of the world, like Korra's friends and a few other strangers they had rescued. The Arbiter and his surviving Elite were also down here helping Wrex and Javik repair Legion. The Keeper had returned to her ship with her slipspace traveler and Korra was probably in the med bay getting her wounds looked at. Chief had taken their prisoners to the one of the viewports. He was keeping an eye on them till they got home and could put the five in a proper prison.

After all, the benders didn't have their elements to bend anymore, except for air and the exploding eye lady, though they thoroughly explained blowing a hole in the ship would kill them all.

The only one she had been worried about was Mikasa, but they had stripped her of her armor and locked her up in another room. She was unconscious and Shepard had Liara helping Chief watch her.

She passed a glance at the boy she knew was named Mako, and he gave her a respectful nod before returning back to a girl named Asami.

They hadn't taken the news of abandoning their planet well. None of them had. Korra had been even hostile at the thought but fortunately, the Arbiter and her were able to talk sense into them. After all, almost every major city on the planet had already fallen to the Flood.

Give it a week and she knew they'd have the whole world.

She slipped past Cortez who greeted her with a friendly smile, "Good job out there Commander."

"Thanks Cortez," She sighed, pressing on the elevators call button. The doors opened with a ping and she stepped inside. The doors closed and she leaned back against the metal wall.

Her eyes sealed and her breathing slowed.

"Commander?" A synthetic female voice asked from overhead.

"EDI?"

"Admiral Hackett has ordered an immediate evacuation of the system."

"Good."

"Would you like me to inform the ship of impending jump?"

The Commander nodded, "Yes, thanks EDI."

She signed again.

"Is everything all right Commander?"

"Its been a long day."

* * *

><p>She coughed.<p>

Blood. That was what she tasted. The iron, sticky, thick sensation of blood. She'd never tasted her own blood. Just the dragon's blood to gain her imperial arms.

Her eyes slowly opened. She saw nothing from where she laid on her stomach. It was darkness all around her, with wisps of gray smoke swirling about the darkness in random intervals and speeds.

She felt the black marble floor beneath her, and placed her hands on it, then pushed upright to where she was on all fours.

Was this hell?

She grinned. If it was, it was a poor hell. She expected more.

Then she felt the cold air stroking her bare skin. She looked down and saw she was completely naked. Her long sky blue hair covered most of her body from prying eyes but she didn't care about who was watching.

She was confident in herself. She was more than confident. She knew men and women who would do anything for her looks alone, so she stood up to her full height and let the darkness view all of her.

It was strange that no one was watching her, or trying to watch her, but it was stranger how she didn't feel dead. She felt alive. She could feel her heart beat, feel the cool air. She could smell the dampness of whatever laid around her.

But she had died. That demon sword had cut her down, infected her

with a poison that had no cure.

She looked around, studying everything around her.

Maybe the afterlife was just another life, a second chance so to speak.

She looked around for the boy she had held when she died. For Tatsumi. He was nowhere. Her eyes glowered and her fists clenched. Even in death, Akame had kept him from her.

They had both died, but he was gone, and she was here.

She heard it then. The sounds of slithering creatures heading toward her. She spun around with a grin, ready for the next hunt, for her next victim, when pale tendrils of decaying flesh appeared from the darkness and slithered on the floor towards her.

She opened her hand and a sword of ice appeared in it.

"Do not be afraid," The voice was deep, so deep it resonated inside her very bones, "I am peace. I am salvation."

The tendrils moved towards her then she heard footsteps and a woman stepped out from the shadows.

This woman was shorter than her, had a fitting red dress with yellow coloring on the edges, and jet black hair that accented her orange, fire filled eyes.

"Esdeath," The woman greeted without a smile. She looked Esdeath up and down, but when she met Esdeath's eyes they lacked impression.

Esdeath blinked, gripping her ice sword tighter and getting ready to call forth all her power if she needed.

"There's no need for that," The woman waved at her sword, "We have a proposition."

"And what is your proposition?" Esdeath asked, surprised that this woman knew her name.

Another pair of footsteps, this time heavier and obviously created by someone wearing boots filled her ears and she looked over her shoulder towards a figure in black armor and black cape.

"You wish to see the boy again yes?"

She squinted at this new armored foe. How did they know about Tatsumi? About her for that matter?

"I can give you him. Return him from the grave and from the place no mortal can reach."

Again Esdeath turned around. She saw a massive figure towering over her with dark red shades of its body and a hieroglyph in the center of what she would call its torso.

"And what would I have to do?" She asks skeptically.

"Simple," The woman in the red dress steps towards her, "We need to you to kill."

Esdeath laughs, her eyes bright and her laugh high and full, "You want me to kill for you?"

"Yes," The decaying tendrils floated in the air around her then they retracted back into the darkness where a monstrosity reared its massive head with razor sharp teeth, decayed flesh, and the smell of thousands of dead bodies.

It grumbled something in another language then spoke, "We have defied gods and demons."

"Who is it I need to kill?" Esdeath asked, letting her sword fade into nothingness.

The armored figure from behind her speaks this time, "That is for us to decide."

She looked back at him with a smirk, "And who exactly, is us?"

"I," The towering figure made of dark red and had a hieroglyph on its torso rose higher, "Am the Spirit of Chaos. The Spirit of Darkness."

"And I," the monster with teeth and tendrils moved closer to her, "Am the monument to all your sins. The face of all evil."

A new voice spoke up, " And I am the voice of all evil." Esdeath looked to a floating, ghostly looking child that floated above Cinder. The child smiled.

Then a new presence strode forward from the darkness. It was massive, bulky and had a dark purple skin with golden armor. "And I am the power of Evil. The one who does it himself if these three fail."

There were snarls, and she felt the tension rise.

Esdeath laughed. Ridiculous. These creatures thought themselves gods. She laughed at their folly, at their lies. Still, they offered her Tatsumi. They offered her prey.

She grinned with white pearly teeth, and gleaming eyes.

"Well," She placed her hands on her hips, "Let the hunt begin."

* * *

><p>AN Hey guys. So here is the final chapter to the Universe of all reality Part I. Vatu and the villains are beaten for now, and the heroes are returning back to the ME verse with plenty of figures from the Avatar verse as well as Frozen's universe. Elsa has her powers, Korra's pissed, Chief and Shepard know how to fight together and the Flood and Reaper threat over their universe is still in play.**

**Part II, The Power of the Grail, will be published at the same time

as this, so to continue the story go to my profile and click on the story "The Power of the Grail". The story will continue on with the Star Trek arc first, though Akame Ga Kill will be a sub arc within it, then we'll keep going from there.**

**If anyone has any questions let me know! The pairings, plot line, and story arc, are all set in stone as of now, though I may consider adding in a few other characters and sub plots as it goes along. Also I will set up another Poll about who you want to see more of! So depending on how many votes each character gets I'll start writing more from their view point. **

Anyway, thanks for reading! Please review! God bless.

â€"Metal4k

End
file.